The Strongest Dan God

(最强丹神)

Chapter

001-180

Pure Feathers
(郁真羽)

Story Description:

He was the continent's strongest and most revered alchemist, Ye Zifeng. He was under one person and above millions. However, due to an unpredictable event, he had died. After his rebirth, he had become the supertrash of the Ye family and suffered disgrace. To make matters worse, he had an argument with his fiancé that led to the break off of his engagement. In this second life, he will work to change his own destiny. He vows to return to the peak of the world, trample on those who laughed at him and rewrite his legacy!

Original Story can be found here: Link

Chapter 1: The Rebirth of the Dan God

In the extreme northern region of the Martial Spirit Continent.

No one knew how much time had passed since Ye Zifeng had last opened his eyes. His body was scorching hot and constantly in pain……

It was only a moment ago when Ye Zifeng was refining the legendary Nine Reincarnation Pill. When the pill was just about finished, a beam of bright light appeared from the furnace, followed by an explosion. The entire god tier furnace had exploded into millions of pieces. The large explosion had caused Ye Zifeng to faint on the spot……..

……

"Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng! Stop lying on the floor and pretending to be dead. If you have guts, get up and fight me right now!" The sound echoed in Ye Zifeng's head. The voice was felt both familiar and unfamiliar at the same time.

"Hehehe. You trash from the Ye family. Because your cultivation had stopped at the second stage of Qi Refining realm for several years, even that father of yours had given up on you. You still have the nerve to stay in our Ashen Spirit Sect? Your existence is making the sect lose face!"

"Heh. This trash really is trashy. I've been yelling at him and he didn't even dare to make a single sound."

These words were filled with disdain. The arrogant and mocking tone struck Ye Zifeng and made him regain his consciousness. He began to get up and see his surroundings more clearly.

A bunch of young faces came into his view. There were guys and there were girls as well.

Every single one of them were looking at him with disdain in their eyes, sneering at him.

Ye Zifeng couldn't comprehend what was happening.

In the past, these normal people would have never been able to meet Ye

Zifeng. Even if they were able to meet him, in order to obtain some medicine pills, they would get on their knees and kowtow to him while begging. However, Ye Zifeng would immediately kick them away. Afterall, he was a peak heaven ranked alchemist. He had always only refine pills for those who were well known throughout the continent. He was basically the best alchemist in the world and even the emperors around the continent had to be respectful towards him.

However, when he regained consciousness, he was in this situation.

He didn't know where these youngsters came from but they had dared to yell and curse at him!

"Who do you guys think you are? You dare talk to me, Ye Zifeng like this? Have you thought about that consequences that you will face?" Ye Zifeng then slowly stood up and patted the ashes off of his clothes. The pain that he felt from his body made him take a deep breath.

When he finally calmed down, he looked at his own body and became petrified.

What the f*ck?!? When did I become so frail? This body..... This is basically a third rate crippled body.....It was more trash than trash! The qi in his meridians were barely flowing. This..... How did his cultivation fall to the lowest Qi Refining realm?!

How could Ye Zifeng, an expert cultivator and alchemist accept this? He was a martial lord stage cultivator and a heaven ranked alchemist! How could this have happened?

Ye Zifeng felt dizzy all of a sudden. He had received too big of a shock and didn't know how to react. However at the moment, whether he liked it or not, the memories of Ye Zifeng, the owner of the body flowed into his mind.

After a while, he had received all the memory and finally understood what happened. He had crossed realms. He had crossed from the Black Tortoise continent into this Martial Spirit continent!

However, the most important thing, the thing that he refused to accept

was that he had crossed over into this sickly trash's body! He was unlucky to the extreme!

However, those youngsters who were from the same sect as him were even more shocked.

The place was silent. It was deathly silent.

"Guy. Did you hear what this guy just say?"

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, not believing what they had just heard. The pushover trash Ye Zifeng had dared talk back to them.

"Did he just ask us who we thought we were?" The leader, Wang Lin regained his composure and bursted out laughing.

Hahahahaha. The entire room was filled with laughter.

"Ye Zifeng! I didn't know you had a sense of humor. It seems like we shouldn't be calling you trash anymore. We should be calling you Ye Lunatic! Hahaha.. Ye Lunatic sounds just about right!"

"Wang Lin, stop talking nonsense with him. Let's beat him up some one. This guy must be itching for another beating!"

"Let's beat him up and break him!" Wang Lin's followers chanted and surrounded Yi Zifeng.

Right when these people were able to take action, a strong fragrance appeared....

Yi Zifeng's eyes lit up. As the best alchemist in the world, he had obviously experienced many worldly matters.

This was a woman's fragrance. In addition there was a small hint of cosmetic fragrance. He was able to easily smell this and in his mind, he knew this fragrance belonged to a top quality woman.

And sure enough, a beautiful figure came into view. She was wearing a jade robe which showed her slender waist and plump breasts. With just one look, anyone can see that she was an exceptionally beautiful woman. Compared to all of the beautiful woman that Ye Zifeng had seen in his previous life, she was not inferior at all.

As she walked closer and closer, the look in her eyes grew colder and colder. Seeing that Ye Zifeng was full of injuries, her expression change. A murderous aura could be felt as she stared at Wang Lin and his group.

Seeing the beauty walk over, the expressions on Wang Lin's and his group's face changed.

"Run. Let's leave. Ye Zifeng's sister is coming!" Some of the people who recognized her became frantic and tried to leave.

"What's so scary about that trash's sister? Don't we have Brother Wang here? If anyone, we'll tie her up and beat her up too."

Hearing this, Wang Lin turned pale with fright and ruthlessly yelled at that person, "You.... What are you saying. What if she hears it?"

Actually, Ye Xueyi had heard what was said very clearly.

Wang Lin's little brother Zhou Fang was confused, "Brother Wang, what's wrong? That trash's sister should be trash as well right?"

Thinking that she didn't hear anything, Wang Lin whispered carefully, "Zhou Fang, you bastard better be careful. Ye Xueyi and her brother are completely different. She's already an expert at the 8th Stage of Qi Refining. She's only one step away from being a peak Qi Refining stage expert. When she breaks through to the Martial Disciple stage, she has a great chance of awakening her Martial Spirit.....Do you want to make someone with a Martial Spirit your enemy?

Hearing the words "Martial Disciple", Zhou Fang's face turned deathly pale. And when she heard "Martial Spirit", he started to regret what he had said and wanted to dug a hole on the ground and hide in it.

"Alright. Alright. Everyone leave. Go do your own things." Wang Lin commanded his group of people.

Wang Lin then quickly turned around, smiled apologetically at Ye Xueyi, and tried to say some flattering words, "Ah. So it was Sister Xueyi who was coming. I apologize for not receiving you in a friendlier manner. This one is called Wang Lin....."

Ye Xueyi sneered and said one word. However, because she had spoken so fast and softly, Wang Lin could not hear what she said at all.

“Pardon me, but can Sister Xueyi repeat what was said again?”

Ye Xueyi wanted to open her mouth and speak.

But she saw Ye Zifeng coming over while glancing at Zhou Fang, “She told you to scram. Are you guys deaf?”

Wang Lin’s expression turned ugly. If it was Ye Xueyi saying that, he would immediately obey. Afterall, she was at the 8th stage of Qi Refining and on the Martial Spirit Continent, the weak obeys the strong. This was something normal. However, this time it was Ye Zifeng who had told him to scram. This was the trashiest and weakest cultivator in the entire Ashen Spirit Sect.

“Ye Zifeng, are you trying to die? Do you want me to find someone to kill you so badly?”

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi was much more angrier than her brother and stared fiercely at Wang Lin.

“You’re the one looking to die. If you dare to find someone to beat my brother, I’ll cripple your cultivation!”

The two sides stared coldly at each other, neither side willing to back off.

It the end, it was Wang Lin who finally turned away.

“Hmph. Who cares if you’re at the 8th stage of Qi Refining? Don’t act so arrogant. There are many experts in the Ashen Spirit Sect, I’ll just go and find someone to take care of you. Your Ye family is the same Ye family in the old days. Don’t think that you’ll be able to find someone to support you guys!” He glared at the siblings.

“The Ye family is not the old Ye family and I’m not the old me.” Ye Zifeng calmly said. He had already accepted reality.

In his heart, he had made his decision. Since he’s already in this trash body, he might as well train it! When he returns to the peak, he will definitely trample on those who had made fun of him!

Wang Lin couldn't make out what Ye Zifeng meant by that sentence and neither did Ye Xueyi. What did her brother have up his sleeve?

Ye Zifeng didn't care about what they thought about him and coldly stared at Wang Lin, "It looks like you've only recently broken through the 3rd Stage of Qi Refining and had just entered the 4th stage....." Since he had reached the realm of a Martial Lord in his past life, he was easily able to see through Wang Lin's cultivation with just his insights.

From the looks of it, Wang Lin is pretty trash himself. He doesn't have any patience in cultivating and frequently lead his group of even more trash people around to bully others. This made Ye Zifeng want to teach him a lesson.

Wang Lin was shocked, "And so what?"

"How about this? Let's make a bet." Ye Zifeng extended three fingers out.

Wang Lin stared at him blankly and bursted out laughing, "Ye Supertrash, are you trying to show off in front of your sister? You're not trying to say that you'll beat me within three years are you?"

"Three years? You're flattering yourself too much...." A smile appeared on Ye Zifeng's face.

"Don't tell me that you'll beat me in three months? Come on. Did you get brain damage from that beating before? Don't forget that you spent three whole years and couldn't even break through from the 2nd Stage of Qi Refining into the 3rd Stage."

Ye Zifeng's expression didn't change and calmly said, "Not three years, and not three months either. Three days....."

He continued to smile. Seeing that Wang Lin didn't have any response, "Whoever loses have to kowtow in front of the other one. How about it?"

"You!" Wang Lin was shocked by what had happened. He couldn't tell what was happening. Did Ye Zifeng turn crazy from being beaten so much?

After thinking for a while, Wang Lin calmly nodded, “Fine. Remember, you’re the one who proposed it.”

“Brother Zifeng, what are you blabbering. Come with me!” Ye Xueyi’s face turned cold and dragged Ye Zifeng away.....

Chapter 2: The Declining Ye Clan

Ye Zifeng was forcefully pulled away by his sister into an empty place with no people at all.

“Brother Zifeng, are you insane? Why would you make this kind of bet with someone like Wang Lin? If father finds out, he’ll definitely scold you for making the Ye clan lose face again.....”

Xueyi’s face was filled with austerity, but anyone can see that she was actually worried for her brother.

“Lose face? Why would I make the Ye clan lose face? I’m going to win some honor for our clan!” Ye Zifeng rebutted.

At this time, he was almost done putting all the piece of pertaining his old memories back together. He knows that the girl in front of him was his sister and in the clan, asides from this sister of his, no one else cares about him at all.

Xueyi’s eyes widened, “You want to win honor for our clan? I’m not hearing things... right? Brother Zifeng, did they actually beat you until you turned crazy? I can’t let this go..... I’m going to get revenge for you!”

She had grown up playing with Ye Zifeng, so of course she would care for him. In her eyes, even if Ye Zifeng was a good for nothing, she couldn’t stand other people bullying him.

And now, he probably turned into a crazy lunatic from all those beating that he had received.

Ye Zifeng quickly pulled her back, “Don’t worry about it. I didn’t go crazy. My mind is as clear as it can be. From what I know, I don’t think my mind had ever been clearer than it is now! Don’t find them for trouble... You’ll only dirty yourself.”

“Okay then.... I’ll listen to brother. I’ll let them get away with it this time. Otherwise, I’ll let them understand the difference between my 8th Stage of Qi Refining and their abilities.”

While saying that, Xueyi stomped both her feet and pouted to vent her

anger and discarded the idea of revenge. This cute and adorable side of hers was completely different from the ice cold girl from before. Of course, only her brother was able to see this side of her.

Ye Zifeng coughed faintly and felt warmth in his heart for the first time in a long time, “It seems like the feeling of having a family member care for you feels pretty good.” Before crossing into this world, he was an orphan and a crazy alchemist. All of his interactions with people were filled with pretense and compliance. He had never felt genuine feelings before.

‘What did you say?”

Ye Zifeng softly shook his head, “Nothing. I was just a bit moved.”

Ye Xueyi took a deep breath and calmed herself down. She couldn’t bear seeing her brother’s body filled with injuries. Whenever she sees her brother injured, her nose would feel sour as if she was about to cry.

“Brother……If only you weren’t a good for nothing…. I’m not asking for much… at least you won’t be bullied by people like Wang Lin…”

The thing that Ye Zifeng can’t stand the most is a woman’s tears. Thus, he didn’t want to explain much and showed her that he was being serious. This was because he didn’t want someone who cares for him to shed tears for him.

“Okay, let’s not talk much. Three days is not a long time. I need to start preparing right away. It’s getting late too, so let’s go home.”

After walking a few steps, he felt that something was wrong. He embarrassingly turned around.

“Right, uhhh Sis, which way is the way to our house?”

Ye Xueyi was speechless……

……

Twenty years ago, the Ye clan could be regarded as a large clan. They were able to compete with Wang clan in the east, the Liu clan in the west and was one of the Leizhou City’s three great families.

However, everything changed when Ye Zifeng was born.

Ye Zifeng was natural born sick person. His meridians had been check by many famous doctors and he was labeled as “A trash that only appears once every a hundred years.” After cultivating for so many years, he was still at the 2nd Stage of Qi Refining, and became the laughing stock of the entire Leizhou City. In addition, due to his sickness, it required his father, the Ye clan patriarch to repeatedly transfer True Qi energy into his body every once in awhile to keep him alive.

As for his cultivation ability, His father, Ye Chongtian, had already given up on him.

But now, this good for nothing son of his was calmly sitting in front of him, examining the teacup in his hands, and drinking it in a manner as if he was a great master.

“You.... What did you just say? You want to refine pills?” When Ye Chongtian heard this a moment ago, he couldn’t restrain himself and spat out the tea that he was drinking.

Ye Chongtian’s stared at Zifeng blankly and then looked away. He turned and looked at Xueyi.

“What happened? Your brother..... What’s wrong with him?”

“Father, Brother was beaten by some people today, I think that there’s something wrong with his head. I think that it’s because it has been a while since you transferred True Qi into his body. How about you transfer some more True Qi and help brother out right now?.....”

Xueyi worryingly said. After returning home, she wasn’t the icy cold girl from the sect anymore. She basically reverted back to a little girl who is pampered by her parents. Only her brother and parents would see her like this.

Ye Chongtian furrowed his brows and shook his head, “Xueyi, it’s not like I don’t want to help him but by giving him my True Qi, my cultivation had almost dropped from the Martial Soul stage down to the Martial Practitioner stage. If I continue giving him my Qi, the one who’s bullied

won't be him but our entire Ye clan!"

"But..... Father, If you won't help brother, no one else would help him....." Ye Xueyi softly bit her lips.

Actually, she understood what her father was talking about. Let's not talk about being bullied, but if her father gets anymore weaker, the Ye clan would be driven out of Leizhou City. As a fallen clan of what used to be the three great clans, they had harbored hatred and jealousy from the other clans and those clans would try their hardest to suppress the Ye clan.

In the Martial Spirit Continent, the strong devours the weak. Cultivation level was divided into eight levels: Martial Disciple, Martial Practitioner, Martial Soul, Martial Lord, Martial Emperor, Martial Ancestor, Martial Saint and Martial God. People like Ye Zifeng and Ye Xueyi who were still at the Qi Refining Stage, they couldn't even be considered as cultivators much less help the family at all.

Although the Ye family was large, as the patriarch, Ye Chongtian single handedly carried all the weight of the family.

"Father.... Please!" Ye Xueyi blinked a few times and pouted like a cute sad dog.

Ye Chongtian waved his hands signal for her to go away, "Xueyi, stop using this move every time. This time, I will definitely not give that good for nothing son any True Qi!"

In all these years, his cultivation had been dropping instead of rising. This was because he had constantly transferred True Qi into Ye Zifeng to help prolong his life. This time, he had decided that he wouldn't do so anymore.

At that moment, Ye Zifeng opened his mouth and said, 'Who said I want your True Qi? Transferring True Qi into my body would only help for awhile. It'll only make my body more reliant on your True Qi and stop developing!"

Hearing this, Ye Chongtian was shocked. If anyone else had said this, he

would believe them. But these words came out of his good for nothing son's mouth. It felt a bit weird to believe such words. Usually Ye Zifeng is very cowardly and wouldn't even look at him in the eyes, much less talk face to face with him.

However, he didn't pay any mind to these small details and laughed, "Zifeng, it seems like you finally understand your father. You've grown up. Just hold on for a bit more. After your father stabilizes himself in the Martial Soul Stage, then I'll transfer some True Qi to you."

Ye Xueyi couldn't help but stare blankly at Zifeng and felt a bit angry for him.

"That's why I said I want to refine some pills before!"

Ye Xueyi quickly grabbed his sleeves and shook him, "Brother. Stop talking back. Why are you still acting crazy!"

Ye Chongtian closed his eyes and took a deep breath, "Okay. Bring him downstairs. It seems like Xueyi isn't wrong. He really did get beaten so much that he turned crazy!"

Ye Zifeng genuinely and seriously rebutted, "I can go down, but only after you give me a furnace and prepare the ingredients that I have written down on this paper. If you do that, I'll leave immediately."

Ye Chongtian tried his hardest to hold himself back. His hand shook in anger and said, "You bastard. If you keep talking like a lunatic, I'll throw you into the cellar and have you reflect on your actions against the wall for three days.

Ye Zifeng didn't quit and continued to ask, "Let it be then. Put me in the cellar. I'll do whatever you want as long as you get me a furnace and my ingredients...."

"You!" Ye Chongtian slammed his hand on the table and stood up. As a Martial Soul stage practitioner he was able to release and control his power to pressure people. His glare revealed a hint of pressure that pressed down on Ye Zifeng.

"Father!" Ye Xueyi yelled from the side. It was only then did he release

his pressure and regain his composure.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was still barely standing and looking at him with determination in his eyes, Ye Chongtian was shocked.

“Fine. I’ll get you a furnace and the ingredients you want. If you have the ability, I don’t want to see you make piles of slag!”

After he fiercely replied, he turned his back to the two, signaling that they should leave.

“Okay, Brother we can go now.” Ye Xueyi pulled Ye Zifeng.

“Hold on a moment.” Ye Zifeng, took the piece of paper with the ingredients out, left it on the desk and left with his sister.

Seeing that the two had left, Ye Chongtian rubbed his temples. Because of this disappointing good for nothing son of his, he’s been having a headache for almost twenty years now. Now, his son was beaten crazy by someone else. His head began to ache even more.

It seems like the Ye clan really had fallen. He couldn’t help but sigh.

After a while, he calmed down and without knowing, he reached for the piece of paper that Zifeng had left. He shot a glance at the strong and straight writing on the paper.

“When did this kid learn to write so nicely? Every time I had him write, I would yell at him for writing his letters like drawing an earthworm. Could it be that since he knows he’ll be a trash in cultivating that he started to learn literature?”

Ye Chongtian laughed bitterly and began to look at the ingredients that his son had listed.

With after a rough glance, his expression changed dramatically. After carefully reading what was listed, his hands began to tremble. When he had finished reading the entire list, he felt as if lightning had struck him. His entire body shook and he was left speechless.

Chapter 3: Refining the Highest Quality Pill

The Ye clan had been on a decline for twenty years now, and thus their financial situation is not at an ideal position right now.

Even so, Ye Chongtian did not break his promise and gathered all the ingredients that Ye Zifeng had listed. He personally brought the ingredients and a furnace to the cellar where Ye Zifeng was staying for the next three days.

Because of this, he received an endless complaints from the other family members, all saying that even if the Ye family had a great amount of wealth, they should not be throwing all these ingredients away on this crazy good for nothing.

Ye Zifeng carefully examined the ingredients one by one and revealed a happy face.

“Chalcedony Grass, Dragon Leaves, Silver-horn Fruit, Scarlet Essence Lotus and Buddha Roots. This was not bad. At first, Ye Zifeng was worried there would be one or two ingredients missing but from the looks of it, he was worrying for nothing. His father had kept his promise. Now he can create a high quality Golden Marrow Pill.

However, even with all these things, he still shook his head in regret.

If he had kept his cultivation as a Martial Lord Stage expert, or even if he went down a stage to the Martial Soul stage, he would be able to utilize his essence energy and activate his ultimate refining technique “Ghost Flame Refinement.” With this technique, he would be able to create pills in the blink of an eye. Furthermore, the technique would allow him to instantly be on par with a heaven tier alchemist.

But now, the cultivation in this body was too trashy. Nevermind about using Qi to refine pills, his body would be collapse just by standing next to the furnace for too long.

“Whatever. I still have three days. I have all the time that I need. I’ll just

use these ingredients to refine and clean the furnace first. That'll probably increase the quality of the furnace by a few folds……"

Ye Zifeng had everything planned out already. Before refining the pill, he would thoroughly clean and refine the furnace first. At that time, thick black smoke appeared and sparks flew everywhere. Refining a furnace was hard work!

He opened the window at the top to let the air out. He was the young master of the Ye family and not a slave who's locked up. It shouldn't be a problem if he opened the window as long as he doesn't leave the cellar.

He looked out the window and noticed some movements. Seeing this, a smile appeared on his face.

……

"Master, I just sent someone to see what the young master was up to and on his first try, he……"

"What happen? Did he succeed?" Ye Chongtian looked excitedly at the housekeeper who came to report the news. After reading the list that his son had written, he was unable to sleep last night. He thought that his son had received some sort of enlightenment and immediately sent his housekeeper to gather the ingredients.

"The young master, he……"

"What happened? Stop beating around the bush. Do you want to get hit?" Ye Chongtian was impatient and yelled at the housekeeper.

"The young master turned the ingredients into slag on his first try……" Housekeeper Du frowned.

Ye Chongtian's eyes widened and fell back onto his seat. It took him a while to regain his composure.

He smiled bitterly, shook his head and sighed, "What's wrong with me… To actually place some hope on that good for nothing son of mine….. I really am getting old."

"Master, should I continue keeping an eye on the young master? Maybe

he accidentally messed up this time.....”

Housekeeper Du was reasonable and a ray of hope had appeared in Ye Chongtian’s eyes again, “Yeah. That’s probably it. Keep your eyes on him and report if anything happens.

.....

“Master, the second try was a failure as well. All he made was slag.... But there was less slag than last time.”

“Keep monitoring him.”

“Master, the third try was a failure as well, he still made slag.... But this time, there wasn’t as much.”

“Keep monitoring!”

‘Master, the fourth try was a failure again.

“.....”

“Master.....”

Ye Chongtian was unable to put up with this anymore and yelled out, “ENOUGH! Enough is enough. That good for nothing spent the whole day making slag. There’s no need to keep an eye on him anymore. You don’t need to monitor him anymore..... I’ve come to the conclusion that I was wrong in trusting him!”

.....

The next day, Ye Zifeng stood by the window and smiled warmly.

“So they’re finally not monitoring me anymore? That’s fine with me.....”

He closed his window and opened up the furnace; this was his sixth try.

When he opened the furnace up, a bright golden light filled the entire room. The light covered the entire cellar and the heat from the furnace immediately dispersed into the room. There were still some sparks flying around the furnace making a hissing sound.

In the middle of the furnace sat a completed Golden Marrow Pill. The pill created a dazzling light and filled the entire room up with spiritual

energy.

Without a doubt, the pill was of the highest quality.

Ye Zifeng smiled. He took the pill and slightly licked it.

In a split second, the enormous amount of energy from the Golden Marrow Pill exploded out and went straight into Ye Zifeng's Dantian. And from his Dantian, the energy scattered throughout his entire body.

"Nice! That felt really good!"

Under the immense energy from the pill, Ye Zifeng's originally disjointed meridians started to join and clear up. The energy that was stuck in his meridians throughout his body started flowing again and rejoined inside of his Dantian.

Throughout the entire process, Ye Zifeng was in immense pain. He felt as if his entire body was being cut up. He felt as if there were billions of small bugs invading and moving within his body, slowly eating away his flesh and meridians. However he endured the pain. He knew that if he could go through this trial, he can reform his crippled meridians. It was painful at first but the results of this was worth it.

Having lived another life, the pain that he had endured in his previous life had given him an immense amount of willpower. And so, he continued to sweat profusely in pain as he felt his body become anew again.

After the long process, he let out a long breath. His body had never felt better before.

He had finally reached the third stage of Qi Refining!

The trash Ye Zifeng who had spent three years and couldn't break through had finally broken through today.

Once his meridians were joined up, his physique looked a lot better and his cultivation abilities returned to normal. It could be said that a high quality Golden Marrow Pill could change the fate and innate talent of someone at the Qi Refining stage!

Of course, it was almost impossible for someone else at the Qi Refining

stage to get a high quality Golden Marrow Pill. This was because only a middle stage Earth ranked alchemist could produce such pill. And even they would have some trouble making such a high quality pill. Why would such a high level alchemist go through so much trouble to make such a low level pill used by people at the Qi Refining stage? There's no way any family would spend a fortune to recruit a high ranked alchemist just for them to create a low ranked pill such as the Golden Marrow Pill.

Moreover, it was because Ye Zifeng had experience with this pill that he was able to use the pill's full effect. If someone were to pick this pill up randomly and swallow it whole, they would definitely implode on the spot!

After Ye Zifeng rested for a while, he realized that he was filled with energy. He can feel that he was in the Middle 3rd Qi Refining Stage already! The Golden Marrow Pill had actually allowed him to go straight from Low 2nd Qi Refining Stage all the way to Middle 3rd Qi Refining Stage.

'If I have more ingredients, then maybe I make a breakthrough and reach the peak stage of the 3rd Qi Refining Stage.' Ye Zifeng thought to himself and sighed.

At that time, Ye Zifeng felt something and immediately frowned towards the window.

"Who's there? Come out!"

"Ah. Don't be so angry brother. It's me, Xueyi!" Ye Xueyi said with a smile and then slowly climbed through the window into the cellar. She was wearing a long green skirt and with her long sleek black hair, and large eyes, she looked very charming.

Seeing that it was only his sister, Zifeng let out a sigh of relief. This was because whether it was the trash Ye Zifeng or the great alchemist Ye Zifeng, they both harbored a familiar feeling towards Xueyi.

"What're you doing here sis? Why didn't you go back to the Ashen Spirit Sect and came here instead? There's nothing fun inside the cellar."

She lowered her voice and smiled facetiously, "The sect is boring. I

sneaked out during my free time."

Ye Zifeng was shocked. Who would've thought that the good, rule abiding sister of his would skip her training to come over!

She continued to smile sweetly, "Let's not talk about the sect. How could father be so heartless and lock you up for three whole days! There's no food in the cellar so I came and brought you some food."

A worried expression appeared on her face as she took opened up the basket that she brought. Inside the basket were some sweets and a meal.

"Come on brother, try this osmanthus flower cake!"

Ye Zifeng was greatly moved by his sister. As the best alchemist in the world, he had tasted all of the best delicacies in the world but he had never tasted food that was specifically made for him by a family member. This was something that he had regret. He originally thought that crossing over into this trash Ye Zifeng's body was a super unlucky thing.

But now, he feel that he's quite lucky being able to crossover into this body.

He received the osmanthus flower cake from xueyi and slowly took a bite. To be honest, it was a bit hard but it was still alright.

"Mmm. It's great. It's really good! Let me try your other dishes....."

Ye Xueyi smiled and passed the entire basket over to him. Seeing how Ye Zifeng was quickly eating the meal that she made herself, she was feeling very happy.

"Oh right brother. Did you turn all the ingredients into slag already? I actually didn't know why father gave you all these ingredients to refine. Ai..... If you really want to learn how to refine pills, you should ask father to hire an alchemist to teach you. Turning all the ingredient into slag is nothing much, but i'm afraid that your body won't be able to handle the stress from refining pills....."

Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped eating and put the food down.

"Brother what happened? Is my cooking not good enough?"

“No. The food is great! I love it.” Ye Zifeng smiled. “However, you said that all I made was slag and I’d like to say otherwise.”

Ye Xueyi started to laugh lightly, “Brother, when did you become so funny? You’re talking like you had refined a pill or something. Look at that pile of slag over there. If that isn’t slag, then what is it?”

“Then look at what this is!”

Chapter 4: Martial Spirit Awakens!

Watching Ye Zifeng pull out a Golden Marrow Pill, a hint of excitement appeared in Ye Xueyi's eyes. She stared at the pill and was speechless.

Because Ye Zifeng had absorbed most of the energy from the pill, the level of the pill had dropped from profound tier to huang tier. Even though it was only a Huang Tier pill, Ye Xueyi still didn't believe what she was seeing. After all, only a Huang Tier ranked alchemist could refine such a pill. How could this dumb brother of her's refine something like this? In the entire Leizhou City, the amount of Huang ranked alchemists could be counted on one hand.

*(Pill rankings: Heaven > Earth > Profound > Huang. Each rank is further separated to high, medium and low quality)

It wasn't until Ye Zifeng had waved his hands in front of her face when she came back to her sense.

Xueyi pursed her lips and with a serious look she said, "Brother Zifeng, tell me the truth. This Golden Marrow Pil..... Where did you steal it from?"

"Steal? What? I refined this myself." Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows. He was one of the best alchemists in the entire universe. If he had the ingredients in front of him, he could make any pill within the capabilities of the Qi Refining realm.

"No way! You know I grew up with you. I know exactly what kind of books you've been reading and what you've seen your whole life. If you had made a lewd painting of some beauty instead, I wouldn't be surprised. I've seen those paintings and books that you've kept hidden. However, I have never seen you read or even own a book about alchemy." Ye Xueyi said with a stern face.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng felt awkwardly embarrassed. He thought that he was quite bad before he crossed but this trash was actually so lustful. He doesn't even know what to say anymore. It seems like he had to fix his reputation later.

“Don’t worry about it. You’re my brother and I’ll help you out. When we go out in three days, I’ll go with you to return the pill to wherever you stole it from. We don’t want to offend an alchemist if he were to find out it was you. I won’t tell father about this either!”

Ye Zifeng could only smile bitterly. That alchemist that you’re talking about isn’t someone else. It’s your brother and he’s standing in front of you! However, hearing what his sister had said, he felt warm inside. Even though Xueyi knew that he was a trash, she was still worried about it.

“Xueyi, from what you know about me, do you think that I’m the type of person who would go steal from someone?”

Ye Xueyi’s expression change. She had just realized it. Her brother is a sick and weak trash, even if he had 10000 times the courage, the amount of courage he has would still be zero. He doesn’t even have to guts to go and steal candy from kids, let alone a pill from an alchemist. But then, where did this Golden Marrow Pill come from?

“Unless, this is a a fake pill?”

Ye Zifeng was speechless. He didn’t know how he can out talk this sister of his. The best way to convince her is to show it to her personally. The she’ll definitely have to believe it.

“Well…. How about this. Let’s say that your brother had a sudden enlightenment and my talent in alchemy had finally awoken!” This was the best excuse that Ye Zifeng could come up with.

“……. Something like that….. Is that even possible?” Xueyi replied suspiciously.

“I think so?…… It’s possible.” Ye Zifeng awkwardly smiled and nodded.

Ye Xueyi continued looking at him with a suspicious glare, “Fine the. If you want me to believe that you refined this pill, then….. How about you refine a pill in front of me. Then i’ll believe it!”

Finally. Ye Zifeng felt really happy. After spewing all that bullsh*t, he was waiting for Xueyi to ask him to prove himself.

“Then, how about the ingredients?” He smiled towards Ye Xueyi. Even the best housewives cannot cook without ingredients. To refine pills, he needed ingredients. This time, if he can refine more pills, then maybe he can breakthrough and reach the peak of the 3rd stage of Qi Refining.

“When did brother start to like refining pills? Could it be that your talents in alchemy had actually awoken?”

Ye Xueyi giggled happily, “If it’s ingredients, then don’t worry about it. Father dotes me and he’ll give me whatever i want if it’s not too much.

Ye Zifeng quickly shook his head, “No. He can’t be the one paying for the ingredients this time.”

“Why not?” Ye Xueyi thought for a while and finally understood what he meant, “Ah….. I know what you mean. If father pays for the ingredients again and you make a bunch of slag again, he’ll definitely be mad and lock you up for a few more days.”

Ye Zifeng smiled weakly and didn’t say anything.

As someone who had experienced another life time, his temperament was obviously unlike a normal younger’s. He didn’t want Ye Chongtian to know his secret yet.

If Ye Chongtian knew about this, he might make Zifeng refine pills every single day and slow down his cultivation progress. He knew what it was like being an expert in alchemy and cultivation. Alchemy was used to assist his path of cultivation. If he revealed that he was an alchemy master, then the other clans might suppress him and hinder his cultivation. He could also be easily killed by others as well.

“Alright then. If you say so. Then I’ll use my own allowance this time.” Ye Xueyi pouted.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Thanks sis, if i can make another Golden Marrow Pill, then we can split the profit. However, you have the keep this secret between us…..”

Although the Golden Marrow Pill was a low ranked pill, it could still fetch quite an amount of money. This was because it could only be created

by a Huang ranked alchemist. In any clan, a Huang ranked alchemist is like a money tree and can help the clan sustain its finances.

Ye Xueyi started to giggle and then bursted out laughing, “Brother, you looked so serious while saying that. I was almost fooled. If you can refine an edible pill, even if it’s a common pill, I will be super excited!”

“Then you should prepare yourself for when the time comes in a bit.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

He retrieved the Golden Marrow Pill and put it in Xueyi’s hands, “Oh yeah, don’t think that this is a fake. How about this. Go to the store and sell this.....” Pills can be turned into money and money turn into more pills.

Xueyi nodded and smile, “Okay. Even if this is a trash pill, I should be able to get some money for it..... probably.”

.....

Zifeng bid Xueyi goodbye and sat back down on the ground.

The three day bet is almost here. Wang Lin is at the 4th stage of Qi Refining while he was only at the 3rd stage. Even though he rejoined all his meridians and gained some strength, the trash’s body was still way too weak. Although pills can help him break through, it can’t strengthen his body immediately.

In order to have a strong body, one would need to train seriously.

It was a good thing that Ye Zifeng was a Martial Lord in his past life. He was able to remember some secret training methods for the Qi Refining Realm.

“Hmmm. All of my skills in my past life utilized fire so I can assist myself in the ways of alchemy. But now my body is way too weak and cannot handle the flames. What sort of training method should I use?” Ye Zifeng thought to himself.

He had a lot of options to choose from and was wondering about it for a while.

He continuously muttered to himself and then suddenly smiled, “Oh yeah. Why don’t I check what kind of Martial Spirit this kid has?”

Everyone had a chance of awakening their own Martial Spirits after reaching the Martial Disciple realm, but even without reaching that realm, there were still methods to see what sort of Martial Spirit one has. However the methods are too complicated and normal people aren’t able to have a preview of their spirit.

Ye Zifeng was lucky that he had come across a few methods in his past life. Even with his experience, he still couldn’t be careless. In order to check, he needed some time and luck. If he was unlucky, he won’t be able to see anything at all.

He calmed himself down and began to meditate. He examined his soul and felt the pulse from his spirit.

He felt as if he was sucked into a dark starry space, inside a dream realm filled with mist. There were mountains all over the place and the mist covered his view.

Suddenly, he felt something familiar yet not so familiar next to him. It was a giant shadow ghost. The shadow ghost stood there, staring at him. It didn’t attack him or get close to him. It just stood there, awkwardly staring at him.

“A Devil type Martial Spirit? No..... It shouldn’t be. It’s too big to be a devil type spirit.” Ye Zifeng was shocked. He had never seen a spirit like this even in his past life as a Martial Lord.

Ye Zifeng began to think to himself, ‘It seems like that trash didn’t have a choice but to be sick and weak. It might be because of this mysterious spirit inside of him....’

The shadow ghosts swim in circles while it watched Ye Zifeng mutter to himself.

Suddenly a deep and cold voice could be heard, “I originally thought that with your weak body, you would never have the chance to see me. You haven’t awakened your spirit yet and you’re only at the 3rd stage of Qi

Refining realm. How can you see me.... And communicate with me?

Compared to how shocked Ye Zifeng was when he saw the spirit, the spirit was even more shocked when he saw Zifeng!

“How about this. I can see that with your body, you probably won’t live to become a Martial Disciple. If you die, then my existence means nothing at all. So I’ll help you out and let you use some of my power.” The shadow ghost continued to stare and coldly said.

“What? I’m not even in the Martial Disciple realm yet and I can still use the power of a Martial Spirit?” As a Martial Lord in his previous life, he had never heard of such thing before. As the smart person that he is, he kept the crossover a secret from the shadow ghost.

In the next moment, Ye Zhifeng felt his head get heavier and heavier. The dream realm covered in mist dissipated and he regained his consciousness.

When he woke up, he began to think about the shadow ghost. He didn’t know what it was and what it could be. All he knows is that it can communicate with him in his consciousness. It was definitely something out of the ordinary.

Normally, a person’s Martial Spirit is something that is dead. It represents the person’s hidden powers. A living Martial Spirit was very rare but not sought after. To use its full power, one must train it and level it up.

Thinking about this, Ye Zifeng felt a bit bitter. He didn’t feel so happy about his Martial Spirit. It was one thing that he had to cultivate and train this trashy body but now he has to train his spirit too. This was because the rank of his spirit determines his strength in the future. Every cultivator wants a strong spirit to begin with so the ceiling of their cultivation can get higher and higher.

“Oh right. The shadow ghost said something about lending some of its power to me. What kind of power does this thing even have?”

Ye Zifeng opened his hands and extended both of his arms out. He was

staring at his hands and suddenly, the expression in his eyes changed.....

Chapter 5: One Try, Three Pills

“Holy Sh*t. What the f*ck is this?”

At first he saw something appear on his palm and didn’t care much for it. But then it started spreading and it covered both of his arms. There were red lines all over his arms and it looked as if all of his blood vessels had appeared on top of his skin. If someone who didn’t know what was going on saw this, the would probably think he had contracted some sort of weird disease.

He moved his arms all over the place to see if they still worked and after a while, he tired himself out. He then rubbed his eyes and pinched himself to see if he was dreaming. He tried to suppress the color from appearing on his skin, but nothing worked. Moreover, no matter how hard he tried, he couldn’t use any of the Shadow Ghost’s spirit powers. He didn’t even know whether or not there were some requirements to use the spirit’s power either.

“I don’t care if I can’t use that damn spirit’s power…. But these red lines are too visible. He can’t leave it alone. What if someone accidentally sees it?” Ye Zifeng was getting worried.

He calmed down and tried to think of a solution. He went into his dream realm to find the shadow ghost but this time, it was completely empty. There was nothing in there at all.

“It seems like I’ll have to wear long sleeves during the summer now…..” Ye Zifeng couldn’t think of a solution and sighed.

……

Right at that moment, quick footsteps could be heard approaching the room.

Ye Zifeng could tell who the footsteps were belonged to, it was Ye Xueyi.

“Brother Zifeng, that pill you gave me. It wasn’t fake. It was a real Huang tier Golden Marrow Pill!” That was the first thing Xueyi said after flying into the room.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “I told you already. You didn’t believe me.”

“No way.....” Ye Xueyi gasped, looking very surprised and amazed.

“No way. There’s no way. Could it be that you actually went and stole from some alchemist?” She still didn’t think that Ye Zifeng could refine pills, let alone a huang tier pill.

She had just gone to the store to get some ingredients and wanted to use this super inferior tier fake Golden Marrow Pill to help lower the price by a bit. Who would’ve thought that when she showed the pill to the clerk, he would tell her to wait and brought the owner out. After evaluating the pill, the owner confirmed that it was a real huang tier Golden Marrow pill. By exchanging the pill, she was able to get all the ingredients and the store even gave her an extra 30 gold coins.

“Only 30 gold coins?” Ye Zifeng coldly laughed. The ingredients are worth around 20 gold coins and the pill is probably worth at least 100 gold coins. Ye Zifeng was not very happy with the owner of the store. It wasn’t because he ripped Xueyi off, but because he was probably looking down on the Ye family.

“You’re not satisfied with 30 gold coins? Two years ago, you were fighting with me for just ten copper coins. After losing to me, you cried for half a day!” Ye Xueyi smiled. She didn’t have to spend a single coin and she got thirty gold coins in return, she was feeling really good.

Ye Zifeng on the other hand felt a headache coming. Even if it was two years ago, this trash wasn’t that young then. And yet, he was still fighting with his own younger sister for some copper coins. The most important thing was that he lost! That was utterly disgraceful. Man that guy was trash to the max.....

“Alright alright, let’s not talk about the old days...” Ye Zifeng shook his head and smiled slightly. That guy’s history is completely black. It seems like he has to suffer a bit before he can build up his reputation.

He sighed and then looked at the bag that Xueyi was holding. “Did you get everything that I asked for?”

“Of course! Look. Everything is in here.”

Ye Zifeng examined the ingredients and muttered to himself, “Hm.... Even though the quality is not that great, everything is still here. I can finally start refining some Golden Marrow Pills.”

Hearing that he was going to refine some pills, Ye Xueyi couldn’t help but stare deeply at Zifeng. Looking at how serious he was, it seems like he actually had the aura of an alchemist. He looked nothing that that weak and sickly good for nothing Ye Zifeng at all.

“Xueyi, Xueyi, get the hell out here!”

Suddenly a voice called from outside the cellar.

“This voice.... Its mother!” Ye Xueyi’s expression changed. Before she was able to react, the woman was already in the room. Looking at her face, anyone can tell that she was very angry.

That woman is Tang Feng. Ye Xueyi’s mother but not Ye Zifeng’s. The two of them had the same father but different birth mothers.

“Mother, you came....” Ye Xueyi softly said as she gulped.

“Good afternoon, Madam Tang...” Ye Zifeng smiled and greeted her.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng greeted her, she was a little shocked. Normally, Ye Zifeng wouldn’t even make a sound breathing while he was in front of her. How come he wasn’t scared today?

She ignored him and turned towards Ye Xueyi, “How many times did I tell you, you’re talent is not bad and you have a good future in front of you. Why are you always around this good for nothing? I’ve told you this many times already. Why do you never listen to me?”

She showed no mercy to Ye Zifeng while talking about him. Actually, she was just too used to calling him a good for nothing.

Ye Xueyi was a bit mad and rebutted, “Mother, Brother Zifeng isn’t a good for nothing!”

“Don’t call him brother!” Tang Feng glared at her. “If he isn’t a good for nothing trash, then who’s that guy that everyone in Leizhou City is calling

trash? Also, I heard that this guy became crazy from being beaten too much. Saying something that he was to refine pills. Hahahaha. What can he make besides slag? I've already told you father to not waste money on this guy, but he really is getting old. He actually went and go him the ingredients himself. It was really funny. You've should've seen the look on his face after hearing what this trash did to the ingredients.

Ye Xueyi wanted to talk back but couldn't find a way at all.

"Oh right, I came to talk to you about something else. If it wasn't for the guards by the doors, I wouldn't have known that you sneaked out and bought some ingredients for this guy. Xueyi.... When did you become so dumb? The ingredients aren't that expensive but it's still money. You can't be like your father and throw your money away for this guy."

After Tang Feng stopped talking, Xueyi finally said something, "Mother. I didn't use any of my money. Brother Zifeng refined a huang tier Golden Marrow Pill and exchanged it for the ingredients.

Tang Feng was shocked. She looked at Xueyi and then looked at that pile of slag on the side.

"A huang tier Golden Marrow Pill? How is that possible?"

Xueyi nodded and with a serious look she said, "It was a real huang tier Golden Marrow Pill. When I went to the store before, the owner came out and gave me all the ingredients and an extra 30 gold coins in exchange for it."

Saying that, she took out a small coin pouch and took the gold coins out.

"Look. It's all here.

There were exactly 30 gold coins on the table!

When Tang Feng saw this, her eyes widened and her expression changed. 30 gold coins wasn't a small amount. It was about what she received in a month's time.

"I know now....."

She dryly chuckled a few times and fiercely looked at Ye Zifeng, "You

dishonest bastard. Tell me the truth. Where did you steal it from? If the Ye clan offends an alchemist because of you, the entire clan will fall!"

"I refined it." Ye Zifeng replied.

Ye Xueyi stood in front of Zifeng, trying to protect him and said, "Mother, at first I had the same thought as you. However, brother was locked up in here and cannot leave. How could he go out and steal something, let alone something from an alchemist? He probably did refine it himself."

Stealing a pill was not a small crime. If Tang Feng had told her father about this, who knows what will happen to Ye Zifeng?

Tang Feng coldly glared at Xueyi, "Then I'll ask you this. Did you see him refine the pill with your own eyes? He probably stole it from somewhere before he was locked up."

"I....." Ye Xueyi couldn't answer that.

However, after thinking for a while Xueyi opened her mouth again, "But mother. You've known brother Zifeng for so long already. He usually locks himself in his room and not go out at all. Every time he sees someone besides me he would get scared. Where did he get the courage to go and steal from an esteemed alchemist?"

Tang Feng thought about it for a while. She knew what kind of person Zifeng was. He could not have gone out and stole from someone like an alchemist.

"Fine. He didn't steal it. It probably fell from the sky or something and he accidentally picked it up."

Tang Feng coldly smiled and continued talking, "Okay. there's no point in arguing. Xueyi, go back to the store and return the ingredients. If the store owner doesn't let you, come back to mother and we'll go together."

"Mother.... Why are you in such a hurry to return the ingredients. Let's believe in brother Zifeng." Ye Xueyi pulled Tang Feng's arms and pleaded.

"You!" Tang Feng was furious. Xueyi had never argued with her like this

before.

Ye Zifeng suddenly smiled and said, “Whether you believe it or not... How about I give it another try and show you?”

Tang Feng coldly looked at him, “Yeah okay. If you make another pile of slag, how can I go back and return the ingredients?

“Doesn’t Xueyi have thirty gold coins? If I can’t refine a pill, then you can have all of it. And also, I’ll never concoct pills again”

Hearing this, Xueyi was shocked, “No. I can’t do that. At most, I can only take a few copper coins as the middleman. Thirty gold coins is not a small amount, how can I keep it all for myself?”

Tang Feng then fiercely glared at Xueyi, signaling her to not speak anymore.

A smile then appeared on her face, “Wow, how unexpected of you to not care about money at all. It sees like you’ve gotten more daring as well. Fine. Then i’ll go along with your oath of “never concocting pills again” and see what you can do.

She had turned something that Ye Zifeng had casually said into an oath. This Tang Feng woman is very scheming.

However, Ye Zifeng didn’t mind at all. He was a heaven tier alchemist. If he can’t even concoct such a low level pill, then he shouldn’t be concocting pills anymore.

“Madam Tang, If I can somehow create a Golden Marrow Pill, then you have to keep whatever happened today a secret.

“Fine. I promise you.” Tang Feng looked deeply at him. She didn’t know what that good for nothing has up his sleeve but she’s got nothing to lose either.

After saying that, he immediately prepared the ingredients and lit the furnace.

In a while, then a strong aroma started to seep out of the furnace.

Tang Feng was surprise but didn’t do anything.

An hour later, purple steam appeared from the furnace.

Tang Feng knew that a purple steam would only appear when a high quality pill was being concocted.

After seeing the steam, she couldn't sit still anymore. She jumped up and walked towards the furnace.

"Sit back down. I'm in a critical moment right now so don't bother me." Ye Zifeng frowned and coldly said. The imposing manner in Ye Zifeng's tone had caused Tang Feng to return to her seat immediately.

When she sat down, she felt that something was wrong. Why was she forced back by that good for nothing's words?

After two hours, the fire in the furnace stopped burning and started to cool down.

Ye Zifeng let out a long breath and looked towards Tang Feng, "I'm done. Do you want me to open the furnace or do you want to open it?"

Tang Feng gulped, "Let me do it." At that time, she felt very nervous.

She slowly moved towards the furnace and opened the lid.

At the same time, rays of golden light appeared and filled the entire room. It was dazzling and very blinding.

Tang Feng's expression froze. Her jaws fell and she couldn't say anything. All she could do was stare at Zifeng as if she had never seen him before.

In the end, because Ye Xueyi was somewhat mentally prepared, she was able to withhold the shock and finally spoke.

"Three pills in one try..... and they're all high quality pills!"

Chapter 6: The Peak of Third Qi Refining Stage.

Tang Feng and Ye Xueyi both turned and looked at each other and then looked back at the pill. Their eyes were filled with amazement.

“This…. How is this possible?”

Even though Ye Xueyi believed in her brother, she was still shocked at the fact that he was able to create three pills in one batch. She was able to trade one pill for thirty gold coins and the materials to create one batch. If Ye Zifeng could make three pills in a batch, then wouldn’t he be able to make hundreds of gold coins in one go?

“This pill, Zifeng will give it to madam Tang as a present…..” Ye Zifeng smiled slightly and put one of the pills into Tang Feng’s hands.

“You’re giving this to me?” Tang Feng was shocked.

That trash good for nothing Ye Zifeng who fought with Xueyi over a few copper coins was easily giving away something worth 50 gold coins?

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Yes.” After all, he is a great alchemist and as an alchemist, he was not lacking money at all.

“Brother, you should keep this for yourself, we don’t deserve this from you.” Ye Xueyi was a bit embarrassed and wanted to take the pill out of her mother’s hands.

However, Tang Feng quickly retracted her hands, making Xueyi grab nothing but air.

“Mother…..”

Tang Feng’s face turned serious and glared at her daughter.

“Fine. Then I’ll treat this as a gift. Thank you.”

Ye Zifeng nodded and smiled.

If you want to live a good life, not only do you need to rely on yourself, but you also need to learn how to win others over. Although Tang Feng

was a bit snobbish, she still had some power and influence in the Ye family.

This is an example of how to win others over. On any normal day, Tang Feng would see Ye Zifeng as the good for nothing trash. But now, no matter how much she dislikes Ye Zifeng, she can't dislike money. Ye Zifeng was trying to win her over with money.

Tang Feng looked deeply at Ye Zifeng and said, "Who would've thought the good for nothing trash at cultivating Ye Zifeng would have such achievements in the way of alchemy. If your old man hears about this, he would definitely be gratified. While saying this, there was a hint of respect in her tone. If this was before, she wouldn't even look at Ye Zifeng while talking about him.

However, Ye Zifeng frowned, "As we agreed on before, I hope madam Tang helps Zifeng keep this secret."

Thinking back now, she did agree on it. However, she didn't pay any attention to it before. She didn't think that Ye Zifeng would actually be able to concoct any pills.

She then questioned his curiously, "This is obviously a good thing. If you really want to develope your alchemy skills, I can tell your old man to send you to an alchemist school. That way you can learn much more about it."

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed. This was what he was afraid of the most. If his father hears about this, he would definitely send him away to an alchemist school. There was no way to disobey him. There he would have to learn from people who are not even close to his level and then become a money tree for the clan in the future. If this happens, he can get rid of his name as trash but there is a limit on how far he can get. Ye Zifeng had sworn to return to the peak. He didn't want to be commanded by anyone and wants to go with his own flow.

"I thank madam Tang for your kindness, but, the more people that knows about my alchemy skills, the less benefits will Madam Tang receive from me.

Thinking about this, Tang Feng gets what he means. If everyone in the

Ye clan knows about this, then who knows how many people would go to him for pills. At that time, will she be able to get any?

"Then what do you want?" Little did she know, she had already fallen into Ye Zifeng's trap.

Ye Zifeng revealed a cold smile, "If madam Tang can help me keep this secret, and also help me buy ingredients secretly, then I, Ye Zifeng can promise to give you 100 gold coins a month...."

"A hundred gold coins?" Tang Feng gasped. Her allowance was only around 50 gold coins a month and now Ye Zifeng can promise to give her a hundred gold coins? This is a large sum of money so of course she was surprised. Also, this is indeed a benefit that can be obtained only if she kept his secret.

Hearing all this, Ye Xueyi pulled Tang Feng over to the side and said, "Mother, you should do what brother wants you to do. However, don't forget to give me some money too so I can buy some perfume!"

Tang Feng gently poked her daughter's forehead and sighed, "You.... Always doing what your brother tells you to do..."

Ye Xueyi stuck out her to

ngue and revealed a cute expression.

Tang Feng felt something wrong saying that. Didn't she tell Xueyi to not call this guy her brother? How come she's the one saying that right now?

Ye Zifeng stood there and smiled, "So how about it madam Tang? Do you want it or not?"

After deliberating for a bit, she nodded.

Tang Feng who was someone that loved money was the type of person that Ye Zifeng loved dealing with. It was very direct. If you give her something, she'll do something for you in return. You only need to trust the other party. If he was able to hand her a hundred gold coins every month, then she'll continue to keep her promise.

.....

It was getting late so Ye Zifeng sent Tang Feng and Ye Xueyi off. Ye Zifeng was inside the cellar by himself again.

After giving Tang Feng a Golden Marrow Pill, Ye Zifeng still had two left. His plan had been carefully planned out since the beginning.

Although the Golden Marrow Pill can help raise one's cultivation by quite an amount, it can't be overdosed in a short amount of time, or else the body will implode. The effects will also receed every time you use it.

"Let's try one and see how it goes." Ye Zifeng licked the pill once again.

In a split second, his heart felt like it was about to explode. Pain exploded throughout his meridians and he received a massive headache. In the span of a second, he went from standing perfectly still to rolling all over the floor.

He felt an enormous amount of energy was weaving around inside of his body. It had exploded from his dantian and have scattered all over his body.

Although he was in pain, he saw that the red lines on his arms began to glow.

Could it be that his Martial Spirit was able to absorb the Golden Marrow Pill's power?

Martial Spirits usually have a fixed power. For example, when someone reaches the Martial Disciple realm, their five elements of yin yang would awake. Some would feel that their strength increase by several folds, others might suddenly have the ability to control animals. Everyone's abilities depends on their martial spirits. However, no matter what type of ability someone has, if the martial spirit is dead, it would never grow and change, much less absorb energy from a pill.

"Fine. If you want to absorb the energy from this Golden Marrow Pill then I'll feed it to you!" The golden light around Ye Zifeng's dantian slowly moved towards his arms.

When it reached his arms, Ye Zifeng couldn't help but scream in pain. The red lines on his arms started glowing very brightly.

The essence from the pill divided itself into strands and entered the red lines. His entire arm became bright and translucent to the point where his bones and veins could be seen. The light then started flickering as the lines started to expand.

Ye Zifeng felt a surge of energy. The essence energy from the pill gathered at the center of his palm. After a few seconds, it transformed into the shape of his hand, floating above his palm.

“Boom.” Unable to control himself, the essence energy flew out like an arrow into a metal plate. After releasing the essence, Ye Zifeng felt the energy slowly dissipating from his body

The hard and sturdy metal plate bursted into pieces, in the matter of seconds. Seeing how destructive the attack was, even Ye Zifeng was dumbfounded.

If this attack could do such damage on a metal plate, then what would happen if it struck a person?

This level of power is comparable to the power of a Ninth Qi Refining Stage expert. However, Ye Zifeng was able to use an attack like this.

After firing this one attack, no matter how much he tried, he couldn’t release another one. He couldn’t help but stare at his arms.

“Could it be? Is this the power that the mysterious spirit said that he would lend me?”

Ye Zifeng still had some doubts. How did he release such an incredible attack?

At this time, he realized what he had done and hit his head.

“Wait……My martial spirit absorbed all the energy from the Golden Marrow Pill but my I, myself didn’t receive anything…..”

He took out the last Golden Marrow Pill and used it. If it was before, he would never try to use two pills in such a short amount of time. It was too risky. But now, since the martial spirit absorbed everything from the last pill, it was as if he never used it.

The essence energy once again appeared and condensed in his dantain.

This time, instead of gathering all the energy in his arms, he spread it throughout his entire body to refine himself. He was completely confident that after absorbing all the energy, he would definitely breakthrough to the fourth stage of qi refining.

But then, right when Ye Zifeng was absorbing the energy from the pill, all the energy started to flow towards his arms. He was unable to control this.

Ye Zifeng's arms became translucent once again. However it was different from before. Only his veins were clearly seen this time.

With strange movements, the essence energy began to twist and mix itself with his veins and meridians.

Just before, no matter how hard Ye Zifeng tried, he couldn't make the palm shaped energy appear. And now it's appearing again. However, this time, the energy was black and was filled with death qi. Just looking at it would make people shiver.

This time around, Ye Zifeng was very cautious after seeing this death qi. If this thing struck out by itself again, the entire cellar might blow up.

He resisted the pain and slowly walked towards the windows. When he confirmed that there was no one around, he released the energy into the open.

Ye Zifeng watched carefully as the attack traveled across the openness and hit a very thick and tall pine tree. In just a second, the entire green tree was enveloped by a dark energy. The tree began to wither and the leaves started to fall. It looked as if the entire tree had been burnt, twisted and curled up. In the end, it finally became a dead tree and collapsed.

Ye Zifeng was shocked. This power was too strong. That's why that trash couldn't train at all. Let's not talk about his weak body, but not even a normal person would be able to train with such a spirit inside of him. If he actually trained to the martial disciple realm, then who knows how strong he'll become.

Wait……something was not right. He suddenly remembered something. He just used his second Golden Marrow Pill but half the energy was absorbed by the spirit…… Wouldn't that mean that he was stuck and was unable to breakthrough?

He concentrated and checked his own cultivation. After a while, he let out a long sigh. It seems like this martial spirit was full and had left some energy for his body.

He had only reached the peak of the third stage of qi refining.

Chapter 7: Feeling Proud and Satisfied

The Ashen Spirit Sect is the one of the most famous cultivating sects in Leizhou City. Many of the high ranking officials and nobles would try to enroll their children into the sect. This was because the sect has many peak stage martial disciple realm teachers along with three peak stage martial practitioner elders. To learn under such experts would not only help the children grow faster but also establish a firm foundation for them.

Today, the sect's battle arena was starting to bustle.

This was because the trash young master Ye and Wang Lin was going to battle today. If it was a simple battle, it wouldn't have garnered so many spectators. However there was a bet involved. Whoever loses, they would have to get on their knees and kowtow to the winner. Although the Ye clan was in decline, they were still one of the major powerhouses in Leizhou city. Everyone looked forward to when they crash and burn. This time, everyone wanted to see how the useless good for nothing young master of the Ye clan will bow down and kowtow to Wang Lin.

Before Ye Zifeng arrived, a few of Wang Lin's friends were chatting with him.

"Brother Lin, do you think that good for nothing turned crazy from all the beating we gave him? As a trash in the second qi refining stage, he actually challenged you, someone with a cultivation in the fourth qi refining stage to a battle."

"That's not it. I heard that that trash offended his father in someway and was locked up in the cellar for three days."

"He was locked up for three days? Heh. That trash really is trash. Even his family members don't like him." Wang Lin smiled coldly without a hint of worry.

He had originally thought that Ye Zifeng would have some sort of fortuitous encounter or had some special tactics up his sleeves. But from the looks of it now, he was worrying for nothing.

He was locked up in the cellar for three whole days. What else can be come up with?

“Brother Lin, that good for nothing still isn’t here. Do you think that he got scared and ran away?”

Wang Lin laughed loudly, “That’s not impossible. Who would’ve thought that that trash still had common sense. He knows he can’t beat me so he ran away. Atleast he didn’t lose even more face for the Ye clan.”

“Aiii. Let’s go. Let’s go.....We know that Ye Zifeng was trash but who would’ve thought that he was also a coward.” A spectator shook his head.

At that moment, a faint fragrance appeared and the people who were about to leave stopped their movements and looked at the two people who approached the stage.

“Who dares call my brother a coward?” Ye Xueyi casted an angry look at all the spectators. As a cultivator at the eighth stage of qi refining, she was one of the like a goddess amongst commoners in the outer court of the school.

At that time, everyone was silent. No one suggested anything about leaving anymore.

“Ye Xueyi?” Wang Lin had a complicated look in his eyes. He was not afraid of Ye Zifeng but Ye Xueyi was a problem for him.

Wang Lin coldly looked at Ye Zifeng, “This is a battle between the two of us. Why did you bring your sister?”

Ye Zifeng smiled slightly, “What’s wrong with bringing her over? Could it be that you’re scared?.... Don’t worry though. She knows the rules of the battle arena, so you can be relieved. She only came to watch the battle, and won’t interfere at all.”

“Brother.... Let’s leave. You can’t beat him. Let me.....” Ye Xueyi had a worried look in her eyes. She wanted to beat this Wang Lin up herself.

“Sis, go sit down by that tree and watch.”

Seeing that her brother was determined, she let out a sigh and said,

“okay” and then walked to the side.

In the martial spirit continent, people respected martial way. They were in the battle arena of a sect and thus as long as there wasn’t a life threatening event, outsides should not interfere at all. For the bets placed beforehand, no one should have any objections regardless of the outcome.

“Good.” Wang Lin smiled. In his eyes, as long as Ye Xueyi doesn’t interfere, the match is already settled.

“I’m thinking that you’ve never came to the battle arena so let me give you some advice. There’s a special weapon room with many different kinds of weapons. You can go and choose one. After picking one that you like, then come and fight me.” Wang Lin waved his hands and pointed towards the armory.

“And you won’t be using a weapon?” Ye Zifeng asked.

Wang Lin smiled, “Fighting against you, do I really need a weapon?”

Ye Zifeng smiled back at him, “Okay. If you don’t need one, then I won’t use one either. Let’s start. We have to finish quickly. My family wants me to go home early tonight. They were talking about having some sort of important dinner so I need to be quick.”

“YOU!” Wang Lin was angry. What Ye Zifeng said basically meant that he was looking down on him. What do f*ck does he mean by finish quickly.

“You.... trash. Ye Zifeng, I’ll beat you up until all your teeth falls out!”

One of the spectators shook his head towards Ye Zifeng.

“This Ye Zifeng really did go crazy. As a trash in the second stage of qi refining, he dares to talk with Wang Lin like this?”

“Brother Lin, the rules state that you can’t kill him. You should cripple him instead!”

“Bullsh*t. That Ye Zifeng’ is already crippled. How else do you want Brother Lin to cripple him?”

The entire audience erupted into laughter. It seems like Wang Lin really

have to cripple this guy even more.

"To give your sister face, this time I'll only break three of your ribs!"

A hint of might flashed in Ye Zifeng's eyes, "You'll need some abilities if you want to hurt me. Come at me."

Ye Zifeng was a Martial Lord expert in his past life. He has countless amount of battle experience under his belt. This nobody like Wang Lin was not even worth his energy.

"Good. Good. Good!" Wang Lin repeatedly said. He was angry to the max, "It seems this this one has to beat that weak body of yours until it breaks!"

Wang Lin leapt into the air, Qi exploded out of his body. He's already in the fourth stage of Qi refining and thus he was able to control a tiny amount of his qi energy.

"Die!"

His fist struck out like wind straight towards Ye Zifeng's face. In all the spectator's minds, if the strike hits, then Ye Zifeng would definitely be gravely injured. On the side, Ye Xueyi closed her eyes, unwilling to watch.

However, the thing that they had all expected didn't happen.

Ye Zifeng took a step the the side and sent out a palm strike. When his palm struck Wang Lin's fist, the power in Wang Lin's fists completely dissipated. It looked as if Wang Lin's fist was made of cotton or something.

The spectators were all surprised, especially those who were badmouthing Ye Zifeng the hardest. They were all speechless. Even those experts from the inner courts who came to pass some time were shocked. Wasn't Ye Zifeng's cultivation at the second stage of qi refining?

"Ye Zifeng.... What.. What did he just do? How come brother Lin didn't send him flying in a punch? Their cultivations are about two whole stages apart!"

Ye Zifeng stood firmly and smiled as he held tightly onto Wang Lin's

fist.

“Hey brother Lin, you’re holding back too much! Finish this trash off quickly.”

“Yeah. Come on brother Lin. Did you only use a few percent of your strength? Against some trash like this, you shouldn’t even try to hold back!”

At that time, Wang Lin was the most surprised and stunned one out of everyone. They can all see that his fists had landed on Ye Zifeng’s palm but what they didn’t know was that he had used all his strength. He wasn’t holding back at all.

His face started to become nervous. No matter how hard he tried, he couldn’t get his fist out of Ye Zifeng’s iron grasp.

“You!” Wang Lin looked at Ye Zifeng with a face filled with surprise. It was as if Ye Zifeng was a completely different person.

Ye Zifeng continued to smile, “They asked if you heard them or now. Why aren’t you using your full strength? Didn’t you want to beat me up until all my teeth falls out?”

Ye Zifeng tightened his grasp causing Wang Lin to groan in pain.

At the same time, Wang Lin stared fiercely at Ye Zifeng. His other hand filled up with qi energy. He was about to unleash his ultimate technique.

“That’s brother Lin’s Wind Splitting Fist!”

“To make brother Lin this angry, that Ye clan’s trash young master is finished.”

However, Ye Zifeng repeated what he did before. He extended his other palm out to receive Wang Lin’s Wind Splitting Fist. Before anyone could see the Wind Splitting Fist’s power, Wang Lin’s fist was caught by Ye Zifeng.

The entire crowd was silent and dumbfounded. Even the few experts who were watching were shocked.

When Ye Zifeng stopped the first punch, everyone had thought that

Wang Lin was holding back. But now, Ye Zifeng easily stopped Wang Lin's Wind Splitting Fist. This made everyone's jaws drop. Ye Xueyi's eyes were glistening, and was cheering for Ye Zifeng on the side. Seeing what had happened, she felt as if she was about to cry. This was because the brother who had been called trash his entire life was fighting on par with Wang Lin. This made her really proud and satisfied.

"What the hell are you doing using that Wind Splitting Fist or whatever you call it so close to me. Did you want to kill me?" Ye Zifeng chuckled coldly. At the same time, he tightened the grasp on both his hands until a crackling sound could be heard.

In the silent arena, the sound vibrated throughout the entire stadium.

"Ahhh!" Feeling that the bones in his fist had shattered, Wang Lin cried painfully.

"Brother Lin!"

Everyone who was watching could not believe what was happening. Just shortly after the battle had started, both of Wang Lin's hands were crippled by Ye Zifeng. From the looks of it, not only can Ye Zifeng beat Wang Lin who was who stages above him but his method is also very cruel. The Ye Zifeng standing in front of them was someone completely different from the Ye Zifeng that they knew. How can this guy be trash?

"Ye Zifeng. I'm gonna kill you!" Wang Lin was rolling on the floor in pain. Both of his hands were crippled by Ye Zifeng. This will definitely slow down and cause problems his road of cultivation in the future.

"Hmph." Ye Zifeng stared at Wang Lin without any emotions. This kind of nobody. No matter no you treat them, they will always come back for you. There are some things that you should do and some things that you shouldn't. Wang Lin had offended Ye Zifeng and he suffered the consequences.

"Before you kill me, there's something that you need to do." Ye Zifeng's voice was cold.

"What.... What do I need to do?"

Ye Zifeng walked towards him slowly and crouched down in front of him, “Do you still remember our bet? Do I have to remind you what the loser has to do?”

“Ye Zifeng.... You want me to....” Wang Lin was shocked. If he had to kneel down and kowtow to this trash Ye Zifeng, then he won’t be able to lift his head up in front of people anymore.

In front of the audience, Ye Zifeng laughed, “Come on. Didn’t we agree on it? I still need to get back and eat dinner. I don’t want to waste anymore time here with you.”

He then looked back at Wang Lin and smiled, “Oh yeah, If i’m not satisfied with the way you kowtow, it doesn’t count. You have to bow until I’m satisfied.....”

“You! You’re asking for too much!” Wang Lin stared at Ye Zifeng. After saying that, he fainted from being so angry.

“Brother Lin! Brother Lin!”

“Brother Lin! Wake up!”

Ye Zifeng stared at him coldly and then turned around, not wanting to look at Wang Lin anymore.

“Xueyi, let’s go home....”

Chapter 8: The Liu clan breaks off the engagement!

“Brother! What was that move you used against Wang Lin called? It’s so strong. Super cool!”

On the road back, Ye Xueyi continuously talked excitedly. Since she was little, she had wished that her brother would get rid of his nickname as a trash. Today, her wish had finally come true.

Ye Zifeng casually explained, “In the Qi Refining realm, utilizing your qi energy efficiently is the key to winning any battle. It doesn’t matter how much qi one has or how strong is one’s qi, if they cannot use it correctly in battle, it is useless. If you give a child a priceless treasure sword, they might not be able to harm anyone. On the other hand, if you give an expert a bamboo stick, they can easily massacre an army.

“So then what you mean is that Wang Lin is a child while you, brother Zifeng is an expert?” Ye Xueyi was startled. This was the first time she had heard her brother talk about martial arts.

Ye Zifeng only smiled, “I’m only using an example.” From his point of view, Wang Lin didn’t have no priceless treasure sword and he wasn’t using no bamboo stick either.

“Brother, I feel like you’ve completely changed as a person!”

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “Then do you think that I’ve changed for the good or for the bad?”

“Of course it’s for the good! Back then you’re always being bullied by others. It makes me worry for you everyday. Now, I can relax a bit.”

Ye Zifeng felt warmth in his heart. He can see that his sister has a lot of talent. If it wasn’t for the fact that she’s been worrying about that other Ye Zifeng and delayed her training, she would have probably reached the Martial Disciple realm and have her own Martial Spirit already.

The two people laughed and joked as they walked home. Without

realizing it, they had already reached the doors to their house.

"Young master, Young miss, where have you been? This old servant Du has been waiting for you guys the entire day!" Housekeeper Du had been standing by the doors waiting for them to return since the afternoon.

Ye Xueyi looked at the sky, and was confused, "Housekeeper Du, it's not that late. Didn't father say that we have an important dinner at night? It shouldn't be time yet."

Housekeeper Du hurriedly explained, "It seems like the master haven't talk to you guys yet. He has something to do so he won't be able to be here tonight."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Really? If that's so then I won't attend the dinner tonight either."

Housekeeper Du quickly blocked Zifeng's path, "You can't do that. You're the main character of tonight's dinner! The Liu clan's second miss, Liu Ningzi was engaged to you even before you were born! The master invited the Liu clan here tonight to talk about the wedding."

"What?!?" Both Ye Zifeng and Ye Xueyi yelled out in surprise.

"When was brother engaged? How come I don't know about it?"

"I'm engaged with someone? How come I don't know about it myself?" Ye Zifeng couldn't stay calm at all. He wanted to marry someone that he liked. As an orphan in his past life, he didn't have any problems regarding arranged marriages.

Housekeeper Du laughed bitterly, "Let's go to the hall first. The master isn't here and the Liu clan has been waiting. If we're any slower, it will cause problems."

Ye Zifeng could only nod and quickly followed housekeeper Du with Ye Xueyi.

As expected, when they entered the hall, it was already filled with people. Not only was the entire Ye clan present, but there were three

people from the Liu clan here.

There was a peerless beauty standing in the middle of the hall. Her light colored dress floated as she walked across the hall, giving off a natural sense of beauty. Next to her was a finely dressed young man holding a gold treasure sword. He looked very arrogant as if everyone else was beneath him. Behind them was an old man. He was standing in the shadows, giving off the aura of an expert.

Ye Zifeng could see that without Ye Chongtian, the entire atmosphere of the clan was a bit rigid.

"Is that Ye Zifeng coming or not? Liu Ningzi and I have been waiting for quite a while now. Our Liu clan is very busy you know!" The young man was very impatient and yelled out.

Without Ye Chongtian, no one would dare talk back to the young man. Housekeeper Du wanted to say a few words, but he was not a member of the Ye family. He was asking for it if he opened his mouth.

"The people of your Liu clan can be busy but the people of our Ye family can't?" Ye Xueyi yelled back as she walked in with Ye Zifeng.

"You!" The young man wanted to curse, but Ye Xueyi wasn't someone that he could offend. She was the most beloved and talented person in the entire Ye clan. Since he's at the Ye clan's estate, he can't do whatever he wants. He looked around and can already feel dozen pairs of eyes staring at him.

"You're Ye Zifeng?" Liu Ningzi looked at Zifeng. Seeing how weak and fragile his body was, her eyes showed a hint of disgust.

"It is I." Ye Zifeng calmly replied. In these few days, he had already experienced many looks of disgust due to his nickname as a trash.

"You've come at the right time." Liu Ningzi said coldly. "Even if the Ye clan's master isn't here, the reason I came here was for you."

"If you have something to say, say it now. Don't beat around the bush." Ye Zifeng was not amused.

“Fine. Then let’s talk about our engagement.” Saying that, everyone who was in the hall’s face changed.

Liu Ningzi smiled and looked at everyone, “Ye Zifeng and I were engaged twenty years ago, even before we were born. At that time, the Ye clan still had great power and was still considered one of Leizhou City’s three great clans. But now,.....” She chuckled, “Now, after giving birth to this trash Ye Zifeng, the Ye clan has fallen. I’m afraid that the Ye clan isn’t even considered a large clan anymore.”

Tang Feng coldly rebutted, “It’s not up to you to decide whether the Ye clan is a large clan or not!”

Tang Feng had been in the Ye family for many years now and have already considered it to be her home. Plus, her relationship with Ye Zifeng had improved in the past few days. While helping the Ye clan, she also put up a few good words for Ye Zifeng so she would get some more benefits from him.

Housekeeper Du pulled Tang Feng over to the side and apologetically smiled, “Miss Liu, about the engagement.... We should talk about it over the banquet tonight.”

Seeing how the master had asked him to watch over the banquet tonight, housekeeper Du could only swallow his anger and make sure nothing happens. This was because if Liu Ningzi marries into the Ye family, the Ye family would receive help from then and once again rise in power.

Liu Ningzi coldly smiled, “No need. The reason Yige and I came early wasn’t for the banquet. It was to make things clear.”

(TL: Yige is probably the young man.)

Having experience from his previous life, Ye Zifeng knew what Liu Ningzi was talking about about. She looked down on the Ye family and wanted to part ways with them.

“Just say what you want now. Don’t waste everyone’s time by beating around the bush.” Ye Zifeng replied.

Liu Ningzi continued to smile, “Then I wanna ask young master Ye if we can cancel our engagement?”

Once she said this, everyone was shocked.

Housekeeper Du was afraid that the master would blame him for this and apologetically said, “Miss Liu, could it be that someone from the Ye family have offended you any any way and caused a misunderstanding? You can tell me about it and we will take care of anything.”

“No. There isn’t a misunderstanding. I’m saying this clearly. I want to cancel the engagement. If you don’t understand what I’m saying, maybe I should write down these words for you.”

A woman who took the initiative to cancel an engagement would means that the woman had divorced the man. Once this news spreads in Leizhou city, Ye Zifeng would lose all his face. He wouldn’t even be able to go out of his room anymore from all the embarassment.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “Miss Liu, you say that we have an engagement but I’ll ask you this, where is the engagement contract?

“The contract is.....it’s.....” Liu Ningzi couldn’t respond. She only heard about this from her father just a few days ago. Once she heard that it was with the trash Ye Zifeng, she immediately came over to cancel the engagement without asking for the details. She didn’t even know if there was a written contract or not.”

Ye Zifeng continued to shake his head, “If there is no contract then it’s obviously a joke between the two clan masters from twenty years ago. And to think that you would actually believe it. What engagement are you canceling here? Unless..... You came to the Ye clan to make trouble out of nothing.”

Liu Yige couldn’t hold it in anymore and yelled out, “You trash of Ye clan, who do you think you are. How dare you speak to my junior sister apprentice like that?”

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and rebutted, “Junior sister apprentice? So that’s the relationship that you guys have. You’re not even an official member of

the Liu clan and you still dare to make a scene in the Ye clan?"

Ye Zifeng was right. His statement hit Liu Yige in a soft spot. He was adopted by the Liu clan, so he basically had no status.

Liu Yige could not find the words to fight back and thus relied on his strength, "Ye Zifeng, are you looking to die? You're nothing but an ant to me and you still dare talk back to me?"

Who knows how many times Ye Zifeng have heard this phrase after crossing over. A hint of anger flashed in his eyes and he noted down this man called Liu Yige. When he returns to the peak of the world, he will definitely step on this guy.

Liu Ningzi couldn't hold it in anymore either and yelled out, "Now listen Ye Zifeng, even if my senior brother is not a part of the Liu clan, he is already a sixth qi refining stage expert. Compared to you, a second qi refining stage, someone who will never awaken their martial spirit kind of trash, he his infinitely better than you."

"Calling someone who is in the sixth qi refining stage an expert? Are you trying to make me laugh my a** off?"

Ye Chen, Ye Zifeng's uncle looked over at him, "Okay stop stalking. You're a trash in the second qi refining stage, you don't have the qualifications to talk with them. You can go back to your cellar and we'll take care of business here." His second uncle, Ye Chen, was the one who usually take care of things in the clan when Ye Chongtian was absent.

"Yeah. The people from the Liu clan are right. You're the bad luck charm of our Ye clan. You've ruined our entire clan and still want to talk back to others?" Ye Huichi looked at Zifeng with and spoke with a mocking tone.

He is Ye Zifeng's younger cousin. Although his cultivation was not high, he was still at the 5th qi refining realm and would occasionally go and make fun of Zifeng.

Watching this, Liu Ningzi was amused, "Then how about this, we know that it's rude to suddenly cancel the engagement and to give face to your clan, we bought a special pill over as a gift to make things even. I hope

that this will compensate for everything."

"Old Wu, bring it out....."

"Yes, second miss." The old man who was standing in the shadows coughed and retrieved a black box from his sleeves and opened it up.

"I'm afraid that you guys have not seen this pill before. This is a rare pill called....." Liu Ningzi explained.

At that time, Ye Zifeng blurted out, "Solid Yuan Pill!"

Chapter 9: I'll teach you how to act like a person!

It was silent. The entire place was filled with silence.

Everyone looked at each other, not knowing what to say. Finally, it was the people from the Ye clan who finally opened their mouth.

"You bad luck trash, what are you saying? Don't start spewing bullsh*t and make our clan lose face again."

"Yeah. The second miss already said that this was a rare pill. How would a shut-in loser like you know what kind of pill this is?"

Ye Chen continued, "Housekeeper Du, please bring Zifeng into the cellar. We can't have him act all crazy and spew bullsh*t in front of our guests." As the second in charge, his words had some power in it. The servants all began to make their move.

"Hold on a moment." There was a hint of surprise in Liu Ningzi's tone.

"How.... how did you know that this is a solid yuan pill?" Even the old man next to her was shocked.

This solid yuan pill is a high grade pill that is used by a martial soul realm expert. No one in the entire Leizhou city has even seen this before. Even Liu Ningzi had never heard about this until recently. She had wanted to use this as a gift for Ye Chongtian to dissolve the engagement.

Liu Yige felt that something was wrong. He looked all around the box.

"That's not right. There's nothing written here at all. How did this guy know what it is by looking at it."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "This isn't some high quality pill so it's not hard to tell what it is. Also, just by looking at the color of this pill, you can tell that it is poorly made. It's not even at the level of a huang level pill. From what I can see, it can only be considered a common pill.

"A common pill? How can he tell by looking at it?"

The entire hall was silent once again. Even though Tang Feng and Ye Xueyi knew that Zifeng was proficient in the way of alchemy, they were still shocked.

The old man Wu stared at Zifeng, “Little brother, I’ll acknowledge that you have some abilities to know what kind of pill this is. However, this is a genuine huang tier pill. On what basis are you devaluing the pill on?

Liu Yige chuckled, “Old Wu, why are you being so polite with this trash. He got lucky and was able to guess the name and now he wants to undermine us. Don’t talk rubbish with him.”

Ye Zifeng let out a small laugh, “If you guys want to cancel the engagement, then do what you what. It’s your choice. However, if you want to use this mere pill as a gift and look down on us, then I, Ye Zifeng would rather not have it!”

“Ye Zifeng, shut the hell up you shameless bastard!” Liu Yige couldn’t hold in his anger anymore and started to yell at him.

Ye Chen also coldly stared at Ye Zifeng, “Look at you, mr.big shot. They’re giving us a strong yuan pill and yet you rejected them. Let me ask you this: can you represent the whole ye clan in making this decision?”

“I can’t.” Ye Zifeng replied simply.

Ye Chen’s face frowned while Ye Zifeng glared back with a sharp look.

“Don’t tell me that you can?” Ye Zifeng rebutted.

“ Ye! Zi! Feng!” Ye Chen’s face turned bright red. He was really angry now.

“This matter regards MY marriage, and I’ll handle it MYSELF. I’ll be direct with you all. If you want to use this pill as an apology gift, I won’t accept it.” With his experiences in his past life, Ye Zifeng spoke with prestige. If he really wanted to get angry, then everyone in the hall would probably be pressured by his imposing manner.

Liu Yige angrily looked at Ye Zifeng, “You’re only a trash and yet you’re going against our Liu family? How undisciplined. And you dare talk back

to you second uncle!"

Ye Zifeng looked at Yige amusingly and wanted to see what else this kid has up his sleeves.

Yige looked over at Ye Chen and smiled, "Ye clan's second uncle, if this guy doesn't want the pill, we can give it to you. Please allow me take care of this problem and teach that trash a lesson."

Hearing that they were going to gift him the pill, Ye Chen felt really happy, however he still had a hint of anger in his expression, "This... Ye Zifeng is still a part of our family, if you do something like this....."

Ye Xueyi couldn't take it anymore either and walked out, "Uncle, Brother Zifeng is a part of our family. Why aren't you helping him but some outsider instead?

Ye Chen turned around and crossed his arms, "This kid is very rude and offended our guests. It is only natural that they disciplined him."

"Uncle!"

Tang Feng quickly pulled Xueyi back and warned her, "This matter has nothing to do with you. Just stand there and watch the show. Don't go and do anything crazy."

"Mother, why are you like this too?" Ye Xueyi was not pleased.

Ye Zifeng turned towards Xueyi and said, "Xueyi, listen to you mother and stand back for now. That Yige had just reached the sixth qi refining stage and his cultivation is very unstable. His actual strength is probably only at the peak of fifth qi refining stage."

However, even by saying that, he wasn't sure how the power of his third stage of qi refining will match up with Yige's fifth stage. He only said that to Xueyi to calm her down a bit.

Originally, after getting Ye Chen to agree to the battle, Liu Yige felt very happy. But now, after hearing what Ye Zifeng just said, he felt like Ye Zifeng was looking down on him.

"So what if my strength is only at the peak of the fifth stage. Against

someone in the second stage like you, I can still toy with you." After saying that, he tightened his muscles and it looked as if he bulked up quite a bit.

Ye Xueyi knows that her brother probably has the strength of a fourth stage qi refiner after beating Wang Lin, but if his opponent is at the fifth stage, especially at the peak of the fifth stage, then it will be very dangerous for him

"I'm gonna beat the cr*p out of you!" Both of Yige's eyes widened as qi gathered under his feet. He unleashed an explosive power and charged towards Ye Zifeng.

"Bang!" Two fists collided and both Ye Zifeng and Liu Yige stumbled backwards.

Ye Zifeng stumbled ten whole steps before stopping while Liu Yige took three steps backward.

Ye Zifeng wasn't feeling so good. Challenging someone two stages above him was a bit too much, Even if his skills and technique were superior, it was still hard for him. However, Liu Yige was even more shocked. He had used all his strength in that punch and wanted to send Ye Zifeng flying. But instead, Ye Zifeng received the punch and he himself moved back three steps.

Ye Huichi was startled and looked at Ye Chen, "Father, is that trash Ye Zifeng only at the 2nd stage of qi refining? I feel like that even i couldn't have taken that punch head on at all."

Ye Chen's face turned very ugly, "You're asking me? Who am I gonna ask? It's possible that Liu kid held back.

It wasn't only the Ye clan who was shocked but the people that came from the Liu clan was shocked as well.

Liu Ningzi angrily yelled out, "Yige, if you want to make a move then do it. Why are you holding back so much? You're representing the entire Liu family right now!"

Liu Yige laughed bitterly in his heart. He wanted to say 'I didn't hold back', but with so many people watching him, how could he go and lose

face like that? If he said that he used all his strength and can only tie with that trash from the ye clan, then wouldn't he be considered trash too?

"You've forced my hands Ye Zifeng!" A vicious look flashed in Liu Yige's eyes. His arms dropped down like dead weights and became completely black.

Ye Xueyi couldn't help but turn pale, "Not good! This is the Jade body technique that can only be used when one reaches the sixth qi refining stage! It seems like that guy is going to fight for real now."

Even without Xueyi's comments, Ye Zifeng could feel how strong the technique is. When everyone saw this they were surprised. However, Ye Zifeng didn't flinch at all.

He wiped the blood from his mouth and started to gather all his qi energy into his arms.

"It's no use!" Liu Yige coldly smiled. He flew towards Ye Zifeng like a cannonball. In a flash, he appeared before Ye Zifeng and struck out his fist.

In the end, even though the two were two whole stages apart, Yi Zifeng usage of condensed qi was able to cancel out Liu Yige's punch.

However, Zifeng was forced back many steps until he reached the wall. Liu Yige immediately took advantage of this seeing that Ye Zifeng had nowhere to run. Yige flew towards Zifeng at high speed and sent out three consecutive kicks. Zifeng was barely able to dodge all three kicks, all of which left holes in the wall.

Ye Zifeng's expression turned cold, "You really want to kill me huh? Don't go to far!"

"So what if I kill you?" Liu Yige said that he wouldn't hold back anymore and used all the strength that he had. If he didn't go all out from the beginning, Ye Zifeng might mount a few sneak attacks and by then, he would become a laughing stock when he returns home. To be hit by someone who was two stages lower than him, it would be very embarrassing.

Ye Chen and the other Ye clan members only watched and didn't try to stop the battle at all. They were all eager to see how Ye Zifeng would die in Liu Yige's hands. When that happens, the Liu family would probably have to give a few more gifts to him as an apology. This way, even that good for nothing will be able to help the Ye clan out.

Ye Zifeng nodded and his eyes turned cold, "Fine. If you want to kill me so much, then I don't have anything to worry about. If everything goes well, I might be able to complete my new technique after testing it out on you."

"What?" Liu Yige was confused.

While watching Ye Zifeng, Liu Ningzi felt that something was wrong and couldn't help but say, "Senior brother, let's stop now. This is still the Ye clan's territory."

"Stop now? Junior sister, the show is just starting!" Liu Yige's expression was filled with killing intent. At that time, he was already very furious. He had wanted to slap the cr*p out of Ye Zifeng.

In terms of speed, Ye Zifeng was unable to match Liu Yige at all. Thus, Liu Yige was able to grab Zifeng by his sides. Three stripes of blood appeared on Zifeng's shirt. That wasn't all. After grabbing Zifeng, Liu Yige struck him in the arm, creating another three stripes of blood to seep out.

"Brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi was worried and yelled out.

However, even though he was being hit, Zifeng didn't try to run or even dodge. He used this opportunity to grab Liu Yige by the shoulders with his left hand and lightly moved his right forward. If one looked carefully, one would be able to see a small clear black death qi on Zifeng's palm. When it struck Liu Yige, everyone was shocked.

"You!" Even before Liu Yige realized it, his entire body felt like it was struck by a giant hammer and was sent flying. Blood splurted out from his mouth onto the ceiling like an arrow.

Chapter 10: You want to threaten me? You're not worthy!

"Senior brother!" Liu Ningzi's charming face turned pale. She immediately ran towards Liu Yige and checked his pulse to make sure he was okay. Even after confirming that he was okay, she was still worried.

"Old Wu, take some Qi Replenishing pills out." Liu Ningzi commanded. That old man wu quickly obeyed. He retrieved the pill from his sleeves and quickly fed it to Liu Yige.

After being knocked out by Ye Zifeng's attack, he slowly recovered after taking the pill.

"Ye Zifeng! What kind of demonic technique did you use against me!"

Liu Yige had used too much strength to yell and his wound suddenly opened up again. He was in an immeasurable amount of pain. He felt a sweet taste in his throat and then he suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Senior brother, your injuries aren't light. Rest for now." Liu Ningzi patted his back to help him soothe out the blood in his throat.

That move that Ye Zifeng had just used. Don't even mention Liu Yige who was in the qi refining stage, even Ye Chen, a martial disciple who had awakened his martial spirit felt that it was weird. The move that Ye Zifeng had used was so abnormal. It looked like a martial technique but it wasn't one. A normal technique would not have such a large destructive power. It looked like an attack from a martial spirit. However, normal people can not awaken their martial spirit while they are in the qi refining stage and thus Liu Yige believed that it was some sort of demonic technique.

Ye Zifeng coldly laughed, "Demonic Technique? Don't make me laugh. You couldn't beat me so now you're saying that I used some demonic technique? Saying that, don't you feel embarrassed?

"You!" Liu Yige wanted to open his mouth but his anger overflowed, causing him to have trouble breathing. Ye Zifeng's attack had hit him in

the torso area and even now the black qi had not dissipated.

Seeing this, Liu Ningzi's expression turned cold and looked at Ye Zifeng, "Ye Zifeng, you were too aggressive! I, Ningzi will remember that you've harmed my senior brother today! The Liu family will not let this matter go!"

A glorious light flashed in Ye Zifeng's eyes as he coldly smiled back, "So what? Who cares if you won't let this matter go. I'll do whatever I want." Although Ye Zifeng had crossed over into this trash's body, he was still a martial lord in his previous life. He was already used to being arrogant and unyielding. He wouldn't let this nobody push him around with words at all.

Liu Ningzi wanted to threaten him? She's not worthy to do so!

Ye Chen looked gloomy and yelled out, "Ye Zifeng! You've hurt the people from the Liu clan, no matter what, you should at least give an apology. You're being too outrageous!"

The fallen Ye clan and the Liu clan. The difference between the two clans were too large. Using the fact that Ye Chongtian was not present, the members of the Ye clan had wanted to win favors from the Liu clan. If anything were to happen, these clan members hoped that the Liu clan would stand behind them and give them some benefits.

Hearing these words, Ye Zifeng was angry, "When I hurt him, you want me to apologize. But if he had hurt me or even kill me, what would you guys do? All of you guys saw how vicious his attacks were before. Everyone single move had the intent to kill. If you want me to apologize under these circumstance then let me make this clear: NO! F*CKING! WAY!"

The last few words, Zifeng had deliberately say them slowly one by one. In reality, if anyone else in the second, third or even the fourth stage of qi refining were to fight in his place before, they would definitely be killed within two moves.

"This is simply preposterous!" Ye Chen fiercely slammed his fist onto a small desk, almost shattering it.

Usually, Ye Chen and the other Ye clan members saw Ye Zifeng as a punching bag. But today, they were being yelled at by Ye Zifeng. Ye Chen was so angry that his head almost went up in flames.

On the side, Ye Xueyi started to mumble, “The Liu clan is obviously in the wrong and uncle is still helping them out.”

This made Ye Chen stare at her with a fierce look but she didn’t care at all.

Tang Feng pulled her daughter’s sleeves again and gave her a look, signaling her to not talk anymore.

“About the engagement, what else do you people from the Liu clan want to talk about? If there’s nothing else, then please leave. I won’t see you out.....”

Ye Zifeng had a cold and stern look in his face as he pointed towards the doors.

Everyone who knew Ye Zifeng was shocked. That trashy young master who was bullied all the time.... When did he become like a real person?.

Ye Huichi pointed at Zifeng and started to curse at him, “When the master isn’t here, everything is decided by my father, the second in command. Who let you call the shots here? Why are you forcing our guests to leave so quickly. Can you bare the consequences for anything that will happen?”

Ye Zifeng suddenly turned around and stared at Ye Huichi with a sharp and piercing look. His mouth then curved upwards and revealed a cruel smile.

Seeing this, Ye Huichi felt scared and immediately hid behind Ye Chen.

“Who let me call the shots? I did. She is MY fiance! This is MY engagement! Who else can call the shots?” Ye Zifeng turned back and looked towards Liu Ningzi with an indifferent look.

Liu Ningzi looked at Zifeng and was astonished. She had met Ye Zifeng many times when they were children and she knew that he was a weak

and frail trash. From her point of view, Ye Zifeng would never be able to reach the martial disciple realm in his life. However, the Ye Zifeng today gave off a different feeling. Not only did he beat up her senior brother, but he dared talk back to his elders and win.

She wanted to say something but the words couldn't come out of her mouth.

"Miss Liu, please." Ye Zifeng asked them to leave once again.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng had showed the door to them, it means that he didn't want to talk with them anymore.

Liu Ningzi coldly looked at Ye Zifeng and with her eyes filled with hatred, she yelled out, "Ye Zifeng. Just wait. You'll regret what you've done today!"

"Then I'll wait for when that day comes." Ye Zifeng glared back at her.

.....

The cancelling of the engagement did not become widespread. This was because the Liu clan forced everyone to shut their mouths. If they didn't and the fact that Liu Yige, someone who is at the sixth qi refining stage, lost to the trash Ye Zifeng spreads, then the Liu clan would lose a lot of face.

As for Ye Zifeng, because he talked back to Ye Chen and Ye Chongtian did not return home yet, he was thrown back into the cellar.

.....

The next day, in the cellar.

"Before Xueyi went to the sect she made you some cake. She's afraid that you might get hungry so she asked me to bring it over for you." Tang Feng smiled, and brought the plates of cake out from her basket.

"Thank you, Madam Tang."

Ye Zifeng immediately started eating the cake and started complimenting it, "Not bad. Not bad. It seems like Xueyi is getting better and better at cooking. I can tell that she put a lot of love in making these.

Come on madam Tang, try some.

"No need, no need."

Tang Feng smiled and started to make some excuses for what happened yesterday, "Aiya.. Zifeng.... It's not like I didn't want to help you yesterday but your second uncle is the one in charge when your father isn't here. If I were to help you, I would have probably gotten punished as well."

As a woman in a large clan, she wanted to reap the benefits and not make any trouble. Tang Feng wanted to preserve her position in the clan and would not easily jeopardize her place by helping Zifeng.

"Nonsense. I understand what you mean. And also, it's pretty good here in the cellar. I don't have to see their disgusting faces at all. At least I can get some peace and quiet here.

Ye Zifeng smiled and did not put anything that happened yesterday to mind.

"You're pretty optimistic...." Tang Feng smiled and started to eat the cakes while chatting.

"To be honest, your second uncle probably locked you up because they didn't want you to train in the sect.... From what I can see, they might be a bit afraid of you."

Ye Zifeng was startled and laughed, "Scared of me? They've been calling me trash the entire time.... What's there to be scared of? They're overestimating me too much."

"You being a trash is a thing of the past. You've changed so much recently. Maybe one day, when you get older, you'll be able to surpass Ye Huichi and your older cousin Ye Hong. You might even become stronger than your second uncle as well! By then, the Ye clan will definitely be in your hands!" Tang Feng eyes shone brightly as she talked about Zifeng's future.

Ye Zifeng looked deeply into Tang Feng's eyes. He understood her meaning. Tang Feng was able to see his potential and thus stood by his side. When he becomes the next clan master, then Tang Feng, who was by

his side, will also reap the benefits.

However, he didn't mind that someone like Tang Feng was by his side. This was because they can use each other... At least until he loses all his value. But before that, Tang Feng will definitely help him in the shadows. Ye Zifeng knows his own potential better than anyone else and believes that Tang Feng will help him no matter what.

Wanting to be more clear with his intentions, Ye Zifeng calmly asked, "Madam Tang, did the Liu clan send any bad news over?"

Hearing this, Tang Feng was surprised. She knew that he wanted information and thus answered very quickly.

"There's no news from the Liu family. I believe that they don't want to make themselves lose face so they didn't spread anything out. No outsiders know about the cancelling of the engagement."

"Is that so?"

Tang Feng stopped for a bit but then continued, "This is not important. However there might be some news that might catch your interest. It's about the Ashen Spirit Sect."

"The Ashen Spirit Sect?" Ye Zifeng shook his head, "For any disciples under the fifth qi refining stage, they're all children of rich parents who fool around in groups. It is best not to mention them at all."

Tang Feng smiled, "Then how about I tell you this. Because the sect wants to encourage these troublesome disciples, they've put up missions in exchange for rewards. Some of these rewards include rare ingredients that you can't buy in stores. Are you interested now." She doesn't know how much knowledge Ye Zifeng has in alchemy, but seeing that he can make a golden marrow pill, she placed her hopes in him by telling him this piece of news.

"This.... Possibly." Hearing the words rare ingredients, Ye Zifeng became very excited. Due to the fact that he was a crazed alchemist in his past life, he is madly obsessed with rare ingredients.

In reality, the ingredients stores in Leizhou city were all too small in Ye

Zifeng's eyes. The ingredients that Ye Zifeng had wanted, the stores either lacked them or have very low quality stocks. These missions from the sect is a great opportunity for him to get some of the ingredients that he wanted.

Tang Feng continued to smile, "If you want some good missions, I can arrange them for you, but....."

Ye Zifeng smiled back and retrieved a huang tier golden marrow pill from his sleeves.

The two understood each other and smiled.....

Chapter 11: The Sect's Test

In the Ashen Spirit Sect, most of the students were in the qi refining realm. In order to encourage the students to train diligently and become a martial disciple and awaken their martial spirits, the higher-ups of the sect implemented this mission system which takes place on the tenth of every month.

For every stage of the qi refining realm, there were different kind of missions that correlates to each stage. Relatively speaking a person who is in the sixth stage will generally have a harder mission than someone who is at the fifth stage. However the rewards for completing the mission will be much more generous.

However, not every qi refining stage student can do these missions. There are a limited amount of missions and thus, those who have some relationships with the teachers or those who are part of large clan will generally be able to obtain a spot. Because Tang Feng knew one of the teachers in the sect, she was able to secure Ye Zifeng a spot.

.....

In the Ashen Spirit Sect, outside of the Hidden Heart Hall.

"Hey look brother Xiao, isn't that guy in the blue that supertrash of the Ye Clan, Ye Zifeng?

"Huh? You mean that guy who beat up the young master of the Wang clan, the guy who's only at the second qi refining stage? Now that you mentioned it, isn't it a bit weird? Did that Wang Lin try to fight him while half-asleep or something?"

Another person chipped into the conversation, "Since he's only at the second qi refining stage, what is he doing here today? Did he not know that only students in the third qi refining stage or higher can do the missions?"

"It's pretty impressive that he was able to come into the Hidden Heart Hall at all. Who knows how much money the Ye clan spent to get him in

here."

While these people were chatting, they were unaware that Ye Zifeng had already approached them.

"Fellow senior brothers, I want to ask something. I heard that there were missions being given out here. I wonder....." Ye Zifeng started to ask them.

"You can leave. Your cultivation is too low. Those who haven't reached the 3rd qi refining stage cannot receive any missions.

Xiao Mu waved his hands, signaling for Ye Zifeng to leave. He was one of Wang Lin's brothers. Since Wang Lin was beaten by this guy, he doesn't want anything to do with him either.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I'm not at the 3rd qi refining stage? How do you guys know?"

Xiao Mu and his friends looked at each other, shook their heads and laughed.

Xiao Mu continued to laugh, "Ye Zifeng, I don't know what happened with Wang Lin that made him to you, however, I've heard all about you. You're that trash who's been stuck at the second qi refining stage for a long time now. Just a few days ago, you were still at the low second qi refining realm. There's no way you can improve so much in just a few days."

Ye Zifeng shook his head and didn't say anything. In these few days that he had crossed over, he's heard a bunch of people call him trash and good for nothing. His ears are getting sore from hearing this so much. If he doesn't improve himself faster, he's afraid that he would blow up and die from hearing this so much.

At the same time, an old man that looked to be around sixty walked out of the Hidden Heart Hall. His expression was very solemn and calm as he swept his gaze around all the people present.

Seeing the old man, all the students, including Xiao Mu immediately shut their mouths and gathered in front of him and paid their respects.

“People in the third qi refining stage or higher and want to challenge a mission, come with me. We will a small test in a bit to gauge your level and determine what sort of missions you should take.

“Are there any questions?” The old man looked around.

“Elder, I have something to say!”

Xiao Mu hesitated for a bit and then suddenly pointed at Ye Zifeng, “Elder, there’s some bastard at the second qi refining stage here. I hope the elder can verify this and kick him out of the hall immediately.”

Hearing this, the old man immediately stared at Ye Zifeng for a bit. The gaze was piercing. It was as if he saw through Ye Zifeng’s entire body.

“I just checked. He is indeed in the third qi refining stage and he’s at the peak of the third refining stage while at it. He is allowed to received a mission from us.” The old man gave his verdict in the end.

“What?!”

“When did that trash Ye Zifeng get to the third qi refining stage, nevertheless the peak of it.” Some of the students who didn’t know about the fight between Zifeng and Wang Lin was shocked.

Ye Zifeng’s name as a trash was widespread throughout the entire academy. He was like a celebrity. There was almost no one in the outer sect who didn’t know about him. Hearing the elder’s verdict, those who were “close” to him, including Xiao Mu were startled.

It took him three years and he couldn’t breakthrough into the third stage and now he was at the peak of the third stage all of a sudden. Some of the people present were only at the third qi refining real. If they thought that the peak third stage Ye Zifeng was trash, then what were they considered?

“Could it be..... It wasn’t a coincidence that he beat Wang Lin?” Xiao Mu started to ponder.

“Anymore questions? If there’s nothing else, then..... You five, come with me.” The elder had experienced many things like this before and was not bothered at all.

The students did not dare to be slow and quickly followed behind.

Ye Zifeng was stuck in the middle of the crowd and was pushed onto someone, “Brother, May I ask who that elder was.....?”

That person gave him a weird look, “Ye Zifeng? Oh yeah. This is your first time coming here so you probably don’t know anything. That was Elder Qin who was talking before.”

“Elder Qin huh. Many thanks brother.” Ye Zifeng smiled back.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was so polite and was nothing like how the stories had described him, he decided to give Ye Zifeng some advice, “Brother, since this is your first time, then I’ll warn you. When you choose a mission, don’t choose something so difficult. Pick something easy first to test the waters. Don’t be blinded by the rewards and waste your life.”

“You can lose your life from these missions? Are the high level missions that dangerous?” Ye Zifeng was baffled.

“Shi Chen, Ye Zifeng, stop chattering. It’s your turn to go in.” One of the disciples of the hall called out and patted both of their backs.

Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and bowed, “So this is brother Chen.”

“Don’t call me that. You can call me Shi Chen. It feels a bit weird being called brother.” Shi Chen rubbed his head and replied.

“I got it, Shi Chen.” Ye Zifeng liked this guy. He liked people who were straightforward.

“Then Brother Feng, please enter.” Shi Chen had a big smile on his face.

Ye Zifeng was speechless..... In his mind, he had wanted to slap this guy.

.....

“Congratulations brother Xiao!”

“Congratulations brother Xiao for passing the fifth qi refining realm test. If you can complete this mission, with your contribution points from your last missions, you can probably choose a high ranked common tier treasure from the treasure room!”

Xiao Mu was laughing happily and accepted everyone's flattery. It felt nice. His Xiao family was on the rise within these last few years and were already on the same level as the Ye family now.

When Ye Zifeng walked in, the two made eye contact. Xiao Mu smiled sinisterly at Ye Zifeng and wanted to say something. However, Ye Zifeng pretended that he didn't exist and continued to walk forward.

"Stop where you are!"

However, Ye Zifeng continued to walk. It was as if he didn't hear Xiao Mu at all.

"Ye Zifeng! You better stop right now!"

After hearing this, Ye Zifeng laughed and turned around, "I dare ask who's calling for me." Just before, Xiao Mu had tried to expose him in front of everyone else, so Ye Zifeng doesn't feel so good about this guy.

Xiao Mu coldly snorted, "You trash. Don't think that because you've reached the third qi refining stage that you're not trash anymore. You've beat up one of my brothers so don't think that i'm done with you."

"Ahh. So you're with Wang Lin. I'll remember that."

Ye Zifeng then turned around and left. He was right. Those who were in the fifth stage or lower all banded together and were only here because of their family. They probably spend their entire day doing useless stuff and lacked ambition.

"Wait a minute. I have something good to tell you too."

Ye Zifeng stopped and turned around, looking like he was interested.

Xiao Mu smiled, "I helped you looked at the missions before. In the third qi refining stage section, there was a mission about helping the hall repair some broken walls. Even though the contributions points that you'll earn are not that much, I feel like it suits you very well. What do you think?"

"Many thanks to brother Xiao for noticing this mission for me. However, it's a waste to give me such a good mission. I think we should leave it for someone else."

Ye Zifeng didn't want to talk rubbish with this guy anymore and quickly caught up with Shi Chen.

"You!" Xiao Mu fiercely stared at Zifeng's back with a hint of hatred in his gaze.

Inside the hall, an elder solemnly stood there with two protectors by his sides.

When they saw Ye Zifeng and Shi Chen come in, one of the protectors started to ask, "State your name, your cultivation level, and the techniques that you know."

"Shi Chen, Fourth Qi Refining Stage. As for techniques, I know some common skills but they're nothing much."

The elder looked at Shi Chen and nodded.

Seeing this, the protector continued to speak, "The missions for fourth and fifth qi refining realm are over there. If you want to choose them, then come with me to the next room so I can test your strength."

Shi Chen's expression changed immediately, "No no no no no. I don't want those. I only want to do the missions for the third qi refining stage."

The elder didn't care at all. He picked up a cup of tea and took a sip, "I remember you. You chose a fourth qi refining stage mission last month. How come you didn't dare pick one this time."

Shi Chen bitterly smiled, "This is because I know how hard it is to take on a fourth stage mission now. Last month I got a mission to clear some weeds out. It wasn't a hard mission at all but there was a blood eagle in the area and I almost lost my life. This time, I want to do something safer."

"Is that so." The elder laughed. "Fine. I respect your decision. You can choose any mission on the third stage. Since you're at the fourth qi refining stage, we don't need to test you."

"Thank you Elder Qin." Shi Chen smiled and nodded. He then left and went to pick a mission.

"Then next....."

Ye Zifeng heard this and immediately walked forward.

“This one greets Elder Qin.”

Elder Qin sized Ye Zifeng up and finally said, “You’re..... that Ye Zifeng?”

Chapter 12: Picking a Next Level Mission

Ye Zifeng calmly nodded. Asides from the fact that everyone knew him as the trash young master of the Ye clan, Xiao Mu had also just made fun of him. So under these circumstances, it's not unusual that Elder Qin would know who he was.

"How's your father Ye Chongtian doing these days. Is everything going well……?" Elder Qin looked at Ye Zifeng and then asked.

Ye Zifeng was startled for a bit. So this Elder Qin knew his old man…. Well it's not that surprising considering that Ye Chongtian was one of the more well known figures in the city and the Ye clan was one of Leizhou City's three great clans twenty years ago

"My father had some business to take care of is out of town. And for how we're doing….. I think we're doing fine." Ye Zifeng half-heartedly answered.

Elder Qin looked deeply at Ye Zifeng, "For you to heave reached the peak of the third stage in the qi refining realm, it seems like you've worked hard. You have to keep working hard to help the Ye clan return to its former glory!"

"Zifeng understands." Ye Zifeng showed respect to Elder Qin

In his heart however, he thought: Working hard? LOL. With these trashy meridians and this sick body, no matter how hard one worked, there won't be any results. If he didn't cross over and made some god like pills, this body would not have broken through at all.

"Good. Good." Elder Qin nodded his head a few times. He was pleased with Ye Zifeng's manners.

Then Elder Qin immediately pointed at the mission board, "This is the mission board for disciples in the third stage of qi refining. I recommend that you go and hunt Rock Turtles. Although their defense is quite strong, they have almost zero attack power. If you can't kill them, staying alive shouldn't be a problem.

Ye Zifeng shook his head and wanted to say something.

Elder Qin smiled and continued to talk, “Heh. You youngsters are sure impatient. Fine. If you don’t want this then I’ll recommend you this, a treasure hunting mission. This is a better and faster mission. Even though the treasure is in a mountain and it is hard to get to, there are no monsters around the area. It is very safe.....”

Ye Zifeng shook his head again and walked towards another mission board, “Elder Qin, I’m not interested in third stage missions. I want to take on these missions.”

Elder Qin was shocked. Ye Zifeng had walked in front of the fourth stage mission board.

Seeing this, Shi Chen walked over and pulled Ye Zifeng aside.

“Ye Zifeng are you crazy? I’m at the fourth stage of qi refining and don’t even dare to take on these missions. You’re merely at the third stage. Do you want to die? You’re being too rash. This is your first time here after all.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Precisely. Because this is my first time, I need to be caution. That’s why I didn’t go over the the fifth stage mission board.”

“Taking on fifth stage missions? If you really choose it and complete it, I’ll call you master!” Shi Chen was shocked.

Ye Zifeng continued to smile, “Then I guess I have no choice but to pick a fourth stage mission now. Why would I want a dumb disciple like you?”

“You!” Shi Chen’s face turned darker and darker.

The missions that the sects give were always solo missions, there was no way to cheat. Due to the fact that disciples in the qi refining stage did not have any experience in the world, they would always choose mission that’s equal to or below their level their cultivation. However, Ye Zifeng has the experience and willpower that he brought over from his other life. Compare to peers in his age group, he was much more experienced and mature. Thus, he chose a mission that was on a higher level.

Elder Qin laughed and praised Zifeng, “Good! It’s been a long time since someone challenged a mission that is higher than their own level. It seems like the Ye clan has a ray of hope now. Mo Yu come over here……”

Behind Elder Qin, one of the protectors stepped forward, “Mo Yu is here.”

Elder Qin, “What is the reward for a fourth stage mission?”

Mo Yu answered,” If it a fourth stage mission, the reward is around 40 to 60 contribution points. That’s the reward if you’re at the fourth qi refining stage. However, if the challenger is under the fourth qi refining stage, then they would receive additional points.

“Okay. Then I’ll be responsible for Ye Zifeng. If he can complete a mission on the fourth stage board, then his rewards will be doubled!”

“Doubled?” Mo Yu was shocked.

“Reward…. Doubled?!” Shi Chen jealously looked at Ye Zifeng. The sect only gives one mission to each selected student every month. If his rewards doubled then that would mean that he would get two month’s worth of reward with one mission! And what’s more, the reward for a fourth stage mission is already doubled the reward for a third stage mission. If Ye Zifeng and Shi Chen both complete their missions, Ye Zifeng would receive four times more points than Shi Chen.

Ye Zifeng looked at Shi Chen, “What’re you acting so envious for. Why don’t you change your mission and go get a fifth stage mission.”

Shi Chen suddenly came to a realization. This actually made sense. Elder Qin isn’t giving him these points for free… Ye Zifeng is fighting hard to earn these points

“Hmmm… Now what mission should I choose?” Ye Zifeng looked at the mission board in front of him.

He looked back at Elder Qin and asked, “Elder Qin, why don’t you recommend me a mission at the fourth stage?”

Elder Qin laughed, “I’ve already doubled your rewards. That’s the most I

can do for you. Why don't you listen to my advice and choose a third stage mission?" He was willing to double the rewards but was unwilling to recommend a mission. He was lowkey trying to tell Zifeng that he shouldn't do these missions and that he can't complete them.

Ye Zifeng knew what this old fox was thinking but didn't say anything.

"Senior Brother Mo, You said that fourth stage missions were worth 40 to 60 points right?"

Mo Yu nodded, "That's right!"

"Then where are the missions worth 60 points? Let me have a look."

Mo Yu was startled and looked at Elder Qin. Although Elder Qin didn't have a good look on his face, he nodded anyways.

"There's only one mission that's worth 60 points and it's this one." Mo Yu pointed to the mission posted on the top of the board.

Shi Chen gasped, "Common Tier fourth stage Thunder Rhino!" Last time he was almost killed by a common tier fourth stage blood eagle.... If he went up against a Thunder Rhino, who knows how many times he would have died.

Ye Zifeng's eyes widened and smiled happily, "So it's a beast with an attribute. Not bad not bad."

Hearing Zifeng's not bads, Shi Chen started to yell, "Not bad your face. Do you not see the description that's written there? A Thunder Rhino that's above the third stage have the ability to release lightning at will! You'll probably be shocked to death before you could get close enough to touch it!"

"Shi Chen is right." Elder Qin indifferently said, "This Thunder Rhino's ability is too hard for you to handle. Even someone at the fifth qi refining stage would have a hard time getting close to it. That Xiao clan's Xiao Mu is at the fifth qi refining stage and he tried it a few times. Every time he tried to get close to it, he was shocked back and eventually gave up."

Ye Zifeng calmly smiled, "Then I've decided. I want this Thunder Rhino

Mission!"

Elder Qin's expression changed, "Are you sure? I'm telling you right now, that you'll definitely die if you do this mission. That's going to be your own problem."

"Elder Qin, I have decided." Ye Zifeng nodded, his eyes filled with determination.

Elder Qin stared at Zifeng for awhile. He saw that Zifeng was not going to back down and finally sighed and smiled, 'fine. If you can pass our test then I'll let you do this. If you can't then go choose something else. If something happens to you, I won't be able to explain to Chongtian. Mo Xiang, bring him to the other room and test him out. Don't take too long though. There's still other people waiting."

Elder Qin has two protectors and they had both reached the Martial Disciple realm. Mo Yu guided the disciples while Mo Xiang was responsible for testing the disciples.

"Come with me." Mo Xiang walked in front of Ye Zifeng and pointed towards the testing room.

By telling Mo Xiang to be quick, it meant that Elder Qin wanted Mo Xiang to hold back. Before long, the two of them returned.

"Elder Qin, Ye Zifeng has the qualifications to accept this mission. Please hand him the mission badge." Mo Xiang respectfully told Elder Qin.

Seeing that Mo Xiang had understood what he meant, Elder Qin smiled and nodded, "Okay. Ye Zifeng, according to the rules of the Hidden Heart Hall, you have three days to finish the mission. You will go to Cloud's Peak Valley and kill a Thunder Rhino. If you success, the reward will be doubled to 120 points."

"Many thanks to Elder Qin." Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and bowed.

"Alright, if you don't have any more questions, then you can leave with Shi Chen. Also, call in the next set of students."

"Yes sir!" Ye Zifeng and Shi Chen both replied.

.....

“He’s out. He’s out! Ye Zifeng came out!”

Ye Zifeng came out of the hall and wanted to return home quickly to prepare. However, when he came out, many people were looking at him. It seems like he had spent quite an amount of time inside the hall.

“Ye Zifeng, did you take the mission that I recommended you? The great mission of helping the hall repair some broken walls. It’s perfect for a trash newbie like you who’s receiving missions for the first time!” Xiao Mu stepped out from the group of people.

“You’re right. That kind of mission should be for trashy newbies.” Ye Zifeng calmly replied.

Seeing how calm Ye Zifeng was, people thought that he had actually taken the mission to repair walls and started to laugh.

“Look at that trashy Ye Zifeng. He actually took the mission to repair broken walls. He doesn’t even have the courage to go and kill beasts.”

“Hey. Don’t belittle him. I heard that one needs sixty contribution points to exchange for a common tier technique. After this month, he only needs eleven more months of wall repairing to get a martial technique. To a piece of trash like him, this is a great deal!”

Shi Chen who was left behind by Zifeng finally caught up with him. He was out of breath and said, “Brother Feng! Why are you walking so fast! Why don’t you consider it again. It’s too dangerous to fight against the Thunder Rhino! You should switch to another mission!”

“Thunder Rhino?!” Everyone who heard this was shocked. Their expressions changed and looked towards Xiao Mu, not knowing what to say. Xiao Mu was extremely shocked and angry. He was so angry that he clenched his fists until his nails pierced his skin.

Ye Zifeng smiled and continued from where he left off, “Yeah, only a trashy newbie would do that kind of mission. But sadly, that’s not me.”

Chapter 13: Solo Mission

Leizhou City, In the Ye clan home.

“Brother Zifeng, I heard from mother that you’ve received the mission to kill Thunder Rhinos.” Ye Xueyi’s soft voice sounded as she quickly ran towards Zifeng.

“Wow. News sure travels fast.” Ye Zifeng sat down and pulled out a peach cracker from his bad. He tried to hand peach cracker to Xueyi, “Come on, try this. I just got it from the store around the corner. Your mother told me that you loved these.”

Ye Xueyi pushed his hands away and seriously said, “Brother Zifeng, do you know what you’ve done? You’re still in the mood to eat snacks after accepting such a difficult mission?”

Ye Zifeng chuckled and shrugged, “I accepted it already. We’ll just see how it goes.”

Ye Xueyi bit her lips. She didn’t know whether to laugh or cry at her brother’s stupidity.

“Come on Brother Zifeng. Get up. I’ll go to the sect with you and ask Elder Qin to give you a new mission.” She tried to pull Zifeng’s arm and drag him back to the sect.

However, Ye Zifeng dodged and shook his head, “Once the sect assigns a mission, it is impossible to get a new one. That is the rule. You should know about it.”

Xueyi wasn’t taking any of this, “Fine. Even if you can’t get a new mission, you can still forfeit this one. At worst, you’ll only get a three month penalty which is a lot better than not completing the mission.”

“Sis, how can you have so little faith in me?” Ye Zifeng replied, “Remember last time when the Liu family came? I took care of that Liu Yige who’s at the peak of fifth qi refining stage. You were there. Do you think that I can’t take care of these Thunder Rhinos?”

“That……”

Ye Xueyi's expression changed. She didn't know what Zifeng did to beat and harm Liu Yige. It was really weird. How did Zifeng make Liu Yue who was around two whole stages above himself spit a mouthful of blood?

'But brother.... You've never killed anything before and this is your first time accepting a mission. The Thunder Rhino is extremely strong.... I'm afraid that you'll get hurt."

"How can there be a reward if there's no risk? And besides, I can gain experience from this even if I don't complete it." Ye Zifeng calmly said, "So don't worry about it. There's still three days before I go out. Against an attribute type beast like the Thunder Rhino, it shouldn't be so hard for me. I already have a plan."

"So you're saying that you won't forfeit the mission no matter what...."

Ye Zifeng looked at Xueyi with strong determination in his eyes and nodded.

Ye Xueyi pouted. Seeing how this talk is making her brother more determined, she decided to give up and let out a long sigh.

"Come on, Xueyi. Try the peach crackers!"

Ye Zifeng moved a cracker towards her mouth. Xueyi angrily turned around and was speechless. She didn't want to talk to this guy anymore.

"Come on. Try it. Don't be mad at me....." Ye Zifeng persistently offered her some snack.

Ye Xueyi wiped the tears from her eyes. "Thanks Brother!" She turned around, grabbed the crackers and ran away.

Ye Zifeng watched as Xueyi left and smiled. He then turned towards his furnace and a serious look appeared on his face.

"Alright! Time to start preparing for the mission!"

.....

Cloud Peak Valley. It was an area behind the Ashen Spirit Sect where many different common tier beasts resided. The area was specifically created for disciples to complete missions

Outside the valley, the mission organizers from the Hidden Heart Hall were giving out maps of the valley to disciples. On each map, the regions were divided and labeled accordingly.

“Look at that guy. That’s Ye Zifeng. As someone in the third stage of qi refining, he’s actually trying to challenge Thunder Rhinos that were in the fourth stage!”

“Thunder Rhinos? Wasn’t that the mission that even Xiao Mu failed a couple of times?”

“Shhhh....not so loud. Young master Xiao is right there.”

Xiao Mu lightly coughed, and the people who were talking immediately closed their mouths, not daring to talk anymore.

“What are you guys worrying about? That Ye Zifeng must have some problems with his head to choose a mission like this. Don’t start talking like he can actually complete this. From what I can see, he probably won’t even be coming back alive!”

Xiao Mu’s loud voice caused many people to look over.

Ye Zifeng walked up and smiled, “Then what if I finish it and come back by luck?”

Xiao Mu was startled. He was thinking that there’s a chance that this guy can survive by luck but to finish the mission? That was not possible. To someone who was in the third stage of qi refining like Ye Zifeng, this fourth stage mission was even harder than climbing to heaven.

“Then I’ll....I’ll....” Xiao Mu didn’t know what he should bet....

Ye Zifeng then suggested, “How about this. I don’t want you to kowtow to me like Wang Lin. That’ll embarrass you too much. If I can finish the mission and come out alive, then why don’t you give me the points that you earn from your mission. How about it?”

Right now, Ye Zifeng wanted points more than anything. With these points, he can exchange them for rare ingredients and raise his cultivation.

“You want my points? A fifth stage mission is worth 100 points!” Xiao Mu was shocked. Although his family was well off, the things you can exchange with these points are all priceless.

Ye Zifeng continued, “If I can’t finish this mission, then I’ll go and repair walls every month from now on and give you all my points for two years.”

“If it’s two years, then……”

“One hundred twenty points.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

Xiao Mu was in deep thoughts. He started to think about and consider Ye Zifeng’s proposal. If Ye Zifeng fails, then he could get 120 points without doing anything and also humiliate Ye Zifeng at the same time. The chances of him winning was very high and he felt like it was a good deal.

“Fine. You’re in the third stage of qi refining and this is your first time doing a mission. Yet you dare to act like this… I, Xiao Mu will teach you a lesson. As for the tranfer of points…..” Xiao Mu looked over at Mo Yu.

Mo Yu quickly replied, “If no one has any objections right now, then we won’t mind either. The points can be transferred.”

Xiao Mu was excited. He looked as if he had received the 120 points already.

“With that being the case, I hope that senior brother Mo will be the witness to our bet. Many thanks.”A lustrous smile appeared on Ye Zifeng’s face.

After the small delay, the protectors started to explain the mission. In intervals of half an hour, each disciple will enter the valley one by one.

When Ye Zifeng was about to enter the valley, Xiao Mu smiled and slapped him on the shoulders.

“What else do you want?” Ye Zifeng hated people touching his shoulder, especially someone that he disliked.

Xiao Mu laughed loudly, “The bet from before. I forgot to tell you something. You know it’s fine if you don’t finish the mission. However, if

you're unlucky and die, I, Xiao Mu will be generous and not ask you for those 120 points....."

"Uhhh. Then..... thanks?" Ye Zifeng shook his head. Under the protector's command, he then went into the valley.

.....

In the valley, he followed the directions on the map. He passed through a small jungle and reached his destination, clear water pond.

The Thunder Rhinos liked to fight with others for territory and they have dominated the clear water pond for a while now.

This time, because it is a solo mission, Ye Zifeng didn't have to hide his true strength. It was more convenient to take action.

"Let's test the waters and see how much thunder you can release from your body."

Ye Zifeng's mouth curled up and revealed a sly smile. On his palm, his black death qi began to condense into a small imprint. He then quickly struck out at the Thunder Rhino.

In a split second, the black palm that Ye Zifeng sent out suddenly exploded before even reaching the Rhino.

The Thunder Rhino wasn't a greenhorn either. It wasn't his first time facing off against a human. He had felt Ye Zifeng's presence a while ago and knew that he was dangerous. Thus, when Ye Zifeng struck out, he immediately released his lightning into the air and formed layers of walls.

When the black death palm strike struck against the lightning wall, a large explosion occurred. Both the attack and the light wall dissipated.

"It can actually dissipate the death qi? It seems like this rhino has some skills." Ye Zifeng felt shocked. He thought that the strike would at least hurt the rhino a bit. However, who would've thought that it didn't even leave a single scratch on it!

When he thought about it carefully, the death qi strike was best suited for close range. When he thought about the last time he used it, it was

because Liu Yige let his guard that he was able to land this sneak attack successfully. Usually qi refining stage cultivators did not have real battle experience and would use all of their strength to attack head on. However the Thunder Rhino was different. Every month, someone would come and try to kill it. It had developed a battle sense that allowed it to sense danger. Due to this, it was almost impossible to Ye Zifeng to land an attack it easily.

Also, when Ye Zifeng felt the explosion earlier, he quickly retreated. If he was any closer to the Thunder Rhino, he would probably be knocked unconscious by the lightning. Xiao Mu had been knocked unconscious a few times by the Thunder Rhino and he was in the fifth stage of qi refining. The only reason why Xiao Mu lived every time was because he was a coward. He stay at the outer range of the lightning and did not irritate the rhino.

The Thunder Rhino roared. He saw Ye Zifeng on the other side. However, because the attack that Ye Zifeng just used was very strong, the rhino did not dare to approach carelessly.

“Normally, a rhino’s intelligent and vision is on the lower end of the spectrum. They usually relied on their smell and hearing. It seems like you’re something special.....”

Ye Zifeng looked at the surrounding, “Well I still have three more days. I still have time to prepare some more before killing you.”

Chapter 14: Creating a Thunder Spirit Body

Due to the fact that the Ashen Spirit Sect wanted to preserve the natural environment of Cloud Peak Valley, the sect created a rule which states that no one is allowed to set fire or do anything that will harm the environment. However, Ye Zifeng doesn't play by the rules.

The reasons why the Thunder Rhinos settled near the Clear Water Pond was because one, there was a source of water and two, there was an abundant amount of Thunder Spirit Grass in the area.

Ye Zifeng had his eyes on these thunder spirit grass ever since he arrived. This was exactly what he needed to beat the Thunder Rhino.

Thanks to the rules of the sect, Zifeng was unable to bring in a storage bag or a spatial treasure into the valley. All he bought was a bag that included some food and a small furnace prepared by madam Tang. If he can gather all these spirit grasses around here, he can use it to increase his own power. He can also use them and raise his resistance against lightning which makes hunting the Thunder Rhino easier.

However, the key point here is how he can gather these thunder spirit grass with the Thunder Rhino guarding the place. If he tries to get too close, he would definitely be shocked miserably. When he falls after getting shocked, the rhino can easily finish him off with its horn. That would be a miserable death.

Ye Zifeng was challenging something higher than his own level. Since the beginning, he knew he had to outsmart these rhinos. Even though the rhino is strong and have some intelligence, it was still inferior to a human.

The time limit for the mission is three days. Even if he finished on the last day at the last second, it would still count as complete.

He was not in a hurry so he calmly sat down. He watched and took note of the rhino's each and every move. He was looking for an opportunity to go in. He watched and learned the rhino's movements and habits. From an

outsider's point of view, Ye Zifeng looked like an idiot who was sitting there and not doing anything.

The Thunder Rhino had noticed Zifeng's actions and watched this uninvited guest carefully, like a tiger watching its prey. One hour passed, two hours passed. Ye Zifeng sat there quietly and didn't move at all.

Usually, when two strong enemies meet, a fight is bound to erupt. However, Ye Zifeng is very patient and calm. This was the first time that the Thunder Rhino had seen such a calm and patient human. Usually, they would attack him immediately.

Of course, Ye Zifeng believes that he should be able to outlast the Thunder Rhino in this contest of patience.

This was because this entire valley is merely a mission location to Zifeng. But to the Thunder Rhino, the valley was his home. He probably had a nest and even a family somewhere else. The place he was guarding was merely a food source for him.

Time flew by quickly and it had reached night time. Ye Zifeng had sat there without moving at all for the entire day. The Thunder Rhino thought Zifeng had died or something. Some more time passed and the rhino could not hold out anymore. He started to run into the forest behind him.

Seeing this scene, Ye Zifeng's eyes lit up. His chance had come! The rhino probably had something better to do than sitting here and guarding the thunder spirit grass.

One step, Two steps, Three steps..... After the rhino had moved ten steps into the forest, Ye Zifeng finally let out a deep breath. He wanted to stay in this position for a bit longer but he suddenly felt a tremble. In a distance, he saw the outlines of a large rhino and two smaller rhinos coming out of the forest.

Ye Zifeng was shocked and cursed, "Sh*t. So there were two more rhinos." At this time, He couldn't wait anymore. If the other two rhinos come as well, then he would never be able to get the thunder spirit grass.

He shot forward like an arrow and ran towards the place where thunder

spirit grass grew like his life was on the time.

He didn't need much thunder spirit grass since he won't be able to absorb too much in such a small amount of time anyways. He only needed a small patch of it.

The three rhinos saw the movement and thought that Ye Zifeng wanted to fight them. They immediately charged up their lightning to protect themselves. However, Ye Zifeng quickly ran past them. Multiple bolts of lightning exploded behind Ye Zifeng, causing Zifeng to curse under his breath and breathe in a lot of dust.

The Thunder Rhinos were confused by Ye Zifeng's actions. However, they were sure of one thing; Ye Zifeng wanted to enter their territory. As the owners of the territory, they would not allow anyone to trespass.

Ye Zifeng leapt up and continued to run like crazy. As he ran, he sent a death qi palm strike towards the smallest baby rhino. The adult thunder rhino's lightning was scary but the little one was not matured yet so it probably couldn't defend against his palm strike.

Ye Zifeng's guess was correct. When he sent the palm strike out, the baby rhino stopped moving and trembled. The other two rhinos stopped moving as well and moved in front of the baby to protect it from Zifeng's attack.

Zifeng coldly smiled and took advantage of this opportunity. He had already reached the area where the thunder spirit grass grew. When he saw a large stalk of thunder spirit grass, he quickly grabbed it and ran for his life without even looking at the situation behind him.

The three rhinos let out a roar. The two adult rhinos saw that Zifeng had damaged their territory and thus chased him angrily.

Bolts of thunder were sent towards Ye Zifeng. However due to Zifeng's quick reflexes, all the bolts just barely missed him.

In accordance to the rules of the mission, Ye Zifeng can run as far away as he wants as long as he does not run out of his region. However, the Thunder Rhinos can't leave this area. They need to protect their territory

from other beasts and protect their baby. When Zifeng ran out of the area, the rhinos decided to stop chasing him.

"Finally..." Ye Zifeng sat down and hid behind a tall three. He could still hear the rhinos angrily roar behind him.

Ye Zifeng was full of sweat and was breathing very hard. After confirming that the two Thunder rhinos left, he laid down on the floor and let out a long sigh.

One Thunder Rhino was enough to give him a headache and now there were three. This mission had just gotten harder for him.

After waiting for a while, he returned to the area where he had left his bag. He took out the small furnace and placed it on the ground. He then took a few thunder spirit grasses and placed it into the furnace. After, he got up and went to gather some dry branches to create a small fire.

"Don't worry guys. After I absorb the qi from these thunder spirit grass, I'll come take care of you guys!" Ye Zifeng let out a menacing smile.

Ye Zifeng placed his hand on the furnace and sent some of his own qi into the furnace. He probed around and found the blue qi from the thunder spirit grass condensing and sizzling in the center. He waited a while and started to absorb the blue qi through his palm into his own body. The blue qi circulated through his body and a hint of lightning could be felt extruding from his body.

Before one can learn to concort pills, they must learn to refine a series of many other items. Amongst these other items are spiritual herbs. One must be able to perfectly refine spiritual herbs before they can start concorting pills. Of course, as an expert alchemist, Ye Zifeng was able to refine these thunder spirit grasses easily and absorb their energy.

When he finally finished absorbing the qi from these grasses, it was already the morning of the third day already.

"Hmmm. My body is almost ready." Ye Zifeng opened his eyes and felt his body surging with lightning energy. Compared to before, his lightning resistance was many many times stronger. Going up against these

Thunder Rhinos would be easy now.

Ye Zifeng stood up and moved towards the Thunder Rhino. Seeing this, the Thunder Rhino stood up as well.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “So you guys were awake after all.” After that, his eyes turned cold and a murderous aura bursted out from him.

“It’s too bad. If you die in your dreams, it would be better for you guys.”

He then took out his dagger and charged towards the rhinos. This time, he charged straight at them.

The damnable human that these rhinos were chasing three days ago actually dared to charge at them from the front. The Thunder Rhinos felt that they were being disrespected and roared towards the sky. They then also charged forward, straight at Ye Zifeng. Countless lightning bolts struck down. With his thunder resistant body, Ye Zifeng was not afraid of this anymore.

Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped right where the bolts of lighting was going to strike. The blue thunder qi accumulated in his dantain as the lightning bolts struck down and hit him. However, Zifeng’s body was like a lightning rod now. The lightning slid right past his body and went straight into the ground.

“I did it!” Ye Zifeng was very excited. He wasn’t hurt by lightning anymore! The lightning was the only obstacle stopping him from completing the mission. Now that he wasn’t afraid anymore, he leapt forward, right past the two adult rhino and charged straight at the smaller baby rhino.

The Thunder Rhino’s lightning is an area of effect attack. If any normal person were to jump into the air, they would die from the shock immediately. So normally, no one was dumb enough to do something that Ye Zifeng did.

After absorbing the thunder qi into his body, his lightning resistance has far surpassed that of a normal person’s. The lightning released by the two adult rhinos did not hurt him at all and they watched as Ye Zifeng leapt

over them.

When killing, one needs to be decisive. If one holds back, they will feel the consequences. If the three rhinos are able to surround Ye Zifeng, then he will most likely be killed.

Thus, Ye Zifeng made his decision very quickly. The dagger in his hand curved through the baby rhino quickly and cleanly.

The baby rhino's head flew into the air and blood spurted out from its neck.

Chapter 15: Tripling the Reward!

Ye Zifeng quickly jumped up and caught the severed head of the baby rhino. His mouth curved upwards and revealed a devious smile.

If he ran away now, then he would be able to turn in the head and receive 120 contribution points. However, he was still not satisfied yet.

Behind him, the two adult rhinos saw that their baby was killed by Ye Zifeng and roared angrily at him. The lightning on their bodies became much stronger. It made Ye Zifeng feel a small shocking sensation. However, it was only a small sensation. It wouldn't affect his abilities at all.

"Man. Your lightning is really strong. However, I have the thunder spirit body now. If you want to use it against me like before, it won't work anymore.

Ye Zifeng laughed coldly and tossed the baby rhino's head aside. When the other two rhinos hesitated, Ye Zifeng immediately moved in order to gain an upperhand.

.....

In these three days, Ye Zifeng was very patient. He had waited until the last moment of the third day to finish the mission.

At that time, the people outside were talking and speculating about what happened.

"Elder Qin. Please. My brother has been in there for three days already. Let me go in and check on his situation."

The anxiousness in Ye Xueyi's eyes can be seen.

Elder Qin stood there and only stroked his beard. He didn't give Ye Xueyi an answer. In fact, he was regretting his decision deeply. He thought that Ye Zifeng would come out immediately after seeing how powerful the rhinos were. However, it seems like Ye Zifeng wasn't the useless cowardly Ye Zifeng anymore. As long as his opponent's power wasn't too overpowered, Zifeng was willing to take the risks and give it a try.

“Elder Qin. I beg you.....”

Mo Yu sighed and tried to console her, “Sister Xueyi, it’s not that Elder Qin doesn’t want to help you, but the time limit hasn’t passed yet. If we go in now and see that Ye Zifeng was still fighting the beast, then wouldn’t he be automatically disqualified? Would that turn all his hard work to nothing?

“But.....”

Ye Xueyi had been waiting outside since the second night. From then until now, she couldn’t even see Ye Zifeng’s shadow. Normally, most disciples only used a half a day or even only a whole day to finish their mission. Most of the time they used were on finding the beasts instead of actually killing them. There was no one who used three whole days like Ye Zifeng.

Xiao Mu coldly laughed, “Don’t worry. You’re brother is probably scared after losing the bet. He probably didn’t want to lose any and probably buried himself in there.

“Young master Xiao, from the way you’re talking, you make it sound like he had any face to begin with.” One of the bystanders joked.

“Young master Xiao, don’t you feel that it’s quite unfortunate? If he comes out alive, you can get 120 contribution points from him in two years.”

Xiao Mu laughed loudly, “You’re right. I could get a spirit level martial technique for free. Now that you mention it, it’s a pity..... Hahahahaha.”

Ye Xueyi looked around and fiercely glared at everyone who made fun of her brother. She was so angry that she began to tremble.

Shi Chen suddenly pulled Ye Xueyi’s sleeves and with a surprised expression, he yelled, “Sister Ye. Look! He’s out!” He was one of the first ones to finish his mission and had been waiting for 2 days out here already. According to the rules, the ones who finished their mission have to wait until everybody finishes to return to the sect.

Ye Xueyi wasn’t in the mood right now. When this stranger pulled her

sleeves, she got angrier and shouted, “What came out?”

“Your brother. He’s out. Ye Zifeng came out!”

Everyone stopped chattering all of a sudden.

It was so quiet that you could hear a pin drop.

Being able to stay alive in the rhino’s territory for three days. This action alone is commendable.

Everyone’s eyes widened and looked towards the forest. Ye Zifeng was currently walking towards all of them. His clothes were torn apart by lightning and his skin looked a little burnt. It seems like he had fought with the Thunder Rhinos.

To be able to run away from the Thunder Rhinos, it seems like Ye Zifeng’s strength cannot be underestimated.

“Brother Zifeng!” Ye Xueyi excitingly called out.

Ye Zifeng smiled back at her and ran towards the group.

Elder Qin’s expression became happier, “I knew you were a lucky bastard. You won’t die that easily.” Seeing that Ye Zifeng came back safely, this old man felt relieved. If someone were to really happen, he really didn’t know how to explain to Ye Chongtian.

“Brother Zifeng, it’s not a problem even if you fail. It’s good as long as you are alive.” Ye Xueyi started to cry and hugged Ye Zifeng.

Xiao Mu gave Ye Zifeng a glare and coldly said, “Heh. Since you came back alive, then don’t forget about my 120 points. You should prepare and learn how to repair those broken walls in the hall.”

“Let’s go….” Xiao Mu waved and called out to his brothers.

“Hold on a moment.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Did I say that I failed this mission?”

Xiao Mu turned around with a face full of disbelief, “…. Could it be……”

Elder Qin had been the giver of missions in the Hidden Heart Hall for many years. He knew how hard this mission was. When he heard this, he

was shocked.

"Are you for real? You killed a Thunder Rhino?!"

"That's right." Ye Zifeng answered. His answer made Xiao Mu feel like he was going to wither away. If Ye Zifeng actually finished this mission, then in accordance with the bet, Xiao Mu will have to give him his 100 points. It means that his hard work was for nothing.

Ye Zifeng smiled and then seriously said, "About this. I want to confirm with Elder Qin. If I kill one Thunder Rhino, I will get 120 points because you have doubled my reward. Is that correct?"

"120 points. That's right. That was the promised reward." Elder Qin was happy that someone was finally able to finish this mission. He knew that sooner or later, someone talented will come and finish this anyways. However, he didn't expect it to be someone like Ye Zifeng.

"120 points and in addition, you'll get Xiao Mu's 100 points. Not bad kid. From one mission, you actually got 220 points." Shi Chen looked at Ye Zifeng jealously.

Xiao Mu's face turned ashen while looking at Ye Zifeng. Everyone was there when he made the bet with Ye Zifeng. He couldn't back out now. Right now, he didn't only lose his 100 points but the face of his Xiao clan.

Ye Zifeng smiled slyly and then opened his bag. Under everyone's watch, he pulled out a rhino head.

"Elder Qin, I had confirmed with you before. Killing one Thunder Rhino will get me 120 points. Then what about killing three?"

After saying that, he dropped the three rhino heads on the floor and lined them up. There was still a hint of lightning flicking around since he had only killed them around half an hour ago.

"Three Thunder Rhinos! Young master Xiao, he killed three Thunder Rhinos."

Xiao Mu was super shocked. He looked at the person who just talked and yelled, "I have eyes. I can see for myself. I don't need you telling me

anything!" Xiao Mu had tried to kill the Thunder Rhinos before and knew how hard the mission was. Right now, he was speechless.

The blue light flickered in front of everyone, bewildering them all. Everyone was shocked because Ye Zifeng had completed such a difficult mission.

He was at the third stage of qi refining and this was his first time taking on a mission. And yet, he was able to kill three Thunder Rhinos that were at the fourth stage. This was shocking news. Not even people at the fifth stage of qi refining was able to complete this mission.

Elder Qin was shocked to the max. When he regained his composure, he bitterly smiled, "You stinkin kid, how dare you trick me. Fine. Since I agreed, I won't take it back. You killed three Thunder Rhinos so you get 360 points!"

"Three Hundred Sixty Points?!?!?"

The entire place was silent. Such a high reward. It was comparable to the reward of a seventh stage mission. All those people who looked at Ye Zifeng with a mocking expression now looked at him with jealousy.

Shi Chen fiercely patted Ye Zifeng's shoulder, "Three hundred sixty points, in addition to the hundred you got from Xiao Mu, that's four hundred sixty! From this one mission, you ten times the reward that I got already. Damn boy, you should throw a feast and invite me."

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "I think that dumpling store in the north was pretty good. Let's go try some of that."

Shi Chen's mouth twitched a bit and unhappily looked at him, "How can you even say that. You earned so much today! You should at least treat me to a spiritual feast!"

Of course, Shi Chen was joking around about the spiritual feast. To a practitioner, a spiritual feast will have a lot of benefit but for a single person, it will cost at least the equivalent of 1000 points.

Xueyi happily looked at her brother. This time, Ye Zifeng had used his own strength to prove himself in front of everyone. From now on, the

trash Ye Zifeng does not exist anymore!"

"Elder Qin. There's something that I would like to ask about." Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and bowed.

Elder Qin saw Zifeng's expression and smiled, "What do you want to ask?"

"It is said that after the mission, the disciples have the authority to take away their spoil. Then can I take these three Thunder Rhino heads away?" Ye Zifeng pointed at the heads on the floor.

Elder Qin was suspicious and glared at him, "What do you want these heads for? Once a common tier beast died, their spirits will scatter. There isn't much qi left in the heads. Even if you use it to refine pills, the effects will be little to none. Maybe a profound ranked alchemist can achieve something from it, but, in our Leizhou city, the highest ranking alchemist is only at the huang rank. What can you get from this? Why not sell it to the sect and earn some extra money."

"This....." A sly expression appeared in Ye Zifeng's eyes as he smiled, "I want to bring it home to commemorate my achievements today. I hope Elder Qin will allow this!"

Chapter 16: The Beautiful Alchemist

The sect's hidden treasury was a place where many disciples looked forward to visiting.

In accordance to sect rules, each disciple can choose to save up their points or enter the treasury the next day to exchange their points for items. Ye Zifeng isn't the type to save and accumulate his points. In his eyes, the faster you can get your rewards, the faster your cultivation will rise. Raising one's cultivation level should come before everything else.

"Who's there. State your name, cultivation level and the number of times you've completed missions."

"Ye Zifeng, Third stage of qi refining, first time."

The guard at the door turned to his partner and smiled, "So it's a newbie. No wonder why he looked unfamiliar. He probably has around 20-30 points. Old Du, bring him to the first floor of the treasury."

"Come on newbie, follow me." Old Du looked like he was an easy going person.

"Hold on." Ye Zifeng replied, "I have 460 points. Which floor should I go to?"

"460 points? At the 3rd stage of qi refining and it's your first time here? You're playing with me right?....." Old Du had an awkward look on his face. When did these newbies start to tell lies all of a sudden.

The other guard who was called Lu Fan shook his head, "Yeah. That much contribution point is comparable to the reward for completing a seven stage mission. Even if you want to lie to us, at least say something around 100 points.

Ye Zifeng didn't want to waste time talking to them and pulled a pile of badges out of his bag and showed the two. It was easier for him to show them proof instead of talking.

"This is what I got." Ye Zifeng told them.

“You..... You.....” Old Du was so shocked that he couldn’t utter another word.

It was Lu Fan who came back to his senses first, “You. What did you say your name was?”

Such a strong person. To be able to get the reward of a seventh stage mission while being at the third stage of qi refining, he’ll sooner or later be the one of the strongest people in Leizhou City. Lu Fan was a smart person and thus he asked for his name. He wanted to make some connections with this guy so he can have some benefits later on.

“Ye Zifeng.”

Hearing this, Old Du accidentally blurted, “What? You’re that trash.....”

Lu Fan quickly covered his mouth and smiled towards Zifeng, “So it was Ye clan’s young master. Greetings. Greetings.” He was a smart person. He didn’t know what happened to Zifeng but from what he can see, he can not offend this person at all.

Ye Zifeng just kept smiling, “Senior brothers, I want to ask where the rare ingredients are stored in the treasury?” This was what Ye Zifeng wanted to know the most. It was the only reason for him to join the sect missions.

Lu Fan was confused, “Young master Ye, what do you need medicinal ingredients for? There aren’t any great alchemists in Leizhou City, only a huang-tier alchemist. It is also very hard to get her to refine something for you.”

Usually, the qi refining stage disciples who came to the treasury would want to exchange their points for weapons, or techniques. Some might want to exchange their points for spiritual pills directly but there aren’t any students who would exchange their points for medicinal ingredients.

“Thank you senior brothers for your pointers, but I have made up my mind. I want to exchange my points for ingredients. I hope that senior brothers will guide me.” Ye Zifeng earnestly said.

“Whatever. He probably wants to resell these ingredients in the market.

I've talked too much. Old Du, since he has so many points, bring him to the rare medicine cage on the third floor."

"Rare medicine cage?" After thinking about it, Old Du felt that it was the right place to bring Ye Zifeng. Although he's only at the third qi refining stage, he has the enough points to enter....

"Since that's the case, then would young master Ye please follow this Old Du."

.....

After a while, Old Du brought Ye Zifeng down a path towards the rare medicine cage.

"I told you about the rules already. When you finish picking your ingredients, bring it over to Tong Jian over there. He'll take your points and let you leave with the ingredients."

"Many thanks senior brother. Zifeng understands."

Old Du smiled at Zifeng and then left to attend the other disciples.

Ye Zifeng had been holding back his excitement the entire time. When Old Du finally left, he jumped in joy!

"Good. Good. Good! As expected. This Ashen Spirit Sect's ingredients are much rarer than those in normal stores. Ice Sheet Grass, Nightmare Vine, Earthen Root Grass, Graveyard Moss, and Peace God Flower! This is not bad!"

Seeing that the sect had all these ingredients, Ye Zifeng transformed into a completely different person. He wasn't the calm and collected Ye Zifeng anymore. Now he was the crazed alchemist Ye Zifeng who ran up and down the aisles,kissing all the ingredients.

Because he was an idiotic pill enthusiast, and more so, because he was able to see these ingredients, he got even more excited. This was because he can use these ingredients and the rhino horns that he just got to create a strong pill that can help increase his lightning powers and defense. This will allow him to take another step towards his goal of reaching the peak

of the world.

“Hehe. What kind of country bumpkin are you. You can’t even tell the grade of these ingredients? Let me tell you about them. These common tier ingredients are all trash in my eyes. I don’t even need to use my points to get these ingredients.”

Ye Zifeng didn’t think that someone else was here. His crazy actions were actually seen by someone! His started to feel nervous and embarrassed.

In the corner of Ye Zifeng’s eye, he can see a girl in a green dress. Her face was like a full moon while her eyes were like spring dew. She looked as tender and beautiful as a goddess. Her skin was as white as snow and her eyes were as clear as water. She also had a noble and elegant aura around her. Just by looking at her, Ye Zifeng became stupefied.

“Idiot..... What are you looking at. You’ve never seen such a beautiful alchemist like me right?”

“Alchemist?” Ye Zifeng came back to his sense. He remembered something that he was told before and asked the girl, “Could it be.... You’re the that huang tier alchemist in Leizhou city?”

The girl’s eyes lit up and smiled, “Heh, you’ve got great eyes to be able to recognize me. That’s right. I’m that famous huang tier alchemist of Leizhou City. You can call me Miss Bingqian.

Ye Zifeng smiled back. He didn’t dislike this kind of girl. Even though she was a bit arrogant, she actually warned him about exchanging points for these common ingredients. It seems like her heart isn’t bad at all.

“Miss Bingqian.....”

Bingqian chuckled, “I told you to call me that and you actually called me that? However, I don’t hate the honest types like you either. Tell me, what are you using these ingredients for? Maybe I can give you some insights.”

As a majestic peak heaven tier alchemist, do I really need a little girl like you to teach me about alchemy?

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed, “No need. As the number one alchemist in Leizhou City, you probably have a lot of things to do. There’s no need to spend time with someone as lowly as me.”

Bingqian was startled and then started laughing out loud.

“You’re pretty interesting. Other people would offer me a large sum of money to give them advice but I would usually reject them. However, today I was going to give you some advice for free and yet you reject it?”

Ye Zifeng held in his anger and forced a smiled, “It’s my fault. I hope Miss Bingqian can forgive me.”

Bingqian sighed, “Fine. If you don’t need my help then I won’t force myself on you. Right. I have the sect master’s permission to come to the treasury and make pills whenever I want. If you have any questions, feel free to ask me the next time you come.”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes started to twitch, “Then when the time comes, I’ll have to bother Miss Bingqian.”

He then surveyed the surroundings again. In this large area, there was not a single person besides them. Thinking about it, he figured out why Bingqian wanted to come and chat with him. She had been practicing here by herself for a long time now. It wouldn’t be surprising if she had become as crazy as Ye Zifeng when it comes to alchemy.

“Truth to be told, I’ve been at the treasury for quite some time now. This is my first time seeing someone else at the rare medicine cage.” Bingqian did not want to stop talking. She looked like she was desperately trying to converse with Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng looked at the ingredients in front of him and replied, “A lot of people can only see the immediate benefits of something when it is in front of them. For example, high grade weapons and martial techniques. People can immediately increase their strength when they have these things. However the increase in strength is minimal. Smarter people would try to exchange their points for pills. However, it is still not as worth it compared to exchanging for ingredients. No one is thinking about the long term effects and only want to improve their strength

immediately.

"So you have this kind of thinking too?" Bingqian looked like she had finally found someone who shares the same principles as her. She was very happy when she heard Zifeng's reply.

"How about you then?" Bingqian doubtfully asked, "What are you using these ingredients for? Don't tell me you're gonna bring it home and make some dishes out of it or something. That's too wasteful!"

"Of course not!" Ye Zifeng gave a simple answer.

Suddenly, it seemed as if Bingqian understood something and giggled.

Ye Zifeng looked at her strangely, "What're you laughing about?"

She glanced at him mysteriously, "I know why you came here to get these ingredients."

Ye Zifeng nodded and felt suspicious, "Oh? Why? Tell me about it."

"You probably heard that I'm usually around here and then worked really hard to get enough points to get close to me. Then after you arouse my interest..... You want to become my disciple in alchemy.... right?"

Ye Zifeng was shocked..... Suddenly he lost all his excitement about alchemy after her speech.

Bingqian laughed loudly, "Haha. Seeing how shocked you are, I must've guessed correctly."

In Zifeng's mind he was shocked because he felt that this girl in front of him probably has some brain damage. The hole in her brain far exceeded Ye Zifeng's expectation.

"I'm sorry. I don't even know who you are. I don't want to be your disciple either. After picking up the ingredients that I want, I will leave immediately.

Ye Zifeng felt like he had to tell her the truth. He doesn't want her to have any misunderstandings. She actually wants to take him in as a disciple. Ye Zifeng might as well kill himself if he has to call her his master.

“You! Fine. I don’t care about you anymore!” She had a hint of coldness in her eyes. She felt that Zifeng had disrespected her. She gave him a “hmph” and turned around. She walked towards the ingredient cabinets and pretended to search for some medicine.

Ye Zifeng didn’t want to waste anymore energy on someone like her. He picked up his speed in gathering his ingredients.

All the ingredients that he picked weren’t too expensive either. Each one of them was worth around 10 points. Very quickly, Ye Zifeng’s bag was filled up. He almost had to go and get a bigger bag to hold all these things.

Bingqian was standing far away and would secretly sneak a few glances towards Ye Zifeng. When she saw his bag, she was shocked. For someone to use up all their contribution points for medicinal ingredients, that person must be a talented alchemist. They also had to be a crazed alchemist as well!

“This person definitely have the talent and willpower for alchemy. Just you wait. I, Bingqian will definitely make you my disciple!”

Chapter 17: Fatal Miscalculation

The news about Ye Zifeng completing a higher level mission was spread throughout the entire sect. The one who was known as trash through the entire city was now publicly known as a talented genius. It made many people feel frustrated and regretful. The originally fallen Ye clan now showed signs of life due to Ye Zifeng's actions.

In the Ye clan, the attitude of the clan members changed drastically towards Ye Zifeng. In the past, everyone in the Ye clan, even the servants treated him coldly. Although he was the young master in status, no one treated him as if he was the young master of the clan. Now however, everyone started to treat him nicely as if they were afraid of offending him.

Afterall, he was the young master of the Ye Clan. If was due to his sickness and inability to cultivate that he was treated like a trash. Now, after he showed off his true strength, he will probably follow his father's footsteps and become the clan master sooner or later. This was a great fortune for the Ye clan.

Of course, not everybody was happy to see Ye Zifeng's sudden emergence.

"Father, cousin Zifeng only finished a mere sect mission and everyone's attitude towards him changed. I don't like it at all. I want to teach him a lesson!"

Ye Huichi's eyes were filled with hatred. Since he was little, he had received his father's acquiescence to bully this guy. But now, the guy that he had been bullying had suddenly leapt above him in status. Ye Huichi was unable to accept this fact.

Ye Chen hated Ye Zifeng as well. Last time when the Liu family came to cancel the engagement, Ye Zifeng had talked back to him not once, or twice, but three times! However, Ye Chen was a smart person. He won't do anything that he can't accomplish.

"Teach him a lesson? Don't be rash. Since Ye Zifeng was able to finish

this mission, you might not be his opponent at all. When the time comes, the one who's going to lose face will be you!"

Ye Huichi was surprisesd, "Father, what are you talking about? I'm at the fifth stage of qi refining and he's only at the third stage. How can't I beat him?"

Ye Chen coldly looked at his son, "The let me ask you this. Last time he destroyed that Liu Yige who was at the peak of the fifth stage of qi refining. What happened at that time?"

Hearing his father's words, Ye Huichi was silent. He didn't know how to reply. At that time, he didn't know what kind of underhand method Ye Zifeng used to make Liu Yige spit out mouthfuls of blood. When he thought about it again, that was an outrageous fight.

Seeing how his son wasn't willing to accept the facts, Ye Chen sighed, "If you want to deal with Ye Zifeng, it's not impossible. But....."

Ye Huichi's eyes lit up, "Father, you're willing to help me?!"

"I'm your father. If I don't help you, who will?" Ye Chen bitterly laughed, "Listen to me first.....If you want to deal with him, don't use brute force. Use your head. Why do you think that Ye Zifeng was able to become so strong in such a short amount of time?"

Ye Huichi thought about it for a while but he couldn't figure it out.

Ye Chen gave his son a hint, "Think about it. What kind of activity did Ye Zifeng do that was different from before."

Ye Huichi thought about it again. Then suddenly he seemed to remembered something, "I remember now! Ye Zifeng got beat up by Wang Lin and the others recently. Could it be that he got stronger after being beaten half dead?"

Ye Chen facepalmed, "Idiot! If he got stronger after being beat up, do you want me to beat you up right now? Maybe you'll be able to ascend all the way to the Martial Disciple realm!"

Ye Huichi's face immediately turned ashen and shook his head.

Ye Chen sighed again, “If I’m not wrong, the problem is with the furnace. Don’t you remember? Ye Zifeng spent his time in the cellar and refined pills!”

Ye Huichi was not convinced, “But, from what housekeeper Du said, all Ye Zifeng made was a bunch of slag. Nothing that remotely resembles a pill could be seen at all.”

Ye Chen shook his head, “At first, that’s what I thought too, so I didn’t pay much mind to it. However, after watching Ye Zifeng beat Liu Yige and seeing how Madam Tang’s attitude changed towards him, I felt that something wasn’t adding up. Perhaps he made a bunch of slag to fool us and then made some pills later on.”

“No way..... Cousin Zifeng never learned anything about the art of alchemy. How can he succeed in making pills. As for why Madam Tang’s attitude change, maybe Xueyi convinced her somehow.” Ye Huichi pondered and answered.

Ye Chen coldly smiled, “Do you think that girl Xueyi can convince Tang Feng? Hahaha..... I know what kind of person Tang Feng is like. If she doesn’t get any benefit, she would never help Ye Zifeng out. As for this benefit... I’m willing to bet that it has something to do with pills.”

Ye Huichi understood what his father meant and nodded. In actuality, it was a bit strange that Ye Zifeng had asked for a furnace out of nowhere. At first, he thought that Zifeng was just wasting money and wanted to ridicule his father. But now, it seems like Zifeng had some plans in mind.

“However, all of this is just a speculation.”

Ye Chen’s face stiffened. His son had found the only hole in his deduction. He had no proof if this was real.

A hint of hatred can be seen in Ye Chen’s eyes, “ No matter what, when Ye Zifeng rises up, we have to strike him down. If not, then when he becomes stronger later on, he might take revenge on us. Also, that means that you won’t be able to take over as the master of the clan in the future. According to the tradition, if the young master of the clan isn’t able to succeed the position as master, the position would fall to the 2nd young

master.

‘Father! Tell me what I should do!”

Ye Chen stepped forward and leaned forward, “Give me your ear.....”

.....

The entire Ye clan’s attitude had changed. Ye Zifeng couldn’t hear people calling him trash or good for nothing anymore. The entire place felt more peaceful.

In the middle of all this, the happiest one was Ye Xueyi.

“Brother Zifeng. I knew that this day would come eventually. I knew you would get rid of your title as a trash and get back on the path of cultivation! This is great!”

Seeing how Ye Xueyi was so happy, Ye Zifeng felt gratified as well. Having a family member who cares so much about you. Ye Zifeng felt that this was his greatest gain after crossing over.

However, despite all this, Ye Zifeng didn’t really feel happy on the inside. Showing off his ability will allow him to get rid of his name as trash, but it will also make others jealous and angry at him.

In the Ye clan, Ye Chen and Ye Huichi clearly had evil intents towards him. Ye Zifeng was worried about what they would try to do to him. This was one of the reasons why he had Tang Feng kept his secret from everyone. If they found out that he had talent in refining pills, they will try to completely suppress him in his cultivation.

Right now, Ye Zifeng was still too weak. His reputation had just started to rise in the clan. The only one who truly wanted to help him if anything were to happen was Ye Xueyi. With his current strength, he can not possibly ignore and overlook what these two are doing.

This was why, raising his cultivation was his top priority.

“Xueyi, about those materials that I had your mother prepare....” Ye Zifeng suddenly asked.

Xueyi smiled and opened up her bag, “Don’t worry. It’s all here.”

“Good. Bring these ingredients and come to the cellar with me. Once I’m done refining, I’ll give you something good.” Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He picked up his bag which included the three rhino heads and the ingredients he got from the treasury.

“Thanks Brother Zifeng.” Hearing that he had something good to give her, Xueyi was very happy.

“But, you just came back. You haven’t even rested yet and you want to go to the cellar? Wouldn’t this be too much for your body?” Ye Xueyi was rather worried about her brother’s weak body.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “Don’t worry about it. My body isn’t as sick it is as before. I fought with the Thunder Rhinos for three days and it didn’t even affect me. How could refining pills tire me out?”

Hearing these words, Ye Xueyi smiled and nodded in joy.

“Oh right. I wanted to ask you this before but I didn’t get the chance. How did you subdue those Thunder Rhinos. Tell me about it.”

“Okay. Get the things ready and walk with me. I’ll tell you about it as we walk.”

The two people walked and chatted happily.

“So that’s how it is. Brother Zifeng used the small furnace to absorb the thunder qi from the Thunder Spirit Grass! Wow! Did you have the planned out beforehand?” Ye Xueyi gasped in admiration.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Usually, beasts that have an attribute will live near places where it provides them with energy of the same attribute. Thus, when I saw that the mission was to take down an attributed beast, I became so happy. This was because I knew how I would fight against them already....”

Ye Xueyi was shocked. Even though she was able to handle all the shocking things that Ye Zifeng did in these few days, when he was talking just now, he looked as if he was a great expert. He was completely different from the Ye Zifeng back then.

“Brother Zifeng, were you hiding your tracks back and learned about worldly matters in secret? If not, how did you know about all these things that even I don’t know about? Oh!Oh! I know! All those books about “Otherworldly Beauties” were actually books about alchemy in disguise right?

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed and shook his head. He really didn’t know how to fix this shady history that this guy had.

At that time, the two had already reached the cellar.

“Okay Xueyi. Put these things into the furnace. After about an hour, I’ll slowly put the main ingredients into the furnace.” Ye Zifeng put down his backpack in front of the doors.

Ye Xueyi smiled. She followed Ye Zifeng’s direction and put everything into the furnace.

“Brother Zifeng, since i was busy chatting with you, I didn’t notice all these other ingredients in the furnace. Did you put them in? There’s some white stuff and some red stuff in here.....”

“Other ingredients? I didn’t put anything in....” Ye Zifeng was shocked after hearing this.

When he turned around, it seems like he remembered something. He immediately stood up and cursed.

“Shit. I’ve been had!”

At the same time, he used all his strength and flew towards Xueyi. He grabbed the shocked Xueyi and pushed her towards the ground with his body on top of hers, as if he was shielding her.

Behind the two, the furnace went up in flames and with a “Bang!” sound, It exploded.

Chapter 18: You're ruthless? I'm more ruthless!

Although Ye Zifeng put his entire on top of Ye Xueyi, he could not cover her entire body.

Due to the shock wave from the explosion, a few pieces of shrapnel struck Ye Zifeng's back. If it wasn't for Ye Zifeng's quick reactions, then the clueless and defenseless Ye Xueyi would be gravely injured right now.

"Brother Zifeng. Brother Zifeng! What happened? Are you alright?"

"Cough.Cough....." Ye Zifeng moved his hands around and sat up slowly, showing that there was no problem at all.

"Let me see your back. Are your injuries serious?"

Ye Zifeng's expression showed that he was in pain, but he lifted his head and forced a smile, "Don't worry about it. It's not much."

Ye Xueyi pretended to nodded obediently. But then she suddenly stood up and walked behind Ye Zifeng. When she saw his back, she gasped loudly.

The cloth on Ye Zifeng's back turned to smithereens. There was blood all over the place and it covered his entire back. Quite a few pieces of the furnace were embed into his back. Parts of his back was burnt black. It looked very horrifying.

"Brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi stared at her brother's back. Her head was buzzing as if she couldn't believe what she was seeing. Tears started to fall from her eyes.

Since his injury was seen by Xueyi already, he didn't have to himself back anymore and painfully yelled out.

"Who could be so ruthless! If I find out who did it, I'll definitely kill them!" Ye Xueyi returned to her sense. Her expression turned cold and was filled with killing intent.

In the clan, people would fight against each other for some matters. But

this was going to far. This event had almost taken both of their lives!

Ye Zifeng coldly and weakly smiled, “Heh. It’s not so hard to guess who this this. There aren’t that many people who could mess with my furnace and try to clip my wings before I soar above them.” While saying that, he looked at the backpack at the door. He was lucky that he left his bag by the door, or else if it got caught up in the explosion, it would be really unfortunate.

Images of a few people appeared in Xueyi’s mind.

“Could it be second uncle and them?”

.....

“What happened? How come there was an explosion?”

The explosion was very loud. Very quickly, it attracted the people in the manor. The first one who arrived was Tang Feng. When she heard that the explosion had come from the cellar, she felt that something was wrong. She knew very clearly that her daughter loved to hang out with Ye Zifeng in the cellar. If something happened to the cellar, something must’ve happened to her daughter as well.

“Xueyi! Xueyi! Oh thank god. You’re fine....” Tang Feng walked into the cellar and saw that her daughter was not affected by the explosion. She breathed a sigh of relief. Normally, she was cold towards people but towards her own daughter, she was very caring.

“Mother. Don’t worry about me. Get a doctor for Brother Zifeng. Look at his back! He became like this because he rescued me!” Ye Xueyi quickly replied to her mother.

After Tang Feng calmed down, she went and looked at Ye Zifeng’s injury. She saw his back filled with blood and was shocked. Xueyi said that he became like this after saving her and thus she felt like she needed to act.

“Zifeng, how did you become like this? Someone come quickly!”

At that time, a few of the other Ye clan members heard her voice and rushed over. One by one, they called out for the doctor after witnessing the

scene. Very quickly, the Ye clan's doctor came over with bags of medicine and rubbed it on Ye Zifeng's back.

After the doctor applied the medicine, Ye Zifeng felt his entire body in pain. He started to breathe very loudly and he curled up into a ball.

"Brother Zifeng.... It's my fault...." Ye Xueyi started to cry and held onto ye Zifeng's hand.

Ye Zifeng forced a smile. He knew that this didn't have anything to do with Xueyi and didn't blame her.

The last ones who came were Ye Chen and Ye Huichi. When they both saw Ye Zifeng, they looked at each other. Their eyes showed a complex expression.

"Cousin Zifeng. I'm a bit curious. Why would the furnace randomly explode like this. Is it because you were refining some sort of special medicine?"

With this one phrase, Ye Huichi put the blame of Zifeng's injury on his own inability to refine pills. He even pointed out that Zifeng had broke the furnace. He was basically blaming the righteous one as the guilty one.

Ye Xueyi coldly looked at him, "This time, your other cousin Zifeng was heavily injured. As the younger cousin, how could you slander him instead of comforting him!"

"I can do whatever I want. Who are you to judge me?" Ye Huichi replied angrily.

"You!" Ye Xueyi was so mad that she was about to go up to him and beat him up.

Ye Chen's face turned ashen and immediately said, "Huichi! How could you say something like this. He's your older cousin. You should be more respectful!"

Ye Huichi shrugged his shoulders and softly said, "What about my manners. Hmph. I'm just speaking the truth."

Ye Chen was slightly angry at Huichi's behavior and pulled him aside,

“Sorry for the embarrassment. My son is only blabbering nonsense. He doesn’t actually mean it.”

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and forced himself up.

Ye clan’s doctor, Zeng Peng wanted to stop him but his hand was flung away.

“Look at his bad temperament. The doctor wanted to be nice and give him and hand but was flung away.”

“Yeah. From what I can see, he deserved to be blasted.....”

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi stared hatefully at those kids who were talking. The kids saw this and immediately shut their mouth.

Normally, a child’s word should bring no harm. But seeing how they’re slandering Ye Zifeng, it seems like their parents had corrupted them.

Ye Zifeng shook his head and calmed himself down.

Right now, he knows that he has enemies. However, he also knows that he wasn’t the Martial Lord Heaven Tier genius Alchemist Ye Zifeng anymore. As the lowly qi refining stage Ye Zifeng, he needs to know that he can’t make any moves against his enemies right now. He knew that Ye Chen had ill feelings towards himself and wanted to be a step ahead of them. However, he was still a step too late in the end.

The him right now, he needs to be patient. He must know how to hold back before he becomes strong. It’s still too early to show all of his cards. He doesn’t know what his own clan members would do to him let alone what other clans would do if they found out about his skills.

He continued to shake his head and slowly walked towards Ye Chen.

“Zifeng. What do you want?” Ye Chen’s mouth began to twitch. Ye Chen was already in the martial disciple realm but when he faced Ye Zifeng, he felt afraid. It was as if the person in front of him wasn’t a qi refining rookie but a supreme expert.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Second uncle, mind stepping away with me for a second?”

Ye Huichi laughed, “If you want to say anything, why not say it in front of everybody?”

“Do you want me to..... Explain. Everything. Clearly. To. Everyone?” Ye Zifeng said every single word clearly and loudly. Each word was filled with a deep meaning. Although he was taken advantage of by these two, he didn’t fall so low to their level.

Ye Zifeng continued to stare deeply at them. It was as if his glare had pierced through their skins. Ye Huichi suddenly felt cold sweat forming on his head. His heartbeat increased and he was scared of Ye Zifeng. He felt that it was a disgrace how Ye Zifeng was able to put him in such a state with such a glare.

Whether it was Zifeng or Ye Chen, neither of them wanted to be a fool in front of other people.

Ye Chen then looked at Zifeng and smiled, “Stepping away for a bit? Sure.....”

“Please.... This way then.....” Ye Zifeng replied nonchalantly.

“Brother Zifeng... You....” Xueyi was worried.

“Don’t worry about me. Nothing’s gonna happen.”

He was speaking the truth. No matter how much courage Ye Chen had, he would definitely not lay his hands on Ye Zifeng. Otherwise, when Ye Chongtian returns and finds out, he will definitely be killed.

The two people walked to the side under everyone’s glare. They were pretty far away from the scene and no one could hear them.

“What do you need from me. You can tell me now.” Ye Chen started the talk.

“This incident. I can pretend that it never happened....” Ye Zifeng’s reply was quick and concise.

Ye Chen was startled, and then began to laugh, “I don’t understand. What do you mean?”

“We’re the only ones here. No one can hear us. Second Uncle, you don’t

need to put on that innocent act."

Ye Chen's face turned ashen and stiffened up. From Ye Zifeng's voice, he can tell that there was not a single hint of respect.

"I told you already. I don't know what you're talking about." Ye Chen was still being persistent.

Ye Zifeng smiled slyly. The smile cause Ye Chen to feel shivers.

"Huichi isn't smart enough to do something like this. There must be someone who told him what to do. I don't think you have the courage to do something like this either. There must be someone else behind all of this. Let me guess. Is it the people from the Liu family? Did they tell you to hold me down?" While saying those last two sentences, Ye Zifeng's eyes turned deathly cold.

Ye Zifeng was right. It was the Liu family's Liu Yige who told Ye Chen to plot something like this. Ye Chen was promised a solid yuan pill and many other benefits in exchange. It was because of this that Ye Chen was able to muster up the courage to mess with Ye Zifeng when Ye Chongtian was gone.

"But... You don't have any....."

"No. I have the evidence!" Ye Zifeng smiled. He knew what Ye Chen wanted to say.

Ye Chen was shocked. No matter how cautious he was, there was a possibility that he left some traces of his actions behind. If Ye Zifeng reveals everything to the Ye clan, he wouldn't even need to wait until Ye Chongtian returns. His respect in the household would definitely fall.

He wanted to ask Ye Zifeng if he really had the evidence. But if he does that, he would be revealing that he is in fact cahooting with the Liu clan.

Even in his dreams, Ye Chen would not have expected that he would be found out by a qi refining stage brat. Thinking about this, his heart felt pained.

He sighed and then said, "What do you want. Tell me straight up."

Chapter 19: You'll take care of my finance problems!

Ye Chen's expression looked very gloomy. He gave Ye Zifeng a freebie to get something that he wanted, but if Ye Zifeng goes too far, Ye Chen would definitely try to fight back. Afterall, he was still one of the more respected elders of the clan and Ye Zifeng should not be able to defy him.

Ye Zifeng's expression looked respectful, "Wow. Second uncle is sure direct. I, Zifeng won't be too harsh then." He smiled and held up four fingers.

Ye Chen looked at this, confused, "What do you mean by this?"

"Give me four hundred gold coins."

Ye Chen lightly sighed, "You want money?" All these years of being in the Ye clan, he had taken a lot of bribes and have stashed up quite a bit of money. To Ye Chen, giving away some money wasn't a problem.

"If you want money, that's fine. However, don't you think overvaluing yourself?"

In the Ye clan, even Tang Feng, the master's wife only got around 50 gold coins in a month. However, this Ye Zifeng actually wants eight months worth of allowance of her allowance in one go?

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "I'm still the young master of the Ye clan. My life is worth way more than 400 gold coins. Actually, it's a bargain for you. To the other clan members, 400 gold coins is a bit of a problem but to second uncle, it shouldn't be much."

Ye Zifeng knew that the Liu clan and Ye Chen had some fishy things going on. He knew that the Liu clan would privately send some money over to Ye Chen for some favors. It seems like the fall of the Ye Clan wasn't all because of Ye Zifeng. Ye Chen probably played a part in it as well.

Ye Chen's expression change and looked calmer, "Fine. fine. Fine. Ye

Zifeng, I don't know what kind of medicine you ate to become so daring lately. You even dare to solicit money from your second uncle."

Ye Chen took a long pause and then continued, "Fine. I'll promise you. 400 gold coins. It'll be for you medical fees. However, before I give it to you, you need to make a blood oath....."

"Fine. I, Ye Zifeng will make a blood oath today. When I receive the 400 gold coins from Ye Chen, I will not talk with anyone about the furnace explosion. If I were to break the oath, I will be struck by the heavenly tribulation lighting, and be consigned to eternal damnation." While saying that, he bit his thumb, infused his qi with his blood and scattered it all over the floor.

"Alright. When you finish applying medicine to your back, come to my room and i'll give you your 400 gold coins."

"Alright. Deal."

The two smiled at each other. For two people who hated each other, it was a miracle that they were able to reach such an agreement.

Ye Chen had no choice but to agree to Zifeng's terms. He was a cautious and prudent person. It was because his son couldn't beat Ye Zifeng that he had to rely on underhand methods. This time, even though he didn't kill Ye Zifeng, everyone in the clan suspected that he was related to the incident. If he make any suspicious movements right after what just happened, he will definitely be found out. When Ye Chongtian comes back, he will definitely be killed. So right now, what Ye Chen needs to do is to have a temporary truce with Ye Zifeng. Using some money to shut him up was the best course of action.

Ye Chen hesitated a bit but then asked, "However, I still have a question. Can you give me an explanation....."

Ye Zifeng smiled, " Go ahead and ask."

"Actually, I didn't want to kill you this time around. I made Huichi put just enough explosives in the furnace to destroy the furnace. What I don't understand is how this little amount of explosive was able to injury you so

severely. When Huichi and I saw your back, we were very shocked. We didn't understand how that could happen."

Ye Zifeng calmly looked at him and then his mouth suddenly curved up. He glared at Ye Chen with eyes filled with coldness.

"When a furnace explodes, do you think that a cultivator like me would have the same injury as a commoner?"

Ye Chen was startled. He couldn't believe what he was hearing, "Are you saying..... You did this on purpose....." When he said that, he unconsciously moved back a few steps.

"That's right. When the furnace exploded, the shockwave wasn't that strong. If I use my qi to defend myself, I wouldn't even be injured at all. At most, my clothes would be torn. But in the heat of the moment, I thought of something. I thought of a way for people to suspect that you guys were behind everything. Thus, I didn't use any qi to defend myself and sacrificed my body."

"You..... To make other people suspect me, you would actually do something like this?" Ye Chen gasped.

"If I wasn't injured and the furnace exploded, the story would be exactly how Huichi described it. Everyone would think that it was my inability to refine pills. But now... what do you think people are thinking?" Ye Zifeng's glare was as cold as ice. Each and every one of his pierced through Ye Chen's heart like blades.

Other than those kids who don't understand things, everyone else were probably suspecting Ye Chen.

Ye Chen bitterly smiled and shook his head. Just what kind of person did he provoke. He was a hairless brat. How did he have the willpower and determination to use his own body in order to put the blame on him.

These four hundred gold coins. Ye Zifeng deserved it.

.....

Two hours later, Ye Zifeng got his four hundred gold coins and returned

to his room.

Outside of his room, Ye Xueyi had been pacing back and forth for a while now. When she saw the Ye Zifeng had finally returned, she quickly ran up towards him.

“Brother Zifeng, did second uncle threaten you or something? I wrote a letter to father, and told him to come home quickly!” Ye Xueyi was very anxious and worried.

Ye Zifeng chuckled and replied, “Don’t worry. Second uncle and I came to an agreement. This matter is finished. He won’t do anything to me again and I won’t expose his doings. Besides, he gave me four hundred gold coins as compensation.”

Saying that, he put the bag of money on the table.

Ye Xueyi was stunned. Four hundred gold coins was a lot of money. It wasn’t easy to solicit any money from Ye Chen at all. To the members of the younger generation like Xueyi, this was a colossal amount of money. With this amount of money, he can probably get a new furnace and a bunch of other things!

Thinking about the possibilities, Xueyi asked her brother, “Brother Zifeng, are you going to buy a new furnace and bring it back home?”

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “No way. If I bring it back here, the clan members would suspect something and pay more attention to me. It’ll be hard for me to refine pills here. Also, that stupid brat Huichi might do something dumb and break my furnace again. I’ll need to watch it every day. It’ll be bothersome.”

Puchi Ye Xueyi snickered.

“What are you laughing at?”

“Back then, Huichi hated the fact that you were a retard. But now, you’re the one calling him stupid brat.

Ye Zifeng was amazed. It seems like the old Ye Zifeng was not only sick person and a good for nothing, but he was retarded as well?

Inconceivable.....

“Alright. Let’s not talk about this.” Ye Xueyi can see that her brother was in a predicament, “Now that your furnace is broken and you can’t refine in the house anymore, what’re you going to do?”

“Well I plan to go to the pill shop in the morning tomorrow and then I’ll see what happens afterwards. If they have any furnaces in stock, I’ll buy it and hide it somewhere in the wilderness. I’ll also cultivate and refine pills there so I don’t waste any time traveling back and forth.” Ye Zifeng thought about it and answered.

“Refine pills outside the city? Wuuu.....” Ye Xueyi muttered to herself. “That’s fine too then. If you need anything when you’re there, you can ask me to come any time. I’ll try my best to help you out. If I can’t help you out, I’ll get mother to come and help out too.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and patted her head lightly, “How can you sell your mother out like that. If I was your mother, I would feel extremely sad at what you said just now.”

Ye Xueyi laughed embarrassingly. Her face turned red and she pushed Ye Zifeng.

Being pushed, Ye Zifeng’s back hit the wall as he stumbled backwards. He had a painful look on his face as he started to breathe harder.

“Brother Zifeng. I’m sorry. I got too excited that I forgot you were injured.” Ye Xueyi softly apologized filled with regret.

Ye Zifeng forced a smile, “Don’t worry about it. I’ve already applied medicine. This is only a light injury. After resting for a bit later, it’ll get better tomorrow.

Xueyi apologetically nodded, “Well brother Zifeng, it’s getting late so I won’t bother you anymore. When you sleep, you have to be careful.”

“Don’t worry. I’ll be careful.”

Ye Xueyi turned around and took a few more glances at Zifeng before she finally left. Today, Ye Zifeng had risked his life to save her. She was

very moved by his actions.

After Ye Xueyi left, Ye Zifeng finally let out a deep breath. His face turned more and more pale. It seems like his injury was more serious than he thought.

He was acting strong in front of the entire Ye clan, in front of Ye Chen and then in front of Ye Xueyi. Now, he couldn't hold it anymore. The pain in his back felt as if thousands of blades had pierced it. He was in so much pain that he wanted to rip his entire back off.

He took this risk because he wanted to win against Ye Chen. When the explosion happened, he really didn't use any qi to defend himself. He put his life on the stakes in order to win. If the Ye clan members didn't come quickly and if the doctor didn't apply the medicine in time, then Ye Zifeng might really have died.

Ye Zifeng sat crossed legged and started to use his qi to treat his injuries.

When he started to circulate his qi, an evil qi suddenly appeared as well. The evil qi did not harm him but it made the red veins on his arm clearer and clearer. The most important thing was that when his red veins started to expand, the qi started to treat his back. Very quickly, his back started to recover and scar up.

Ye Zifeng was shocked at what just happened.

"What the hell is this? Could it be that not only can this martial spirit help me attack, but it can also help heal me?"

Chapter 20: Double Martial Spirit??

Ye Zifeng exclaimed loudly and then calmed himself down.

Some sort of qi appeared from the veiny imprints on his arms and slowly moved towards his injured back. It started to nourish and recover the injured area of his back.

The process felt really good. It felt as if the spirit could pinpoint where his injuries were and slowly nurtured it. Ye Zifeng closed his eyes and started to feel the qi moving around.

Ye Zifeng sat there, unconscious. His consciousness appeared in a familiar place. He was in the starry and misty world once again.

He can feel the giant shadow ghost circling around the area. The ghost moved very quickly, not allowing Ye Zifeng to see its appearance.

“Why did you wake me up for such a small problem. Are you trying to slow down my growth process for no reason? Can you not use your own qi to heal yourself or something?” The muffled voice had a hint of dissatisfaction in it.

The shadow ghost was most likely a high ranked martial spirit with growth potential. If not for this, Ye Zifeng would not let it act so high and mighty.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng embarrassingly smiled, “I don’t know what happened either. I wanted to use my own true qi but for some reason, your martial spirit qi came out. I found this to be very strange as well.”

“Using your true qi will release my spirit qi?” The shadow ghost didn’t believe what Ye Zifeng was saying. If that’s the case then wouldn’t the shadow ghost be bothered every time Ye Zifeng used his qi?

“How are you using your true qi? Let me see it.....” The shadow ghost replied.

Ye Zifeng repeated the method that he used before. He was currently using a Qi Concentration method from a famous sect that he obtained in his past life. There shouldn’t be anything wrong with it. The shadow ghost

saw this as well and was confused. Could it be that Ye Zifeng needs to be gravely injured to see what happens?

"Okay. Let's not talk about this right now." Ye Zifeng smiled, "Well now you're here, let me ask you something. Your spirit qi can does not only have destructive properties but healing properties as well. What kind of martial spirit are you? Could you be a double martial spirit? You can tell me now so when I become a martial disciple, I can properly manage you....."

The shadow ghost coldly snorted, "YOU want to manage me? Haha.... You don't have the qualifications to command me or know my true strength. What you need to do is live a good life. If you die, I'll be in trouble as well since I need your power. Alright. You've bothered me enough.... Go back."

After the shadow ghost said that, a large gust of wind appeared and attacked Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng wanted to escape but was unable to and was swallowed by the wind.

At that time, both of Ye Zifeng's eyes opened up. He surveyed his surroundings and saw nothing except that the flames on his candle had gone out. It was alright way past midnight. He thought about what had just happened and broke into a cold sweat.

While training and recovering at night, it's best if he could dream about some beautiful women. But he met that scary shadow ghost again and almost died in the dream realm. Life was really unfair.....

Ye Zifeng shook his head and bitterly smiled as he laid down on his bed.

When he laid down, his entire body froze. He was speechless.... His back did not hurt at all.

He quickly jumped up from his bed and lit his candle. He turned around and looked at his back.

Injury? What injury? His entire back was flat and smooth. It looked completely normal. Don't say anything about an injury, there isn't even a single scratch or mark on it.

“Holy..... This is kinda scary....” He took a deep breath. He wanted to expend his true qi and enter the dream realm again. However, no matter how hard he tried, he could not do it. Ye Zifeng ponder for a bit and then lightly injured himself. When he activated his true qi to heal himself, nothing happened. He came to the conclusion that for the spirit’s qi to activate, he needs to be in a life or death situation.

“Whatever, let’s not think about it. I’ll wait until i’m a Martial Disciple to worry about this.”

It was already past midnight so he was feeling very tired. These few days had exhausted him both mentally and physically. He was not only continuously humiliated but he had to drag this sickly body to battle the rhinos the three whole days. He needed a good night’s rest.

“It’s so lonely here by myself.... I really miss her.....”

He looked at the moon outside his windows, bitterly smiled and fell asleep.

.....

Next day in the morning.

A man wearing a straw hat who passed like thunder and moved like the wind entered the pill store. That man was Ye Zifeng. He concealed his identity and fiercely walked into the pill store.

“What did you say? You want to buy a furnace?” The store clerk’s expression changed. He had been a clerk here for a while. He had seen many people who wanted to buy high quality pills but he had never seen anyone who wanted to buy a furnace.

The clerk’s voice sound as if Ye Zifeng was here to make trouble. Afterall, who in the world didn’t know that a furnace was a pill store’s heart and soul.

“Don’t worry. I’m not here to cause trouble. I have the money. All I want is a spare common tier furnace if you guys have one.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

“Please hold on a moment. I’ll go get the manager. This is not a small

transaction." The clerk quickly ran into the back with his head down.

In a while, a big belly fat foul manager came out while swearing.

"Who is it... Who's the one that wants to cause trouble in my store. Do you not want to live anymore?"

When the manager saw the black figure in a straw hat, his heart shuddered. He saw that Ye Zifeng had a overbearing and imposing manner while standing there. It seemed like he wasn't a normal person that the manager could offend.

He walked slowly over to Ye Zifeng and asked, "May I ask who this esteemed guest is...."

"I'm someone who wants to buy a furnace...." Ye Zifeng didn't take off his hat or stated his name. He only repeated what he told the clerk. He saw that the manager was very polite with him and didn't want to waste his time playing around.

"No no no. That's not what i was asking." The manager awkwardly smiled.

Ye Zifeng smiled too, "I'm also someone who has money." He pointed at the bag of money that he put on the table. He held it up and shook it, telling the manager that there was really money in there.

The manager was taken aback and smiled apologetically, "I'm sorry. But it seems like this esteem class isn't in this line of business and doesn't know the rules. If you would like to buy ingredients, then you can buy as much as you want without a problem. But a furnace on the other hand..... There aren't many furnaces in Leizhou city..... if we don't confirm your identity, we can't sell it to you."

Ye Zifeng looked deeply at the manager, "Mr. Manager.... You don't need to try and deceive me. All the pill stores under the heaven follow the same rules. Spirit Tier, Immortal Tier and God Tier furnaces cannot be sold normally. But this rule doesn't apply to a common tier furnace." As a heaven tier alchemist, who knows the rules of these matters better than him?

The manager shook his head and bitterly laughed...

"This esteemed guest is very knowledgeable. This old me is blind for not recognizing someone like you. However, in Leizhou city, even a common tier furnace is highly valued. If you don't reveal your identity, I cannot sell it to you."

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and groaned. The manager was basically telling him to follow the rules of Leizhou city instead of the rules under the heaven.

If Ye Zifeng reveals his identity, that was basically telling the entire Leizhou city that he knew how to refine pills. When that happens, the other families will start to suppress him. They're even more of a problem than Ye Chen.

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled, "I put two hundred gold coins on the table before. Now what if I add another hundred?"

A common tier furnace was not that good. It was not expensive at all. If Ye Zifeng didn't want to waste time, energy and the material, he could've made one himself.

"Three hundred gold coins?" The manager was shocked. Not even the best quality common tier furnace was worth three hundred gold coins!

"You want to add another hundred gold coins to hide your identity? Why are you willing to go so far? Are you some kind of wanted criminal or something?" The manager suspiciously looked at Ye Zifeng.

"If I was a wanted criminal, do you think that you would be alive right now with your attitude?" Ye Zifeng smiled coldly. With the kind of murderous aura around him, people would definitely mistake him for a wanted criminal.

"If you add another fifty gold coins, then even if you're a wanted criminal, I will sell you the furnace!" While saying that, the manager acted as if he was reluctant to sell it. Ye Zifeng knew that a common tier was normally around fifty gold coins. But now, the manager wanted three hundred and fifty. He was basically trying to rob in broad daylight.

The two people quickly reached an agreement.

'Manager....." From outside the store, a girl's voice could be heard. Ye Zifeng felt that the voice was familiar but he didn't remember where he had heard it before.

A tall girl with a great figure and fine black hair walked in. She looked like a fine jade with her beautiful white skin.

"Bingqian....." Ye Zifeng was shocked. He pursed his lips, and felt that he was really unlucky. At the same time, he lowered his straw hat to hide himself even more.

"Manager. I heard that you that you guys have an extra furnace laying around. I kinda need it refine some ingredients so I came here to buy that furnace. If I can't buy it then let me rent it....."

The manager muttered to himself, looked at Ye Zifeng and then at Bingqian. He then awkwardly replied to her, 'Miss Bingqian, I'm sorry but this guest had just bought the furnace. You're one step too late....." Even though he was greedy, he still had the mind of a merchant. He sold the furnace to Zifeng already so he couldn't go back on his word.

Bingqian's face stiffened and then sized Ye Zifeng up, "Who are you. Why do you need to buy a furnace? Could it be that you know alchemy too?"

Chapter 21: Pampered Girl

Ye Zifeng was calm. He tipped his bamboo hat and lightly laughed, “I have never met this miss before. As for why I am buying the furnace, I have no reason to tell this miss.”

He didn’t know what kind of background Bingqian had, but he knew she was someone from Leizhou city. He had to be careful around her.

Bingqian was startled for a bit and then started to laugh.

When other people meet her for the first time, they would stop and stare at her beauty for some time. However, this bamboo hat wearing man had no reaction at all. He wasn’t flustered at all when he talked as well.

To her, there was only two explanations for this phenomenon. One was that this man had seen her before. The other was that this man had no interest in women. From what Bingqian can see, the former made more sense. What is this talk about never having seen her before. That guy was definitely lying!

Since this guy didn’t want to reveal his identity and was very sneaky, Bingqian became very curious. She wanted to force him to reveal his identity.

“Manager, how much money did he offer for the furnace. How about I double the price?” Bingqian calmed down and then pondered for a bit.

This time, she had to get the furnace no matter what. She knew that the manager was a greedy person and thus tried to tempt him with money.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brow. At first he felt pretty good about this Bingqian girl but now, she wasn’t respecting the laws of transaction. He was here first and now she wanted to take this furnace away from him.

“Do....Double? Miss Bingqian, this guest is paying 350 gold coins. If you want to double it..... That’s seven hundred coins” The manager’s merchant spirit was able to break under the pressure of such a large amount of money. 700 gold coins.... That was the entire store’s profit for several days!

“What? You used 350 gold coins.....” Bingqian’s eyes widened and stared

at Ye Zifeng. She thought that this person would at most use 200 gold coins. Who would've thought that this guy was so rich.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Now what do you want to do? You gonna use 700 gold coins to buy a furnace that isn't even worth 50 gold coins?

"You know this is not even worth 50 gold coins and yet you're using 350 gold coins to buy it?" Bingqian was confused.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Don't worry about it." Ye Zifeng had to buy this furnace no matter how much it costs. He didn't care at all. All he needs is some left over money to get some supplementary ingredients.

"I....."

Actually, it's not that hard for Bingqian to shell out 700 gold coins. However, it was not worth it at all. She didn't want to argue with Ye Zifeng either. Afterall they weren't enemies or anything.

"Manager, when is the next batch of furnaces going to arrive?" Bingqian's eyes flashed with hope.

The manager thought about it and then sighed, "Uhhh.... No one really buy furnaces in Leizhou city so there isn't a lot of stock coming in. It'll probably take around a month or two before the next batch gets here."

Bingqian's expression darkened, "That's too long..... I need to make this pill in ten days. Or else my family will lose out on a huge sale."

Her face was filled with disappointment. It made others want to feel pity for her. At the same time, she shot a few pitiful glances at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng pretended that he didn't see her and went up to the manager to pay for his furnace. He didn't care about Bingqian's pitiful look at all.

"Hey.....! How could you not have any reaction after seeing how pitiful I look? Hey.... Did you hear me?!"

"Sorry, I'm not called "hey"..... Then manager, can you open the furnace for me? I want to see the insides....."

Bingqian took a deep breath. She became much more elegant and gentle. She used her sweat and charming voice to talk to Ye Zifeng, "Then.... This

mister."

"I'm a rough guy, not a mister. Manager, help me wipe some of this paint off right here....." Ye Zifeng pointed at the inside of the furnace.

Bingqian held her anger back and with an even softer voice, "Brother.... Brother rough guy, this little girl has a presumptuous request." With her status and beauty, this was the first time that she had to deal with someone so difficult.

"If it's about the furnace, then you can stop talking. I won't give it to you." Ye Zifeng directly shooed her away. He is a crazed alchemist, he'd rather never see a woman again in his life than never see a furnace again. He could live without a woman but he can't live without a furnace. When Ye Chen destroyed his furnace, Ye Zifeng was secretly super angry. Sooner or later, Zifeng will get his revenge on Huichi.

"You!" Bingqian was acting all nice and lovely but Ye Zifeng didn't care. She was very angry at him.

Watching how Ye Zifeng was acting, the manager coughed, "Esteemed guest, you probably don't know this but, this Bingqian is the strongest huang tier alchemist in Leizhou city. If you buy the furnace today and need her to make a pill or something in the future, don't blame me for not telling you."

Besides being a little greedy, the manager was still a good person. He was earnestly giving Ye Zifeng advice.

"Yeah! That's right."

From the manager's statement, she was able to find her dignity again. She raised her head and softly said, "Did you hear that? I'm the best alchemist in all of Leizhou City. You're probably looking for some other alchemist to refine pills. Don't you ever come to me and ask me to refine pills. In the future, whenever I see that furnace, I'll turn away and leave!"

Ye Zifeng calmly nodded, "Don't worry about it. I definitely won't go and ask you to refine pills for me."

Both the Manager and Bingqian were speechless.

First this guy wastes 350 gold coins for a common tier furnace and now he's treating a huang tier alchemist like Bingqian like she's nothing. This guy was crazy. Absolutely crazy!

"Manager, I've inspect the furnace. Even though there are some flaws, it isn't much of a problem. I'll pay for it now. Three hundred fifty gold coins. Not one less." Ye Zifeng was very respectful.

Just now, he used 80% of his attention to inspect the furnace and only used 20% of his attention to talk with Bingqian and the manager. The manager's jaw dropped and nodded.

At the same time, Bingqian was feeling a bit sour. Ever since she was small, she was very arrogant and was pampered by everyone. Her cultivation had reached the peak of Qi Refining stage and she was the best alchemist in Leizhou City. Her master was the old devil from the Muyun clan in Tiandao City. She was talented in both her cultivation and her skills as an alchemist. She was the madonna of Leizhou City. A goddess in the eyes of commoners. How could she be treated like this by Ye Zifeng.

However, she was tough and didn't cry. Her eyes were only a little moist.

"Brother rough guy, I beg you. Even if you don't want to give me the furnace, can we share it? When you're resting, you can let me use it. How about it. I'll even pay 200 gold coins."

Ye Zifeng shook his head. He wasn't interested in sharing the furnace with her.

On the side, the manager was so shocked that he was unable to speak. In all these years that he had done business with Bingqian, she always acted high and mighty. But right now, she was begging this guy and she was actually rejected!

It is said that many people have use up numerous amount of resources and connection to try and get close to Bingqian so they can learn some of her tricks in alchemy. However they were all declined. Now that Bingqian herself had suggested that she would refine pills with someone, she was unexpectedly rejected!

“Then how about I give you 300 gold coins....”

Ye Zifeng still had an indifferent expression. In his eyes the beautiful woman was like a block of wood.

“Three hundred fifty gold coins. How about now.”

Bingqian blinked a few times and helplessly smiled. This was her last resort. She was really unlucky. When she wanted to buy a new furnace, she actually met a crazy guy like Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng shook his head dand coldly looked at her, “It’s not about the money. I don’t like having people near me when I refine pills.”

Hearing this, Bingqian was shocked. Teardrops flowed from her eyes uncontrollably. She couldn’t hold it in anymore and cried.

Cried? Leizhou City’s number one alchemist Bingqian actually cried?!

Ye Zifeng was not good with girls who were crying. Especially a beautiful girl her Bingqian. He turned and looked at the manager trying to ask him for a way to comfort her. However all he got back was a glare that said, “Bro. What are you doing idling there. Go up to her. In Leizhou city, there weren’t many people who could get her angry. For those who can make her cry, they must have the feathers of a phoenix and a horn of a unicorn!.” He was basically saying that no one could make her cry besides Ye Zifeng.

He wanted to dip after buying the furnace but Bingqian persistently followed him around the store while crying. Wherever Ye Zifeng went, she would follow him while crying.

Ye Zifeng could only bitterly laugh. Getting rid of a woman who followed him was much much harder than getting rid of a stalker. If she keeps following him like this, he won’t have time to refine pills.

Ye Zifeng finally gritted his teeth and said, “Fine..... Stop crying. I promise you. You can refine pills with me.”

Bingqian finally swallowed and stopped crying. She looked at him with reddened eyes, “Really? You’re not lying to me?”

“I’ve never lied to a woman.” Ye Zifeng look righteously at her. In his heart, he felt some regret making a promise with someone who he didn’t know much about.

Ultimately, the reason that he made this choice was because he wasn’t good with women. It was exactly like his past life...

Bingqian had a joyous expression and smiled, “ Okay. Who would’ve thought that someone like you would be so nice!”

Ye Zifeng finally walked back up to the manager, “Manager, i’ll pay for it now.”

The manage smiled, “Okay. I’ll go and count the money.”

Bingqian pulled Ye Zifeng’s sleeves and wiped her face on it, “That’s not right. Since we’re gonna refine pills together, I should pay half.”

“No. I need to let you know that you owe me. I have three conditions that I’ll tell you later.” Ye Zifeng shook his head.

Ye Zifeng wasn’t some chauvinistic male. He didn’t want Bingqian’s money. He only wanted her to cooperate with him.

“Three conditions? What do you want me to do?” Bingqian started to become nervous. She finally helplessly realized something: When she face this man, she would feel nervous and flustered.

Chapter 22: I want you to be my disciple!

“Brother rough guy, where are you bringing me?”

In a desolate area outside of town, a man and a woman were alone together. Even the proud and fearless Bingqian started to feel a bit nervous.

After the man in the straw hat bought the furnace, Bingqian followed him to his destination.

Just when Bingqian was about to move forward and stop him by pulling his sleeves, Ye Zifeng suddenly turned around causing Bingqian to almost run into him.

“Big brother rough guy..... If you’re gonna turn around, at least warn me first.....I almost ran into you” Bingqian rubbed her nose and pouted.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Who cares. With your temper, it’s not like you’re gonna kill me or anything....”

“My temper? What are you trying to assume? You think that since I look so nice that I won’t hurt you? If I want to kill you, not even ten of you can stop me.” A strong expression appeared in her eyes.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Okay. Okay. It was my bad.”

He paused for a bit and looked around, “Well since we’re here already, let’s talk about the three conditions.”

Bingqing nodded, “Let’s hear it. As long as they’re not too excessive, I will agree to them.

Ye Zifeng looked at her, “The first condition has the reason why I came to this desolate place outside the city. I want to hide this furnace out here. So that means that every time you want to refine pills, you have to come here to do so. Also, you can’t bring anyone else here. When you come, you have to make sure that there is no one following you.

Bingqian thought about then and then nodded, “This shouldn’t be a problem. I don’t need anyone’s help when refining pills so no one will

come with me. As for people following me.... I'll be careful."

Ye Zifeng nodded. He was satisfied with her answer.

"The second condition is that we will take turns refining pills. I'll use the furnace for one day, and you can use it the next day. Then the day after will be my turn again."

Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng with an astonished face. Other people would kill to refine pills with her or even to just watch her refine pills. However this guy actually want to refine pills on alternate days!

"You really don't want to refine pills with me? There's a lot of things that I have to do so I'm quite busy these days. I'm looking to take in a disciple to help me with my work. How about you....."

"Not interested!" Ye Zifeng replied without even hesitating.

Bingqian got angry and groaned, "I'm trying to help you with good intentions. It's fine that you don't want my help but you don't have to be so rude about it."

Ye Zifeng calmed down and replied, "If I say that I don't need you to teach me then I don't need you to teach me. Don't talk about this anymore. I don't need your help."

In his past life, a regular huang tier alchemist like Bingqian wasn't even worth shit in his eyes. And she wants to become his master? The day that Ye Zifeng falls to such state will be the day when pigs fly.

"Okay fine. I got it. I'm fine with the second condition. We'll take turns using the furnace on alternate days."

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Okay. Then for the third condition, I want you to keep my identity a secret. No matter what happens, you will not expose my identity. You will not tell anyone that I am an alchemist. Also you will not hinder any of my plans in the future. This will the a secret between the two of us."

After hearing this, Bingqian stared blankly at the man in front of her. When she returned to her senses, she happily said, "So you're saying that

you'll tell me who you are?"

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed. His biggest weakness was a woman's tears. On his way here, he's been regretting that he allowed Bingqian to come with him. However, he thought about it and felt that Bingqian would somehow find out about his identity sooner or later, so he might as well tell her now and make her keep it a secret.

"You have to promise me that you'll keep my secret."

Bingqian smiled, "Don't worry about it. I'm a person who sticks by my words. If I promise you something, I'll definitely uphold it. Even if you are a wanted criminal, I won't turn you in."

"Okay. You said so. I just hope that you'll remember this."

Ye Zifeng nodded and slowly took his bamboo hat off.

Because Ye Zifeng's face was deathly white due to his illness, he was easily recognizable. Bingqian recognized who he was right away.

"No way! You're that guy who was at the treasury!" Bingqian was shocked. She couldn't believe what she was seeing.

"Wait.... then....I'm basically your senior sister. How dare you talk to me like this. Do you want me to teach you a lesson the next time you go to the treasury?" Her became angry immediately.

Suddenly, she remembered that she called him "Big Brother" a few times and that she cried in front of him. Her face turned red from the embarrassment and she wanted to bury herself in a hole.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Senior sister, I said that you can't hinder any of my future plans in the third condidtion. Don't go around breaking promises now."

"I...." Bingqian bit her lips. If she were to do anything, that means that everything she promised before was worth nothing. As a loyal person, she would not do something like this.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "In the martial spirit continent, the weak obeys the strong. Today, with your peak qi refining stage cultivation, you can be my

senior sister. But when I surpass you, you'll become my junior sister. So right now, I don't mind that you use your senior sister tone with me. However, that'll change later on..."

Ye Zifeng spoke in a very imposing manner. It made Bingqian gulp and swallow her words.

After pausing for a bit, Bingqian angrily looked at Ye Zifeng, " Who would've thought that someone with such low level of cultivation like you can be so arrogant. What's your name?" She realized that she didn't know Ye Zifeng's name and asked.

And why would Ye Zifeng tell her his name? He laughed and replied, "Didn't I tell you before? I'm a rough person. You can just call me brother rough guy."

"Hmph. I didn't want to know anyways."

Bingqian turned around and reluctantly said, "Don't think that I'll be calling you big brother anymore. I'm clearly your senior sister so why should I call you big brother? Even if you want me to, wait until the day you surpass me. Then we can talk about it."

Bingqian can see that Ye Zifeng wasn't even at the fifth stage of qi refining. He didn't even have half of her cultivation. If he didn't have good resources, then no matter how hard he trained, he would never catch up to her in his lifetime.

Ye Zifeng didn't care what Bingqian called him. As long as she kept his secret, he diidn't care about what she did.

"Okay. Let's not waste anymore time. I bought my ingredients with me today so I'll use the furnace first. You can go back now." Ye Zifeng saw that it was getting late and wanted to get started as soon as possible.

"You really don't want any pointers?" Bingqian suspiciously looked at him

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "No need. You can go back. It'll be your turn tomorrow...."

Bingqian felt that Ye Zifeng was all bark and no bite. She felt bad for him and wanted to do something for him. In her heart however, she still wanted to take him in as her disciple.

She suddenly giggled, "....Little brother rough guy... Actually, I think that you have potential in the way of alchemy. If you mingle with this sister, I can guaranteed that you'll reach huang tier very soon. By then, you will become an influential figure in Leizhou City.

Ye Zifeng was speechless. He told her not to talk about this matter anymore. He didn't hesitate and rejected her immediately.

"You really don't want to consider it? I, Bingqian, had never accepted a disciple before. If you agree, you'll be my one and only disciple." She refused to give up and persistently asked.

"No need!"

.....

It took Ye Zifeng half a day before he was able to convinced her to leave. He would have never thought that this woman so was hard to deal with.

"Finally. There's no one bothering me anymore. Now I can finally concentrate and refine this Thunder Rhino horn." Ye Zifeng was very excited.

Not only can the Thunder Rhino horn strengthen his lightning abilities, it can also help strengthen his frail and weak body.

He quickly set up the furnace and then went to gather some firewoods. After gathering the firewoods, he slowly heated the furnace up.

Hiding his abilities from her was not the only reason that he chased Bingqian away. He wasn't going to let himself be distracted by this beautiful woman and slow down his cultivation. Although getting a beautiful woman was one of his goal, it wasn't his end goal.

He took a deep breath and allowed himself to calm down. Next, he added the ingredients he got from the treasury and some supplementary ingredients into the furnace. Each and every ingredient was separated into

perfect portions which allowed them to mix together perfectly. Sparks flew everywhere and a white mist appeared. This was something that a great alchemist could do.

After half an hour.... Ye Zifeng finally added the first Thunder Rhino horn into the furnace. Along with it, he also sent some of his own qi into the furnace. At the same time, a blue serene light could be seen spiraling around the furnace.

Ye Zifeng cheerfully smiled. The first batch was completed!

Chapter 23: Eating three pills in a row!

When a common tier beast dies, their qi energy would slowly scatter. The longer he kept the rhino horns unused, the weaker the qi becomes. This was why Ye Zifeng immediately went to get a new furnace after his old one blew up.

Without his ghost flames and a large amount of true qi, Ye Zifeng was at best a peak level huang tier alchemist who has a vast amount of knowledge right now.

However, being at the level was all he needed.

After the first pill was finished, Ye Zifeng put the pill into a small box. He then immediately put the second rhino horn into the furnace. He didn't want to waste any time at all.

Second pill done. Third pill done!

He had continuously refined three pills without stopping at all. His entire body was drenched in sweat from sitting by the furnace for so long. While he was refining the pills, he used 110% of his concentration and energy. If it was any other alchemist, they probably would not have this much perseverance. They would need at least three days to do what Ye Zifeng had just done.

As the crazed alchemist that he is, Ye Zifeng will hold out until the end no matter how tiring the process was. He want to refine pills using the fastest speed possible. He was always competing with himself.

The fire in the furnace died out and Ye Zifeng had three sparkling and translucent pill in front of him. A blue light spiraled around the pill creating a sizzling sound.

"Oh my god! That's a huang tier Thunder Spirit Pill!" Bingqian was shocked and unconsciously blurted out as she watched Ye Zifeng place the pills in front of him. Right after these words left her mouth, she knew she made a mistake. Ye Zifeng found where she was hiding.

When Ye Zifeng led her back to the city, she was constantly reminded

and warned that she could only come back tomorrow.

However, she was very curious and wanted to watch what Ye Zifeng was doing. After thinking about it for a while, she decided to go watch him. She took advantage of the fact that Ye Zifeng was concentrating very hard and hid behind a tree. After watching for a while, she entered an unconscious state of awe and lost control of herself.

After he heard this, Ye Zifeng immediately turned towards her and angrily yelled, “You didn’t leave? You were actually hiding behind a tree and secretly watching me?”

Bingqian knew she was in the wrong and frantically apologized, “Sorry. There aren’t many people who can refine pills in Leizhou city. After meeting someone like you who can also refine pills, I couldn’t resist.....”

“Couldn’t resist what?”

Ye Zifeng’s expression was very cold. There was a cold and gloomy aura around him. A murderous qi was released by Ye Zifeng towards Bingqian which caused her to shiver.

Bingqian had never seen a third qi refining stage student who could actually put some pressure on herself.

“I’m sorry. I’m sorry. Don’t be so mad! I’ll promise to keep your secret. I swear!”

Ye Zifeng’s anger slowly accumulated and coldly yelled, “You can swear. But this time, use your qi to make an blood oath. If you break the oath then when you reach the martial disciple realm, your soul will shatter and you will die in misery.”

“Do I have to make such a cruel oath?”

“You. Must!” Ye Zifeng’s expression was very austere. His murderous aura filled the entire area.

Bingqian was startled by his aura and quickly murmured, “Okay. Okay. I, Bingqian will promise to keep the fact that you can refine pills a secret. If I break this promise then when I reach the martial disciple realm, my soul

will shatter and I will die a miserable death." While saying that, she activated her qi and fused it with her blood. Then she scattered the blood on the floor, completing the oath.

This was a very cruel oath. If Bingqian breaks it, then she will not dare to enter the martial disciple realm. She'll be stuck at the qi refining realm forever. With her talents, she would definite regret it if she breaks the oath.

"Big brother rough guy..... I've already made the oath. It was my bad. Please forgive me okay?" Bingqian pitifully looked at Ye Zifeng. She had a guilty and ashamed expression in her eyes.

She had finally found another alchemist in Leizhou city. She didn't want to ruin their relationship, so, she started calling Ye Zifeng "Big brother rough guy" again."

After seeing that she completed her oath, his started to calm down again. Actually, he knew that Bingqian didn't have any ill intents at all, but he wanted to be safe.

"Big brother rough guy.... please....."

Seeing how pitiful she looked Ye Zifeng couldn't help but let the matter go, "Whatever. Forget about it. I brought you here with me so I should've been more cautious. But now that you've seen me, remember to keep it a secret."

"I made a blood oath already. I'll definitely keep it a secret!" Bingqian earnestly looked at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng nodded and accepted her apology.

"But big brother rough guy. With you alchemy skills, you can make easily make a name for yourself in Leizhou City. Why don't you take advantage of this? Why are you doing this in secret." Bingqian curiously asked.

"I don't want to become well known due to my alchemy skills. As a cultivator, I want people to know my name because I am a strong cultivator. So I need to refine pills in peace and raise my cultivation level. I

don't want to deal with worldly matters at all." Ye Zifeng calmly replied.

Back in the days, the Ye clan had too many enemies. Now that the Ye clan had fallen, none of those enemies want to see the Ye clan climb back up again. If Ye Zifeng the alchemist suddenly appears out of nowhere, then everyone will try their best to suppress him. Therefore, he didn't want to expose himself and have some expert suppress him out of nowhere.

Ye Zifeng hesitated a bit but finally spoke again, "Okay. You've seen me finish refining the pill already. Shouldn't you leave now? Unless you want to bother me while I'm cultivating too....."

"I have one last request to make." Bingqian smiled, "You seem to know a lot about the way of alchemy. Since the sect frequently asks me to refine pills for them, how about you come to the treasury and talk about alchemy with me sometimes?

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "No way.... I....."

Bingqian quickly interrupted him, "Don't reject me so quickly. Don't you need some rare and expensive ingredients? Then how about every time you come, I'll let you take some ingredients with you. You know... those ingredients from the treasury can't be bought in stores....."

Ye Zifeng was in a predicament. Bingqian was offering him rare ingredients for some of his time. She can somehow tell that Ye Zifeng loved rare ingredients and would not reject the offer. However, he didn't want to waste his cultivation time.....

"How much is some....."

Bingqian was startled. It seems like Ye Zifeng wasn't going to refuse her.

"Every time you come, I'll give you 5 contribution points worth of ingredients. How about it? It's basically the same as repairing the broken walls mission....."

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "No way. I'll have you know that the last time I did a mission, I got a total of 460 points. If I can get 460 points in a month, that'll come out to around 15 points every day. If you're offering

less than 15 points, I won't do it."

"15 points? You want to earn 15 points by talking alchemy? Why don't you just rob these points from me then...." Bingqian was shocked. Ever since she was little, there were countless amount of guys who would chase after her and try to talk to her. However, this Ye Zifeng was being too ridiculous. He wanted her to pay him 15 contribution points just for talking. What kind of logic is this?

Ye Zifeng smiled, "That price corresponds to my third qi refining stage. If my cultivation raises in the future, then the price will exponentially increase as well!"

Bingqian was fuming. She stood up and pouted, "Fine. Fine. Fifteen points it is. Starting from tomorrow, I'll be going to the sect to get ingredients every three days. If you have time, come and talk with me.

Ye Zifeng nodded, "If that's the case, then I'll see you the day after tomorrow. Please....."

"You...."Bingqian groaned. She didn't want to see this guy anymore. She turned around and left. This time, she left for real. Being able to set up a time to talk to Ye Zifeng, Bingqian felt really happy about it for some reason. As for the reason, she didn't know why she felt like this.

.....

After Bingqian left, Ye Zifeng's expression became serious.

The process of absorbing the energy from the thunder spirit pill isn't that hard. However, this time, he wants to try and see how much energy he can absorb with the help of the spirit.

The most important factor is if the mysterious shadow ghost will absorb the energy from the pill like it did the other time.

"Let's try one first and see how it goes." Just like before, he licked the thunder spirit pill and felt an immense numbing sensation throughout his body. It felt as if he was struck by lightning. In the next moment, he swallowed the entire pill.

An uncontrollable violent lightning energy appeared in his abdomens.

He calmed himself down and started to control the qi in his dantian. He slowly moved the thunder qi to the veins on his arms. A white mist started forming on top of his arms. He could feel his arms becoming stronger. The thunder qi continuously moved towards his arms as if it was being sucked in.

'Nice!" His plan was successful. He was very happy and immediately put the second pill into his mouth.

Once it entered his mouth, the thunder qi quickly replenished itself in his dandian.

"Ohhh this feels great!" Ye Zifeng screamed and fiercely punched the floor. Dust started to fly around and a hole appeared on the floor. He wanted to use the thunder qi immediately and allow it to assimilate with his own qi.

Under the help of his spirit, he was able to absorb the energy of the two pills into his body. Although the spirit took most of the energy, he was still able to have some for himself.

"Hmmmm. Should I eat the third pill?"

Ye Zifeng hesitated for a bit. After pondering for a bit, he finally popped the third pill into his mouth and chewed it.

Chapter 24: The Clan Master's troubles

When Ye Zifeng swallowed the third pill, he dropped down onto his knees, faced upwards and spat out a mouthful of blood. The surge of violent lightning qi appeared in his body.

"Go and be absorbed by that damn spirit!" Ye Zifeng continued to spit out blood as he tried to move the lightning qi into his arms.

The lightning qi was very violent but since it was only qi from a common tier beast, the martial spirit had no problems absorbing it. Since the spirit had a big appetite, quickly and easily absorbed the qi.

After that, a white light flashed in Ye Zifeng's body. He was startled for a bit but then a happy expression appeared on his face.

"Very Good! I've finally broken through the bottleneck of the third qi refining stage! I've finally reached the fourth stage!"

Taking three thunder spirit pills continuously was very dangerous for a cultivator, but it was one of the best methods to refine one's body. The first pill opens and clears up the meridians, the second pill fixes the meridians, and the third pill refines the meridians.

Although attribute pills made from common tier ingredients were not that effective, the way that Ye Zifeng uses them makes it effective. A normal person would not be able to take one or two pills let alone three in a row. With this, Ye Zifeng was able to strengthen his lightning attribute by quite a bit.

As for the fact that his spirit absorbed most of the energy, Ye Zifeng didn't think much about it. It'll probably be beneficial for him later on. He'll worry about it when the time comes for him to breakthrough into the martial disciple realm.

Ye Zifeng had finished what he needed to do and cleaned up. By the time he returned home, it was already almost midnight.

When he reached the doors, he saw Ye Xueyi pacing back and forth with an anxious face

“Xueyi, are you looking for me?” Ye Zifeng walked up and greeted her.

“Brother Zifeng. You’re finally back. Everyone’s waiting for you.” Ye Xueyi replied

Ye Zifeng looked up at the dark sky and embarrassingly replied, “Sorry. I went out and bought a furnace today. I forgot to tell you that I was going to refine some pills. It was my bad.”

Ye Xueyi raised her brows and shook her head, “It’s not about that.... It’s about father.... He came home today! He didn’t see you in the house or the sect and thought that you went out to fool around in the city. He’s really mad right now!”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Preposterous. Why would I, Ye Zifeng, go out and fool around? That old man is belittling me too much.”

Ye Xueyi spoke softly, “Uhhhh..... Back in the days, you would go out and fool around everyday.... You’re a frequent visitor of that uhhh Lady’s House and that Beauties Court or something.....”

Ye Zifeng immediately became petrified..... Damn that good for nothing Ye Zifeng.... There was no way that he could get out of this now....

Ye Zifeng coughed, “Okay. Then if it’s like this, I’ll go and see father. You should go back to your room and rest up. It’s getting late.”

Xueyi shook her head, “No. Father told me to go see him with you. He said there was something important that he had to tell us.”

“Something important?” Ye Zifeng was confused, “Okay then. Let’s go see him together.”

.....

“Zifeng you brat. So you do know how to come back. Tell me the truth. Where did you go tonight?”

Right when Ye Zifeng stepped into the room, Ye Chongtian immediately started yelling at him. When the Ye clan clan master becomes angry, it is very scary. He knows all about Ye Zifeng’s old habits. Ye Zifeng probably got offended by someone outside and came home to vent his anger or

something.

“Father. Please calm down. When you weren’t here, brother Zifeng gained a lot of face for our Ye clan. Didn’t I just tell you about all this?” Ye Xueyi pulled Ye Chongtian’s sleeve.

Ye Chongtian shook his head, “It’s because I have some expectation for this kid now that I’m angry. If he was still a good for nothing like back then, I wouldn’t even be able to get angry.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Oh. Then I thank you for having some expectations for me.”

“…. You wanna get beaten?” Ye Chongtian don’t know why but it seems like his son had changed a lot. He was able to gain face for the family but for some reason, Ye Chongtian feels that Ye Zifeng became more and more infuriating and deserves to be beaten.

“Hmm then tell me where you were when the Liu clan came to cancel the engagement. Under the heavens, is there anything more important than your own son’s wedding?” Ye Zifeng had an insulting tone in his voice as he stared right into Ye Chongtian’s eyes.

This question allowed Ye Zifeng to flip the spear and strike back against Ye Chongtian. Technically, he wasn’t Ye Chongtian’s son so he doesn’t need to treat him like his old man.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng had an imposing manner, Ye Chongtian was slightly startled. His angry expression disappeared and started to laugh bitterly. He knew that the Liu family was coming to cancel the engagement but he left without telling anyone anyways.

“Brother Zifeng…. Father… let’s play nice. We’re a family.” Ye Xueyi stood in between the two, trying to mediate the situation.

“If this guy would grow up and train harder instead of going to fool around outside, then I won’t have a reason to be angry!” Ye Chongtian sighed.

“How do you know that I went to fool around instead of training?” Ye Zifeng asked. If Ye Chongtian continues to view him this way, there’s

nothing to talk about at all.

"Heh. You're not at home and you're not training in the sect. You're trying to tell me that you're training outside? Don't try to be slick. From what I can see, you were definitely fooling around outside!"

"Then when the Liu family came, you weren't at home and you weren't in the sect. You went out alone without saying anything. From what i can see, you were definitely fooling around outside as well!" Ye Zifeng coldly smiled.

"You!" Ye Chongtian was getting really angry now.

"Fine. I'll tell you." Ye Chongtian calmed himself down. "You want to know where I was that day? The answers right here. Look for youself."

"Hmph." While saying that, he threw a golden invitation card at Ye Zifeng, telling him to look at it.

Ye Zifeng raised his brows and looked at the contents of the invitation.

"Heavenly Clan Gathering?"

Ye Xueyi was the first one to speak, "Could this be the important gathering that happens once every five years in Leizhou city that determines the rankings of each clan?"

Ye Zifeng smiled indifferently, "What? Leizhou City's clan ranking is determined by something this insignificant? This is too arbitrary. What's the point of participating this kind of useless gathering? I'm not going. Oh yeah. Since it happens once every five years, did I participate last time?

Ye Xueyi whispered and reminded him, "Brother Zifeng. Last time you ran away saying that your stomach was hurting. Even though you registered, you didn't actually participate. Because of that, you became the laughing stock of the entire city."

Ye Zifeng had an amazed expression on his face and then immediately laughed at himself. That trash Ye Zifeng was really too stupid. He couldn't help but laugh.

"However, even if it's insignificant, at least the people will acknowledge

the results. This is a good opportunity for our Ye clan to raise in the rankings. There's no harm in participating..."

Ye Chongtian was shocked and thought he was dreaming, "Zifeng. You're not kidding right? This time, you really want to participate?"

Just before, Ye Chongtian was in trouble. Each family had to send three people to participate. Ye Xueyi and Ye Huichi were automatically qualified to participate. However as for the third spot, Ye Chongtian didn't know who to choose. There was Ye Hong, who had some talent, but he was adopted. He wasn't actually a part of the Ye clan. There were no other juniors who were qualified to participate beside Ye Zifeng. They were in this situation last time as well. Since Zifeng ran away last time, Ye Chongtian didn't even try to ask him.

Thus, after Ye Chongtian receive the invitation, he immediately left Leizhou City to the other branches of the Ye Chan. he hoped that the other branch clans could send someone over to participate. However, the other branch clans all refused to see Ye Chongtian. They didn't care about him at all. Because of this, he was fuming with anger. When he returned, and saw that Ye Zifeng wasn't home, he got even angrier.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "How about we talk about the prizes? The better the prize, the chances of me participating will be higher."

"This is a chance to improve every clan's ranking. Everyone in the entire Leizhou city will be focusing on this gather." Ye Chongtian excitingly said.

"And the prize? I refuse to believe that there isn't a prize the winners of the gathering." Ye Zifeng had a strange smile on his face.

He was different from Ye Chongtian. Ye Chongtian was already a martial spirit expert. He wanted to focus on raising the power of his clan. However, Ye Zifeng didn't care about the clan that much. He wanted to quickly raise his cultivation and return to the top of the world.

Ye Xueyi thought about it, "Five years ago..... Let me think... I don't remember what kind of prize the top 10 participants got, but I got a tier 2 common treasure as the 11th place.

“Treasure? That’s good.....” Ye Zifeng was surprised. Although a tier 2 common treasure was not that good, it was still able to help one increase their strength significantly at lower levels. If the prize for the 11th place was a tier 2 common treasure, then who knows what the prize for top 10 would be. Maybe the prize will surprise him!

“Alright. This gathering, I, Ye Zifeng will definitely participate. When will this gathering take place?”

Hearing that Ye Zifeng wanted to the gathering, Ye Chongtian felt relieved. The problem’s that has been bothering him for the past few days was finally solved.

“A week from now.....”

Chapter 25: Everyone stop!

"What? The gathering is that soon?" Ye Xueyi was shocked.

Ye Chongtian sighed, "If it wasn't for the reason that it it's happening so soon, I wouldn't have gone out to find someone who would take your brother's place. But now that your brother has agreed to participate, the problem's solved. Starting from tomorrow, you guys should head to the sect and start training. Also, don't fool around and goof off!"

Ye Xueyi laughed at her father, "Father, do you think I would goof off and fool around?"

Ye Chongtian loved his precious daughter and laughed as well, "Haha. Our family's Xueyi would never goof off. I'm talking about Zifeng and Huichi. Who knows what those two brats are up to. Oh yeah, where did Huichi go? I haven't seen him around."

Hearing the words "Huichi", an angry and annoyed expression appeared on Ye Xueyi's face.

"Father, since you're back, you need to take care of something for brother Zifeng. When you weren't here, brother Zifeng was almost killed by second uncle.

Although Ye Chongtian didn't particularly like Ye Zifeng, Ye Zifeng was still his own son. When he heard this, he became very angry.

"What happened? Xueyi, tell me everything about the incident!"

Ye Xueyi gritted her teeth angrily, "Father, it happened like this....."

Ye Xueyi explained everything about the incident to her father.

Ye Chongtian groaned, "Preposterous! Totally intolerable! Xueyi, is everything that you've said true?"

Ye Xueyi nodded, "Father, I would never lie to you. Also, there were many people in the Ye clan who saw the incident. If father doesn't believe me, you can ask someone else about it.

"Hmph. That Ye Chen. I knew something was up with him. From what I

can see, whenever I'm not here, he would take bribes from other families and become their lapdog. Quick. Find someone to call him over. I need to teach him a lesson!" Ye Chongtian was really angry now.

"Hold on." Ye Zifeng interrupted him. "About this incident. I've decided not to bother with it anymore."

Ye Zifeng made a blood oath and got 400 gold coins from Ye Chen. If he broke the oath, he would definitely suffer.

"Not bother with it anymore? You coward! They've bullied you to the point where you almost lost your life and you're still being soft with them?" Ye Chongtian snorted and looked angrily at Ye Zifeng.

"You want to do something about it? With the Ye clan's current state, can we afford to have an internal conflict?" Ye Zifeng smiled.

"Let me ask you this instead. Second Uncle controls most of the Ye Clan's assets and have a large number of clan members behind him. If you were to do something to him now, wouldn't it end up badly for us?"

Hearing Ye Zifeng's argument, Ye Chongtian thought about it and started to calm himself down. Zifeng was right. They shouldn't be rash.

"Also, the heavenly clan gathering is next week. If we do something now and Huichi doesn't join, then our Ye clan will become even more of a laughing stock without our third member." Ye Zifeng added.

"Heavenly clan gathering..... that's right... The gathering is the most important thing. We need Huichi for this." Ye Chongtian nodded. After pondering for a bit, Ye Chongtian felt that something was wrong. He was suppose to be the clan leader here and yet he was lead by the nose by Zifeng....."

"Alright. Then we'll stop talking about the incident with Ye Chen. We'll deal with him after the gathering. It's getting late. You guys should rest up." Ye Chongtian nodded. He was feeling a lot calmer than before.

"Father you should rest too."

.....

Ye Xueyi pulled Ye Zifeng's arms and apologetically said, "Brother Zifeng. I'm sorry. I didn't think about the consequences and wanted father to get revenge for you."

Ye Zifeng smiled and replied, "Heh. I'm happy that you're willing to talk to father about my problems for me. Don't be sorry."

"Brother Zifeng. I feel like you've changed a lot recently. You changed so fast that I don't even recognize you anymore...."

"I've asked you this before. Is this a good thing or a bad thing...?" Ye Zifeng smiled.

"Of course it's a good thing. You've changed so fast that I don't know how to react. Back then, I've been protecting you from people like Wang Lin. I've trained very hard to be able to protect you. But now, you don't need my protection anymore." Ye Xueyi's voice was shaking. Ye Zifeng can tell that in her heart, she didn't want to leave his side.

"You dumb girl. You don't need to protect me to be my sister. We'll always be together."

Ye Xueyi happily nodded. They were siblings with blood relations. No matter no far apart they are, they are still family.

"Brother Zifeng. I won't bother you anymore. You should go sleep. We have to get to the sect early tomorrow and prepare for the gathering next week.

"Can I not go to the sect?"

Ye Xueyi looked seriously at Zifeng and said, "No! Your attendance rate is too low. If you keep this up, you'll be kicked out of the sect!"

"Alright. Fine. I get it. You should rest up too!"

Ye Zifeng watched as Xueyi left and suddenly laughed, "But, Xueyi.... If one day, I'm not "me" anymore. Would you still be so nice to me?"

He bitterly laughed and walked towards his own room.

.....

In the Ashen Spirit Sect, the news that Ye Zifeng came back to attend classes was being spread like wildfire by the disciples.

Back then, when his cultivation was stuck at the 2nd stage of qi refining, he was too embarrassed to go to class. Everyone was shocked that he came back after such a long time.

In the hall, all the disciples were quietly chatting about Ye Zifeng.

“Look. Look. That’s the trash Ye Zifeng who’s at the 2nd stage of qi refining. The lowest ranking disciple who haven’t been in class for a long time now.”

“2nd stage of qi refining?” A youngster smiled, “Brother, it seems like you’re still living in the past. Last time he beat up that Wang Lin who’s at the fourth stage. Do you still think Ye Zifeng’s still at the 2nd stage of qi refining?”

“There’s also another thing. I heard that he accepted and completed the fourth stage thunder rhino mission!”

“…. He can finish such a difficult mission. Why are you guys still calling him trash? Can you guys do the mission?”

“This…..”

After the youngster said that, the entire hall was silent. Everyone was amazed. The title of trash was in the past. Ye Zifeng was cultivating like a normal person now. If anyone wants to ridicule him now, they have to have the ability to.

“Stop right there! Ye Zifeng. You dare to come to class?”

Ye Zifeng raised his brows and turned around. Suddenly a group of 2nd generation noble disciples surrounded him.

The leader of this group was Xiao Mu. It was obvious that they wanted to do something to Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed and shook his head, “Ahhh. It’s because of all these 2nd generation nobles that I didn’t want to come to the sect. He knew that they would make trouble for him.”

“Ye Zifeng. Don’t think you can be so arrogant after winning the bet. This time, even if the sect punishes me, I will teach you a lesson!” After losing to Ye Zifeng, Xiao Mu was in distress. When he heard that Ye Zifeng came back to the sect for classes, he immediately went and gathered his bros to find Ye Zifeng.

“I’m here to attend classes today. I don’t want to deal with you guys. Now that I finished my classes, can you guys move away so I can leave?” Ye Zifeng wasn’t interested in teaching these smallfrys a lesson and walked away.

“YE. ZI. FENG. How are you look down on us! Brothers, let’s drag him out of the sect and teach him a lesson!”

Xiao Mu did not dare to fight inside the sect. If they fought outside of the sect, they won’t be punished harshly. However, if they do it inside the sect, they would be expelled immediately.

Xiao Mu and his gang started to rush towards Ye Zifeng.

“Everyone stop!”

A beautiful woman in white passed through the group of spectators. Everyone stopped what they were doing and stared at her.

She walked in between Ye Zifeng and Xiao Mu, clearly wanting to interfere in the matter.

“Bingqian..... Miss Bingqian?” Xiao Mu was shocked. He slapped his own face a few times to make sure that he wasn’t dreaming.

“What? Miss Bingqian? That Miss Bingqian who’s the number one alchemist in Leizhou City and is at the peak of qi refining?” Everyone was startled and started to chat quietly.

Bingqian was well respected by everyone. Not only is she talented in cultivating, she was also talented in the way of alchemy. In Leizhou City, even people in the martial practitioner realm and martial spirit realm would pay respect to her and do not dare to offend her. Afterall, she was the only one who could concoct pills for them.

Xiao Mu returned to his senses and apologized, “Miss Bingqian. I’m sorry if we disturbed you. However I have some problems with this guy behind you. Do you mind moving away for a bit?”

Chapter 26: I'll buy you for a month!

Bingqian looked coldly at Xiao Mu. With just one glance, she can tell that this guy is a dandy and not very benevolent. She hated this kind of people.

"You want me to move away?"

Xiao Mu smiled, "Yes Miss Bingqian. I hope that you can move away from here. This one can't thank you enough if you do so."

"Then let me tell you this, NO WAY!" Bingqian solemnly stared at Xiao Mu

Hearing this, Xiao Mu's expression immediately changed and clenched his fist.

A hint of coldness flashed in Bingqian's eyes as she looked at everyone that was present. She then added a few words, "You guys want to bully a friend of mine? There's no way I'll let you do so."

"Hold..... Hold on, Did you just say that he's....your, Miss Bingqian's friend?" Xiao Mu was shocked. His mouth was opened so wide that you could put a fist in it.

Originally everyone thought Bingqian came over because she disliked people like Xiao Mu and wanted to protect the weak.

Who would've guessed that Ye Zifeng was Miss Bingqian's friend. Now, in the future, if anyone wanted to bully Ye Zifeng, they would have to think about the consequence that comes with it.

"You bastard... You actually made friends with Miss Bingqian. Now you can do whatever you want in the sect. Congratulations." Xiao Mu's mouth twitched. He had a sinister look in his eyes and fiercely stared at Ye Zifeng.

Bingqian lightly laughed and an embarrassing expression appeared on her face, "No. That's not right. You guys got it wrong. He didn't make friends with me. I was the one that asked him to be my friend.... Isn't that right, big brother rough guy...."

While saying that she walked towards Ye Zifeng with a charming cute look on her face.

Just before, the people in the hall were still chattering. But now, after Bingqian said something like that, the entire hall became so quiet that one can hear the buzzing of a fly.

“Did you guys hear that? Miss Bingqian said that she was the one who asked him to be her friend....”

“Also, did she call him ‘big brother rough guy’?”

“Oh my god! I’m not dreaming right?”

Everyone looked at each other. Each and every person in the hall was filled with shock, not knowing if they were all in the same dream or not.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows, “Our relationship.... Can you not talk about it so casually in the sect? It’s very awkward and embarrassing.....”

What Ye Zifeng didn’t realize was that his words not only did not clear up the situation, but it stirred things up even more.

“What kind of relationship do you guys have?” A few people curiously asked.

Bingqian cheerfully smiled and was about to answer, “Our relationship huh? Of course it’s.....”

“Alright. Stop. Let’s go. Let’s go to the treasury.” Ye Zifeng’s expression darkened, grabbed her hand and walked towards the west side of the sect.

Shi Chen who was there quickly yelled out, “Hey. That’s the wrong way. That way leads to the forest.”

Ye Zifeng embarrassingly turned around, looked at Shi Chen and nodded. He then walked Bingqian towards the east side. In a bit, they both disappeared from the people’s view. Xiao Mu wanted to block his path but he was afraid of Bingqian. All he could do was watch as Ye Zifeng swaggered away.

“Young master Xiao. What should we do about Ye Zifeng?”

“What else can we do? We’ll just get him next time. Besides, the Heavenly Clan Gathering is happening soon. When that time comes, if he has the guts to participate, I’ll teach him a lesson!” Xiao Mu coldly snorted with an annoyed expression.

……

Ye Zifeng walked with Bingqian until there was no other people in sight.

He then asked, “Alright. Why did you come looking for me?”

Bingqian pouted and replied, “I actually didn’t go looking for you. I was just passing by and coincidentally saw that there was a group of people surrounding someone. When I saw that it was you who was being surrounded, I went over and helped you out.”

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and suspiciously looked at him, “Really? From what I know, disciples in the ninth stage of qi refining should leave class around an hour after me.....”

An awkward expression appeared on Bingqian’s face, “This……”

“Seeing how you’re thinking about it for so long, you must have lied to me about just passing by.” Ye Zifeng looked at Bingqian. With his exceptional perception, he was able to easily see through Bingqian’s lie.

Bingqian’s expression turned ugly and protested coquettishly, “Fine. You win. I sneaked out and waited at the front doors to find you.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Actually, I don’t need you to come find me. I would’ve gone to find you anyways.”

Bingqian’s face turned red as she stared at Ye Zifeng.

“Really?” She was a proud and arrogant girl. Who knows how many rich and pretty boys had tried to flirt with her. However she didn’t pay any attention to their words. But now, she felt a mysterious feeling building up inside and her heart was beating faster and faster due to Ye Zifeng’s words.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Yeah. I came to the sect for two reasons today. The first reason is that I promised my sister that I would attend the lectures.

The other reason is so I can come find you..... for fifteen contribution points so I can get some more ingredients." He couldn't bear using the low quality ingredients in the pill shops. He wanted to get more contribution points and exchange them for high quality ingredients in the sect.

Hearing that Ye Zifeng had come to find her for contribution points, Bingqian's expression changed immediately. The feeling that she had quickly faded away.

"You came to find me just for those fifteen contribution points huh? Not for any other reason?"

Ye Zifeng was startled by the fact that Bingqian's tone had taken a 180 degree turn so suddenly. She was using a charming voice just before and now her voice was stern. He thought that it was strange. He didn't say anything that offended her in any way.

"What other reason would there be? Miss Bingqian, did I say anything that offended you in any way just now?"

Bingqian dully smiled, "No. You didn't say anything wrong. It's just that I... Ah. Let's not talk about this. Well I'm someone who keeps my words. Let's go to the treasury and get some ingredients."

"Then many thanks to Miss Bingqian." Seeing how Bingqian had kept her promise, he felt really happy to have made a friend like her.

.....

"Stop right there. Where do you think the treasury is? Do you think you can just casually walk in here without a contribution badge?"

(TL: I think they only give it out after the sect missions and then take it away when they leave.)

Right when Ye Zifeng reached the doors of the treasury, he was stopped by a guard.

Very quickly, Bingqian who was behind Ye Zifeng reached the doors as well.

"So you're saying that without a contribution badge, even I, Bingqian

can't enter? Then you can go tell the elders that it's not I who don't want to concoct pills for them but rather I can't due to the fact that there is a guard blocking my way."

When the guard saw Bingqian, his expression turned very ugly, "Miss Bingqian! If it's Miss Bingqian, then of course you can freely enter the treasury without any problems."

"Good." Bingqian nodded and then pointed at Ye Zifeng, "This is a friend of mine who is going to help me. I'm going to bring him in. There shouldn't be any problems right?"

"This....."

The guard was about to say something, but then he saw that Bingqian's icy gaze and gulped.

Who knows what kind of fit this girl would throw, if she got angry. She might reject all of the sect's elder's requests to concoct pills if she was offended. This wasn't something that a mere guard like him was willing to risk. If something went wrong, he would definitely be beheaded. All he could do was close his eyes and let Ye Zifeng in.

"This..... This is definitely not a problem! Miss Bingqian, if you need anything that's within the scope of my ability, I will definitely help you out.

Bingqian smiled and looked at the guard, "Then you should remember this guy well. He's going to come at random times and you will let him through."

"Random times? This....." The guard had a difficult look in his eyes.

Bingqian smiled at him again, "If you do as you are told, I can say some good things about you when in front of the elders. You can even get a promotion. Of course, if you don't and disappoint me then..... 'ahem'....."

WIth a chance at promotion, the guard had no reason to decline the offer anymore, "Don't worry. Don't say anything about random times, even if he came every day, the doors to the treasury will be opened to him!"

.....

In the precious medicine cage.

“Wow. I would have never thought that your prestige was so high.” Ye Zifeng laughed.

“Of course, I am Leizhou City’s number one alchemist. If it’s not for the fact that my service is expensive, the amount of people who seek my service would create a line straight from the sect to my house.”

Bingqian was proud of herself. Suddenly she thought about how Ye Zifeng had concocted the Thunder Spirit Pill and looked over at him, “Big brother rough guy, you’re wasting your talents by hiding your ability. You’re knowledge in alchemy is so much better than mine. There are many things that I’ll have to ask for your guidance for.

“You’re too courteous.... Everytime I come over, I’m getting 15 contribution points. It’s an equivalent exchange and not some guidance.

While chatting, Ye Zifeng looked at the ingredients in the medicine cage and surprisingly said, “How come the ingredients are different from last time? Hmmm. So they can change over time.”

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was acting like a child, Bingqian couldn’t help but smile.

“The ingredients inside the cage will change after a specific amount of time. It’s nothing strange.”

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, “Great! This time I happen to need some ingredients to make a pill that helps me resist spirit attacks. This Phantom Ginseng is not bad.... This Demonic Fog Grass is not bad either, and this.....”

Ye Zifeng named a series of ingredients, some of which even Bingqian didn’t know about. Without knowing the ingredients, there was no way that she would know what kind of pill he was going to make.”

“Big brother rough guy..... you’re too greedy. All these ingredients cost over 100 points already!”

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng was startled, “It’s that much already?” In the past, as a heaven tier alchemist, he had all the ingredients that he needed. There was no limit to how much he can use. So when he made pills, he didn’t place any particular importance on the ingredients.

“You look like you’re in a hurry. Do you need all these ingredients now?”

Ye Zifeng embarrassingly sighed, “Yeah. This is a bit of a problem. I need them before next week. Last time I used up too much contribution points..... I don’t have any left.”

Last time when he swallowed the three Thunder Spirit Pills, he permanently gained the lightning attribute and strengthened his body. Although the effect was good, he was left with no contribution points or money....

“I have a solution! I can help you get all these ingredients.” Bingqian looked at him with a flushed face and her eyes closed.

“What kind of solution do you have?”

Bingqian blushed as she said, “Well it’s not that good of a solution but... If you come chat with me about alchemy every three days for a month, I can pay you 100 points in advance. If you promise me that you’ll come, I’ll buy you for a month. We can talk about the rest later.....”

“A month? You want to buy me for a month? A hundred points in advance?” Ye Zifeng was shocked and felt like he was going to be in a mess.

Chapter 27: All of you. Come at me!

Ye Zifeng was just standing there, not talking at all. Looking at how Ye Zifeng was reacting, Bingqian thought that her idea caused him to become angry. A hint of disappointment appeared on her face.

“Sooooo? Do you think it’s a bad idea? It’s fine if you don’t like it.”

Ye Zifeng came back to his sense, “No no no..... I was silent because I was shocked at how great this idea is. This is a great idea. You can buy me for a month. Miss Bingqian, thank you for your help. You really saved me there.” One hundred contribution points wasn’t much. But to Ye Zifeng, it was as if Bingqian had sent him some coal during a snow storm.

After crossing over, there were not many people were truly kind to him. There was Xueyi and now there’s Bingqian. And also..... Shi Chen can somewhat count.....

Bingqian immediately smiled and looked at him, “This isn’t much. As a friend, this is the least that I can do. Alright now.. What are you waiting for.... Go and get your ingredients.”

“Many thanks to Miss Bingqian...!”

Even though he had lived two lives, he had never experienced true love. Everyone that he came in contact with were filled with pretense and had ulterior motives. Although he was in a few romantic situations, most of them did not feel real at all, thus he didn’t know how to truly deal with women.

Looking at how Ye Zifeng was like a child when he picked the ingredients, Bingqian smiled, “Oh right. Big brother rough guy, don’t call me Miss Bingqian anymore. You can just call me Bingqian....”

“Okay Bingqian.” Ye Zifeng blurted out. He was concentrating on finding the right ingredients and unconsciously went along with what she said.

Bingqian began to tear up. Ever since she was little, she followed her master, the old devil from the Muyun clan, around and studied alchemy. She rarely had the chance to make friends much less a male friend. This

feeling that she had was very different and indescribable.

"Phantom Ginseng, Demonic Fog Grass.... And lastly, this Chasing Dust Fruit. Okay. Everything's here...."

Bingqian looked at him and confusingly asked, "Big brother, what kind of pill are you making? I can't even tell what kind of pill these ingredients will make...."

Ye Zifeng had a mysterious smile, "Hehe.... This.... Is a secret!"

Bingqian became more and more curious, "What? Come on. Tell me about it. I'm your benefactor. If I wasn't here, you won't be able to get these ingredients."

Ye Zifeng thought about it and smiled, "Okay. Since you've helped me out, I'll tell you something. I'm gonna make a pill for the Heavenly clan gathering next week.

Bingqian was shocked, "You're participating in the gathering with such low level of cultivation? Doesn't your family have anyone stronger?"

"Well I mean.... The gathering isn't testing how high your cultivation is.... Don't judge me by my cultivation. Maybe I rise all the way to the top during the gathering!" Ye Zifeng smiled.

"You?"

Bingqian giggled and looked at him. She didn't put a single word that he said to mind. As a cultivator at the peak of qi refining, even she wasn't so confident about rising all the way to the top.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's up to you whether you believe me or not."

"Fine. Then we'll meet at the gathering. Maybe we'll become opponents. If that happens, then I might even hold back let you win!" Bingqian smiled.

"Miss Bingqian is sure considerate. Then I'll thank you in advance."

Bingqian furrowed her brows, "What did I tell you to call me before?"

"Senior sister Bingqian???"

“Junior sister Bingqian????”

Bingqian flipped and yelled, “You... If you’re gonna act like this..... Give me back those ingredients!”

“Hey Hey. You can’t go back on your words!” Ye Zifeng was startled. The ingredients were very important to him. He’d rather lose face than lose his ingredients.

“It’s a woman’s specialty to go back on her words!”

“Fine fine.” Ye Zifeng forced a smiled and reluctantly said, “Bingqian...”

After seeing the usually calm and imposing Ye Zifeng with such an awkward expression on his face, Bingqian laughed, “Okay okay. I’m not gonna play with you anymore. You wasted so much time looking at the ingredients already. It’s getting late so you should go home....’

“Huh?” Ye Zifeng was confused, “But... How can I take these ingredients from you for free. I didn’t even talk to you about alchemy yet. This... this isn’t fair for you.”

Bingqian smiled, “Heh. Do you think you can actually help me out? I do admit that your way of alchemy is better than mine. But with your cultivation level, you can only make a small amount of pills at a time. The sect wants me to create a large amount of Spirit Tempering Pills. You won’t be able to help me.

Ye Zifeng didn’t retort. If Bingqian didn’t want his help then that’s better for him. He didn’t want to waste his precious time just to be with her anyways.

Ye Zifeng smiled back and changed the topic, “The Heavenly Clan Gathering is so close and you’re still focusing on making pills? Aren’t you afraid that you won’t be able to get a good rank at the gathering?”

“Uhh.... I’ll practice when I need to....”

Ye Zifeng was somewhat surprised and then laughed, “Practice when you need to? Aren’t you being a bit too cocky.”

However Bingqian wasn’t being cocky or anything. Even though she is

talented, she relied on many pills to reach the peak of qi refining stage. Now that she's there, she has to overcome a huge bottleneck before she can advance to the next realm. There wasn't any use in practicing at all. She needed some sort of enlightenment to advance.

"Haha. I'll show you that you that even geniuses can be knocked down if they don't practice." Ye Zifeng laughed in an imposing manner.

Bingqian smirked and then replied, "Okay. Is that so? Then I'll have to see what kind of abilities you have to back up your words next week.

.....

After saying goodbye to Bingqian, Ye Zifeng walked to where he hid the furnace.

Leaving the furnace in the wilderness will allow Ye Zifeng to have some peace while concocting pills but it will also bring some trouble.

"How long are you guys going to follow me? Just come out." Ye Zifeng sighed and turned around.

Five people walked out from behind a shrub. It was Wang Lin and some of his friends who were all at around the same level as Wang Lin.

"Ye Zifeng. You have guts. You knew that we were following you and yet you brought yourself to this desolate place outside of the city. Are you tired of living?" One of the guys fiercely yelled at Ye Zifeng.

Hatred filled Wang Lin's eyes and he coldly said, "Bros, when we capture Ye Zifeng, let me cripple his arms and legs!"

His arm was broken by Ye Zifeng before and even after using some expensive medicine, there was still some pain lingering. When he heard the news that Ye Zifeng had returned to the sect, he went and looked for a few brothers and followed Ye Zifeng.

"Huh? Where's Xiao Mu? Why didn't he come? Aren't you guys bros?" Ye Zifeng looked around.

Wang Lin's expression became stiff. He did go and find Xiao Mu but Xiao Mu didn't want to offend Bingqian. After hearing about Ye Zifeng's

relationship with Bingqian, Wang Lin was startled. However, he was unable to hold himself back and wanted revenge on Ye Zifeng.

"The reason why he didn't come is because we can deal with you ourselves!"

"Oh?"

Ye Zifeng saw Wang Lin's expression and had already guessed the real reason why Xiao Mu didn't come.

One reason that Xiao Mu didn't join these fools was because he was afraid of Bingqian. However there was another reason why he didn't gang up with these people. The Xiao clan was not as strong as the Wang clan so Xiao Mu was guaranteed a spot in the Heavenly Clan Gathering unlike Wang Lin. Xiao Mu could wait until then to get his revenge and no one would be able to do anything to him.

"Wang Lin. Why are you bothering me so much. Don't you know that I, Ye Zifeng, am not the same softy that you can casually bully anymore.

Wang Lin coldly chuckled, "Well there's only one way to find out! Brothers, Let's go!"

Ye Zifeng was very annoyed with these people. If he can run from them once, they'll continuously bother him so he might as well finish them off right now.

"It looks like I have to teach you guys a lesson." Ye Zifeng had a fierce expression.

"Brother Lin. This Ye Zifeng brat is being too arrogant. Why don't we just kill him. We're in an isolated area anyways. No one will know that we killed him.'

"Yeah. That's right. Brother Lin, go kill him. We're all brothers so we won't tell anyone."

Although Wang Lin hated Ye Zifeng, he was a coward. He didn't have to courage to kill him.

"Let's not talk about killing him.... No matter how weak the Ye clan is,

Ye Chongtian is still an expert in the Martial Spirit realm. If he finds out somehow and gets angry, we'll all be dead."

Hearing the name Ye Chongtian, Wang Lin's brothers all shivered and threw away the idea of killing Ye Zifeng.

"Hahaha...." Ye Zifeng suddenly laughed.

"What're you laughing at?" Wang Lin stared blankly at Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng was surrounded by a group of people and not only is he not begging for mercy, he is actually laughing. This caused Wang Lin to feel nervous.

"I'm laughing at how you guys are thinking so hard. You're all talking like my life is in your hands already....Don't just stand there. All of you. Come at me!"

Chapter 28: One against Five

Actually, without Zifeng calling them out, they would've ganged up on him together. However, Zifeng calling them all out actually had the opposite effect.

"All of us? Ye Zifeng. Don't be so arrogant. Don't look down on us and think that you can beat all of us by yourself!""

"Stop talking rubbish with him. If he wants us all to go at him then we'll comply. Let's see how arrogant he can be after we beat him up."

Ye Zifeng's cold expression was filled with a murderous aura. He didn't like to bully people who were weaker than him. However, these people wanted to walk right into their own graves, so Ye Zifeng had no reason to let them go.

"If you guys aren't afraid, then come try me."

"Brother Lin....." Two of Wang Lin's bros were startled by Ye Zifeng's gaze. They looked at Wang Lin and was waiting for his command.

Wang Lin's face sank, "Don't look at me! Ye Zifeng is only one person. Why should we be scared of him. Take out your weapons!"

After Wang Lin sent out his command, the four people behind him all took out a rod and pointed it towards Ye Zifeng. They were used to ganging up on people and overpowering them. However, they don't want to take anyone's lives so they only use a rod as a weapon.

Seeing all of this, Ye Zifeng shook his head.

"We're all cultivators. We should be using our qi to decide this matter. There's no need to use this kind of weapons. It'll just hold you back."

Wang Lin chuckled, "Stop talking rubbish. For people under the fifth stage of qi refining, their qi is very weak and unstable. Using a weapon is much better than using qi at our level."

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Don't blame your own inabilities on your qi. You guys are simply degenerates of all us cultivators. Let me teach you guys

how someone under the fifth stage of qi refining uses his qi."

"Fucking bullshit. You're looking to die!" Wang Lin could not hold in his anger anymore. He gave the signal to attack and all five of them flew towards Ye Zifeng.

"Hahaha..... Come on!"

Ye Zifeng made some seals with his hands and roared. He punched out at the unlucky person who was in the front. His fist landed on the rod and the rod exploded due to the sheer force of his punch. The punch continued moving forward and landed on the guy's chest. The victim spat out a mouthful of blood and grasped his chest. He was in an immense of pain.

"I'm not done yet." After punching the guy, he stomped on his arms and punched his chest a few more times. A painful cry could be heard. When Wang Lin and the others arrived to surround him, Ye Zifeng moved quickly and left their encirclement.

If it was anyone else, they would turn around and run with their tails between their legs if five people with similar cultivation level ganged up on them. Ye Zifeng however, charged forward and took the initiative to attack. Ye Zifeng was experienced. He took advantage of the opponent's momentum and turned it around against them. Doing this, he was able to take down one of their members before the real fight even started.

"And then there were four....." Ye Zifeng smiled.

"This guy doesn't have much qi. How can he do something like this? He attacked with no hesitation at all. It feels like he's an experienced killer." The group looked at what Ye Zifeng did and became scared.

"I might not be able to win against all five of you, but I can guarantee that the first person who attacks will suffer!"

Using what just happened to his advantage, he was able to give some pressure to Wang Lin and his group of goons.

Wang Lin looked left and right at his bros and had a cowardly expression on his face. This was because he liked to bully people who

were weaker than him. Now that he realize how strong Ye Zifeng was, he was feeling scared.

"You go!"

"What the fuck? Why should I go and attack first? Why don't you go?" The group argued with each other, none of them wanting to strike first.

"You go!" Wang Lin pushed one of them forward. The one who was pushed looked over at Ye Zifeng and then at Wang Lin. He was scared and didn't want to go.

"Bunch of good for nothing. Fine. We'll just all go and attack together!"

Wang Lin threw his rod to the side and used his Wind Splitting Fist to attack. The others didn't care about whether they killed Ye Zifeng anymore and all used their strongest attacks. They all attacked at the same time.

Ye Zifeng sighed, "I did tell you guys to all attack at the same time.... Come on!"

Ye Zifeng lifted his fist and gathered his qi into his arms. A golden light started to surround his arm.

"Qi solidification with a golden light? No way. Aren't you at the third stage of qi refining? When did you break through to the fourth stage?" Wang Lin was shocked. Last time, he was already beaten badly by Ye Zifeng who was at the third stage. This time he got a few brothers who were at the fourth or even one at the fifth stage to try and take care of him. But who would've thought that Ye Zifeng had broken through to the fourth stage!

Ye Zifeng fiercely punched the ground. The ray of golden light entered the ground and exploded. A loud explosion could be heard and the ground exploded, causing Wang Lin and his friends to be off balance. In front of Ye Zifeng a giant fissure appeared and a giant rock flew towards Wang Lin.

"It's too bad that you guys found out too late." Ye Zifeng shook his head.

This caught Wang Lin and his friends in surprise. The tremendous force behind the rock knocked them all down upon impact. The rock shattered and the pieces landed all over their bodies.

One of the 2nd generation nobles who was down forced himself back up with great difficulty. He saw Ye Zifeng's shadow coming towards him and tried to run away. However, Ye Zifeng grabbed him by his collar and threw him towards the pile of rocks near the fissure. The kid's head hit the rocks straight on and fell unconscious.

"And then there were three...." Ye Zifeng stared at Wang Lin.

Wang Lin shook his head and angrily yelled, "No way. You're at the fourth stage of qi refining. I'm at the fourth stage too and we also have someone who's at the fifth stage. How did you beat us like this? How are you so strong?"

Ye Zifeng coldly laughed, "It's simple. The way that you guys cultivate suck. You guys take things for granted and don't cultivate seriously. You guys like to bully the weak, but in reality you guys are the weak ones. How could you call me strong?"

Wang Lin had a strange look in his eyes, "But. No matter how we we are, we should also be stronger than a trash like you....."

Ye Zifeng looked deep into Wang Lin's eyes and smiled.

"I've told you already. I'm not the same Ye Zifeng that I was before. You need to remember that!"

Wang Lin was startled. He was speechless.

From Ye Zifeng's point of view, fighting against five people that was like Wang Lin was easy. They posed no threat to him at all.

"Brother Lin, are we still going to fight? I'm afraid that we aren't his opponent."

"Yeah brother Lin. Ye Zifeng is too cruel. Two of our brothers are knocked unconscious already!"

Wang Lin fiercely stared at him, "You guys accepted my money and now

that you can't win, you want to run?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at the two people who stood in front of Wang Lin.

"You guys want to run? That's fine with me. I, Ye Zifeng don't have any grudges against you guys. I don't want to hurt you guys if I don't have to. You guys can leave, but Wang Lin stays behind." When he said those last words, a murderous aura emitted from his body.

The two people's faces sank. They looked at each other and decided.

Ye Zifeng was like the devil. With just a few words, he was able to persuade them to leave.

"Okay. We're leaving!"

"Brother Lin. We're sorry. We'll help you with some other things in the future if we have the chance."

The one thing that people were afraid of the most during a battle wasn't a strong opponent. It was a friend betraying you. Right now, Wang Lin was feeling very dismayed.

"If you guys run away today, don't ever think about getting benefits from the Wang clan anymore! Also don't ever call me brother again." Wang Lin was very angry. The was a sense of defeat in his tone. If his two friends ran away, he won't be able to hold Ye Zifeng down by himself. Ye Zifeng would definitely not let him go.

"Who cares if you don't think of us as brothers anymore. Other than your Wang clan, we can still follow the Liu clan. We can also go and follow the Xiao clan as well. Following them would be way better than following a self-centered stuck up brat like you." The two knew that they had no chance with Wang Lin anymore so they let out all their thoughts about him.

"You!" Wang Lin was so angry that he was about to faint.

The two wanted to continue slandering Wang Lin but Ye Zifeng interferred.

“Stop talking. If you want to leave then leave!” Ye Zifeng didn’t want to dirty his hands by beating these two. If they kept talking rubbish, he would’ve ended them himself.

“Let’s go. Let’s go.” The two of them looked into Ye Zifeng’s eyes and immediately ran away.

“And then there was one….”

Seeing how the situation had turned against him, Wang Lin wanted to run as well. However Ye Zifeng suddenly struck out against him and knocked him down.

“Wang Lin. We’re not done with each other yet. Why are you in such a hurry to leave?”

Chapter 29: I'm taking everything!

Looking at Ye Zifeng's eyes, Wang Lin felt chills going down his back. He would have never thought that Ye Zifeng, someone that he had endlessly bullied, would suddenly become so strong.

Ye Zifeng walked up to Wang Lin with an expressionless face but his eyes emitted a murderous aura.

"Ye Zifeng. Watch how I'll kill you!" Wang Lin gulped. His life was in Ye Zifeng's hands now, so he might as well take a preemptive strike, hoping that a chance to escape might come.

He was standing very close to Ye Zifeng already and thus, he took a dagger out and immediately threw it towards Ye Zifeng.

"Heh. Child's play!" Ye Zifeng coldly chuckled with a fierce look on his face. His qi suddenly raised up and there was electricity surrounding him. Before the dagger even reached him, it was struck down by the lightning. Seeing this scene, Wang Lin was shocked.

"When……When did you gain the power of lightning….."

This lightning power of his came from the three thunder spirit pills. It didn't just manifest out of nowhere.

At this time, Ye Zifeng fiercely attacked Wang Lin. With one strike, he had sent Wang Lin flying across the plain. Wang Lin landed heavily on the ground and before he got up, Ye Zifeng was already standing in front of him.

It was at this moment, Wang Lin knew he fucked up. They were both at the fourth stage of qi refining but their actual abilities were miles apart. No matter what, he could not be Ye Zifeng's opponent.

"You still want to fight?" Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Wang Lin.

"Brother Feng. I'm sorry. I was wrong. I made a mistake! Please, a great man such as yourself should not stoop to pettiness for the past wrong doings of someone as lowly as me.

Ye Zifeng continued to smile and raised his fist, “If I was in your situation, would you let me go?”

Wang Lin was stunned. If Ye Zifeng was in his hands, he would definitely beat him up so bad that his own father won’t even be able to recognize him.

“Brother Feng. How about this. You can beat me up until you’re satisfied. But, please don’t kill me!”

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Well I was going to beat you up anyways. However, the problem itself won’t be solve with just a simple beating.

Wang Lin shivered. He was afraid. He thought that Ye Zifeng really wanted to kill him.

“Brother Feng. Tell me. What do you want me to do so you can spare me. I’ll do anything.” Wang Lin begged. He was completely different from before when he still had his “bros” with him.

Ye Zifeng sized him up and looked at the clothes at Wang Lin was wearing and smiled without saying anything.

Wang Lin knew what was up and hurriedly took out a small pouch and presented it to Ye Zifeng, “Brother Feng, this is 100 gold coins. Please accept my gift.”

“100 gold coins?”

Ye Zifeng took the pouch and weighed the amount by hand.

“‘A hundred gold coin for the life of one of the young masters of the three great clans in Leizhou City. Isn’t this too much of a bargain?”

Wang Lin’s face froze. He then put his hands into his sleeves and took out a small ring.

“A decorative ring? That thing is worth at most 10 gold coins. What are you trying to pull here?”

Wang Ling regretfully replied, “No. This is not a normal ring. This is an interspatial ring. In Leizhou City, this item is very precious. My father gave this to me after his trip to Tiandao City.

“A Interspatial Ring from Tiandao city? It should be worth around 2-300 gold coins.”

Wang Lin was stirred up and yelled out, “No way! My father used 700 gold coins to get this. No matter how used it is, it should be worth at least around 5-600 gold coins.”

Actually, Ye Zifeng knew that the ring was special. He wanted to press Wang Lin to find out more about it so he devalued the ring. To be able to get around 800 gold coins from Wang Lin, Ye Zifeng was feeling good.

“Since it’s an interspatial ring, why didn’t you put a sword in there and sneak attack me. Maybe you could’ve bought time to escape.”

“Do you think I’m that dumb? This is the lowest tier of interspatial rings. It takes some time to retrieve and insert items. It’s useless during battles.”

“Alright. Whatever. Just hand it over.” Ye Zifeng laughed and extended his hand towards Wang Lin.

After answering all these questions, Wang Lin was feeling more and more regretful after giving him the ring. He was feeling some sort of mixed feeling right now. He was the one who followed Ye Zifeng to beat him up but instead, he was beaten and robbed by Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng had bankrupted Wang Lin in an instant.

“Brother Feng.... I gave you everything that I owned already. Please let me go!” Wang Lin pitifully begged.

“Hmmmm..... 500 gold coins to buy the life of young master wang.....” Ye Zifeng began to ponder. He made it look as if he was really thinking about it.

“Alright then. Since I’m so nice, it’ll be enough if you give me the dagger that you used to attack me before.....”

Wang Lin’s face sank. The dagger could be counted as a treasure. If it wasn’t for the lightning around Ye Zifeng’s body, it would’ve definitely struck him.

If Ye Zifeng is nice, then everyone in the world would be nicer than him.

“What? You don’t want to?” Ye Zifeng smiled again, and used an imposing tone.

Hearing this tone, Wang Lin’s expression changed once again. Money and treasures were important. However, they weren’t as important as his own life. Now that his life is in Ye Zifeng’s hands, he had to listen to his demands.

“Of course I want to. As long as brother Feng is happy. Here. I give this dagger to brother Feng as a gift!”

Ye Zifeng showed a satisfied smile, received the dagger and played around with it. From what Ye Zifeng can see, this dagger was worth around a thousand gold coins. The harvest today was good.

“Okay. Since you’re so sincere, I’ll keep my promise and let you live.”

“Many thanks to brother Feng!”

Ye Zifeng’s tone changed again, “However….”

The happy expression on Wang Lin’s face disappeared once he heard this word, “However what?”

“However, If I let you go, will you let me go in the future?” Ye Zifeng smiled and glared at Wang Lin.

Wang Lin was startled. He knew what Ye Zifeng meant, “No way. Brother Feng is thinking too much. You’ve taught me a lesson this time and I won’t ever bother you again!”

Ye Zifeng continued to look at him with a smile, “If you want me to believe you, I need you to perform a simple task. All you need is to make a blood oath.” This time, he truly went overboard. After beating Wang Lin and his friends up, he took around ~1800 gold coins worth of item from him. Even if Ye Zifeng used his feet to think, he can probably guess that Wang Lin will definitely take revenge.

Wang Lin smiled bitterly, “Brother Feng. There’s no need for a blood oath. I’ve been taught a lesson. I won’t dare to bother you anymore…..”

Ye Zifeng snorted, “If you want me to believe you, then make a blood

oath! If not then I'll think that you want to take revenge on me. You know what'll happen!"

Wang Lin had cursed Ye Zifeng all this time while following his order. After taking over 1000 gold coins worth of item from him and then to not let him take revenge, Wang Lin was really angry.

Wang Lin gritted his teeth, "Fine. I'll just make the dumb blood oath then! I, Wang Lin, swears that I will not bother Ye Zifeng anymore, If I break this oath then...." After this part, he thought about it for a while but didn't know what to say.

Ye Zifeng looked at him, "So how are you going to make this oath?"

".... then If I break this oath, then I will forever be at the qi refining stage and never reach the martial disciple realm!" Wang Lin was so scared that he began to sweat. After saying these words, his whole body felt like a sinking balloon.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "Not enough. You have to add: I will be struck by the heavenly tribulation lightning and blow up!"

Wang Lin's face ashened. He didn't want to say something like that but after he saw Ye Zifeng's glare, he gritted his teeth, "okay. If I break this oath, then I will also be struck by heavenly tribulation lightning and blow up!"

After saying this, he didn't stop to rest. He was afraid that Ye Zifeng was going to add a few more conditions. He immediately infused his qi into his blood and splattered it on the floor. After a white mist appeared, the blood oath was complete.

"How is it brother Feng. This is fine right? Can I leave now?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Good. Seeing that you're so obedient, I've become softhearted. I'll beat you a little less."

Wang Lin quickly agreed and then he realized something was wrong, "What? You took my money and my treasures. Then you made me do a blood oath. And now you still want to beat me? Don't go back on your words!"

Ye Zifeng shook his head and smiled, “When did I go back on my words? I told you that I’ll let you live. I’ll promise that I won’t take you life. I just want to hit you for a bit.....”

Wang Lin was startled and continuously complained.

“Brother Feng, i’ve already made a blood oath. Please let me go.....”

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked closer and closer to Wang Lin. Wang Lin tried to move back but stumbled onto the floor.

“Making a blood oath and satisfying my urge to beat you are two completely different things.”

Wang Lin’s heart began to beat faster, “Brother Feng, Please no.....!”

“You can call me Sister Feng and it won’t matter. Don’t worry. I’m very soft. Look at your friends, they’re not dead either right?” Ye Zifeng revealed a sinister smile.

Chapter 30: Special Soul Binding Pill

After receiving a beating from Ye Zifeng, Wang Lin limped home while shamelessly covering his face. It was already very late when he reached his house. He didn't bother stopping by the main hall to greet his father and went straight towards his room.

"Hey little bro. Where did you hang out today that made you come home so late? Did you eat dinner yet?" A strong handsome youth looked at Wang Lin and questioned.

This person was none other than Wang Lin's older brother, Wang Tianzhi. His cultivation level was already at the peak of qi refining. The two brothers were very close. Every since they were young, they went through thick and thin together. Because of that, they always looked out for eachother.

Wang Lin answered dispiritedly, "None of your business."

Wang Tianzhi was startled. Since they've rolled together from a young age, Wang Tianzhi knew Wang Lin's character very well. He knew that Wang Lin was beat up by someone. Without saying anything, he walked towards Wang Lin and grabbed his shoulder.

"Lil bro, move your hands.... Let me see your face...."

Wang Lin furrowed his brows, "I told you already. It's none of your business!"

Wang Tianzhi felt that something was strange. He forcefully moved Wang Lin's hands away and took a good look at his face. Every part of Wang Lin's face was swelling. It looked like a pig head.

"This...." Seeing this scene, Wang Tianzhi became very angry. There weren't many people in Leizhou City who dared to bully his little brother.

"Lil bro, tell me the truth. Which bastard did this to you? I'll help you take care of him! You big bro is at the peak of qi refining. There aren't many people who can fight against me!"

Wang Lin sighed and expressionlessly shook his head, "No need. I've

already decided not to bother him anymore."

Wang Tianzhi stared at Wang Lin, "Bro, did you eat the wrong medicine or something? Normally, if someone bullies you, you would definitely pay them back by a hundredfold! When did you become such a sissy?"

"Who's a sissy? Do you think I don't want to get revenge on him?"

Wang Tianzhi started to think and randomly guessed, "I recall that you've been messing with this Ye Zifeng kid. Last time, you were beaten by him...and you called five of your bros out today.... Could it be that the five of you guys all lost against him?"

Wang Lin's expression sank. His big brother had hit a sore spot.

"You really lost? Five against one and you still lost? Didn't you say that he was only at the third stage of qi refining....?" Wang Tianzhi had a shocked expression on his face.

Wang Lin sighed, "No. He's already at the fourth stage of qi refining."

"So what if he's at the fourth stage. Aren't you guys in the fourth stage as well? Now that I think about it, didn't you bring someone who was at the fifth stage of qi refining? You guys should've been able to beat him one on one....."

Wang Lin shook his head, "We couldn't beat him at all.... Also, I've already made a blood oath to not bother him anymore. Don't butt into this anymore."

In the past, whenever Wang Lin loses to someone, he would immediately find Wang Tianzhi to get revenge for him. However this time, Wang Lin offended the cautious minded Ye Zifeng who made him take a blood oath.

"You made a blood oath? Then this is a bit problematic. If I were to help you and teach him a lesson, I might hurt you in the process...." Wang Tianzhi awkwardly sighed.

Wang Lin had a pitiful look on his face, "Big bro. Do you have any way to cancel a blood oath? I can't deal with this guy's arrogance!"

Wang Lin had given Ye Zifeng a hundred gold coins, a interspatial ring

and a precious treasure dagger. Then he was made to take a blood oath. After that he was beaten up. As a spoiled second generation noble, he could not take such a humiliation!

"This..... Unless a Martial Lord comes and help you cancel the blood oath, then you should follow it accordingly. However...."

Wang Lin looked sad until he heard that last word.

"However what?"

"However, as long as it doesn't have anything to do with you, and I'm not beating up this guy for you, then I think the effects of blood oath won't be triggered." Wang Tianzhi smiled.

Wang Lin suspiciously looked at his older brother and asked, "What do you mean?"

Wang Tianzhi laughed, "Did you forget? Leizhou City's Heavenly Clan Gathering is next week. If Ye Zifeng dares to participate, then I'll definitely teach him a lesson!"

Wang Lin understood what his brother meant. During the gathering, all of the younger generation would fight for their own clan's glory. If his brother were to beat Ye Zifeng up, he can say that he was trying to gain glory for his clan. It was a great opportunity for Wang Lin to get revenge."

"Big brother. Each clan must send three people to participate. My cultivation level is too low so I won't be able to participate. I hope you can tell second brother and third sister about this and have them teach Ye Zifeng a lesson too!"

Wang Tianzhi laughed loudly, "Good! Even without Ye Zifeng, I would've taught those people in the Ye clan a lesson anyways. We have to completely suppress them and not give them a chance to return to their position as one of the three great clans."

.....

On the other hand, Ye Zifeng was alone in the wilderness concorting pills. He was preparing for the Heavenly Clan Gathering.

He used the phantom ginseng, demonic fog grass and the other ingredients to create a pill that can defend against soul attacks. It was a special pill that was much more complicated to concoct than the Thunder Spirit Pill and the Golden Marrow Pill. Without the help of his ghost flames, it would take more than a night to finish.

However, once he concocts this pill, he can guarantee that there is no one in Leizhou City who can penetrate his soul defense. Afterall, there were not many people who knows about this pill in the world, let alone in Leizhou City.

During the gathering, the usage of pills and items was prohibited. However, eating a special pill before hand was technically not against the rules. Even if it was, it will be hard for the judges to detect such pill in his body.

"I've failed again. It seems like it's not my day today. Let's wait until tomorrow...." Using his fourth stage of qi refining qi to concoct pills was a bit too exhausting.

.....

The second day, the third day... Each day passed very quickly until it was finally the night before the gathering.

"Xueyi, why isn't Zifeng back yet?" Ye Chongtian was pacing back and forth in his private study. It was very late already and there was still no sign of Ye Zifeng.

Ye Xueyi thought about it and then nodded, "Oh yeah. In the sect, brother Zifeng told me that he might not return until the day of the gathering."

"Hmph. That good for nothing. He probably went out to fool around again to take some pressure off himself!" Ye Chongtian cursed. However, deep down, he was worried for Ye Zifeng. He was afraid that something had happened to him.

"No way father. Didn't you notice that Brother Zifeng is different from before? He doesn't go out to play around anymore!" Ye Xueyi was very

confident in her brother.

"This..... No matter what he's doing, he should've came back tonight. The gathering is tomorrow!"

Ye Chongtian was very worried. His son had changed too much recently. This made him start to worry about his son even more now. Maybe Ye Zifeng can bring the Ye clan back to it's former glory days. He didn't want his son to be in some sort of accident before the big gathering.

At that time, Ye Zifeng's voice could be heard coming from the gate.

"Father, did you hear that? Brother Zifeng's back!" Ye Xueyi excitingly yelled out.

Ye Chongtian was finally relieved of his worries.

"It's good that he came back. That's good." Ye Chongtian let out a long sigh. If Ye Zifeng didn't come back, and he had to participate with two people, he would be the laughing stock of the entire city.

Ye Zifeng ran into the study with a happy look on his face, "I did it! I did it!"

Ye Xueyi and Ye Chongtian looked at the scene. They had never seen Ye Zifeng so excited before and wondered what had happened.

"Brother Zifeng, what happened? Why are you so happy?" Ye Xueyi asked.

When Ye Zifeng saw Ye Chongtian, he calmed down and suppressed his excitement. He pulled Xueyi's hands and said, "Xueyi, come with me. I have something to give you!"

Ye Xueyi looked at her father. After getting Ye Chongtian's approval, she followed Ye Zifeng and ran out.

"Brother Zifeng, what do you want to give me?" Ye Xueyi excitedly looked at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng was getting impatient, "Come Xueyi. Eat this pill. It'll be useful for when you participate in the gathering tomorrow!"

“Pill? Brother Zifeng. You spent these few days concocting pills?

“That’s right.” Ye Zifeng nodded and retrieved a small box from his sleeve. There was a blood red translucent pill in the box.

“What is this pill..... It looks like it doesn’t taste good.” Ye Xueyi hesitated.

“Come on lil sis, who cares if it tastes bad. I put a lot of work into making this pill. This pill will increase your soul defense by a lot. It is a special pill made for the heavenly clan gathering! After many sleepless nights, I finally succeeded in making two pills.”

If it wasn’t for the fact that he wanted to make one for Ye Xueyi as well, Ye Zifeng would’ve returned home a day earlier.

Hearing this, she was a bit scared, “Brother Zifeng. You really want me to eat it?” Ye Xueyi had never taken any kind of pills in her life. She was able to get to the 8th stage of qi refining by purely relying on her talents and hard work.

“Come on. If you don’t eat it soon, this Soul Binding Pill will melt!”

“Okay!” Without saying anything else, she reluctantly swallowed the pill. In a split second, a one of a kind unprecedented feeling rushed through her body.

Chapter 31: Bone Age Test

“Brother Zifeng, What did you feed me? Why do I feel my entire body getting hotter and hotter. What is this burning sensation?”

Ye Xueyi’s lovable body trembled as she tightly hugged herself. Sweat began to form and her breathing became harder and harder.

“Sis, don’t say anything. Come to my room quickly. I’ll help you circulate your qi around.”

Saying that, Ye Zifeng went and pulled her hand.

“Hold on.”

Suddenly, an unusual idea popped into Ye Xueyi’s head causing her face to become bright red.

“Brother Zifeng. This isn’t some sort of aphrodisiac.....right?”

Ye Zifeng’s face stiffened. When he came back to his senses, he bitterly laughed, “How can that be. What kind of person do you take me for? This is a special Soul Binding Pill. It will arouse your martial spirit’s hidden potentials so that’s why you are feeling a burning sensation.

“So it’s like that. Then it was my mistake. I’m sorry brother Zifeng.”

Ye Xueyi closed her mouth. Her face was still bright red and didn’t dare to look at Ye Zifeng anymore.

“Don’t worry about it.... In the future, if I really make some aphrodisiac or whatever, I wouldn’t be such a beast and use it on my own sister.” Ye Zifeng put his hand up, swearing that he wouldn’t do something like this.

“So you’re planning on making some in the future.....” Ye Xueyi pouted playfully.

Ye Zifeng helplessly chuckled, “Okay. Let’s go in the room to rest. I still have to help you circulate your qi around.....”

“Okay! Thanks brother Zifeng.” Ye Xueyi appreciated the fact that Ye Zifeng had spent an entire day concocting this pill for her.

Thus, she obediently entered Ye Zifeng's room and allowed him to help her circulate her qi. With every circulation, she felt a strong power moving in her body. She was shocked at what was happening. The night passed very quickly.

.....

The heavenly clan gathering, a once in five years competition that everyone in Leizhou City pays attention to. It was a competition where large clans can show off their strength and small clans can rise in power. There were around thirty something clans in Leizhou City. Each clan were allowed to send three people to participate, totaling to around 100 participants.

According to the rules, only people under the age of twenty five can participate. Thus, most of the participants are in the qi refining stage.

As the host of the competition, the Spirit Ashen Sect invited seven martial practitioner realm experts from outside to make sure the competition was fair and impartial. They also had three of their elders help host the gathering as well.

Early next morning, there were many people waiting outside of the sect. Seeing that the gathering did not start yet, the people of the Ye clan decided to walk around.

"Hey look. Isn't that the trash Ye Zifeng? Why is he here at the heavenly clan gathering? Is the Ye clan planning to use him as a cannon fodder?"

"That's enough. Don't call him trash anymore. That's all in the past. Didn't you hear about how he completed the thunder rhino mission from the sect? While completing the mission, he killed three thunder rhinos!"

"Three thunder rhinos? Really? Wow that's impressive. It seems like I have to re-evaluate this Ye Zifeng.

"That's not all. I heard that Miss Bingqian has a very close relationship with Ye Zifeng. You have to be careful if you want to talk about him. If Miss Bingqian overhears you talking about him and you offend her, she will never concoct pills for your clan again. Anyways, why isn't Miss

Bingqian here yet?"

"Are you stupid? The Liu clan was the winner of the last gathering. According to the rules, they will be the last clan to compete. Why would Miss Bingqian come here so early? Alright, let's stop gossiping. Look. There comes Ye Chongtian and the Ye clan members."

Everyone stopped gossiping and shut their mouths. They stopped talking about Ye Zifeng. None of them wanted to offend the Ye clan. Although the Ye clan had fallen, Ye Chongtian is still an expert at the Martial Soul stage and was one of the strongest beings in Leizhou City.

"Wow. It's so quiet and peaceful today." Ye Zifeng felt refreshed.

Ye Xueyi giggled, "Yeah. Well since brother Zifeng did so many unbelievable things, all those people who laughed at you before finally shut their mouths. This is great!"

Ye Huichi laughed as well, "Heh. Even though you got rid of your status as a trash, you still have that status as a coward..."

"Ye Huichi. What do you mean by that." An angry expression appeared on Ye Xueyi's face.

"What do I mean by that? You can ask him yourself. During the last gathering, didn't he run away? He didn't even have enough courage to participate. After that, he became the laughing stock of the entire city!"

Ye Zifeng sighed. His "past" was giving him a headache.

"You're right. However, like you said, that was in the past. We're living in the present right now. Just you wait and see. This time, at the heavenly clan gathering, I will erase my past embarrassments and make a name for myself."

Ye Huichi was startled and with a sour tone he replied, "Cousin, your ability to bluff is getting better and better. Fine. I wait for the results."

"Alright stop talking. There's someone coming out." Seeing how these kids were going against each other, Ye Chongtian felt worried.

At this time, a Martial Practitioner elder came out of the sect. It was Lin

Ke, one of the three great elders of the sect.

When he appeared, everyone shut their mouths and lined up.

“The heavenly clan gathering will be starting soon. Please line up and wait for me to administer the bone age test to you. If any clan wants to cheat, then don’t even think about participating in the gathering in the future.

“No way. No one said anything about a bone age test!”

“Yeah. I wasn’t notified about it at all.” A few fairly new small clans who didn’t know about this started to complain. They wanted to take advantage of the situation and bring some of their stronger juniors in. However their plans backfired. They weren’t able find a replacement fast enough so they had to enter with just one or two people.

Shi Chen’s clan was one of these small clans. After his older brother and sister had to drop out, he was the only one participating. Originally, he wanted to watch the competition as a participant, but now, now he had to actually try and gain glory for his clan.

Elder Lin coldly looked at everyone, “When we handed out the invitations, we clearly told everyone that people above the age of twenty five cannot participate. Since you guys tried to cheat, you got what you deserved.”

Saying that, he went up to the first person in line and felt his meridians, “Okay. Almost 22 years old. Go in.....”

“Next.”

“Hmm..... 18 years old. Xue family’s youngster, you can go in too....”

Seeing that there was a bone age test, Ye Zifeng’s expression turned ugly.

“Brother Zifeng. What happened? Did you not get enough sleep last night? Are you not feeling well?” Ye Xueyi was worried after seeing Ye Zifeng’s expression change.

Ye Huichi chuckled, “Let me guess. Does your stomach hurt again? Do

you want to run away like last time?"

Ye Zifeng didn't pay any attention to Ye Huichi and gritted his teeth. He made up his mind and raised his hand. After he did that, Ye Huichi was shocked. He only wanted to joke around and didn't think that Ye Zifeng would actually try to drop out.

"No way. Cousin Zifeng. Do you really want to drop out?"

"Of course not." Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head.

"Elder Lin. Can I ask a question.....?"

"You bastard. Are you crazy?" Seeing Ye Zifeng raise his hand, Ye Chongtian was startled. What in the world did Ye Zifeng want to do now? Did he want to embarrass the clan again? However, what Ye Chongtian didn't know was that Ye Zifeng was actually worried about his bone age. He wasn't sure about his bone age after crossing over. He didn't know what kind of method the elder employed but it might cause some problems.

Everyone turned around and stared at Ye Zifeng. They didn't know what he wanted to say but if he offends Elder Lin in any way, he would definitely get punished.

Elder Lin furrowed his brows and took two steps forward.

"If you have anything to say, say it quickly. Don't waste everyone's time."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Actually it's nothing big. First of all, I would like to say that I agree with the way that the Elder is handling the process. However, I would like to ask the elder to not announce everyone's age. You should know that there are many female cultivators here and it is sort of a taboo to say a girl's age out loud....."

No matter in what world, asking for a girl's age and telling other people their age are considered a taboo. The girls here all wanted to say something but they were afraid that they would offend Elder Lin. Who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would help them say something like this. Because of this, their view of Ye Zifeng changed dramatically.

Ye Xueyi giggled, “Brother Zifeng. I didn’t think that you would be considerate....” Ye Xueyi also didn’t want everyone in the arena to know about her age.

Ye Zifeng smiled and remained silent.

Borrowing this chance that Ye Zifeng created, many of the girls started to speak up as well. The entire place was filled with noise and that forced Elder Lin to change the way he did things.

Elder Lin looked at Ye Zifeng with admiration. With just a few words, he was able to create such a motion. It seems like Ye Zifeng is a person with high integrity.

“Alright then. I won’t be announcing the ages anymore. From now on, I’ll just announce if you pass or not.”

Elder Lin sighed and continued to administer the test, “You pass....”

“You also pass....”

One by one, people started to enter the sect slowly. In just a bit, it was Ye Zifeng’s turn.

Chapter 32: You're here to fill up the third spot!

"Brother Chongtian." Elder Lin noticed Ye Chongtian and waved towards him.

Ye Chongtian cupped his hands together and returned the greeting, "Elder Lin."

"Ah. So it's Chongtian's kid. There were too many people here so I didn't notice you guys.... I remember when you were just a little kid. In the blink of an eye, almost twenty years have passed. Time really does go by quickly."

Lin Ke was one of the three great elders of the sect. He's usually traveling around in the outside world and rarely returns to Leizhou City. This time, when he returned, it was during the Heavenly Clan Gathering. To be able to meet an old friend of his from twenty years ago, he felt really happy.

Ye Chongtian smiled, "Right? These twenty years passed really quickly. It's all thanks to Elder Lin's care that this kid could grow up to be like this. I hope Elder Lin can give them some pointers in the future."

"Great. Great. The young master is so eloquent and charismatic, he will definitely become a great figure in the future." Elder Lin laughed and complimented Ye Zifeng's courage from before. Since he likes traveling in the outside world, he obviously have not heard about all of Ye Zifeng's past deeds and his nickname as a trash. This was the reason why he was able to compliment him so much with a straight face. If it were anyone else, no matter how good of a relationship they have with Ye Chongtian, they would not be able to compliment Ye Zifeng like this.

"Chongtian, just to be fair, I need to test their bone age."

Ye Chongtian smiled and gestured for Elder Lin to proceed, "Of course."

The first was Ye Huichi.

After Elder Lin felt his meridians, he smiled and nodded, “You passed. You can go in.”

Next was Ye Xueyi and of course, she passed easily.

Since there were other people still waiting, Elder Lin quickly moved towards Ye Zifeng and tested him.

After feeling for a while, Elder Lin’s face turned pale and looked at Ye Zifeng with a shocked expression. It looked as if the elder had turned into a statue.

Fortunately, he didn’t say Ye Zifeng’s “age” out loud by habit since he had changed the process just before.

Ye Chongtian looked at the elder’s strange expression and asked, “What’s wrong Elder Lin?”

“Nothing. Let me try again.”

Elder Lin shook his head. He thought that he was getting old and messed up. He tried again but the result was the same as before.

In his mind, he kept thinking “no way!”. His face was filled with shock. He didn’t believe in demonic things and thus continuously felt Ye Zifeng’s meridians. Every time that he did it, he got the same results.

“Chongtian, This…. Is this kid really your son?” Elder Lin felt that Ye Zifeng was around 26 years old. If it was anyone else he would fail them immediately. However, he was there during Ye Zifeng’s birth and even held him in his arms. He remembered that day very clearly. It was the day before Elder Lin left Leizhou City for the first time. There was no way that he would forget about such an event.

(TL: Soooo I think the alchemist god Zifeng was around 26 when he “crossed over”????)

Ye Chongtian who was originally full of smiles was shocked, “Elder Lin, I really do respect you and I can tolerate some things that you say. But for you to actually ask me if Zifeng was my son…. How can he not be my son?”

Ye Xueyi looked strangely at the Elder as well, “That’s right Elder Lin. I grew up with my brother. He’s always been two years older than me.” She thought that it was strange for the elder to act like this. She had guessed that it had something to do with the test so she told him that Ye Zifeng was only older than her by two years.

Elder Lin couldn’t believe it. He shook his head. Just before, he felt that Ye Xueyi was around 18 years old. From the facts, Ye Zifeng should be twenty years old. How could he be tested to be around 26?

“But….” Elder Lin hesitated and wanted to say what happened.

However, how could Ye Zifeng let him do so and intervened, “Elder Lin, I want to ask if the bone age test is administered during every Heavenly Clan Gathering.”

Elder Lin asked someone and then replied, “That’s right. It is done during every gathering.”

“Alright then.” Ye Zifeng turned towards the rest of the participants and asked, “I want to ask you guys something. Did anyone here participate in the last gathering with me?”

“Ye Zifeng. I remember that day five years ago. At that time, we were both fifteen years old and right after you passed the bone age test, you lied about having a stomachache and ran away!”

“Yeah I remember that. Five years ago, you were a trash and you even lied about having a stomachache. You basically lost face for the entire Ye clan and became the laughing stock of the entire Leizhou City.”

Ye Chongtian coldly coughed and made all the people in the younger generation shut up.

Ye Zifeng on the other hand wasn’t mad and he turned towards Lin Ke with a smiling face, “Elder Lin, you heard them right? Five years ago, I participated in the gathering with them and I was only fifteen at that time. Due to some unforeseen circumstances, I made a big deal that left a deep impression on everyone in the city.”

Ye Zifeng continued, “Elder Lin is using qi to test someone’s bone age

and it might be wrong sometimes. In a situation like this, you should trust the people's words right?"

Five years ago, he was fifteen. So five years later, he should be twenty. Even a child could figure this out.

Ye Zifeng was very clever. He used the public's words to defy Elder Lin's test. This kind of public pressure will definitely make Elder Lin have second thoughts.

Elder Lin was startled by Ye Zifeng's actions. In his heart, he admired Ye Zifeng's courage even more. After thinking for a bit, he began to laugh.

"That's right. It seems like this old man messed up. Young master Ye, you pass. Go into the sect."

"Thanks Elder Lin."

On the surface, Ye Zifeng acted all cool and calm, but on the inside, Ye Zifeng was actually very nervous. Since last week, he had continuously concocted pills and cultivated in order to prepare for the gathering. If he were to fail the first test and not even step past the door, he would literally choke himself to death.

Elder Lin nodded and continued to administer the test to the others.

Ye Xueyi pulled Zifeng's sleeves and laughed, "Big brother, that scared me to death. Man that Elder Lin really is getting old. From the way he looked, it looked as if you were actually older than twenty five."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "If I really am older than twenty five, would you still see me as your brother?"

Ye Xueyi was startled and smiled, "You're talking like you're really older than twenty five. I'm your only sister. If I don't see you as a brother, who will?"

"Ahem...."

Ye Chongtian coughed. Recently it seems like these two were not acting like siblings and decided to intervene with a few words.

"Zifeng, Xueyi, Huichi. I hope you guys can return triumphantly and gain

glory for our Ye clan!"

"Thanks father." "Thanks uncle!"

"Later on, I'll be in the spectator area cheering you guys on! Oh yeah. During this gathering, do you guys have any goals?" Ye Chongtian had been wanting to ask them this.

Ye Xueyi smiled, "Of course I have goals. Last time I got 11th place so this time I will definitely enter the top ten!"

Ye Chongtian nodded, "Good. As expected from my baby girl."

Ye Huichi thought about it and answered, "I'm at the fifth stage of qi refining. While this is not considered impressive, I hope to enter the top 30."

Ye Chongtain nodded again, "It's not bad if you can get into the top 30 with your cultivation level!"

"Well you guys need to do your best and try to reach your goals!"

When Ye Zifeng was about to open his mouth to say his goals, who would've thought that Ye Chongtian actually skipped over him.

"Hold on old man. Why aren't you asking me what my goal is?"

Ye Chongtian turned towards Ye Zifeng and looked at him strangely, "Zifeng, you're here to fill up the third spot. Think of it as a mission. You can whatever you want and I'm not going to ask for much fromr you."

Ye Zifeng was speechless. He had worked so hard for the past week just to be a fill in.

If his own father had such low expectations for him. What would other people be thinking.

.....

After Ye Chongtian bid his farewell to the them, the three Ye clan members walked into the sect. There were many people in there already all lined up. The older generation was sitting in the spectator seats while the younger generation gathered near the sect doors, waiting for the

elder's commands.

"Ye Zifeng, you're finally here. Our young master Xiao had been waiting for you....."

Xiao Mu and his lackeys walked over and coldly looked at Ye Zifeng, "Ye Zifeng, you really are something. To have Miss Bingqian back you up. However, let me tell you this right now. I suggest that you go and forfeit or else don't even think about leaving this place in one piece."

Ye Xueyi became angry and wanted to attack. However Ye Zifeng blocked her way.

Ye Zifeng smiled back, "The Heavenly clan gathering isn't a fighting tournament. Everyone will mind their own business and walk their own heavenly stairway. How are you going to deal with me?"

(TL: So the heavenly clan gathering is a contest about climbing stairs. I think each level exerts some pressure and whoever climbs to the highest wins.)

Xiao Mu walked up next to Ye Zifeng and whispered, "Truth to be told, one of the judges from Tiandao city is someone from my Xiao clan. I've already made a deal with him. When you climb the stairs later, he will definitely not let you off. So if you want to run now, it's not too late."

Compare to hurting Ye Zifeng, Xiao Mu hoped that Ye Zifeng would choose to run instead. This will definitely make him lose face. This was why Xiao Mu deliberately warned him.

"So they want to use soul attacks to harm me huh? By exerting pressure on the stairs and attacking me at the same time, no one would notice anything. This is a pretty good plan....." Ye Zifeng had a deep sly look in his eyes.

Chapter 33: Never Before Seen!

In the middle of the sect's forbidden soul hall, there was a staircase with several hundred steps that reached the heavens. The space between each step was as tall as two people. When one stands at the bottom of these stairs and look up, it looked as if the stairs pierced the clouds and was as tall as the five great mountains. It looked as if these stairs were really the stairway to heaven. Hence the name, heavenly stairs.

On normal days, these flights of stairs were not this tall. The sect had laid down a special formation because of the competition. With ten martial practitioner realm experts maintaining it, it allowed the stairs to pierce the heavens.

After Elder Lin tested everyone, he went into the sect as well. He looked at the nine other experts and then nodded. He then cleared his throat and started to talk.

"Alright. Everyone listen up. The heavenly clan gathering will have two parts. The first part is the stair climbing competition. After one hour, the top ten will be determined and the winner will participate in the second part of the gathering. In the afternoon, the winning family of the first part will fight against the champions of the last gathering, the Liu family. I will explain the rules for the second part when the time comes. Are there any questions?"

Shi Chen raised his hand, "Elder Lin. Since there are many people participating, there's bound to be some pushing and shoving. If we fall from high up, I'm afraid that it'll hurt a lot....."

Once the people in the hall heard this, they had to hold in their laughter.

Shi Chen was a scaredy-cat. This was the reason why he picked missions that were lower than his cultivation level. During this gathering, Shi Chen only thought about his own safety and not his family's glory. However, he can't be blamed for that. He was only suppose to be here to watch as a participant and learn things. However, both his brother and sister had to forfeit due to their age and the elders in his clan forced him to actually try.

Elder Lin laughed, “Don’t worry about it. If you fall, the experts from Tiandao city will catch you with their qi. They will make sure that you don’t get hurt.”

Shi Chen’s face suddenly turned very happy, “Then that’s good!”

Elder Lin’s expression suddenly changed and then coldly said, “However, I want to remind everyone that although pushing and shoving cannot be avoided, if we find anyone who deliberately attacks other people, they will be punished. Their family will also not be able to attend the gathering for the next ten years.”

These words were said in a very strict tone. Everyone kept the reminder in their heart and the hall became quiet.

Ye Xueyi was confused about something and opened her mouth, “Elder Lin, I also have a question. If after one hour, there are still people on the same level, how will the ranks be determined?” Five years ago she participated in the gathering but this time the rules were completely different so she was confused about it.

Elder Lin started to laugh again, “Good. That’s a good question. However, don’t worry about it. If something like this happens, we, the elders and the experts from Tiandao City will continuously exert pressure on the level until one person is left.

After that, everyone looked around at each other. No one else asked any more questions.

Elder Lin looked at everyone and then turned to the teachers of the sect.

“There’s nothing else, Elder Lin. We can begin.” One of the teachers spoke up.

“Then I would like to announce that this year’s Heavenly Clan Gathering has officially begun!”

At the same time, the spectators all began to clap. This was the one of the most festive events in Leizhou City. Everyone in the city will pay attention to the results. The elder generations in the spectator stands were all as nervous as the younger generation participants.

At this time, some of the participants have already begun to move.

“Quick. Move out!” Right after Elder Lin announced the start, Ye Zifeng pulled Ye Xueyi’s hand and flew towards the stairs.

His reaction was so fast that the other participants were shocked.

Ye Huichi was startled, “We have a whole hour to climb. Why are you being so urgent?”

Xiao Mu reacted quickly as well and commanded his brothers, “Quick, don’t let the people in the Ye clan run.”

“Wait. Young Master Xiao. According to the rules, we can’t attack them.”

Xiao Mu facepalmed and sighed, “Who told you to go and attack them? Elder Lin said there’s bound to be some pushing and shoving. You guys only need to block their way and not let them advance. Whatever you do, don’t attack them!”

The rules only stated what they couldn’t do. He bent the rules and used it to his own advantage. Xiao Mu was a smart person unlike Wang Lin. He knows what he should and shouldn’t do.

However, his plan was easily seen through by Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng didn’t even look back and continued to rush towards the stairs. He only had one goal in his mind right now.

He had to be quicker. He can not let Xiao Mu and his lackeys catch him.

“Damn. That Ye Zifeng kid is pretty smart. He ran away immediately.” Xiao Mu gritted his teeth. He couldn’t catch Ye Zifeng anymore.

“Young master Xiao, what do we do now?”

“What else can we do? Even if we can’t catch him we still have to run after him. With his cultivation, he shouldn’t be able to climb that far up. We’ll be able to catch up sooner or later!”

Xiao Mu suddenly remembered something, “Oh yeah. Block that Ye Huichi kid too. I won’t let anyone from the Ye clan go.

Ye Huichi who was standing in the back was shocked after hearing these

words, “What the fuck? What does this have to do with me?”

.....

“Senior brother, since the kids have started, we should start too.” Elder Lin look towards a white robed elder.

“Yeah we should.” The white robe elder nodded and waved his hands. He put his palm on the formation and inserted his qi.

Elder Lin and the others all went to their own position and did the same thing. They all started to insert their qi into the formation.

After the experts inserted their qi into the formation, the stone steps began to emit a dim light. On this gloomy and cloudy day, the stairs shone especially bright.

Watching the qi gather on the stairs, all of the participants were shocked and their expressions became more and more serious. To these people, the heavenly stairs was something that can help them improve. It will allow them to gain experience. To be able to enter a formation maintained by ten martial practitioner experts, it was a once in a lifetime opportunity.

Ye Zifeng was not the first to reach the stairs because there were others who were a lot faster than him.

“Hehe. You trash Ye Zifeng. You want to get ahead of me? Don’t even think about it!” Rong clan’s second young master yelled out.

Ye Zifeng smiled back, ‘Wow. Since you’re so strong, then let’s see if you can get on the first level!”

“I don’t need you to tell me what to do!”

Rong clan’s second young master started laughing loudly. He was very close to the stairs already and decided to leap onto the first step. With a flip, he elegantly and gracefully landed on the first level.

However, when he stepped onto the first level, his body began to tremble. He can feel the invisible pressure coming from all around him. It was hard for him to move. The Rong clan’s second young master was spoiled by his parents ever since he was born. He had never experienced

something as terrifying as this. He was unable to move at all. He didn't know what to do.

"Dumbass..... To jump onto the first step without preparing yourself."

One's cultivation level will only slightly affect the climbing process. In order to climb higher, one needed high amounts of concentration, willpower and perseverance. The Rong Clan's second young master treated this as a game and jumped on without preparing himself. He was basically asking for it....

Ye Zifeng coldly laughed and then looked back at his sister, "Lil sis, when you get onto the stairway, don't think about anything and don't be scared. Just focus on going upwards."

Ye Xueyi nodded, "Alright brother Zifeng. I got it!"

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and a serious expression appeared on his face. Only after preparing himself and surrounding his body with his own qi did he dare to step onto the first level.

"Hmm. If I come over here, it looks like I won't be affected by the formation that much.' Ye Zifeng was still in mid air suddenly thought of an idea.

He struck his palm out onto the ground and with the recoil, he flew towards the Rong clan's second young master.

"Ye Zifeng, You..... What are you doing here?" Rong clan's second young master was shocked and wanted to move away. However, the formation on the stairs had some sort of confinement effect. If one isn't prepared and concentrated, they won't be able to move easily.

Ye Zifeng showed a cold smile and stepped onto his shoulder. He fiercely stepped onto it and use momentum to easily get onto the second level. The qi energy on the stairs began to move towards Ye Zifeng but was dispelled by his own qi.

At that time, not only did all the participants stared blankly at Ye Zifeng, even the experts were shocked at what happened. This wasn't the first time that they were invited to help maintain the formation of the stairs

but all of the participant from previous years had climbed using their own strength. They had never seen someone climb by using another person as a stepping stone.

Xiao Mu came back to his sensese and yelled, “Elders. How is this not against the rules? You must punish Ye Zifeng or else the integrity of the competition will drop!”

“Nah man. I’m only using him as a stepping stone. I’m trying to climb the tower you know. This isn’t consider an attack so it’s not against the rules.” Ye Zifeng smiled and replied.

This was the first time that something like this happened. After much deliberations, Elder Lin gave a reply, “It is as Ye Zifeng says. He is only trying to climb the stairs. It is not against the rules. He will continue!”

“Many thanks to senior.” Ye Zifeng smiled and cupped his hand.

Elder Lin glared at him, “However, this kind of thing leaves a bad taste in people’s mouth. It is unsportsmanlike. Don’t do it again!”

Chapter 34: Heavenly Stairs' Illusion Realm

Ye Zifeng was able to use the Rong clan's second young master to easily get onto the second level. However, there were also many people who could get on the second level by themselves and they easily caught up and surpassed Ye Zifeng.

His nickname as trash was basically half-cleared. However, not everyone had so much time in their hands to pay attention to Ye Zifeng's recent achievements.

So in these people's minds they didn't know about the recent events and thought that falling behind Ye Zifeng was a great embarrassment.

"Fuck. My dad told me that during the last gathering, there was a coward named Ye Zifeng who forfeited immediately and became the laughing stock of the entire city. How come he's so bold today?"

"Right? I remembered that during the last gathering, he ran away right after bone age test. How is he acting so normal today? Could it be that he had some sort of fortuitous enlightenment?"

Hearing all these shocking remarks and compliments about his son, Ye Chongtian was feeling very joyful. During this gathering, he originally wanted someone else from the other branch clans to take the third spot. However since he was rejected, he used Ye Zifeng to fill up the third position. Who would've thought that right when the competition started, Ye Zifeng would do something so splendid, helping the Ye clan gain quite a bit of glory.

In the Ye clan, the one with the ugliest expression was Ye Chen. His son Huichi was blocked by the Xiao clan members and had just reached the first level. In the competition, he had already lost his opportunity to get ahead.

At this time, while clenching his teeth, Ye Zifeng finally reached the tenth level. There were only a few people ahead of him and Xueyi. As for

Xiao Mu and the others, they started later than Ye Zifeng and was crowding with other people at the seventh level.

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and looked over at Xueyi, “Lil sis, the further we go, the more pressure is exerted on us. We will probably use up a lot of our strength before the time limit so we should use a different method to climb.”

Ye Xueyi looked confused and asked, ‘Use a different method? What kind of method?”

Ye Zifeng got closer to her and whispered, “When you jump up, I’ll be right under you and jump immediately after you. If we do it like this, we can lessen the pressure upon the second person. We will take turns and save our strength.”

Ye Xueyi’s face lit up, “That’s a great idea. But why are you only saying it now?”

Ye Zifeng looked at the people under him and then smiled.

“Only after separating ourselves from the other can we utilize this plan. Once the other people see this, they will probably try to copy us. However, right now, the people who are above us are probably too arrogant to work with each other and it is too crowded for the people below us the employ this method.”

After saying that, Ye Zifeng’s expression became serious again, “Alright sis, let’s not stand here and talk. We have to get going!”

“Okay. I’ll listen to brother Zifeng. Then I’ll go first.” Ye Xueyi nodded.

She took a deep breath and then jumped straight towards the 11th level. Ye Zifeng quickly followed behind her.

With this plan in action, they were able to save quite a bit of energy and qi. It was exactly like Ye Zifeng had planned. The people above them saw this but did not work together and the people below them tried to do this but it was too crowded.

This process was almost impossible for them to duplicate as well. The

two must have complete trust in each other and they have to work perfectly together.

.....

"Hmph. This is simply preposterous. Are these people climbing a mountain or climbing stairs. To use this kind of rule bending method to help each other." One of the Tiandao City's experts commented. He clearly despised Ye Zifeng's method of doing things.

Elder Lin smiled, "Elder Zhao, I'd like to think that they're good at adapting to the rule instead of bending the rules. To be able to think of a method like this, they are very smart. These two will go on to do big things in the future."

Elder Zhao coldly laughed, "I do admit that they're a little smart but going on to do big things? I doubt it. We'll see what they do on the twentieth level."

There were a total of 100 steps and with each twenty levels, there will be a change in setting.

For the first twenty it tested one's physical strength and not much of one's qi. However, after the twentieth step, it won't be that simple anymore.

"Hold on, Xueyi. This time, let me jump first."

When Ye Zifeng reached the 19th level, he suddenly pulled Xueyi back.

"Brother Zifeng, what happened? Is there something out of place?" Ye Xueyi was puzzled.

"Normally, these kind of heavenly stair formations will change every twenty levels. If I am not wrong, then the next level will feel completely different from before.

Ye Xueyi's eyes lit up.

"Brother Zifeng, how do you know this? Have you climbed the heavenly stairs before? That's not possible. You didn't even participate last time."

When Ye Zifeng was a martial lord, he had encountered many different

heavenly stair formations before. He had participated in something similar to this in his past life, so he knows all the tricks to these heavenly stairs.

He was preparing himself and didn't answer her question. With a loud yell, lightning shot out from his body as he rushed towards the twentieth level.

At the same time, his surroundings quickly changed. He could still hear Xueyi's breath right under him but when he looked back, he couldn't see her anymore.

"An Illusion?" This was the first thing that Ye Zifeng thought of.

The first twenty levels were basically a warmup. This was the start of the real competition. When Ye Zifeng entered this illusionary realm, he became isolated from the outside world.

The formation was able to create an illusion based on each individual's mind. The illusions were different for every person.

Ye Zifeng was walking leisurely around the illusion. Suddenly, without him feeling anything, a large golden sword appeared in his hands. In front of him, his servant from his past life was kneeling on the ground, begging Ye Zifeng not to kill him.

"So it's the murderer's illusion...." Ye Zifeng had a smile on his face. He had seen this kind of illusion before so he saw through this immediately.

Other people might not be able to tell that this is an illusion but to Ye Zifeng, he could easily see through all of this.

After he crossed over to the Martial Spirit Continent, he knew that he won't be returning to his world any time soon. So if anyone from the other world appeared here, he could tell that they were fake. Since everything here is going to be fake, he could kill them without mercy. There was nothing stopping him.

"Die!" Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and killed his old servant.

At the same time, the old servant's body went up in smokes and

disappeared. Right after, the sound of a crying child came from behind Ye Zifeng.

The kid was called Han Yu. He was Ye Zifeng's boy servant for when he needed to concoct pills. The kid was raised by Ye Zifeng himself.

Han Yu was crying and begging Ye Zifeng. He was kowtowing nonstop until his head started to bleed. He wanted Ye Zifeng to spare his life.

However, Ye Zifeng didn't feel anything. He knew that this was all fake and immediately cut him down. This time, instead of disappearing, the body stayed there with blood gushing out. Another voice then appeared behind him.

"Ye Zifeng. I am the supreme emperor of the Black Tortoise Continent. I've been kind to you all your life and have granted you the authority to be above everyone besides me. Do you dare to kill me? I won't let you go even when I become a ghost!"

Before Han Yu's body disappeared, the supreme emperor of his past life appeared before him.

"Who cares if I kill you or not. You can't stop me!" Ye Zifeng snorted coldly, raised his sword and cut him down. The emperor's head flew off and blood splattered all over Ye Zifeng's face.

Ye Zifeng tasted some of the blood that was splattered all over him and raised his brows, "So this is the limit of a martial practitioner's qi. Even with such a strong formation, they could only make the blood taste like water...."

"Little Ye! Come over here son. Do you remember us? We're your parents! We're sorry for leaving you. We've allowed you to suffer for the past twenty something years!"

(TL: So he was 26 when he died. I think.....)

Ye Zifeng turned around again and this time, two people appeared. He could not see their faces and they looked as if they were some kind of spirit. This scene had finally affected him a bit.

He was an abandoned orphan. Ever since he was little, he had to rely on himself. He was fortunate and received help from an expert and learned the way of alchemy. If it weren't for that expert, he would've died on the streets already.

Ye Zifeng trembled for a bit and didn't say anything. He closed his eyes and swung his sword. All he heard was two heads dropping on the floor.

"Zifeng. Guess who I am?" Ye Zifeng's eyes were suddenly being covered by a pair of hands.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng smiled and answered, "It's Jia Lan isn't it."

"Zifeng, after you went missing, I've been thinking about you everyday. Thinking about.... Where you went. Why didn't you tell me anything before you left?"

"Jia Lan.... Why would I not tell you where I went." Ye Zifeng slowly removed her hands and turned around. He stared at the beauty in front of him and grabbed her by her waist.

"Jia Lan.... I really miss you too. But sadly, you're not her....."

A painful look appeared on Jia Lan's face. Her face froze as she looked down. Ye Zifeng's sword had pierced through her chest and she was bleeding.

All the people that he had a close relation with in his past life had appeared one by one. And one by one, they returned to his heart.

He hugged the fallen Jia Lan in his chest until she disappeared. Then with a sigh, he looked over at the horizons.

"Next....."

.....

Chapter 35: Path of Suffering.

In the illusion realm, Ye Zifeng was killing emotionlessly and very quickly. Outside, the judges of the gathering were all shocked at how fast Ye Zifeng was advancing.

“Who the hell is this Ye Zifeng? On the outside he looks like a pale-faced scholar but his killing abilities are so ruthless. He didn’t lose his mind in the illusion at all. It seems like he’ll grow up to become someone exceptional.

“Yeah. When he reached the twentieth level, he was behind quite a few people. But now, he’s shot up to the third place! It seems like i’ll have to re-evaluate this kid!”

“For the Ye clan to have a son like this, it seems like they’re about to rise again.”

Hearing the compliments from all the elders, Elder Zhao’s face turned extremely ugly.

From what he knows about Ye Zifeng’s past, he didn’t think that Ye Zifeng would reach the top ten. He didn’t know why the Xiao clan asked him to help out. But now, he really had to step out and stop him.

“Elder Zhao, I see that you aren’t looking so well. Is it because you’re not used to the air here?” One of the sect’s three great elder, Shen Li, noticed the change in Elder Zhao’s expression and laughed.

Elder Zhao laughed awkwardly, “Perhaps. I rushed here from Tiandao City and didn’t have a chance to rest. I’m just feeling a bit tired.”

“So is that so? Then you should go rest for a bit.”

“This....”

Shen Li looked at Elder Zhao with a deep expression.

Elder Zhao was shocked and replied, “Then I won’t be impolite and will listen to the elder....”

Shen Li turned to everyone else and smiled, “Everyone please continue

maintaining the formation. I'll bring Elder Zhao to get some fresh air and will return very quickly." Shen Li was the strongest elder in the sect so the other elders didn't dare to disrespect his decision.

Shen Li stood up, pulled Elder Zhao to the side and smiled, "Alright you can tell me. Is it the Xiao clan, Rong clan or the Wang clan?"

Elder Zhao trembled, "Elder Shen, I don't know what you're talking about."

Shen Li coldly smiled, "You know exactly what I mean. Don't try to act stupid in front of me."

Elder Zhao somewhat understood his meaning and asked, "Could it be that Elder Shen is also...."

"That's right. The Wang clan asked me to help out. We have to prevent Ye Zifeng from entering the top ten. We cannot let the Ye clan have any hopes to rise in power!" Shen Li had a resolute expression in his eyes.

Elder Zhao's eyes lit up. He thought he had to work by himself and was afraid that someone might find out about his deeds. However, now that he has one of the great elders of the sect on his side, it made his mission much easier.

"So that's how it is. Elder Shen has the same plans as well. Then I won't hide it anymore. The Xiao clan asked me to deal with Ye Zifeng."

"Good. Then we have a common goal. It'll make things easier." Shen Li smiled and nodded, "When Ye Zifeng is at the 40th level, his physical and mental strength should be exhausted. When he gets to the Path of Suffering, we'll take turns and increase the output of the formation on him. I don't believe that he'll be able to handle it!"

.....

After experiencing all these illusions, Ye Zifeng opened his eyes and he was already at the 39th level. He looked down but all he could see was smoke. He couldn't see Ye Xueyi or the other participants at all.

However, when he looked around, he saw a girl standing on this level as

well. It seems like she's waiting for someone and not moving at all.

"Hey. Are you from the Wang clan?" Ye Zifeng suddenly asked.

The girl's face was filled with shock, "We've don't know each other... how do you know that I'm from the Wang clan?"

This girl was called Wang Mengxi, Wang Tianzhi and Wang Lin's third sister. Her looks were only alright and could barely be called a beauty.

When she said that they don't know each other, she meant that Ye Zifeng shouldn't know her. She on the other hand, knew who Ye Zifeng was. Afterall, who didn't know who Ye Zifeng was after what he did five years ago.

"I guessed." Ye Zifeng shrugged.

"Guessed?" Wang Mengxi didn't believe him.

"Well I'm not randomly guessing either. In Leizhou City, only the younger generation of the other great clans can come out of the illusion realm before me. Since the Liu clan isn't participating, only people from the Wang clan can be ahead of me. Since you're here, you're probably waiting for the other clan members right?"

Hearing this, Wang Mengxi nodded, "So that's it. Not bad. You're right. I'm Wang Mengxi form the Wang clan. I heard that Ye Zifeng was a dumb and stupid coward but that doesn't seem to be the case."

"These people can call me whatever they want. But one day, they will regret it. For those who wants to hurt me, I, Ye Zifeng, will remember them and pay the debt back ten fold!"

Ye Zifeng glared at Wang Mengxi with a fierce expression. When he gets his revenge, he will not discriminate. As long as they've offended him, whether they're a guy or a girl, whether they're pretty or ugly, he will exact his revenge.

"You....."

Wang Mengxi started to sweat profusely. The person in front of her did not seem like a qi refining stage kid at all. Instead, he looked like a

supreme expert.

Ye Zifeng coughed and right when he wanted to continue going up, Wang Mengxi suddenly called out, “Ye Zifeng, wait a bit!”

“What do you want? Don’t waste my stair climbing time.” Ye Zifeng raised his brows and turned around.

Wang Mengxi pursed her lips up and spoke, “Stay here and wait with me. Don’t go up. It’s very dangerous up there. After an hour, the people who can reach the 39th level should be less than 15. If you can get in the top 15, then the Ye clan can gain quite a bit of glory.

“That’s too bad. I’m not satisfied with being in the top 15.” Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head.

“You…. Listen to my warning!”

Of course, Ye Zifeng can see that this was only an excuse. The heavenly stairs formation isn’t dangerous at all. The real dangerous ones are the people who are maintaining the formation. He knew that Wang Mengxi knows that there are judges who will mess with him when he goes up.

“Heh. It seems like you’re a completely different person compared to your brother Wang Lin….” Ye Zifeng laughed.

“What do you mean?” Wang Mengxi was startled by Ye Zifeng’s words.

“I’m complimenting you…..”

Right after that, Ye Zifeng jumped up to the 40th level.

However, when he foot reach the ground, he felt a strong pressure pressing on top of him. It made it very hard for him to breathe.

“The Path of Suffering?” Ye Zifeng was startled.

“Ahhhh.” His entire body was in pain. If felt as if each and every cell in his body was being attacked by millions of small bugs. If it wasn’t for the fact that he had prepared himself before stepping onto the 40th level, he would have definitely fainted and rolled down the stairway. Right now, Ye Zifeng was kneeling down, trying to gather his energy.

Entering the Path of Suffering after leaving the illusionary realm will give any cultivator a big blow to their mental strength.

Even though Ye Zifeng knew that the pain was fake, and that it will all be gone after he leaves the Path of Suffering, he was still greatly affected by it.

However, this was nothing compared to what he had experienced in his past life. Once, he had used himself as a guinea pig and ate 100 different pills until his body almost exploded. Since he was able to endure something like that, this kind of fictitious pain was nothing compared to that!

"Come on!" Ye Zifeng yelled out and stood up. He started to climb the stairway slowly.

41st level! 42nd level..... 50th level. Along with the painful expression that he was showing, he had a smile on his face. To be able to smile under such circumstances, it wasn't something that anyone could do.

Seeing this smile, the elders and the experts from Tiandao City were all shocked.

"Ye Zifeng.... He. Is he really at the fourth stage of qi refining? Is this really his first time participating in the gathering?"

"To be able to handle so much pain as a mere fourth stage qi refiner. His willpower and mental strength is very strong. Even in Tiandao City, there aren't many people in the younger generation that can match his willpower.

The ones who were the most shocked was Elder Shen and Elder Zhao. They messed with the formation and made Ye Zifeng experience 2x more pain than normal. This was why Ye Zifeng felt such an impact when he first reached the 40th level. Who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would stand up and continue to climb. It seems like no matter how much the elders messed with the formation, Ye Zifeng would continue to climb.

If this keeps going, then even Wang Tianzhi who was at the 55th level would be surpassed by Ye Zifeng.

Elder Shen glanced over at Elder Zhao. They were able to communicate their intents with just an exchange of glances. It seems like the only choice that they have now is to attack him with a soul attack.

To be able to force two peak level martial practitioner experts to use soul attacks on him, a fourth stage qi refining kid, Ye Zifeng really was something else. No one in the world would believe that the two experts would have to resort to soul attacks but they didn't have any choice. If they don't do it, then even if he stops on this level, he will definitely be in the top 10, maybe even the top 3. This will help the Ye clan gain a tremendous amount of glory.

"I'll help you maintain the formation. You go." Elder Shen looked at Elder Zhao and whispered.

"But...." Elder Zhao was starting to feel nervous.

"There's no buts. If it keeps going like this, our reputations will be slandered. If we can't even stop a fourth stage qi refiner here, then we'll lose all of our face and the Ye clan will rise in power once again!" Elder Shen was determined.

"Alright fine!"

Elder Zhao took a deep breath and sent his soul into the formation.....

At the same time, Ye Zifeng noticed the change in the formation. His heart shuddered and his painful smile turned into a cold smirk.

"So you're finally coming to deal with me huh. I've been waiting....."

Chapter 36: I'll bind you!

Ye Zifeng closed his eyes, straightened his back and stood there in a very imposing manner. Whether someone is using a soul attack or defending against a soul attack, they would need to keep their soul calm in order to display the full force of the attack or defense.

In reality, only a martial practitioner realm cultivator can use a soul attack or defend against one. As a 4th stage qi refiner, he did not have any way to actually defend against an attack by himself. However, after ingesting the soul binding pill, he was able to somewhat stop soul attacks.

"Come on!" Ye Zifeng muttered. An odd wave of energy suddenly appeared from the formation and a strand of cold soul spirit got closer and closer to Ye Zifeng.

This soul attack was not meant to be a fatal attack. The elders only used enough strength to knock Ye Zifeng off the stairway. Afterall, they didn't want to take his life and have his father find out about it.

However, not only did Ye Zifeng want to defend against the attack, he wants the attacker to pay the price for attacking him as well.

.....

"How is it? Did you find Ye Zifeng yet?" Shen Li asked Elder Zhao. To a martial practitioner cultivator, controlling a strand of their soul spirit was not so easy.

If there was someone else on the same level as Ye Zifeng, it'll be very hard for elder Zhao to attack. It might hurt the other person as well. Elder Shen was worried about someone catching up and was impatient.

"Almost there. I'm very close." Elder Zhao closed his eyes and moved his soul spirit all around the path of suffering. Other than Ye Zifeng, none of the other people in the stairway noticed this change in their surroundings.

"Be careful. Don't use too much energy. We can't have the others discover our tracks." Shen Li looked around at the other elders and whispered.

“I got it. I know my limits. Stop talking and let me concentrate.”

When a martial practitioner realm cultivator sends out a strand of his soul spirit, they have to calm and be in a quiet environment so they can carefully control it.

“Huh? What the.....? How come my soul spirit can’t move anymore.....????”

Elder Zhao was confused. His face showed a shocked expression.

“Hold on. Maybe it’s because I lost control of it. Let me try to do it again.” Elder Zhao awkwardly smiled and then closed his eyes. In a split second, he sent another strand of his soul spirit into the formation again.

However, after a while, he was shocked at what happened again, “How is this possible? Why isn’t my soul spirit moving at all???”

Shen Li glared at him, “How can it not move? As a martial practitioner realm cultivator, do you not know how to control your soul spirit? Did you not learn how to do it or something?”

“... Your mom didn’t learn how to do it. I’ve spent a few years of my life learning how to control my soul spirit.”

“Then tell me this. If you’re not ass at controlling your soul spirit, then why is it not moving? Why is it that you can’t find Ye Zifeng either?”

Elder Zhao coldly snorted. He was very unhappy with the way Shen Li was talking.

“Fine. If you’re so good then why don’t you try? I’ll maintain the formation for you.”

“Useless thing.” Shen Li cursed inwards. This guy was a martial practitioner and he couldn’t even handle a kid like Ye Zifeng. Does this guy have any shame?

“Fine. I’ll do it. You just sit there and maintain the formation. Don’t let anyone notice that something’s wrong.”

Shen Li took a deep breath and sent a strand of his soul spirit into the formation.

Ye Zifeng's expression suddenly changed. He had been watching the formation carefully this whole time. He saw that there was another change in the formation. There was someone suppressing the change in the formation but Ye Zifeng was able to easily see through it.

Ye Zifeng began to laugh, "So there's someone else who wants to mess with me. That's fine. Send me your soul spirits. I'll bind them all!"

.....

"How is it? Did you find Ye Zifeng's location?" Elder Zhao asked anxiously.

After looking around with his soul spirit, Shen Li suddenly opened his eyes, "I got it! See Elder Zhao. What did i tell you. You still got lots more to work on. Look. I....."

Suddenly, a shocked expression appeared on Shen Li's face. He couldn't even finish his sentence.

Elder Zhao raised his brow and asked, "Elder Shen. Elder Shen. What happened? Why aren't you talking???"

Shen Li looked over at Elder Zhao with his mouth wide open, "How can this be? When my soul spirit discovered Ye Zifeng, it suddenly stopped moving. That's not possible....."

Elder Zhao was shocked, "You too?"

"So you're saying that this happened to you too? Shen Li was shocked.

The two looked at each other and went into deep thoughts. How can such a thing happen? This was the first time that they had experienced something like this. When they used their soul spirit to attack Ye Zifeng, it suddenly stopped moving.

After thinking about it, Elder Zhao turned to Shen Li and asked, "Elder Shen.... Your Ashen Spirit Sect..... Could your sect's disciple learn some sort of soul techniques at the qi refining stage?

Shen Li immediately shook his head, "No way. Let's not talk about my Spirit Ashen Sect for now. Even in the entire Martial Spirit Continent,

there aren't any qi refining stage disciples that can learn soul techniques. I believe that even your Tiandao City doesn't have a genius like this.

Elder Zhao thought about it again. If the Spirit Ashen Sect have qi refining disciples that can learn soul techniques then they'll probably be the strongest sect in the world. They don't even need their disciples to reach the Martial Disciple realm to destroy many of their rival sects and clans.

"Then could it be that Ye Zifeng brought some sort of soul treasure into the stairway?" Elder Zhao thought about it and asked again.

Shen Li shook his head again, "That's not possible either. We searched every participant before they came into the sect. Only when we were sure that they don't have any items on them did we let them in."

Every scenario that Elder Zhao came up with was shut down by Shen Li. The two of them didn't understand what happened.

"How about we stop thinking about it and attack together?"

Elder Zhao had a very fierce look in his eyes. In his entire life, he had never felt such disgrace. Although a few martial soul experts had made a fool out of him before, that was nothing compared to being made a fool by a qi refining stage kid. Because of this kid, he had lost two strands of his soul spirit.

Shen Li quickly shook his head, "No no no. We can't. If we both go, there won't be anyone maintaining the formation on our side. At that time, the others will definitely notice."

Elder Zhao's face sank, "Don't tell me that we have to let Ye Zifeng go? We're just going to let the Ye clan rise like this and not do anything about it?"

"Did you forget? Beside Ye Zifeng, there are other participants from the Ye clan. How about we take care of those two first?"

Elder Zhao's eyes lit up, "Agreed. I think that they had a girl who's at the 8th stage of qi refining."

“She’s called Ye Xueyi. Ye Zifeng’s sister. We can take care of her first....”

Elder Zhao took a deep breath and nodded, “Fine. But who’s going to take care of it?”

“I’ll do it. I’m not that confident in your skills.” Shen Li sighed.

Shen Li then immediately prepared himself and send another strand of his soul spirit into the formation towards Ye Xueyi.

Elder Zhao’s expression froze. He was getting very angry. This Shen Li was being very disrespectful. However, he had to calm himself down. He needs to maintain the formation so the other won’t find out.

“Fine. You can go do it if you’re so confident. I just hope that it won’t be like last.....” Before Elder Zhao even finished talking to himself, Shen Li suddenly gasped.

“What the fuck.....” Shen Li’s face sank. A little blood could be seen seeping out of Shen Li’s mouth.

“How could it be like this....” Elder Zhao was startled. He then immediately went over to Elder Shen and helped him up, covering him from the view of the others.

Ye Xueyi was at the 8th stage of qi refining, with much more qi than Ye Zifeng. After taking the Soul Binding Pill, not only was she able to bind the elder’s soul spirits but she was able to reflect the attack back at them. Shen Li didn’t have his guard up and suffered a large blow.

“How can this be? It’s fine if it happens once. It’s a coincidence if it happens twice but for it to happen three times? What is going on with these juniors from the Ye clan. Could they really use soul techniques?” Shen Li was startled and cursed inwards.

Elder Zhao was startled as well. He knew that Shen Li was very strong, otherwise he wouldn’t be the strongest elder of the sect. They both witnessed something inconceivable.

Of course, if they had actually used their full power to attack the Ye clan juniors, they would definitely succeed. But since they had to hide their

presence from the other elders, they had to lower their strength. Ye Zifeng took advantage of that and retaliated.

"It seems like we can't deal with Ye Zifeng and Ye Xueyi right now. How about we deal with that Ye Huichi first." Shen Li sighed. Right now, his confidence had plummeted straight into the ground. If he failed to attack Ye Huichi then he would definitely be ashamed of himself.

"Yeah. We have to take at least one of them down...." Elder Zhao sighed as well.

.....

On the other side, Ye Huichi who finally got rid of the Xiao clan's barricade reached the 19th level.

"Great. I've finally reached the 19th level!"

Right after saying that, he felt a cold energy surround him. The cold energy entered his body and his eyes widened. He suddenly trembled and fell backwards. He started to roll down from the 19th level.

He couldn't talk at all but in his mind, he's only been thinking about one thing, "Why.... Why me...."

Chapter 37: Reversal

Seeing the sorry state that Ye Huichi was in, the entire Ye clan felt sorry for him. The entire clan except Ye Zifeng. He didn't care at all. He could've helped Huichi and concocted a soul binding pill for him but why would he do something like that for someone that's going against him?

In the spectator seats, the Wang and the Xiao clan were both watching anxiously. They told Elder Zhao and Elder Shen to take care of Ye Zifeng but why did they knock Ye Huichi down? They couldn't help but look over at the formation and wonder what was going on.

Seeing how Ye Huichi fell down, Lin Ke felt that something was out of place, "The way that Ye Huichi fell down.... It was a bit weird. He's only on the 19th level. Why would he suddenly fall down like that?"

Elder Zhao smiled, "Maybe he was drained after climbing and felt dizzy so he fell.

Lin Ke raised one brow in suspicion, "But if the 4th qi refining stage Ye Zifeng can reach the 59th level without getting falling, Ye Huichi who's at the 5th stage of qi refining should not feel drained at all. Ye Zifeng looks perfectly fine and is going to break through to the 60th level soon.

"The 60th level? If he was smart, he would stop right here. One has to know that the 60th level is completely different from the first 40 levels. It is on a whole new level. He can maintain his position as the top 3 at the 59th level, why would he take the risk of going even further?" Shen Li shook his head and laughed. From what he can see, a qi refining stage cultivator's limit was reaching the 59th level. Only someone talented like Wang Tianzhi might be able to breakthrough this limit.

After Shen Li stopped talking, Elder Zhao tugged his robe.

"What the fuck are you doing?" Shen Li glared at Elder Zhao. He was feeling gloomy because he couldn't mess with Ye Zifeng.

"Elder Shen, look....."

Shen Li looked over at where Elder Zhao was point. All he could see was

a large red spiral in the formation.

“No way. After Wang Tianzhi, there was someone else who went onto the 60th level?!” Shen Li’s face twitched.

Of course, that person was Ye Zifeng!

“Is he retarded? He’s only at the 4th stage of qi refining..... How is he not satisfied with being the top 3?” Shen Li gasped and was at a loss.

Elder Zhao shivered, “Maybe.... Maybe he wants to be the first place....”

“Getting first place when he’s merely at the fourth stage of qi refining? Are you joking? Or are you telling me that something like this has happened in the past?”

“This.....”

All the judges looked at each other. This had never happened before. The difference between the fourth stage of qi refining and the peak of qi refining is too big. If it wasn’t for the fact that Ye Zifeng maintained his mental capabilities and willpower from his past life, he wouldn’t have been able to reach this step.

“It doesn’t matter. Our chance has finally come.” Shen Li whispered to Elder Zhao.

Elder Zhao agreed and smiled, “Ye Zifeng can only blame himself. It seems like we should add more power into the formation.”

.....

When Ye Zifeng reached the 60th level, he felt a bone chilling cold qi energy. The entire place was filled with snow. He couldn’t stop shivering at all.

“This....” Ye Zifeng was startled. He had never seen an illusion like this in his entire life.

However, this wasn’t anything too surprising. Ye Zifeng came from a different world and each world might have different kinds of illusions.

“It seems like this illusion realm isn’t too bad. However it this is a bit too

much. There's too much snow. It seems like the creator of the formation put extra effort into making the snow here..... "

Suddenly he felt a stronger pressure on top of himself.....

Ye Zifeng sighed, "These two are being too excessive. I guess it's time for me to talk to them.

Ye Zifeng smiled and closed his eyes. He allowed himself to submerge into his own consciousness. His skin started to freeze over and he was trembling. If he keeps this up, he'll fall from the 60th level as an ice block sooner or later.

.....

"Haha..... This kind of snowstorm, even Wang Tianzhi can't handle this. Come on Ye Zifeng, let's see how you'll handle this. I can't wait until you become a block of ice. How are you going to climb then?" Elder Shen started to smile. He's finally regained his confidence. If he succeeds this time, he'll be able to report back to the Wang clan.

"That's right. For Ye Zifeng to climb onto the 60th stage without a plan, it seems like he's out of options now..." Elder Zhao was feeling better as well. He can finally report back to the Xiao clan.

"Who said I climbed onto the 60th stage without a plan?"

After hearing this voice, both Elder Shen and Elder Zhao's expression changed. The smiles on their faces disappeared.

"That voice from before.... Was it you?" Both of the elders asked each other.

"No way. How can my voice sound so young?" The two replied to each other at the same time.

The two looked at each other and then looked around them. Their faces paled and they felt a chill run down their spine.

"You don't have to look around. I, Ye Zifeng, greet both elders."

"What. You're Ye Zifeng?" Shen Li was extremely shocked. Elder Zhao heard this too and was frozen still as well.

What the hell was going on? This was outrageous. Ye Zifeng was becoming a block of ice on the 60th floor. How was he talking with both of them at the same time?

“For both elders to mess with me... let me guess.... Were you asked by the Wang clan and the Xiao clan?” Ye Zifeng’s voice was clear and calm inside both of the elder’s mind.

“Nonsense. Don’t slander us like this!”

Shen Li and Elder Zhao both looked at each other. Their attacks before....it was actually discovered by Ye Zifeng.

“Really?” Ye Zifeng chuckled lightly, making the two elders flustered. For two martial practitioners to become flustered because of a qi refining stage brat... it was a great embarrassment.

“Heh. So be it....” Ye Zifeng’s voice was dim.

Right after, Elder Zhao suddenly yelled out. It felt as if his head had been slice with a sword. He felt an immense amount of pain.

Shen Li looked confused and wanted to ask what happened but suddenly, his face turned pale as well. His mouth twitched as he tried to suppress the pain. He felt the pain but didn’t yell out.

Lin Ke looked at the weird expressions of the two elders and asked, “Are you guys alright? You guys don’t look so good.”

“It’s..... It’s nothing...” Elder Shen and Elder Zhao both forced a smile

However, that smsile didn’t last long.

“Ouch! Shit.... Shit shit shit.....” Elder Zhao didn’t have as much tolerance as Elder Shen and started to scream in agony.

Lin Ke and the others were startled and immediately went over to help Elder Zhao, “Elder Zhao, so you really aren’t feeling well. You didn’t have a chance to rest after traveling from Tiandao City and continuously maintained the formation. You should get some rest.”

Shen Li’s face ashen and bitterly laughed, “Elder Lin, I’m not feeling so well either. May I rest for a bit with Elder Zhao....”

Lin Ke blankly stared at the two in front of him. Since Elder Zhao came all the way from Tiandao City, feeling tired was normal. However, what was up with Shen Li?

Just like this, under the other elders' watchful eyes, Elder Zhao and Elder Shen supported each other and limped away.

"Ye Zifeng, what kind of demonic technique did you use against us?" Elder Zhao suddenly asked in his mind.

"You guys are martial practitioners. I'm only a mere qi refining stage disciple. How do you guys not know what kind of method I used?"

"You!" Elder Zhao was extremely angry.

Shen Li thought about it and offered an explanation, "If I'm not wrong, the strands of soul spirit that we used before were captured by this guy....."

"What? How did he bind and capture our soul spirits??" Elder Zhao yelled out.

As long as one knows the methods, the soul binding pill can be used to successfully bind the soul spirits of an attacker. Even Ye Zifeng who was a qi refining realm cultivator was able to do such thing with ease.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Don't worry about how I binded your spirits. So you guys are finally admitting that you've used your soul spirits to attack me?"

Elder Zhao wanted to continue lying but...

"That's right. We attacked out!" Shen Li gritted his teeth and yelled.

From what he can see, there's no use to continue lying. Afterall, Ye Zifeng had strands of their soul spirits with him. That was concrete proof already.

A soul spirit wasn't like qi energy. A martial practitioner cultivator need a long amount of time in order to successfully refine one. The strands of soul spirits that the elders sent out? It took them around 3 months to refine a strand like that. The soul spirit was connected to their soul so if Ye Zifeng messes with it, they would feel pain.

“Since you guys admitted to it, then you should know what the punishment is not light if you help other clans during the gathering.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

“So what? Do you think that we’re scared of you?” Elder Zhao was becoming very angry. He was being toyed around by a fourth stage qi refining disciple. He was ashamed of himself.

Shen li looked over at him, “Calm down. Let’s listen to what he has to say first.”

“However, I can overlook this and won’t ask for your identity. I’ll also give back your soul spirits....If we oppose each other, nothing good will come from it.”

“You’re willing to give us our soul strands back?” A joyous expression appeared on Elder Zhao’s face.

Chapter 38: First Place!

"Yeah. This soul spirit has no use to me anyways so of course I'll return it to you guys. After all, if I offend the two elders, I won't be able to live peacefully in the future." Ye Zifeng laughed.

Elder Zhao quickly replied, "If you know what's good for you, then hurry up and....."

"Elder Zhao!" Shen Li glared over at him. Is Elder Zhao that stupid? Did he really think that Ye Zifeng would give it up so easily? From what he can see, Ye Zifeng is trying to bargain with them.

"Ye Zifeng. Just tell us straight up. What do you want us to do?"

Ye Zifeng plainly replied "It's simple. Just help me get first place."

Hearing this, both elders were shocked still.

"Do you know what you're saying? This time, we promised the Wang and Xiao clan to make you drop out of the top 10. Now you want us to help you get the first place?"

Elder Zhao was curious. How could Ye Zifeng do something like this? Why would the two clans want to attack him?

"That's right. We can hold back if you want. But we will not help you cheat....." Shen Li replied as well.

Ye Zifeng coldly laughed, "Do you think that I didn't feel anything when you guys increased the strength of the formation when I was at the Path of Suffering? What I'm asking you guys to do is give me back the first place that I deserve."

Ye Zifeng then continued, "Besides, you guys can't finish your mission anymore. First place. Second place. Do you guys think that there's any difference? If you guys comply, then you can get your soul spirit back? Isn't that great?"

It was silent. Each and every word that came out of Ye Zifeng's mouth hit the elders like a rock.

Ye Zifeng was right. There was no difference if Ye Zifeng got first or second place now. There was no downside to this. They can help him out and get their soul spirit back.

“Fine....” Shen Li took a deep breath and finally yielded.

“You’re really gonna agree with him and help him cheat? If we get found out.....” Elder Zhao’s face was filled with shock.

Shen Li sighed and looked over, “We’ve cheated enough already, so we might as well continue. Our relationship with the big clans is important but it’s not as important as our soul spirits.”

“This....” Elder Zhao thought about it and sighed as well.

“However, Ye Zifeng. What kind of method did you use to bind our soul spirits?” Elder Zhao was curious. This was their biggest problem.

“This..... It’s a secret for now.....” Ye Zifeng laughed. He will reveal his alchemy skills later on but not now. Neither he himself or the Ye clan was strong enough yet. If some strong expert were to mess with them, then it’s gonna be really mad.

.....

Ye Zifeng was covered in layers and layers of snow. He had basically become a snowman.

His eyes suddenly opened and he busted out from the ice. Originally, he was feeling very cold, but now, he was actually feeling warm in here.

“Hmmmm. Cheating with the judges.... It feels pretty good.” Ye Zifeng had a big smile on his face. He wasn’t a gentleman anyways so he didn’t really feel anything about cheating.

He wiped the snow off from his clothes. He thought about and realized that this snow illusion wasn’t that much for him anyways. If it wasn’t for the fact that he was being messed with, he could’ve easily climbed by himself.

“Whatever... I’ll just pretend to be cold and climb.”

Ye Zifeng suddenly gritted his teeth and took a deep breath. A

determined expression appeared in his eyes.

He yelled out and climbed upwards, “Come on! The 61st level!”

When he reached the 61st level, he felt a stifling cold energy attacking his body. Ye Zifeng was startled and ‘accidentally’ attacked Elder Zhao’s soul spirit.

“Oh. My bad. It was so cold and I accidentally....” Ye Zifeng awkwardly smiled.

It’s one thing if you tremble and hit the surrounding area, but to attack something in your mind? It was definitely on purpose.

Elder Zhao cursed inwards and then inserted his qi into the formation to lower the cold air around Ye Zifeng.

“You brat. Don’t go too far..... My old bones can’t handle all this!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and then solemnly said, “Oh no. There’s another burst of cold air coming!”

“You stinking brat. I’ll remember this.” Elder Zhao really want to slap Ye Zifeng but he’s already agreed to help.

“62nd level!”

“63rd level!”

In just a bit, the one hour limit will almost be up.

“65th level! Damn I’m so tired.” Ye Zifeng pretended to be tired. When he reached the 65th level, he sat down and began to rest.

In reality, he wanted the two elders to rest as well. They had to maintain the formation and help him cheat. It was very draining.

.....

On the 66th level, Wang Tianzhi was sitting there. He was completely out of energy.

Wang Tianzhi then suddenly smiled, “I’m probably guaranteed first place up here. No one can catch up to me. Father. Mother. I, Wang Tianzhi, have made it. I’ve finally reached the top. I’ve help the Wang clan

gain honor!"

Becoming the first place of the gathering meant a lot to the people in the younger generation. If Wang Tianzhi can become first place, then the Wang clan will definitely pamper him and nurture his cultivation.

Not even 10 seconds after he said that, a leg suddenly appeared besides Wang Tianzhi.

Wang Tianzhi was shocked. He stared at the leg.

"Sorry. The one who's gonna get first place isn't you....."

Wang Tianzhi looked up and his mouth widened.

"You..... You're Ye Zifeng! How did you get here?" Looking at Wang Tianzhi's expression, one can tell that he was completely shocked. He sat there like a rock, not moving at all.

Ye Zifeng looked at Wang Tianzhi and sized him up. Wang Tianzhi was wearing a grey robe with a black belt around his waist. He has short hair and is very muscular. It was exactly how Ye Zifeng had imagined him to be.

Of course, Ye Zifeng wasn't afraid of him right now. Even though Wang Tianzhi was at the peak of qi refining, he was an arrow at the end of its flight. Also the heavenly clan gathering prohibited participants from attacking each other. Even if Ye Zifeng cursed him out right now, Wang Tianzhi won't be able to do anything.

"You're asking me about how I got here? Well I climbed up."

Wang Tianzhi shook his head, "No way. That's clearly not possible...."

"Are you thinking about how I'll be ambushed in the middle and drop out of the top ten?" Ye Zifeng chuckled.

Wang Tianzhi looked at Ye Zifeng with an expression of disbelief. He was speechless.

"Alright. I'm done talking with you. I need to get onto the 67th level...." Ye Zifeng smiled and looked up.

“67th level? You’re only at the 4th stage of qi refining. You’re lucky that you even made it here. Unless…. You still have the strength to continue?”

Wang Tianzhi tried to prop himself up but he was already at his limit. He couldn’t even stand anymore.

“Everyone’s always talking about my cultivation level…. It’s getting annoying already.”

Ye Zifeng then looked at Wang Tianzhi, “That’s right! You’ve guessed correctly. I still have energy to climb! This first place, I, Ye Zifeng, will take it.

After saying that, Ye Zifeng jumped up to the 67th stage with Wang Tianzhi watching every move.

……

In the Liu clan, a girl wearing a light pink color dress was looking at flowers. Her body was slender and her hair reached the center of her back. She was a very beautiful girl.

“Miss Ningzi! The first part of the heavenly clan gathering is done!” A delicate and pretty servant girl ran over and reported to her missus. That girl was call Yue-er. She wasn’t that old but she have served Ningzi for quite a few years already.

Liu Ningzi looked over and smiled, “It’s finished? Then who got first place? Is it that Wang Tianzhi from the Wang clan?”

Yue-er quickly shook her head.

Liu Ningzi was a little shocked and smiled, “Wow. After five years, there’s actually another young hero in Leizhou City. Is it the Rong clan? The Xiao clan? Or maybe it’s the Hong clan….”

Yue-er continuously shook her head, “Miss Ningzi. It’s none of them. The one who took first place this time is the Ye clan’s young master —- Ye Zifeng!”

Chapter 39: I am Ye Zifeng!

"Ye Zifeng?" Hearing this, a shocked expression appeared on Liu Ningzi's face. She felt as if she had been slapped by these words. It felt very painful.

She returned to her senses and looked over at Yue er, "Yue er, when did you start lying to me? Even if Ye Zifeng can beat my senior brother, Wang Tianzhi would be able to destroy him with a single finger. How did he get first place? It would be a miracle if Ye Zifeng was able to enter the top 10!"

Seeing how her master didn't trust her, Yue er's face turned red, "Second miss. It's true. I went and watched with Miss Bingqian's servant girl Xiao Lu. If you don't trust me, you can go and ask her."

"Are you for real?" Liu Ningzi could feel her heartbeat rising rapidly. Her lips suddenly felt dry.

"It's true!"

Liu Ningzi knitted her brows and looked suspiciously at Yue er. However after being with Yue er for so long Liu Ningzi knew what kind of person she was. She wasn't someone who would lie about something like this. But how did that trash Ye Zifeng suddenly become so strong and get the first place of the gathering?

Could it be.....Could the younger generation of Leizhou City fallen to such a low level?

"Fine....During the 2nd part of the competition, our Liu family will fight against them. Then we'll see if it's true or not."

Liu Ningzi looked angrily at Yue er but she didn't know why she was angry....

.....

In the sect, the entire audience was shocked.

Ye Zifeng got first place while Ye Xueyi got 5th place. This time, the Ye clan was the biggest winner of the heavenly clan gathering. Ye Chongtian

was extremely happy. He couldn't stop smiling after hearing all these praises about the way he teaches his son.

"Brother Chongtian. For your Ye clan to have a young master like this, he'll definitely grow up to be someone extraordinary and became famous throughout the entire city!"

"That's right. After all these years, the Ye clan will finally rise up again. You guys will finally return to your rightful spot as one of the three great clans in Leizhou City.

"Uncle Chongtian, can you tell us how you trained Ye Zifeng? We want to learn from you as well!"

Ye Chongtian laughed loudly, "I'm as surprised as you are. For my son to suddenly become so outstanding.... It seems like the heavens have not forgotten about us!"

If it was Wang Tianzhi who won, all these other clans would definitely be all over the Wang clan and try to kiss up to them.

However, it was Ye Zifeng who won. The ones will will fight the Liu clan will be the Ye clan and not the Wang clan.

Wang Tianzhi clenched his fist and stared at Ye Zifeng. First, Ye Zifeng beat up his little bro and now he took his first place. Wang Tianzhi was beyond angry.

"Big brother....Just forget about it...." Wang Mengxi stood behind him and sighed. She understood how her brother felt. She knew that he had prepared for this moment for the last five years. However, a loss is a loss.

Wang Tianzhi sighed, "I don't care if it's anyone else, but why is it Ye Zifeng? Mengxi, you already know that I asked father to get one of the elders to mess with Ye Zifeng....."

Wang Mengxi thought that it was strange as well, "Maybe... maybe the elder was afraid that he would get found out so he didn't do anything?"

"It's fine if that happened. But when Ye Zifeng got off the stairs, the first thing he did was go over to one of the elders. From what I can see, the

elder that we tried to buy out was already bought out by the Ye clan!"

Thinking that he knew what happened, Wang Tianzhi was very mad. He looked at the elders with a look of disrespect.

.....

Although Ye Zifeng had said that he won't go and look for the two elders after the competition, he tried to look for them anyways. However, all of the elders were talking with each other and laughing. None of them showed any suspicious signs so he could not identify them.

But as expected, right after everyone congratulated him, Ye Zifeng was pulled aside by Elder Shen and Elder Zhao.

"The taste of getting first place.. It's not bad right?" Elder Zhao spoke in a mocking tone.

"Oh....." Ye Zifeng looked at the two people in front of him and immediately understood what they meant, "So it was you guys!"

"Ye Zifeng. Listen up. We helped you get the first place so don't play anymore tricks. If you don't give us our soul spirits back, we'll get mad!'

Ye Zifeng was startled and smiled, "Of course Of course. I wouldn't dare to offend two experts like you guys. I was just trying to help my Ye clan gain glory and return to the top. If I had offended you two in any way... I hope that both of you can forgive me."

Shen Li coldly looked at him and seeing that Ye Zifeng looked pretty sincere, he replied, "That's in the past. Let's not talk about it. Now, give us our soul spirits back."

Ye Zifeng stared at the two and then began to laugh.

"What are you laughing at?" Elder Zhao's disliked Ye Zifeng's attitude.

"I'll return the soul spirit to you guys but..... What's gonna happen in the future? I'm worried that I might die randomly in the future while walking home or something....."

Elder Zhao snorted, "I knew you had something planned. Fine... We can make a blood oath and promise not to cause any problems for you.'

“Blood oath? Haha. To martial practitioners like you guys, a blood oath isn’t even that effective. You guys should at least be making a spirit oath.” Ye Zifeng coldly looked at the two.

“Spirit Oath? How do you know something like this?”

Elder Zhao and Shen Li were both startled. They both stared at Ye Zifeng, thinking about how this kid was very mysterious. How did he know all these things? How did he know about spirit oaths?

“Fine. Whatever you want....”

Shen Li and Elder Zhao both looked at each other and inserted their qi into into their head and started to make an oath to their martial spirits.

After seeing that the two had finished, Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and bowed, “I, Ye Zifeng, apologize to the two elders. I will formally apologize another day. But now, let me return your soul spirits.”

Ye Zifeng closed his eyes and dissolved the binding effect of the Spirit Binding Pill with his qi. After that, the strands of soul spirits came out of Ye Zifeng and quickly returned to its respective owners.

“If I didn’t see it with my own eyes, I wouldn’t believe that something like this would happen. As a mere qi refining stage disciple, how did you bind the soul spirits of a martial practitioner?” Shen Li confusingly asked. Now that he got his soul spirit back, he was feeling a bit better.

“That’s right. It doesn’t seem like you used any treasures either. How did you do it?” Elder Zhao asked as well.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “This.... It’s a secret right now. Maybe if I have a chance in the future, I’ll let both elders know.”

“You stinking brat!” After being played by Ye Zifeng, Elder Zhao wanted to beat him up. But then he suddenly remembered that he made a spirit oath and stopped.

Behind the three people, Lin Ke suddenly walked over.

“Elder Zhao, Elder Shen, the people of the Liu clan is already here. We should get ready as well.

Ye Zifeng looked at Lin Ke and then back at the two, “How about this. I’ll tell you guys how I did it but you guys have to help me out during the battle.”

“In your dreams!” The two replied at the same time.

The battle will be held in an open arena with many spectators. If they were to help him out, they would definitely get exposed immediately.

Ye Zifeng turned around and shrugged, “Then that’s too bad. It’ll be a secret for now.”

.....

“So the Liu clan is here huh.” A cold and menacing smile appeared on Ye Zifeng’s face.

He will never forget about the night when Liu Ningzi stormed into his out and asked to cancel their engagement. He will never forget about something as embarrassing as that.

He walked over to the resting room and wanted to go and greet the people of the Liu clan.

“Miss Bingqian?” Ye Zifeng was startled. Right when he entered, he saw Bingqian standing on the other side of the room.

“So it’s big bro rough guy...” Bingqian had a cold appearance on her face before. But now, after seeing Ye Zifeng, the cold expression disappeared as she skipped over Ye Zifeng.

“Miss Bingqian.... You.....” Ye Zifeng was speechless. But after he saw that Liu Ningzi and Liu Yige was walking behind Bingqian, he put two and two together and figured everything out.

Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and then smiled at him.

“Big bro rough guy, did you get into the top 10? I heard that the results of the competition was very shocking. There was some guy named Ye Zifeng who was able to beat the Wang clan’s young master and is waiting to fight against my Liu clan.

Ye Zifeng finally understood, “Yeah. I should’ve known. When I didn’t see you at the first competition, I should’ve known that you were someone from the Liu clan. You’re Liu Bingqian....”

Liu Bingqian giggled, “How is it? I didn’t tell you who I was on purpose. Did I surprise you?”

“Oh no. But let me tell you this.... I am Ye Zifeng!”

Chapter 40: I did something to it

At first Bingqian thought that Ye Zifeng was playing around and started to giggle. But then, she saw that Ye Zifeng's expression looked serious and she had to think about it seriously as well.

"Really?"

"Yeah. I'm not lying."

"You're Ye Zifeng? Don't joke around. How can you be Ye Zifeng.....?"

Liu Bingqian thought about it and suddenly something hit her. It felt as if a needle had pierced her head.

"It's the truth" Ye Zifeng bitterly smiled. Liu Bingqian thought that Ye Zifeng would be shocked after knowing who she was but the opposite had happened.

Ye Zifeng didn't have a bad feeling towards Bingqian. However, since she's was from the Liu clan, he probably won't be getting that close with her anymore. Afterall, he still can't forgive the Liu clan for what they did to him.

"Sister Bingqian! What the heck are you doing? Why did you run towards Ye Zifeng?" Liu Ningzi finally caught up and couldn't help but be startled.

Hearing this, Bingqian was shocked, "Ningzi, tell your sister the truth. Is he really Ye Zifeng?"

Liu Ningzi pursed her lips and looked over at Ye Zifeng, "Aish. Big sis. From the way you're talking, it seems like you know him or something"

"I....."

In front of her sister, Liu Bingqian didn't know what to say. She knew that Ye Zifeng was her sister's fiance. She also knew that her sister went over to the Ye clan, tried to cancel the engagement and embarrassed him. So right now, Bingqian was feeling a bit ashamed and guilty. A mix of emotions swelled up within her and she was speechless.

Seeing how Bingqian was very stiff, Ye Zifeng took the initiative and

replied, “I met her when I went to the treasury in the sect.”

“So that’s how it is.”

Liu Ningzi nodded and then glanced over at Ye Zifeng. She had changed her view of Ye Zifeng. She would have never thought that the man that she had embarrassed would be able to reach the top and take first place in the gathering.

“Ye Zifeng, you.....” Liu Ningzi was hesitating. She wanted to say something but nothing came out.

“If you don’t have anything to say, then I’ll leave first. We’ll see each other again when it’s time for us to fight.” Ye Zifeng smiled, elegantly bowed and turned around.

“Hmph. Who does he think he is? Acting all high and mighty like that. So what if you got first place in the first competition” Liu Yige walked forward and fiercely looked at Ye Zifeng’s back.

“So what if you get first place in the competition? If you have the ability, then why don’t you go and try to get first place?” Bingqian was in a bad mood. Her expression turned cold and yelled at Liu Yige.

“I.....” Liu Yige didn’t think that by saying that, he would make Bingqian react like this.

However, Liu Yige didn’t give up and rebutted, “We weren’t here in the morning so we didn’t see how this guy did it. Maybe he used some kind of method to get first place. If he didn’t have such a method, then tell me this. How did a fourth qi refining stage brat like him get first place?”

The two girls understood what Liu Yige was trying to say. They also thought that it was weird. The Ye clan had fallen and shouldn’t have much connections outside. What kind of methods can they employ? But if Ye Zifeng did it by himself, then that would be very scary.

“Alright. Let’s not think about it anymore. We’ll see how strong he truly is during the battle.”

.....

The Heavenly Clan Gathering is separated into two parts. The first part is the heavenly stair climbing competition while the second part is a three on three battle between the first place clan of the first part and the winning clan from the previous gathering.

The winner of the battle will not only gain glory in Leizhou City, but it will also receive a large amount of rewards. The outcome is very important to both families.

The expression that Ye Chongtian uses to look at Ye Zifeng is completely different from before.

“Ah Zifeng. This time you’ve helped the clan gain a lot of glory. It is worthy of a celebration. The entire clan will celebrate when we go back! But how did you win? How did you beat Wang Tianzhi? Why don’t you tell me about it and your plans to fight the Liu clan?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Father, this is too much. I’m only here to fill the third spot. How would I have a plan to fight against the Liu clan?”

“Who said that you were here to fill up the last spot huh? Who said that? Get out here right now!”

Ye Xueyi started to giggle, “ Father, stop it. It was you who said it.”

Ye Chongtian looked at Xueyi and sighed. She had always been on Ye Zifeng’s side. Now that something like this happened, she didn’t even hesitate and sold her father out immediately.

“Did I? Ahem…. I’m getting old. I don’t really remember.” Ye Chongtian’s face turned bright red and forced a smile.

Ye Zifeng was only joking as well and smiled, “I heard that the the next part will be a three on three battle. Whoever wins two fights will win the whole thing.”

Ye Chongtian was startled and asked, “Zifeng. Even I don’t know what the second part of the competition is. Where did you hear about it?”

“Don’t worry about it. I got my ways.” Ye Zifeng smiled and continued, “But that’s not important. The important thing is how we should fight

them."

Ye Chongtian thought about it and felt that something was not right.

He realized something and cursed, "What the fuck? Is this even a competition? They have a Liu Yige, Liu Ningzi and Liu Bingqian who are respectively at the 6th, 7th and peak stage of qi refining. How can we win? No way. I need to talk with the elders. This is too unfair. The competition is meant to test the younger generation's potential and not their actual strength. This kind of direct battle gives the Liu clan too much of an advantage!"

Ye Zifeng lightly smiled, "But what if the elders in the sect are in cohersion with the Liu clan? What can you do then?"

"This...." Ye Chongtian was speechless. He looked at Ye Zifeng again. From his point of view, it seemed as if his son had completely changed into a different person.

In a competition like this, backdoor deals are bound to happen.

Ye Zifeng was already prepared for everything. He won't be a sore loser and blame his losses on these backdoor deals. That's something that only weaklings would do. Since the Liu family likes to play this way, then Ye Zifeng will play with them.

He smiled and and looked at Ye Chongtian and Ye Xueyi, "Father, did you think about it like this? We'll have Huichi fight against Bingqian then Xueyi can fight against Ningzi while I will finish off Liu Yige.

Ye Chongtian's eyes lit up. This was a good plan. They can lose one first fight and then win the next two. With two wins, they can win the entire thing.

But after thinking about it again, his face suddenly darkened.

"Zifeng, you're only giving us the best scenario. It's not likely that this will happen. If we can think of it, then the Liu clan can think of it as well. They will make us draw straws to make the pairings. We have to very lucky.

Ye Zifeng had a mysterious smile, “But what if we are that lucky?”

.....

“Ye Zifeng? What do you want from us? We got our soul spirits back and we’ve also made a spirit oath. We also told you about the second part of the gathering already. What else do you want from us?” Elder Zhao knitted and brows and spoke in an imposing tone.

“Yeah. leave. We don’t want anyone to see that we have any relations at all.”

Ye Zifeng didn’t care about what they were saying and walked in between them.

“Don’t chase me away yet. Actually, I’m here to see how you guys are doing. Have you guys gotten used to your soul spirits yet?” Ye Zifeng had a sly smile that sent shivers down the two elder’s backs.

“What do you mean? What are you talking about? Getting used to our own soul spirits?” Hearing this, Elder Zhao became very nervous.

Ye Zifeng still had that sly smile on. This was not a smile that a normal person can make....

Shen Li furrowed his brows and closed his eyes. In just a few seconds, he suddenly yelled out, “Elder Zhao, use your divine sense to examine the soul spirit that you got back. It seems like this kid did something to it.”

Elder Zhao quickly closed his eyes and examined his soul spirit. His entire body froze...

The two of them made a grave mistake... Who would’ve thought that this kid would leave something behind for them. When he returned their soul spirits, he looked so normal and sincere. The two of them found that there was some sort of restriction placed on their soul spirits but they don’t know what it is.

“You stinking brat. You dare to do something to us? How about I kill you right now!” Elder Zhao was so angry that he wanted to kill Ye Zifeng with one slap. He was very welcomed by the people of Leizhou City. He wanted

to take this chance to rest up and have fun at Leizhou City while helping out with the gathering. But instead, he met this Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Kill me? Don’t forget that you guys made a spirit oath.”

“You!” Elder Zhao couldn’t do anything. If looks could kill, then Ye Zifeng would’ve died over a thousand times already.

“Stop staring at me like that. Let me tell you this. The restriction that I placed on your soul spirits is called The Twin Spirit. If I were to die then..... you guys should know what that means for you guys.....”

Elder Zhao snorted, “Don’t try to trick us like that. Even if you know this kind of spirit restriction technique, your cultivation is only at the qi refining stage. It won’t be that effective!”

“As expected of Elder Zhao! You do know a lot of stuff. However, I can guarantee that it will last for at least one year. If I die, even if you guys don’t die, your cultivation will drop down all the way to the martial disciple realm. To lose so much of your cultivation for someone like me. Do you think it’s worth it?” Ye Zifeng had a calm look on his face.

This time, Elder Zhao couldn’t say anything.

“Actually, I don’t really need you guys to help me during the actual fight. I know it’s hard with so many people watching. All I need you guys to do is help me when I’m drawing the pairings!”

Chapter 41: The Best Situation

In reality, Elder Zhao and Shen Li, were both smart people. The only reason that Ye Zifeng was able to mess with them was because they had underestimated him. It was as if the two of them had stepped on a bug without thinking about the consequences. Little did they know, the bug was poisonous and when they woke up, they were already ensnared by Ye Zifeng.

Within one year, Ye Zifeng will basically have two Martial Practitioner experts protecting him. He turned his enemies into allies and had them protect him. If anyone wanted to take his life, they would have to go through the two elders. He really wasn't playing around with the Twin Spirit Restriction. If he was killed, the two elders will really have to suffer.

"When you're drawing the lot? That's a bit difficult. Even if we did something with the lots, we can't go over and tell you the order in front of everyone." Elder Zhao thought about it and shook his head.

"You don't have to tell me anything in front of everyone. It'll be like before. You'll talk through your soul spirit." Ye Zifeng suddenly smiled.

"Through our soul spirit? Didn't you give us our soul spirits back?" Elder Zhao's expression changed. He pondered for a bit and cursed, "You brat. You still have a little part of my soul spirit!"

Ye Zifeng started to laugh, "As expected, Elder Zhao is really smart. That's right, I still have a tiny bit of your soul spirits so I can use it to communicate with you guys. Later on, if I'm in some life threatening situation, I can use it to call you guys to help me out!" Ye Zifeng continues to reap in benefits. It was exactly like what he did with Wang Lin. This time, he didn't let the two elders get away so easily.

"You! Are you looking to die?"

Elder Zhao felt that something was wrong. He looked over at Shen Li and then back at Ye Zifeng, "Hold on... Why did you keep a bit of my soul spirit and not a bit of Elder Shen's?"

“Elder Shen is very cautious. I feel like it’s better to have some of yours.”

In the beginning, Elder Zhao thought Ye Zifeng was praising himself. However after thinking about it, Ye Zifeng was actually calling him stupid!

“Preposterous. Elder Shen, you better not hold me back or else I’m gonna kill this guy!”

Elder Shen let out a long sigh. He was happy that he wasn’t targeted by this guy and immediately went and stopped Elder Shen. He didn’t want Elder Shen to do something and cause trouble for himself as well.

This Ye Zifeng.... To be this cunning as such a young age. Who know’s what he’ll become when he grows up. Maybe he’ll be able to help the sect out in the future.

.....

The battle in the afternoon will be the main focus in Leizhou City. After the break, the sect announced the rules of the second part. And as Ye Zifeng had expected, it was three matches of one on one battles.

One of the former great clans going against the number one clan in the city. This was the talk of the city. In the middle of all this, Ye Zifeng was the main topic of discussion.

“Brothers... I don’t really get what happened these years. Five years ago, Ye Zifeng didn’t even have to courage to participate. Now, five years later, he’s at the top of the younger generation. This is beyond common sense!”

“Also. This Ye Zifeng is only at the fourth stage of qi refining. To be able to reach the 67th step... that was something that even Wang Tianzhi, the young master of the Wang clan, couldn’t even do. Ye Zifeng basically slapped the entire Wang clan across their face.”

Actually, many of the smaller clans were happy that this happened. They’ve been suppressed by the Wang clan for quite some time and now that Ye Zifeng did this to them, they were feeling a lot better.

“Oh yeah. I’ve also heard that the Liu clan’s second miss is Ye Zifeng’s fiancee. From what I can see, it doesn’t matter which clan wins. They’re

gonna be one big family anyways.

“Alright alright. Stop talking. The two clans are coming out. After they draw straws the battle will begin.”

Lin Ke calmly walked towards the center of the stage. When everyone saw this, they stopped talking immediately. Only then did Lin Ke speak, “The first place of the first competition in Ye Zifeng. The Ye clan that he represents will fight against the winners of the last gathering in three rounds of battle. The clan that wins two battles will win. Now will the two sides send a representative to draw straws to determine the battle.”

“I’ll go.” Ye Zifeng smiled. Right after Lin Ke stopped talking, he walked over. Ye Xueyi obviously would not object and Huichi didn’t say anything either.

On the other side Bingqian was still a bit depressed and didn’t want to move.

Liu Ningzi tugged Liu Yige’s sleeves and forced a smile, “Senior brother, you should go draw.”

“Are you afraid that you’ll be embarrassed when you see Ye Zifeng?”

The forced smile on Ningzi’s face disappeared, “It has nothing to do with him. If I’m telling you to go then go.”

Liu Yige looked over at Ye Zifeng and then let out a long sigh. He walked over and stood next to Ye Zifeng.

He fiercely looked at Ye Zifeng, “Truth to be told, I really want to teach you a lesson myself. I’ll let you know what the difference between the heaven and the earth.”

Ye Zifeng let out a chuckle, “If I get matched with you, then it’ll be very lucky for us.”

“You!” Liu Yige saw that Ye Zifeng didn’t even consider him as an opponent and was very angry.

“Ye Zifeng! Don’t think that you’ll get lucky a second time. This time, if we get matched up, I’ll show you real pain!”

Lin Ke looked at the two and sighed, “Alright. Stop yelling at each other. There are two boxes up here and in each box there are three names representing each side. Both of you will draw one and put it on the table.

Ye Zifeng motioned for Liu Yige to go first and then smiled. At the same time, he closed his eyes and started to talk with Elder Zhao.

“Elder Zhao, where are each name placed? Please tell me quickly.”

Elder Zhao smiled, “You stinking brat, now you know how to be polite?”

“Quick. We don’t have enough time.” Ye Zifeng let Liu Yige go first in order to buy some time but he can’t waste so much time. Lin Ke will get suspicious.

Elder Zhao laughed, “Alright. The one in the middle is Liu Ningzi, the one on the left is Liu Bingqian and the one on the right is Liu Yige.”

“Alright, I got it.” Ye Zifeng let out a long sigh and opened his eyes.

‘Hmph. I would’ve gone first anyways.” Liu Yige out his hand into the box and pulled out a piece of paper.

Lin Ke received the paper and announced, “From the Ye clan, Ye Xueyi will battle first! Ye Zifeng it’s your turn now.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and took out the paper in the middle. He handed it to Lin Ke without even looking at it.

“From the Liu clan, Miss Liu Ningzi will fight.”

Ye Xueyi is at the 8th stage of qi refining while Liu Ningzi was at the 7th stage. Xueyi was an entire stage higher than her opponent. The spectators all sighed. This will probably be quick.

“Ye Zifeng’s luck is not bad. To get such a good draw on his first try. Maybe the Ye clan can beat the Liu clan!”

“It’s too early to say something like this. The Liu clan is stronger than the Ye clan in almost every way possible. Even if the young miss from the Ye clan wins, I don’t think the other two in the Ye clan can do anything.”

“So you’re saying that you’re going to bet on the Ye clan? I’ll trust the Ye

clan and bet big on them!

"Let's go! You're talking like you've won already."

The smaller clans who have already lost were all betting with each other to enjoy the themselves. Even the people in the sect started to bet.

.....

After a while, Liu Ningzi landed outside of the arena and spat out a mouthful of blood.

Ye Xueyi looked down at Liu Ningzi and stopped attacking, "You've lost."

In the end, Liu Ningzi could not defeat Ye Xueyi who was an entire stage above her. This gave the Ye clan a much needed win in the match.

"Sister Bingqian... Sorry. I lost...."

"It's alright Ningzi, you did your best. If you were to blame someone then blame Yige for having bad luck and matching you up with their strongest member."

Liu Ningzi nodded and was helped up by Bingqian. When she got up, she suddenly turned around. She suddenly wanted to see what kind of expression Ye Zifeng had but Ye Zifeng didn't even look over at all.

She bit her lower lips and looked up at the sky. She didn't know what she was thinking....

.....

Asides from the people from the Ye clan, everyone thought that pairing was a coincidence and they the Liu clan was just unlucky for the first match.

The people of the Ye clan however, were all shocked. This was because this was the exact outcome that Ye Zifeng had told them about.

"Zifeng. Could it be that you've figured out a way to make the best scenario happen?"

A hint of excitement could be heard in Ye Chongtian's voice. If it all goes according to Ye Zifeng's plans, then the Ye clan will be able to claim

the spot as the number one clan in Leizhou City.

Ye Xueyi happily walked off the stage and looked at her brother, “Look brother Zifeng. I beat her! If everything goes according to your plan, then our Ye clan will benefit a lot from this gathering and reclaim our position!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Alright. Alright. Don’t jinx anything. Elder Lin is calling for me already.....”

Chapter 42: To be burning with anger!

This time around, Liu Yige didn't look as arrogant as before. This was because after the gathering, the Ye clan will once again rise up in power. Not only did Ye Zifeng take first place in the first competition, his Liu clan had allowed the Ye clan to win the first match. From a commoner's standpoint, the Ye clan's strength wasn't far away from the Liu clan's.

Ye Zifeng looked at Yige and smiled, "Didn't you say that you wanted to teach me a lesson?"

Liu Yige's face sank, "So what?"

While saying that, Liu Yige became more and more nervous. This was because the Liu clan was down one point already. Liu Bingqian can finish either of them off... But Ye Zifeng had beaten him once already. If he loses to Ye Zifeng, then the blame for the loss will be on him!

"Nothing. If you want to teach me a lesson, I'll give you a chance." Ye Zifeng calmly smiled. He looked as if he had already won.

"You....." Liu Yige gulped. The look in Ye Zifeng's eyes was very deep and cold. It sent chills down his spine. Before he even stepped onto the stage with Ye Zifeng, he had lost his confidence already.

"Alright. Draw your lots and stop fighting." Lin Ke knitted his brow and pointed to the boxes.

Liu Yige licked his lips and moved his hand into the box. After a while, he picked out a piece of paper. His palms had become very sweaty.

"Ye Huichi will fight in the next match." Lin Ke took the slip from Yige and announced.

Ye Zifeng smiled. He remembered what Elder Zhao had said, 'The one on the left is Bingqian and the one on the right is Yige. He trusted his memory.

However, just in case, he asked Elder Zhao again. After confirming, he slowly opened his eyes.

He reached into the box and went straight for the paper on the left without any hesitation. He needed to match Bingqian with Huichi and then he can teach Liu Yige a lesson while taking the win. That way, the Ye clan will be the new champions.

Elder Lin suddenly looked deeply at Ye Zifeng, “It looks like you got some luck. But don’t think it’ll be so easy.”

“Elder Lin, You……”

Hearing this, a nervous feeling suddenly engulfed Ye Zifeng. It seems like Elder Lin had taken both slips of paper. When Ye Zifeng noticed, he tried to take it back from him but Elder Lin quickly dodged. A crafty expression appeared on Lin Ke’s face.

“No!” Ye Zifeng’s eyes widened.

Elder Lin quickly announced, “From the Liu clan, Liu Yige will battle!” Behind his back, he burned both papers.

“Liu Yige?”

“A 6th stage qi refiner against a 5th stage qi refiner? It seems like the Ye clan will definitely lose.” The audience began to discuss amongst themselves.

Hearing the announcement, Ye Chongtian fell back on his seat. The others from the Ye clan all sighed as well. Even though Ye Zifeng was only at the fourth stage of qi refining, he has the ability to beat Liu Yige. To match Huichi with Bingqian and have Ye Zifeng fight Liu Yige was their only hope.

“So if Huichi loses, then brother Zifeng will have to fight against Liu Bingqian who’s at the peak stage of qi refining?” Ye Xueyi gasped. Even if Ye Zifeng can beat Liu Yige, Bingqian who’s at the peak stage of qi refining is too much for him.

The miracle didn’t happen. Ye Zifeng wanted to play by his own script but in the end, it didn’t work out.

Although Elder Shen and Elder Zhao were helping Ye Zifeng, amongst

the other eight elders, there was a possibility that someone was helping the Liu clan.

Ye Zifeng was very cautious and had the two elders pay attention to the other elder's movements. However, who would've thought that Elder Lin, the person that announces the participants, would be the problem.

He can say whatever he wants and no one would question it. His words had absolute authority. Even if the slip said Liu Bingqian, he can say that it said Liu Yige. No one would know what's going on.

Lin Ke walked over the Ye Zifeng and whispered, "Don't blame me kid. Although I'm great friends with Chongtian, I'm one of Liu clan's guest of honors. I work for the Liu clan."

He stopped for a bit and then continued to talk, "I know you have a lot of potential and I know that you have the ability to beat Liu Yige. However, for your Ye clan to get this far, it's good enough for you guys already. Just give up. Don't think about fighting against the Liu clan for the spot as the number one family of Leizhou City anymore.

Without saying anything, Ye Zifeng walked back. A dark look appeared in his eyes.

Everyone else thought that he was unhappy because he was unlucky and started sympathizing for him.

"Ye Zifeng, for your Ye clan to get to the second round and get one point off the defending champions, it's good enough already."

"That's right Ye Zifeng. I take back all the bad things I've said about you. After your performance today, my view of you have completely changed.

Ye Zifeng weakly smiled and then lifted his head to look at everyone.

"The matches didn't even start yet. Why do you guys think that the Ye clan will definitely lose?"

Everyone was startled. However the Rong clan's second young master snorted, "What else is gonna happen if you guys don't lose? Who do you think you are? Do you think you can actually win?"

Looking at how Ye Zifeng failed to appreciate their sympathy, their sympathetic talk turned into mocking words.

“Ye Zifeng. Listen up. Don’t think that you’re all that because you got first place. SHow us what you got before you start talking big. The heavenly stairs only tested your potential. Your actual strength is much weaker than Yige’s and Bingqian’s.

“That’s right. You guys should give up already. At least that way, you guys can keep some face or else when you get beat up later, you’ll lose all your face.

Talking with these people was useless. They didn’t understand anything so Ye Zifeng returned to where the Ye clan participants sat.

“Huichi, I have something that I have to tell you.” Ye Zifeng’s expression was very serious. His eyes looked very cold and scary.

Ye Huichi turned around and was startled, “Hold on. Cousin Zifeng, are you telling me to win against that Liu Yige? That’s no way. Last time he came over, I saw how strong he was. I definitely can’t win.”

These words were the words of a coward. Let’s not say Ye Chongtian, but even Ye Chen sighed at how cowardly his son was.

Before he even got onto the stage, Ye Huichi had already lost all of his fighting spirit. If he goes up now, he will definitely lose. Even if Ye Huichi can beat Liu Yige, he would probably hold back and lose due to the connections that Ye Chen have with the Liu clan.

“I know you’re not his opponent.” Ye Zifeng said very calmly.

“If you know that, then what do you want to talk to me about?”

Ye Zifeng was calm. He sighed and then replied, “I’m trying to tell you that you should give up immediately and not waste anyone’s time.”

“You want me to go up and admit defeat? Cousin Zifeng, you.....” Ye Huichi was shocked. The nervous feeling that he had turned into anger.

“I know Liu Yige very well. I made him angry and he will definitely take it out on you. When you go up there, he will definitely not let you leave the

stage. He will pull your hair off and beat you black and blue until you are bleeding from all seven apertures."

Ye Huichi clenched his fist, "Cousin Zifeng, are you mocking me? Do you think I'm afraid?"

If it was anyone else from the clan saying this, he wouldn't mind much. However, this was coming from the mouth of someone that he had bullied for quite some time now. How can he not care about this.

Ye Zifeng coldly looked into Huichi's eyes, "Then why were you being so pessimistic? When I was at the fourth stage of qi refining, I fought against Yige and won in the end. You're a whole stage above me.... Do you think you'll lose to him?"

"I....." Ye Huichi was speechless.

On the heavenly stairs, he fell down and was forced to withdraw from the competition. After seeing Ye Zifeng take first place, he became very jealous of him. Now that he's been stirred up by Ye Zifeng, his blood began to boil and his confidence started to return.

That's right. If Ye Zifeng can beat Liu Yige when he was at the 4th stage of qi refining, how can he not do it when he's at the fifth stage of qi refining.

Ye Zifeng waited for a bit and then looked deeply into Huichi's eyes, "If you want people to acknowledge you, you have have to prove yourself. Show everyone what you got. Show the entire Leizhou City that you, Ye Huichi, has the qualifications to stand on that stage! Think about it. If you beat Liu Yige, you will be the one that wins it all for the Ye clan. You will be one responsible for the entire clan's rise in power. You will be the most important figure in the clan!

With this speech, Ye Zifeng stirred Huichi's fighting spirit up even more. Huichi had forgotten about everything else. He's only thinking about how he can get all the glory for himself.

"Cousin Zifeng.... Okay! I get it! This fight.... I will do my best! For the Ye Clan! For my own glory! Also Cousin Zifeng..... I was wrong back then. In

the future, we need to work together as one for the clan. We will use our strength and bring our clan to the top!" Ye Huichi was very pumped up.

Ye Zifeng looked at Ye Huichi and patted his shoulder, "Thar's right. I've been waiting for you to say this! Alright. Now get on the stage!"

"Yes Cousin Zifeng!" Ye Huichi was filled with fighting spirit. His pessimistic view had completely disappeared.

.....

Ye Chen saw the whole scene play out and felt deeply moved, "Huicihi.... Ever since he was little, he would bully the weak and fear the strong. With your speech, you were able to change him so much. I really have to thank you."

"No need to thank me." Ye Zifeng smiled, "I can see that he was feeling angry after I took first place in the first competition. Right now, I'm just helping him release this anger and turn it into something good for him. As for the results....."

"The result huh....." The two smiled and shook their head.

Chapter 43: The gap in strength

It was very natural for Ye Chen to have some hidden deals with the Liu clan. After all, he wanted someone to back him up if the Ye clan falls.

However, this time, Ye Zifeng had taken first place in the heavenly stairs competition while Ye Xueyi took fifth place. It made Ye Chen very hopeful about the Ye Clan's revival. Ye Chen was feeling very proud of his clan right now.

Maybe.... Maybe Ye Zifeng doesn't have to see them as enemies anymore.

Ye Zifeng was just thinking about this until he saw Ye Huichi limping down from the stage. The match was very close. Even though Huichi lost, he did his best and heavily injured Liu Yige as well.

The result was what everyone had expected, Ye Huichi lost and now the score is 1:1.

"Cousin Zifeng..... You lied to me. You told me i could beat Liu Yige. Look at me now. My entire face is black and blue....."

He pointed at his swelling face and his crooked teeth.

"Huichi.... You've suffered. Come. Where does it hurt. Tell father about it." Ye Chen felt sorry for his son and wanted to comfort him. However, he was blocked by Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Huichi, even though you lost, you lost with honor. I can tell that Liu Yige was heavily injured by you as well. Look around. Everyone is praising you. Now lift up your chest and show them that you're someone strong as well...."

"Really? The spectators think that I did a good job?" Ye Chen lifted his head and looked around. Sure enough, there were some people smiling at him and praising him. There were even some girls from smaller clans who shyly looked at him.

Ye Huichi's heart shook especially when he saw the girls glance at him. He felt as if he was feeling better already. The pain didn't even matter to

him anymore.

“Wow. Cousin Zifeng.... You really are something. I was blind in the past. I hope you can forgive me. I will follow you from now on!” He looked excitingly at Ye Zifeng. He had forgotten all about how he had been cursing Ye Zifeng during the fight.

Ye Zifeng bitterly smile and nodded. He didn’t see this coming at all. It was all thanks to Elder Lin for messing things up. It was a blessing in disguise. Even if the Ye clan loses the gathering, the Ye clan would be more united than ever. This is definitely a good thing.

“Brother Zifeng, you’ll have to fight against Liu Bingqian who’s at the peak stage of Qi Refining. How about you just forfeit right now. I don’t want you to have an accident.” Ye Xueyi had a worried expression in her eyes.

“Do you not have any confidence in me?”

“It’s not about having confidence or not....”

“Then are you afraid that I’ll be beat black and blue like Huichi? Don’t worry about it. Bingqian won’t do something like that.” Ye Zifeng smiled. He had some confidence in beating her. Even if he doesn’t win, he doesn’t think that Bingqian will beat him up that badly.

“But.....” Ye Xueyi stared at him. She was still worried.

Fourth stage of qi refining against the peak stage of qi refining. The difference wasn’t just one stage. It was almost an entire realm. Any normal person would have forfeited by now but Ye Zifeng would not do so.

From what he can see, the stages of qi refining realm are separated by the amount of qi one has and not the amount of strength that one possesses. Before reaching the martial disciple stage, the strength of each individual is not that far apart.

This isn’t some life or death battle so he might as well try.

“Ye Zifeng. Liu Bingqian. Please get on the stage!” Elder Lin’s voice was

loud and clear.

This was the final fight of the gathering that happens once every five years.

On the side, there were many people who were betting like crazy.

“Liu clan’s young miss. I’ve bet my whole fortune on you. Please win. Don’t hold back at all!”

“Ye Zifeng, I bet that you’ll forfeit after getting on the stage. If you really do so, I’ll give you half my earnings. Hahahaha.....”

“Ye Zifeng. I bet one gold coin on you. If you win, I’ll get two hundred gold coins in return! Fight for me!”

Liu Bingqian had a complicated look on her face and walked towards Ye Zifeng, “Really now. I don’t even know what you’re thinking about. Good thing that we know each other, later on.....”

Ye Zifeng smiled and interrupted her, “You want to hold back because we know each other?”

The two people walked onto the stage. Ye Zifeng smiled and bowed to elder Lin. He didn’t care about how he was helping the Liu clan anymore.

Liu Bingqian’s face sank and shook her head, “No way. The glory of my clan is more important. I will fight with all my strength and win for my clan. However, I won’t hurt you too much. I hope that you can forfeit right now and walk off the stage.”

Ye Zifeng sighed, “That’s right. You have your clan. I have my clan. I have to win for my clan as well.”

After saying that, he fiercely looked over, “We both know that we have to win so let’s fight.”

“Start!” Elder Lin shouted.

Liu Bingqian took a deep breath and a serious expression appeared on her face. A frightening qi exploded out of her body and covered the entire stage.

“Holy shit. Did you see that? Her qi covered the entire arena. Damn. Ye Zifeng, forfeit before you get hurt.”

“Yeah. She’s already at this level. You can’t win at all.”

As a peak stage qi refiner, Bingqian can already use her qi to fight. Of course, as a qi refiner, she can’t control it perfectly. But in the eyes of an expert, she was not bad already.

Liu Bingqian wanted to use this frightening qi to scare Ye Zifeng off and make him forfeit. Normally, if someone feels this qi, they would be scared and lose all their confidence.

However, Ye Zifeng didn’t feel anything from this at all. Compared to the level of qi that he’s seen in his past life, this was nothing at all. This can’t even make him flinch.

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and rushed towards Bingqian like lightning. He moved half of his qi into his feet to move very quickly. In a second, he was already in front of Bingqian and struck her neck.

“You still want to fight? Then don’t blame me for not holding back.” Bingqian furrowed her brows and and a cold expression appeared in her eyes. She grabbed Ye Zifeng and tossed him into the air, directly off the stage.

This wasn’t out of anyone’s expectation. The difference between the peak stage of qi refining and fourth stage of qi refining was too big. They can see that Bingqian was already holding back. She threw him off the stage instead of injuring her opponent.

However, Ye Zifeng turned around in mid air and sent out a palm strike towards the ground. He used the recoil to get back onto the stage.

Liu Yige suddenly yelled out, “Sister Bingqian, don’t hold back. That Ye Zifeng is a loathsome dog. If you don’t beat him up, he’ll always be sticking onto you!”

Bingqian coldly looked over at Yige, “I don’t need an outsider to teach me what to do!” Bingqian was different from Ningzi. She had never thought of Liu Yige as a family member.

“You.....” Liu Yige’s face sank, his heart filled with resentment.

Ye Zifeng smiled and got up. He wiped away the blood that was seeping out of his mouth, “As expected. The difference between us too big. To be able to send me flying so easily.....”

Liu Bingqian stared at Ye Zifeng, “If you know that you’re not my opponent, then you should forfeit. You can’t win.”

“I do admit that I am not your opponent based on strength.”

“Then why don’t you.....”

Ye Zifeng’s mouth curved up and revealed a smile, “But winning is not about having the most strength.”

He paused for a bit and then smiled again, “I told you before. Do you think that someone like me can win against you without any preparation?”

Liu Bingqian didn’t know what Ye Zifeng meant by that. She also didn’t know where he was getting his confidence from either.

“Why don’t you look at your hands. Did you think you can easily grab me and throw me around without any consequences?” Ye Zifeng gave her a hint.

Liu Bingqian knitted her brows and looked at her palm. She was shocked at the sight.

She can see traces of lightning moving around her hand. Her qi was being suppressed by this lightning..... It will be hard for her to use any of her qi for a while.

Ye Zifeng took advantage of the fact that Bingqian held back and struck her when she attacked. When she least expected it, he used his lightning to suppress her qi.

“Thunder Spirit Pill..... I understand now. This is the power of the Thunder Spirit Pill!” Bingqian yelled out in shock. She had never eaten any attribute type spirit pills in her life so she overlooked the effects of the Thunder Spirit Pill.

Suddenly, she felt some movements around her and immediately looked around.

It was Ye Zifeng. When Bingqian was dazed and was thinking about the Thunder Spirit Pill, he took his chances and started to attack.

Chapter 44: The Final Verdict!

Although Ye Zifeng's method was somewhat underhanded, it didn't go overboard. He didn't use any hidden weapons or poison at all. He only took advantage of the fact that his opponent wasn't paying attention during a battle.

Right now, Ye Zifeng was flying towards Liu Bingqian like a sharp sword. The electric qi congealed around his hand as he attacked Bingqian.

Even under such an unfavorable situation, Bingqian was able to barely dodge the attack.

The faces of all the spectators were filled with shock.

"Did you guys see that? As a fourth stage qi refiner, Ye Zifeng was able to force Liu Bingqian to dodge?"

Another spectator sighed, "Shit. I lost. I thought Ye Zifeng wouldn't even survive one move from Liu Bingqian....."

Liu Yige was the most shocked of them all. He continuously shook his head, not believing what he was seeing, "How did Ye Zifeng change so much in such a short amount of time!"

Liu Ningzi furrowed her brows and looked over at Liu Yige, "Senior brother, if you were to fight Ye Zifeng right now, who would win....."

"This... Of course...." Liu Yige was speechless. He wants to say the truth but he didn't want to embarrass himself in front of his junior sister so he decided not to say anything.

"That good for nothing Ye Zifeng.... Who would've thought that you would change so much, so fast...." Liu Ningzi had a perplexed look. She was thinking about that day she went over to the Ye clan's estate. Why did she do such a thing? Why did she go and cancel her engagement so quickly. Did she do the right thing? Was it wrong?

.....

"Ye Zifeng! Don't force me!" Liu Bingqian retreated with a pale look on

her face.

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, “So what if I force you? We’re both fighting for our family’s glory. If you respect me, then use all your strength!”

At the same time, lightning appeared on his hands again as he rushed towards Liu Bingqian.

“Fine! I’ll use my full strength. Don’t regret anything.” Bingqian replied with a serious tone. She was not going to hold back anymore.

She quickly clapped her hands together and the qi around the entire stage started to gather around her. It created some sort of spiraling whirlpool around her. When Ye Zifeng’s lightning qi struck the wall of qi, it was repelled easily. It felt as if he was hitting against an invisible wall.

“How’s that Ye Zifeng. You can’t hurt me anymore. You can’t do anything anymore!”

Ye Zifeng’s mouth curved up as he got closer Liu Bingqian. With a wave of his hand, the lightning qi on his hand shot out towards Liu Bingqian like a flying snake.

“”It’s useless!” Liu Bingqian laughed. When the lightning qi touched the whirlpool of qi, it immediately evaporated into nothing.

“How’s that. I told you it was useless!”

‘Who said it was useless? Aren’t I getting closer and closer to you?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and a cold aura suddenly exploded out of his body. However, it wasn’t that strong so the people outside the stage did not feel anything.

While most others didn’t feel anything, Elder Zhao felt what’s wrong and immediately stood up.

He started to mumble to himself, “Bastard. You dare use my soul spirit to attack? Preposterous!” The iron beads that he was holding in his hands suddenly exploded.

“Brother Zhao. Calm down. It’s not like you don’t know what he’s like already.” Shen Li was afraid that something was going to happen and

dragged him back.

Elder Zhao leaned over the Shen Li, “Elder Shen, Don’t talk like you actually know what he’s like. We’ve only met him today!”

“That’s right....” Shen Li stroked his beard and shook his head. Ye Zifeng is like a little demon. He gave Shen Li a very good impression. Afterall, Ye Zifeng was part of his sect. His success will be the sect’s success.

.....

This cold aura that he released was a trump card that Ye Zifeng was planning to save. He would have never thought that Elder Lin would mess with him and force him to use this little piece of soul spirit.

No matter how strong Liu Bingqian is, she’s only a qi refining stage disciple. Against an attack from a peak martial practitioner’s soul spirit, she won’t be able to do anything. All she can do was let the soul spirit enter her forcefully without knowing what’s going on.

In a split second, her entire body felt stiff. She stared blankly at Ye Zifeng, not knowing what happened at all.

Ye Zifeng took advantage of this and started to channel his qi. A black dot surrounded by death qi appeared on his palm. He struck out and it flew towards Liu Bingqian’s chest.

Liu Ningzi gasped and yelled out in surprise, “Not good. That’s the move that he used to attack senior brother! Sister Bingqian, quickly dodge. That palm strike is very weird!’

When Liu Yige saw the death qi palm strike again, he began to shake. He remembers how powerful this was. If he was up there right now and he was hit by it, the chances of him surviving is very low.

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian wanted to dodge. However, she was under the effects of the soul attack while having her strength decreased by Ye Zifeng’s lightning when she threw him. She was in a state of temporary paralysis. She stood there as she watched the palm strike reach her.

Due to the effects of the soul attack, she could not use any of her qi at

all.

“Bang!” After being struck, Liu Bingqian was sent flying. It looked as if she could not withstand the attack at all.

Seeing how Liu Bingqian, a peak stage qi refiner, was sent flying by Ye Zifeng, everyone’s jaws dropped. The entire audience was shocked.

“Miss Bingqian. What are you doing? If you lose, then I’m gonna lose my entire fortune!”

“Yeah. No way. What were you doing before? Why did you not move at all?”

“Nice Ye Zifeng! That one gold coin that I used actually turned into two hundred gold coins! Thank You!”

Ye Chongtian excitedly stood up. If Liu Bingqian lands outside of the stage, then the Ye Clan will be declared the winners. At that time, the Ye Clan will have basically establish themselves as one of the three great clans again.

“Big Brother Rough Guy! Save me!” In a confused state, Bingqian suddenly called for Ye Zifeng sending the audience members into a frenzy.

Who is this Big Brother Rough Guy? There’s no one else there besides Ye Zifeng.

Seeing how Liu Bingqian was about to fall onto the floor, Ye Zifeng’s heart shook. If it wasn’t for the fact that Liu Bingqian held back before, he would not have the chance to use this attack.

Liu Bingqian could not bear to hurt him. That was the true reason to her defeat.....

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and decided to save her.

Ye Zifeng sighed and flew towards Liu Bingqian. He grabbed her waist with one hand and sent a palm strike out with the other. Using the recoil effect, he returned onto the stage with Bingqian.

The person who harmed her was Ye Zifeng and now the person who rescued her was also ye Zifeng.

Liu Bingqian had a happy expression on her face. When she found out Ye Zifeng's identity, she became depressed because she thought that he would hate her. But now, she can see that he still treats her as a friend. If it was like this, then losing the competition was worth it to her.

She was happily thinking about his with being in Ye Zifeng's embrace until she suddenly felt lighter, followed by some pain. When she came back to her senses, she realized that after Ye Zifeng rescued her, he lightly dropped her off the stage.

She then remembered that she was still competing with him. For Ye Zifeng to do this, he was being very nice already.

After watching this scene unfold, the entire audience was silent for a while. After a while, they exploded in cheers.

The Ye clan had won the gathering. They were the number one clan in name. After getting first place in the first competition, Ye Zifeng was able to defeat Liu Bingqian, the Liu clan's strongest member. His name will definitely be recorded in Leizhou City's history book.

Ye Xueyi immediately rushed towards the stage and hugged Ye Zifeng. Her eyes started to tear up, "Great Job brother Zifeng. Our Ye clan won! You've also proven yourself. Now no one in Leizhou City will look down on you anymore!'

Ye Chongtian fiercely fist bumped his son's chest, "My son! Nice moves you got there. Were you hiding your strength all this time and wanted to shock everyone?"

At the same time....

"Hold on. Who said that your Ye clan won?' Lin Ke suddenly walked over.

Ye Chongtian smiled, "Didn't everyone see the results? Liu clan's young miss fell off the stage. Our Ye clan should have won."

Lin Ke didn't waste his breath with Ye Chongtian and pointed at Ye Zifeng, "Tell me the truth. Before you used that palm strike, why did Miss Bingqian suddenly stop moving? Do you dare say that you didn't mess

with her? From what I can see, you cheated to win!"

The entire audience suddenly gossiping again. Everyone saw the scene. It was very weird how she stopped moving before his attack hit her. After Lin Ke reminded them, they started thinking about it.

"Yeah. Ye Zifeng. Tell us what kind of technique you used to make sister Bingqian lose. If you can't say anything, then it doesn't count as your Ye clan's win!" Liu Yige took advantage of the situation and yelled at Ye Zifeng.

Chapter 45: After all these years!

“Liu Yige. Who are you? Are you an elder? Do you have the authority to decide to outcome of the battle?” Ye Zifeng coldly looked over at Liu Yige. For the past few times, Ye Zifeng had been very patient with Liu Yige. However, this time, he couldn’t hold it in anymore and yelled out at him.

“You! You’re going too far!” Liu Yige’s face turned green and angrily stared at Ye Zifeng.

“Who’s the one going too far?”

Liu clan’s clan leader, Liu Mu, walked towards Liu Yige. He looked at Liu Yige and then sighed, “Alright Yige, back off a bit. The elders of the sect and the elders from Tiandao City will take care of everything.

Elder Lin nodded at Liu Mu and then continued to questioned Ye Zifeng, “When you were fighting with Miss Bingqian, what kind of hidden weapon did you use? To be able to hide it from during our search..... If you tell us now, we will let you keep the first place you got in the first competition. If you don’t then.....”

“Then what?”

Elder Lin coldly snorted, “Then according to the rules of the gathering, you will be severely punished for breaking the rules. Your clan will also not be able to participate in the gathering for the next ten years!”

After hearing this, every single in the Ye clan that was present all gulped. It was a very severe punishment.

Ye Chongtian knitted his brows, “Elder Lin, why are you going against our Ye clan? Why don’t you ask Miss Bingqian as to why she didn’t move during the fight. Why are you so sure that my son did something?”

Elder Lin’s mouth twitched, “It’s not that I’m going against your Ye Clan. It’s just that we can’t let you run after cheating. We’ll know what happened after we examine the qi movement on the stage.”

“How about now Ye Zifeng. Do you admit to it or not?” Elder Lin glared at him coldly.

“Admit what? You can have your people go examine the stage. You better check clearly. I, Ye Zifeng, have nothing to hide so I don’t mind.” Ye Zifeng looked back with an even more imposing look.

Ye Zifeng is not dumb. Heck. No one is that dumb that they would admit that they were cheating. Ye Zifeng won’t fall for this Elder Lin’s trap and throw himself into the fire.

“Fine! Don’t blame me for being unfair after we find the evidence of you cheating!” Elder Lin gave a signal and four experts from Tiandao City went onto the stage to examine the qi movements before it starts to disappear.

After a while, one of the expert’s face changed, “Everyone come look…. This…. This is….”

“What?” The other elders walked over.

“No way…. This is….” A few martial practitioner experts were shocked and took a few steps back. Their faces paled. Elder Zhao and Shen Li both pretended to be shocked and stepped back with everyone.

Elder Lin furrowed his brows and looked confused, “Why are you acting so surprise? There’s no need to be so surprised at some hidden weapons.”

“Elder Lin, come look for yourself.” One of the elders named Guo, called over.

Elder Lin’s expression changed. He knew that this elder Guo was very famous liked to explore the outside world. He has seen many things and is very knowledgeable. If this thing can shock him, then it must not be simple at all.

Elder Lin walked up onto the stage and the other elders all moved away for him to examine the qi movements on the stage.

Suddenly, both of his pupils lit up.

“No way. This feeling……”

Lin Ke knelt down and closed his eyes, He felt around with his qi and a shocked expression appeared on his face.

He opened his eyes and looked at the other elders. He realized why they

had that expression on.

“Soul Spirit.... Divine Sense? Why do I feel the power of a soul spirit?”

Elder Lin turned around and stared at Ye Zifeng.

“Don’t..... Don’t look at me. I don’t even know what you guys are talking about....” Ye Zifeng shrugged.

To not know what a soul spirit is, it was very normal for a qi refining stage disciple. Not even Martial Disciple realm disciples know about this either. This was something that only a Martial Practitioner realm expert can use.

Liu Bingqian was confused and looked at her father, “Daddy. What’s a soul spirit?”

“This.... A soul spirit is living divine sense that a martial practitioner can form. It will help that person attack, defend and do many things.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “So that’s it. Uncle Liu said that only a martial practitioner realm expert can form a soul spirit. Then let me ask Elder Lin this. Do you think that I can use this soul spirit? If you’re saying that it is mine, then it would only mean that have the ability to win. Afterall, a soul spirit is something that a martial artist forms. How could I be cheating then?!”

“This.....”

Hearing Ye Zifeng’s explanation, Elder Lin sighed. He thought that Ye Zifeng had used some sort of poison or hidden weapons. To think that there was only some traces of a soul spirit.... It was inconceivable. He was feeling very vexed right now after jumping to conclusion so quickly.

Also, seeing how Ye Zifeng used his own words against him, Liu Mu could only bitterly laugh.

Ye Xueyi chimed into the conversation as well, “Elder Lin, brother Zifeng won using his own ability and not because of some soul spirit or whatever.”

It wasn’t only the people of the Ye clan. The people from the other clans

started to yell as well.

"What's going on elder Lin. What's the result?"

"Yeah come on. Just give us the verdict already."

Elder Lin stood there thinking to himself. He had no other ways to make Ye Zifeng lose.

Ye Zifeng suddenly walked over the Elder Lin and whispered.

"Ahh Elder Lin. Let me remind you of something. Speaking of cheating, don't you think that it was exactly what you were doing before....? If other people found out that you were cheating as the host of the gathering, wouldn't your reputation be ruined?"

Elder Lin was shocked after hearing this. He clearly burned both papers. However, it seems like Ye Zifeng actually had evidence that he was cheating.

"Are you trying to threaten me.....?" Elder Lin had a fierce look in his eyes. On normal days, Elder Lin usually look like a kind old man. However, when he gets angry, he would look very scary.

Ye Zifeng closed his eyes, smiled and shook his head, "How could I dare to threaten the esteemed elder. I just want to remind Elder Lin about what happened. No matter how wise or careful you are, you will always leave something behind. If you really want to take me down, then you'll be coming down with me as well....."

Ye Zifeng slowly opened his eyes and with an imposing tone, he whispered to Elder Lin, "I, Ye Zifeng, will be glad to fall with you."

Elder Lin was startled. He had never seen such an arrogant and despotic disciple before. The look in his eyes.....it was very majestic. This twenty year old in front of him looked like esteemed master.

Elder Zhao had seen enough. He pulled Shen Li over to Elder Lin.

"Elder Lin, I think that Ye Zifeng is right. He's only at the qi refining stage. There's no way for him to possess a soul spirit. We should not look into this any longer."

“Yeah that’s right. The hundreds of clans in the audience are waiting for us to announce the results. We can’t drag on any longer.” Shen Li coughed. He was the strongest elder in the sect. Even if elder Lin didn’t listen to anyone else, he still had to respect Shen Li’s words.

Lin Ke looked over at Liu Mu, thinking that he would do something but.... All Liu Mu could do was helplessly shake his head.

Lin Ke sighed. He had lost. The result was something that no one had expected. Even he was a bit surprised himself.

For the strong Liu clan to lose to the Ye clan even with his help..... It was unimaginable! It was all because of this Ye Zifeng.

“Alright. I will announce the results: After further review by the other elders and I, we have determined that Ye Zifeng did not cheat. Thus, the winner of this gathering is..... The Ye Clan!”

Ye Chongtian was speechless.

Seeing how stiff and silly Ye Chongtian looked, Tang Feng nudged him, “Did you hear that? Our Ye clan is the winner!”

Ye Chongtian’s expression slowly changed. An exciting and happy expression appeared on his old face. He was excited and very emotional at the same time. There was no one else who could be happier than him right now.

“I heard it. I heard it all.... This time, it’s real!”

After all these years! They’ve finally made a comeback.

Twenty years ago, when Ye Zifeng was born, and was diagnosed to be a trash that only appears every hundred years, the Ye clan started to collapse.

And now, twenty years later, it was the first time that Ye Chongtian was this happy in a long time.

The Ye Clan has revived. The young master Ye Zifeng’s great performance allowed the Ye Clan to become the number one clan in

Leizhou City.

.....

Elder Lin took a deep breath and then his expression returned to normal, “Alright Ye Zifeng. Come over with the others to receive your reward.”

Chapter 46: Supreme True Yuan Dan

In Ye Zifeng's previous life, he was a well respected figure in his own regards. But after he crossed over into the Martial Spirit Continent, he became the trash that everyone bullied. This victory now marks the beginning of Ye Zifeng's journey to the peak in this life.

"Brother Zifeng. It's time for the award ceremony. You deserved it!" Ye Xueyi was very excited. At first, she didn't think that the Ye clan could even get into the second round let alone winning it all.

"Wow! Cousin Zifeng! You can actually beat a peak stage qi refiner. I really admire you. From now on, I'll treat you like my real big brother and follow whatever you do.

Ye Xueyi glanced over at him, "You're talking like you guys were never related...."

Ye Huichi embarrassingly laughed and rubbed his head. He was ashamed of all thing things that he did to Ye Zifeng in the past and looked over at him with a guilty expression on his face.

In the Martial Spirit Continent, the weak respects the strong. For Ye Huichi to start respecting Ye Zifeng after all this, it was normal.

Ye Chongtian slapped Ye Zifeng's back and laughed, "Zifeng....I didn't notice how strong you've become after all these years. I've neglected you. From now on, the Ye clan will fully support you and help you raise your cultivation."

Ye Zifeng looked over at the people of the Ye clan and bowed. In the clan, there were some people who truly cared for him and liked him. However, there were also people who hated him and wanted to harm him. But none of that didn't matter today. Today, Ye Zifeng had bought hope to the clan. They all started to view him in a new light.

"Father, Xueyi, everyone.... I'm going to go get the reward."

When Ye Zifeng walked out of the Ye clan's encirclement, he instantly became the center of attention amongst the other clans.

He didn't only take first place in the first competition but he also defeated Liu Bingqian who was at the peak stage of qi refining. His nickname as trash was slowly disappearing.

In addition, many of the other clan's daughters all coquettishly glanced over at him.

"Father. Look at how heroic Ye Zifeng looks. How about I marry him and bring him into our family...."

"..... Are you retarded? Do you think you can match with Ye Zifeng?"

"That's right. Let's not talk about bringing him into our family, he probably won't agree to take you as a concubine...."

"Yeah that's right. Did you guys not hear about it? I heard that Liu clan's second miss, Liu Ningzi is Ye Zifeng's fiancee. Only a beauty like her can match with someone like Ye Zifeng. There's no place for someone like you."

Seeing how everyone was chattering loudly, Elder Lin coughed, and tried to settle everyone down, "Okay, stop chattering. The award ceremony will now commence..."

Since Ye Zifeng is the winner, he will be the last one to go up onto the stage. He stood in the back and started to ponder what kind of prize he will get.

"Shi Chen!"

Shi Chen began to laugh and walked out of the crowd. He happily walked up to Elder Lin. This time, both his older brother and sister were disqualified and he was forced to actually participate in the gathering. However, with some luck, he was able to get into the top 20. His clan was very satisfied with the result.

"Your reward is the Nurturing Heart Chronicles, a common tier martial skill that can help you with your meditation and increase your qi. If you practice and work hard, you should be able to get a better placement five years from now." Elder Lin handed the prize to Shi Chen and smiled.

“Thank you, Elder Lin.” After being forced to participate, he was able to obtain a common ranked martial skill. He was feeling very happy.

……

“Next, Xiao Mu!”

Xiao Mu had his head down and looked gloomy. When he walked over to Elder Zhao, he snorted at him to remind him how he had failed to suppress Ye Zifeng.

Elder Zhao wanted to say something but he couldn’t. This time, in order to help the Xiao clan, he lost his precious soul spirit and had to make a spirit oath. Making things worse, Ye Zifeng had also planted a soul restriction on him so he needs to take care of him and make sure nothing happens to him in the next year.

Elder Zhao looked awkwardly at Xiao Mu and took out a bamboo flute, “This is the prize for the 11th place. It is a grade 2 common tier treasure. As for the usage…..”

Xiao Mu grabbed the bamboo flute and walked away, “You don’t need to tell me anything. I’ll ask the elders in my clan when I go back.”

Elder Zhao shook his head and bitterly laughed. This Xiao Mu doesn’t know the difference between the heavens and the earth. He will never catch up to Ye Zifeng in ten life times.

……

Ye Xueyi got fifth place and her prize was a jade interspatial ring. It was only a bit better than the ring that Ye Zifeng took from Wang Lin.

“Brother Zifeng. Do I look good with this ring?” After putting on the ring, the first thing she did was run towards Ye Zifeng and asked for his opinion.

“Of course you look beautiful.” Ye Zifeng didn’t lie. He really thought she looked beautiful.

Ye Xueyi giggled, “But what I want to wear is the ring that you brought back a few days ago… How about we trade rings? I’ll let you wear mine and

you can let me wear yours."

Ye Zifeng looked confused and asked, "But.... Isn't your ring better than mine?"

"Brother Zifeng..... You big dummy....."

Ye Zifeng stood there looking all confused. He scratched the back of his head. He didn't think he said anything wrong.....

.....

Shen Li looked at the ranking list and a complicated expression appeared on his face, "Since the Wang clan's juniors were ranked 2nd, 3rd and 4th, will you all come up at the same time to receive your prize."

"Let's go then." Wang Tianzhi's mouth twitched as he looked towards his siblings. The three walked up onto the stage together with a gloomy expression. After finding out the Ye Zifeng had won, they had a depressed look the entire time.

To be able to take the 2nd, 3rd and 4th place, the Wang clan showed that they had enough plenty of strength. However they lacked one thing, luck. They were unlucky that they had to go against Ye Zifeng.

If it wasn't for Ye Zifeng, the Wang clan would definitely be able to get into the second round and fight against the Liu clan. With their lineup, they would have probably beaten the Liu clan as well.

"Wang Mengxi, the prize for 4th place is a grade 8 common tier treasure, the Refreshing Jade Pot. If you make tea with this pot, the tea will slowly nourish your qi and help you cultivate.

"Thank you Elder Shen...." Wang Menxi smiled. She wasn't like Xiao Mu. Even when Shen Li didn't uphold his promise, she didn't mind at all.

"Wang Ruoxing. The prize for 3rd place is a grade 1 spirit tier treasure, the Violet Gravel Armor. With this armor, a normal low-mid qi refining stage disciple will not be able to harm you at all."

"Hmmm. Lil Bro Wang Lin will probably be happy if I give this to him to play with."

Wang Ruoxing smiled and received his prize. He was wearing a long robe with a long sash on his waist. He had long hair and his face was filled with makeup. He probably had more makeup on than all the the girls here. It made everyone look at him with disgust.

However, the audience ignored his appearance and started talking about the prize.

“A spirit tier treasure for the 3rd place? What will the prizes for first and second place be?”

“It seems like the sect is getting more and more extravagant. This year’s prizes is much better than the ones from five years ago!”

“Alright let’s stop talking. It’s Wang Tianzhi’s turn....”

Wang Tianzhi calmly walked towards Shen Li. A cold expression filled his eyes as he looked at Shen Li. He didn’t greet him and stood there staring at him.

He won’t be like Xiao Mu and bad mouth the elder. However, the expression in his eyes explained everything. He blamed Elder Shen for not making a move against Ye Zifeng.

“Wang Tianzhi. Tiandao City’s Muyun clan provided a Supreme True Yuan Dan, a profound tier pill as the prize for the second place. It will help you when you breakthrough from 9th stage of qi refining into the martial disciple realm.

“A Supreme True Yuan Dan? One at the profound tier as well?” Everyone in the audience was shocked. Even Liu Bingqian, Leizhou City’s greatest alchemist was shocked as well.

Wang Tianzhi wanted to calmly receive the prize and walk off like a king but when he heard what the prize was, he couldn’t stop shaking at all.

This profound tier supreme real dan can help increase a qi refiner stage disciple’s success rate of breaking through into the Martial Disciple Realm by at least 30%. With Wang Tianzhi’s talents, he will definitely be able to break through with the help of this pill.

Shen Li then whispered something to Wang Tianzhi, “Tianzhi…. Don’t disappoint me. To give you this….. Let’s say that it’s to compensate for what happened….”

“Elder Shen…. You….” Wang Tianzhi understood what happened. This was something from Elder Shen’s personal collection of items.

To lose to Ye Zifeng and not being able to compete with the Liu clan was something that the entire Wang clan was depressed about. However, to be able to receive this pill, it was a blessing in disguise for Wang Tianzhi. If he had gotten first place, he probably would not have received a prize like this!

“Many thanks to Elder Shen.”

Elder Shen was someone with great integrity. He was willing to compensate the Wang clan with something from his personal collection due to his failure.

‘Alright. Will the first place, Ye Zifeng come up!” All ten elders stood on the stage and called out.

Ye Zifeng suddenly opened his eyes. He was falling asleep and now it was finally his turn.

“Zifeng is here….”

“As the first place, you can pick something from these three items…..”

Chapter 47: Choosing One from Three

As the second place, Wang Tianzhi received a prize that caused many people be flabbergasted. Everyone started to ponder about what the prize for first place would be if the prize for the second place was so extravagant.

Furthermore, Ye Zifeng was allowed to choose from a selection of three items!

All these people could only sit there and admire Ye Zifeng. They could only blame themselves for not properly training their kids.

"If only my son was like Ye Zifeng," maybe this will become a common phrase in Leizhou City in years to come....

On the stage, when the elders brought out the treasures, everyone stared intensely at the three items. As expected, all three items were shining with brilliance.

Elder Lin pointed at the first item and smiled, "This is the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword. It is created from an ancient meteor. It is considered to be at least a grade 3 spirit tier treasure.

Due to the fact that there were not many blacksmiths in Leizhou City, weapons are especially expensive here. A grade 3 common tier sword could be sold for a few hundred gold coins already. Who knows how much a grade 3 spirit tier sword could sell for.

"Huichi, look at yourself. Wipe your drool off your face." Ye Chen resentfully said.

When Ye Huichi saw this spirit tier sword, he immediately started drooling. He wasn't the only one like that.... Shi Chen was acting the same way...."

Think about it.... If you had a sword like this when you rescue some girl from some evildoer, the girl will definitely fall for you. It made many young men fantasize about what they could do with this sword.

Elder Lin had expected something like this to happen and immediately

pointed to the second item.

Ye Zifeng's expression changed, "This is....."

It was a green bottle. From the looks of it, there wasn't anything inside. It was an empty bottle.

"Ocean Containing Bottle. Also a grade 3 spirit tier treasure."

Ye Zifeng was a little started at Elder Lin's introduction of the item, "If I were to choose an item from the three shown, I hope the elder can enlighten me about the usage of these items. If not, how can I possibly choose from the three items shown.

Elder Lin coldly smiled and snorted, "To let you choose from three items, that's good enough already. Don't think that I'll explain their usage to you either."

Doing all this, Elder Lin wasn't breaking any rules. He told Ye Zifeng about the grade of the item and the name of the item already. That was already enough.

Immediately, he pointed to the third item.

"Alright. This is the third item, Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant. As for the grade of the item..... I'm not so sure about it."

"Not so sure?" Ye Zifeng suspiciously asked, "It's fine if you don't explain the usage of the item but now you don't want to tell me the grade of the item either?"

Elder Lin coughed, "I don't know means I don't know. This Jade Pendant was brought back by someone not too long ago. The appraisers did not determine a grade for the item yet. How can I tell you what grade it is?"

Saying this, Elder Lin's mouth curved into a smile, "Alright, I've introduced the three items. Now quickly choose one."

How can this be an introduction. He might as well not say anything and let Ye Zifeng look at the items himself.

After hearing what Elder Lin had to say, the audience began to talk about the items.

“If I was up there, I will definitely pick the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword. If I had such a cool sword, it will make me look even more dashing.”

“What’s so good about being cool? I feel like that Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant is better. It can’t be a simple item with such a domineering name.”

“I feel like the Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant is better too. If it was appraised, it could be considered a rare artifact! Ye Zifeng, you should choose that Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant!”

Ye Zifeng pretended to be thinking and closed his eyes. He walked back and forth, making it look like he was thinking hard about it. In reality, he was just using this opportunity to talk to Elder Zhao.

“You brat. Did you use my soul spirit to attack Liu Bingqian? How can you still talk to me?” Elder Zhao was not feeling so good after being targeted by Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “It’s not like soul spirits can’t be split into pieces. I left a little bit just to communicate with you.”

“You!” Elder Zhao was very angry with Ye Zifeng.

“I think you’re friendlier so that’s why I didn’t ask Elder Shen....” Ye Zifeng smiled.

Elder Zhao’s expression changed, “What are you blabbering about? You don’t have Elder Shen’s soul spirit anymore. You can’t even ask him in the first place.”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Not true. Did you forget already? Didn’t you guys attack someone else with your soul spirits?”

Elder Zhao was shocked, “Your sister! Ye Xueyi!”

Suddenly, after knowing that Elder Shen was also tricked by Ye Zifeng, Elder Zhao was feeling a lot better.

“Alright. Let’s not talk about useless things. What item would you recommend from these three items.”

Elder Zhao thought about it and laughed, “Are you thinking about

choosing that Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant?"

Ye Zifeng was silent and didn't answer.

"Let me tell you this then. Don't choose that Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant. It's a trap set up by Lin Ke. He said he didn't know the grade of the item but that's bullshit. That's a grade 5 common tier jade pendant. It's basically useless."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I didn't want the jade pendant in the first place. I wanted to ask you about what that Ocean Containing Bottle does. I'm kind of interested in it."

The amount of treasures in the world could not be counted. Even if Ye Zifeng was a Martial Lord in his past life, he could not possibly know the usage of every single treasure in the world.

Elder Zhao complimented him, "Not bad. This is a treasure that can help a qi refining disciple train faster. It is the best option out of the three items."

"A treasure that can help me train faster? Alright I got it. I know what to choose....."

After that, Ye Zifeng slowly opened his eyes.

"So how about it. Did you decide yet? Which one will you choose?" Seeing that Ye Zifeng had opened his eyes, Elder Lin immediately asked.

Ye Zifeng nodded and pointed at the Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant.

Elder Lin's eyes lit up. He felt really happy but pretended to look gloomy and asked, "Are you sure? Do you really want this Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant?

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Elder Lin. His gaze pierced through Elder Lin.

"This..... is something that I don't want."

Elder Lin was startled and an angry expression appeared on his face, "You!"

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I only said that I don’t want it so I can decide on the other two items while you put that thing away.” Ye Zifeng didn’t break any rules at all so he continued to choose.

Elder Lin waved his hand and put the Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant away, “Alright. Then which one of these two do you want?” He wanted to give Ye Zifeng something bad so he chose to include the Dragon Spirit Jade Pendant. Even without Elder Zhao’s help, he would not have picked the pendant anyways.

Ye Zifeng smiled again and pointed at the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword.

Elder Lin sighed and said, “You don’t want this thing either right? Just say it. Why do you have to be like this?”

“No! I’ve decided that I want the sword.” Ye Zifeng exclaimed.

“What do you want the sword for?” Elder Zhao accidentally screamed out. Many people looked over with a puzzled expression. Shen Li saw this and immediately pulled him back.

“What are you doing? Do you want people to suspect you of something?

Elder Zhao whispered back, “Elder Shen, you don’t understand. I definitely told him that the Ocean Containing Bottle is better for him in the future but he chose the sword instead!”

Elder Shen smiled and whispered back, “When did you start thinking about his future? Do you want to take him in as a disciple?”

“Take him in as a disciple?” Elder Zhao’s face ashen and immediately shook his head, “No way. As a mere fourth stage qi refiner he was able to play us like this. If he reaches the martial practitioner realm, he’ll definitely make me go crazy! I don’t want anything to do with him.”

Elder Shen and Elder Zhao looked at each other, sighed and then started to laugh. This time, because of Ye Zifeng, they were able to become friends.

On the other hand, seeing how Ye Zifeng was able to escape his trap, Elder Lin felt gloomy. However, to choose the sword over the Ocean

Containing Bottle, Elder Lin sighed and shook his head. For Ye Zifeng to want strength now instead of later, his future will be limiited.

From what Elder Lin can see, Ye Zifeng won't be able to becoming a threatening force in the future so he felt a bit relieved.

Ye Zifeng received the brilliant and sharp Ancient Violet Cloud Sword from Elder Lin. At the same time, he lifted his head and a cold smile appeared on his face.

Standing there with his sword, Ye Zifeng looked as if he was filled with heroic spirit. It definitely looked much better than if he took the Ocean Containing Bottle instead. When he tested the sword out by swinging it around, he attracted many young girls with how cool he looked.

"Sister Bingqian, Sister Bingqian. What are you looking at..... I've been calling you for a while already."

Chapter 48: One's destiny will change over time.

Liu Bingqian yelped and looked down in embarrassment. Her face was turning bright red.

"Ningzi, what's wrong?"

"Sister Bingqian, I should be the one asking you what's wrong. Ever since Ye Zifeng went onto the stage, you've been staring at him...." Liu Ningzi replied with a complicated look on her face.

Liu Bingqian fixed her hair and looked up, "Really? I've been looking at that Ancient Violet Cloud Sword. It looks very impressive."

"Is the sword impressive or is the person you're looking at impressive?" Bingqian's servant girl, Xiao Lu, teased.

Liu Bingqian was at a loss for words. She could feel her face get hotter and hotter, "Xiao Lu. What are you blabbering about. If you keep talking, you won't get to eat dinner tonight...."

.....

"Brother Zifeng, that sword is so cool. Let me play around with it. Let me be cool too!" Ye Huichi quickly ran towards Ye Zifeng.

"If you want it, then here you go!"

Ye Zifeng smiled and threw the sword towards Ye Huichi. It looked as if he was throwing some candy to a little kid.

"Thanks Bro!" Ye Huichi was very excited. He immediately waved the sword around with a proud expression on his face.

One should know that this wasn't any mere grade 3 spirit tier sword. This sword symbolized the strength that Ye Zifeng had in order to obtain first place in the gathering.

With this sword, the young beauties of Leizhou city will all fall onto their knees when they see him. Now, everyone who witnessed the gathering

today will not look down on him anymore.

"Young master Ye, I'll give you 5000 gold coins for your sword. How about it?"

"Ha. What a joke. You want to buy this sword for 5000 gold coins? That's a ripoff. I'll buy it for 10,000 gold coins!"

Of course, these people were only joking around and won't actually buy it. Even if they had the money, Ye Zifeng probably won't sell it either.

Ye Xueyi started to laugh, "Brother Zifeng. This expensive prize... you really threw it to Huichi and let him play around with it. If he chips it or something, won't you be sad?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "A sword is used to fight against enemies, not for decoration. Even if it's chipped, it is still a grade 3 spirit tier sword.

Ye Chen walked over and smiled at Ye Zifeng, "From what I know about you, I thought that you would definitely choose the Ocean Containing Bottle. But you've surprised me and picked the grandest prize instead."

"As a fourth stage qi refining disciples, I can't really use the Ocean Containing Bottle yet. Also, since it can only help in increasing cultivation speed, I'm not really that interested in it."

Ye Chen was shocked, "Not interested in increasing cultivation speed? Are you gonna be like my good for nothing son and fool around all day?"

Without thinking, Ye Chen started to bad mouth his own son...

When he realized, he laughed bitterly. It seems like everyone's opinion of Ye Zifeng had changed after this gathering. If Ye Zifeng can help the Ye clan change its destiny, then why would he need to curry favors with the Liu clan?

"I want to look grand. I got the sword so I can wave it around and show off a bit."

"This....." Ye Chen thought about it. It was normal for Ye Zifeng to want to show off after everything that had happened to him.

By choosing the sword, he was able to significantly lower the other clan's

vigilance towards him. The experts in the other clans can probably see that the Ocean Containing Bottle can help in cultivation and for Ye Zifeng not to choose it, it showed that he was still a child at heart. He depicted himself as someone who liked to show off and goof around. Like Lin Ke, many people felt that his future was limited and that he only won by luck. By doing this, he was able to reduce the amount of enemies that he had.

Of course, he didn't choose the sword for this reason only. He thought about it carefully and decided.

Ye Zifeng smiled and stood up, "Alright. Now that the award ceremony is over, you should announce the benefits of being the number one clan in Leizhou City."

Because the defending champions had lost, there was a second award ceremony. Even if the Liu clan lost, they can't leave empty handed since they couldn't participate in the first part of the gathering.

This time, it wasn't a simple reward. It included the flow of the market in Leizhou City.

It was because of this that the Wang clan was so depressed. Now, for five years, their income will be less than the Ye clan's.

"Liu clan, since you guys lost as the champions, you will relinquish the shares of the market between Leizhou City and Tiandao City to the Ye clan. According to the rules, you guys can still control 20% of the market. Also, in the next gathering, you will need to participate in the first part once again. Do you understand?" Shen Li's expression was stern. He had to uphold his attitude as an elder when announcing important news.

Liu Mu, the Liu clan's clan leader took a deep breath and sighed.

'Yes. Thank you Elder Shen."

"Ye clan. As the new champions, you will receive 30% of the market share between Leizhou City and Tiandao City. Next time, you guys will automatically qualify for the second round. Any questions?"

Silent. The entire place was silent.

“30% What? How can the Ye clan have 10 times our market share?”

“Ten times? To a small clan like ours, it’s at least 20 times more!”

“Alright stop talking about it. If you guys don’t think it’s fair, then you can try to win the gathering 5 years later.”

Ye Chongtian didn’t take notice of all the chattering around him and laughed loudly, “Haha..... No questions at all. Thanks Elder.”

Before the gathering, the fallen Ye clan only held 3% of the market share. Now in one go, the Ye clan received 30% of the market share. The entire clan was very happy.

To be able to obtain one third of the market share in one go, the gathering was important to every clan in Leizhou City. If it wasn’t for this, then Ye Chongtian wouldn’t have ran to other branches and lower his head in order to find someone to participate.

“Quiet down everyone.” Shen Li clapped his hands.

“Now that the battles have finished and the rewards have been given out....As the host, I hereby announce that this year’s Heavenly Clan Gathering has concluded.

Once Shen Li announced the conclusion of the gathering, most of the people began to leave. However, before they left, they went to the Ye clan and congratulated them. The Xiao clan, Rong clan, Wang clan and even the Liu clan on the other hand was feeling a little depressed.

“Heyyy, Brother Chongtian, remember me?

Ye Chongtian looked confusingly at the person in front of him. He didn’t recognize this guy at all.

“Aish.... Brother Chongtian, it seems like your memory is failing you. It’s me, Old Liu. Twenty years ago, we used traveled together and became sworn brothers.....”

Before this Old Liu could continue talking, he was pushed away by someone else, “Go Go Go. Do you think that you can still call him your brother? When the Ye clan fell, you disappeared and never visited him

again for twenty whole years. Unlike you, I, Old Lu, treated these twenty years as if only one day had passed."

Old Liu immediately hollered back at Old Lu, "Yeah right. These twenty years, your Lu clan has been hating on the Ye clan and wanted to exterminate them.

In the next moment, both Old Lu and Old Liu were pushed away.

"Uncle Chongtian, don't bother with these losers. You should make deals with my Gao clan. After all, we've respected and treated the Ye clan nicely all these years.

"Heh. Don't try to act fake in front of Chongtian. Your Gao clan's young master is one of Wang Lin's lackeys who loved to bully Ye Zifeng back in the days.

Once the Gao clan's clan leader heard about this, his face immediately paled and became speechless. They had hit a sore spot. He regained his composure quickly and replied, "That's because my son is still young. A few years back, you were the one badmouthing Ye Zifeng in public. What do you have to say about that?"

"You're lying...."

"No, you're lying...."

"Enough." Ye Chongtian snorted loudly, "Stop arguing. The past is in the past. I don't want to talk about it anymore. From now on, if you guys want to use our market channels or talk about business, then come over the day after tomorrow. I will consider everything then."

Twenty years ago, Ye Chongtian by himself was a domineering force in Leizhou City and was well respected. Even now, he is still considered a strong expert in Leizhou City due to his cultivation level. His words are to be respected.

Ye Chongtian had a complicated expression on his face. It looked sour and bitter and yet it showed some signs of happiness. All this was given to him by his son, Ye Zifeng. Thirty years the river flows east and thirty years later the river flows west. It was finally time for the Ye clan to shine again.

Ye Chongtian regretfully sighed and turned around, “Ah Zifeng. Father was wrong. Father has neglected you. From now on, I will……”

While saying that, he realized that something was wrong, “Hold on….. Where did Zifeng go?”

Chapter 49: Alchemy Competition?

After looking around everywhere, Ye Chongtian couldn't find Ye Zifeng anywhere.

"Huichi, where did your cousin go?"

Ye Huichi rubbed the back of his head and embarrassingly smiled, "When Elder Shen was announcing the conclusion of the gathering, he took the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword and left first....."

"What? He left? Why didn't you stop him?" Ye Chongtian was shocked.

"Why would I stop him? He wanted to bring his sword out to show off a bit. I would do the same."

Ye Chongtian sighed and glanced at him, "Bring the sword out to show off.... Do you think that he's like you?" Saying that, he felt that something was off. A few years back, he's been using Ye Huichi to set an example for Ye Zifeng, telling Zifeng to be more like Huichi. But now, it was the other way around....."

.....

"Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng! Why are you walking so fast? Stop!"

Liu Bingqian was running after him and had a bitter look on her face. At the same time, the sun was setting and the afterglow of the sunlight shined on her face, making her look very beautiful.

She's been watching Ye Zifeng the entire time and was the first one who saw Ye Zifeng leave. Right when everyone was celebrating, Ye Zifeng left and she followed him.

Ye Zifeng smiled and suddenly stopped. He turned around, making her run into him.

Liu Bingqian was startled and immediately took a few steps back, "Why didn't you tell me that you were going to stop? You made me run into you!"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "You wanted me to stop so I complied. Now you're

saying that it's my fault?"

"I don't care. It's your fault." Liu Bingqian had a stubborn look on her face.

Ye Zifeng didn't have time to argue with her so he cupped his hands and properly greeted her, "For Miss Bingqian to follow me for so long, I don't think it's to argue with me right?"

"This..... Of course I'm not here to argue with you. But.... Why are you running away so fast? It seems as if you have something important to do."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's getting dark. I'm afraid that all the weapon stores are about to close. I need to get going."

"You're going to a weapon store?" Liu Bingqian thought about it and nodded as if she understood what he meant, "So that's how it is. You want buy a sheath for that sword right? Well hold on for a bit.... I have something to give you. It won't take much time..."

"You want to give me something?" This time, it was Ye Zifeeng who was startled. He thought that Liu Bingqian was here to beat him up or something. He would have never thought that she was here to give him something.

Liu Bingqian giggled and took a sealed letter out of her robe, "Here. This is it."

Ye Zifeng looked suspiciously at the letter and raised his brow, "This.... Could this be a....."

"Love letter?"

Under these circumstances, it was the only thing that Ye Zifeng could think of...

Liu Bingqian yelped in embarrassment and looked down.

"What are you saying? Open it and read it. This is an invitation." Her eyes looked very delicate and paired with her red face, she looked very beautiful.

"An invitation?" Ye Zifeng looked at Liu Bingqian. He opened it up and

saw words appeared in front of him.

"Yup Yup!" Liu Bingqian nodded with an excited expression on her face. "I can see that you liked to practice alchemy. When I received this, I thought about you and thought that you would be interested so I came here to give it to you."

"An alchemy competition invitation from the Muyun clan in Tiandao City? It's an invitation from from your master, that old devil Muyun. But why is it so soon? It's happening in ten days.

When Ye Zifeng was chatting with Liu Bingqian in the past, they've talked about her master, the old devil from the Muyun clan before. He was the one who taught Bingqian to concoct pills. To be able to turn a qi refining stage disciple into a huang tier alchemist, this guy wasn't simple at all.

"Yeah. Do you want to go with me?"

Ye Zifeng's eyes immediately lit up. The only reason that he participated in the Heavenly Clan Gathering was for the glory of the clan and so he can win a nice prize. However, an alchemy competition was different. He was a crazed alchemist. There was nothing better than a competition where he can win rare ingredients as prizes. This invitation means a lot to him!

"Miss Bingqian, this is too much for me. I think that you should find someone else....." However, Ye Zifeng gracefully declined.

Liu Bingqian softly laughed, "In Leizhou City, there isn't anyone that can knows as much alchemy as I do. Other than you, there isn't any other good candidates out there. We can go together and represent Leizhou City.

"So that how it is. If we go, we'll be representing Leizhou City....." Ye Zifeng pondered for a bit. He knows that Bingqian looked for him to participate because she had seen him concoct the Thunder Spirit Pill. She knows how good he is.

However..... My Ye clan beat your Liu clan. If i go with you to Tiandao city, I'm afraid that the people in your clan will start to gossip. So I don't think I should....."

“Who cares if they gossip? I, Liu Bingqian don’t care about what other people think of me. This is one of my principles. Even my father’s word can’t shake me. Unless, the reason you don’t want to go is that you’re not giving me face.

Seeing how she keeps on arguing with him, if he doesn’t go, he would be disrespecting her.

“Alright fine. I’ll promise you then. Ten days later, i’ll go to Tiandao City with you to participate in the alchemy competition.

“Really? You won’t back out?” Bingqian’s face turned red and she began to smile happily.

“I won’t back out.” Ye Zifeng reaffirmed her, “However, even if I agreed, you still need to get your clan to agree.”

“I’ll think of a way.” Bingqian confidently replied.

“Also, even after what happened during the gathering, you still came to invite me. I really have to thank you, Miss Bingqian.”

Bingqian smiled back, “Didn’t I tell you not to call me Miss Bingqian anymore. Just call me by Bingqian.....”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Alright then. If I just call you Bingqian, I don’t have to think that you’re part of the Liu clan.

Hearing this, Bingqian expression darkened and let out a long sigh.

The two clans has tension from the past and now after the gathering, the tension grew more and more. However, this is private matter. Bingqian was a nice person and he couldn’t disregard her just because of the tension between the clans.

“Alright. I’m done here. Next time we meet, we shall talk about our plans in the upcoming competition.” Bingqian was feeling better and better. She didn’t want to waste anymore of Ye Zifeng’s time.

Ye Zifeng confusingly looked at her, “Next time we meet? When will that be?”

Liu Bingqian then pouted playfully, “Did you forget? I bought you for

one month. Unless you want to go back on your words”

“Oh... That....I wouldn’t dare. I won’t go back on my words.” Ye Zifeng was surprised. At that time, he really needed ingredients for that Soul Binding Pill. Now that he thought about it, he shouldn’t really be doing something like this in the future.

“Alright then, when you have time, come to the treasure hall to find me. I’ll be there.” Bingqian happily replied.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Alright. I promise I’ll come.”

“Well I gotta go first. I think my father and sister are trying to find me.”

“Be careful on the way back!” Ye Zifeng reminded her and walked towards the weapon store.

Liu Bingqian watched as Ye Zifeng disappear into the store and then muttered, “Hmph. That Ye Blockhead! How can there be someone so slow and stupid in the world!”

.....

“Boss Chang. Is Boss Chang here?” Ye Zifeng opened the doors to the weapon store and started calling out.

The people who lived near the square were usually all merchants and workers. As merchants, they usually won’t go and watch the gathering.

Ye Zifeng ran here right when the gathering concluded so many of the people here don’t know about Ye Zifeng’s achievements.

Boss Chang’s full name is Chang Wucheng. When he heard Ye Zifeng calling for him, he walked out with a towel on his shoulders.

“Ye clan’s trash young master, what are you doing here? Didn’t you see that the sun is setting already? If you want to buy anything, come back tomorrow.....”

Ye Zifeng took out a large pouch of gold coins from his robe.

“Here is one hundred gold coins, but I’m not here to buy anything.”

Chang Wucheng was startled, “If you’re not buying anything, then what

are you doing here? Why are you taking out one hundred gold coins?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and showed the owner his shining Ancient Violet Cloud Sword.

“Oh. Nothing much. I want you to melt this sword down in your furnace as soon as possible!”

Chapter 50: Melting the treasure sword!

“Oh my god.....” Chang Wucheng held the sword and his pupils shrank. He was so shocked that he couldn’t make any sound.

Even if someone who doesn’t know anything about swords held it and examined it, they can tell that the sword was very impressive.

“Ye Zifeng. Do you have brain damage or something? Why are you trying to melt down such a nice sword?”

Chang Wucheng observed the sword some more, ‘This... If I’m not wrong.... This sword is a spirit tier weapon!”

“Good eyes boss. That’s right. This is a spirit tier weapon.”

Chang Wucheng had a ridiculing smile on his face, “I get it. You probably got this sword using some underhand method and couldn’t sell the sword so you came here asking me to melt it. Isn’t that right?”

Ye Zifeng only laughed, “One hundred gold coins. I will use one hundred gold coins to pay for the fees and have you keep this secret. If you don’t want to do it, I’ll go find someone else.....” He knew what kind of person Chang Wucheng was. This guy love making money more than anything else.

Saying that, Ye Zifeng started to put the bag of gold coins back into his robe.

Seeing this, Chang Wucheng immediately stopped him and smiled.

“Little brother. Hold on. For one hundred gold coins? I got you.”

Ye Zifeng stopped his movements and held the bag of money in the air.

“How long will it take? Give me a good estimate.....”

“If you want me to melt down a spirit tier sword then... It’ll take around two days.” Chang Wucheng smiled.

“150 gold coins. If I add another fifty gold coins and have you work harder, then how long will it take?” Ye Zifeng took out another bag of gold coins.

Chang Wucheng only wanted to tease Ye Zifeng for a bit but who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would take out fifty more gold coins.

"One day. I will work all night and finish it by tomorrow."

While saying this, Chang Wucheng was confused. Why did Ye Zifeng want to melt down this treasured sword? Why was he in such a hurry? Could it be that he actually used some underhand method to obtain this sword?

After hearing that it was going to take until tomorrow, Ye Zifeng shook his head and started to leave.

Chang Wucheng hurriedly stopped him, "Hold on. Two hundred gold coins. I'll start immediately and do my best. I will use all my resources to help you melt this sword. Give me 2 hours. I'll skip dinner and and won't do anything else until I'm done!"

One should know that a blacksmith's most profitable job was not selling weapons but melting and smelting weapon and ores. There weren't many blacksmiths in Leizhou City so it was a very profitable business. They didn't need to use many resources. All they needed was their own labor. If Ye Zifeng really gives 200 gold coins, then Chang Wucheng would make a profit of 190 gold coins!

"You should've said so earlier. 200 gold coins? No problem." Ye Zifeng smiled and put 200 gold coins on the table without even blinking.

If Ye Huichi found that that Ye Zifeng went and melted his sword right after he receiving it, he would definitely go crazy.

"Wow. Ye clan's young master is sure extravagant." Chang Wucheng complimented Ye Zifeng while cursing him inwards.

"However, Young master Ye, are you sure you won't regret melting this sword?" After Ye Zifeng showed that he has money, this Boss Chang started to call him Young master Ye instead of trash. This shows how money rules the world.

"I definitely won't. This ancient sword's spirit liquid will be very useful to me."

“Very useful? Are you joking? Whatever. I don’t know what kind of disease you contracted and I don’t care. I’ll just do as you say and turn to sword into liquid for you. Don’t regret it later.”

“No problem.” Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded.

Looking at how determined Ye Zifeng was, Boss Chang could only bitterly laugh and shake his head. He opened up his furnace and lit it up. Since he had Ye Zifeng’s permission and confirmation, he can now start working on it. He took the sword and threw it into the furnace.

However, this was a spirit tier sword so it won’t melt that easily. Boss Chang got up and got some special ingredients from the back room. When he got back to the furnace, his expression suddenly turned very serious.

This was because he can’t be careless with 200 gold coins on the line. To him, not only was the money on the line, his pride as a blacksmith didn’t allow him to fail.

……

After he melted the sword, he retrieved the spirit liquid of the ancient meteorite that melted.

This spirit tier molten meteorite was the real reason why Ye Zifeng picked the sword as his reward.

“Young master Ye, I’ve finished within two hours. Come and take a look.”

Chang Wucheng was breathing heavily and profusely sweating. In these two hours, he had poured all of his energy into melting the sword.

“Huh? You’re done?” Ye Zifeng was sleeping on the side and was awoken by Boss Chang. Considering that he had been preparing for the gathering for the week, it wasn’t surprising that Ye Zifeng was feeling very tired. He worked very hard to concoct the two soul binding pills and then he had to endure the illusions on the heavenly stairs while defending himself against the two elders. He was not only physically tired, but mentally tired as well.

He used these two hours to catch up on some sleep.

“Young master Ye, all of your meteorite spirit liquid is in here.”

Ye Zifeng got up and retrieved the jade box from Boss Chang. A purple aura surrounded the box and an ancient odor extruded from the box.

“Mhm. Nicely done.” Ye Zifeng nodded.

“Since I’ve done my job, then….” Chang Wucheng started walking towards table with the gold coins.

“Then…. You can give me back that little bit of spirit liquid that you kept and then you can take the money.”

Chang Wucheng was shocked and rebutted, ‘What do you mean? You think I stole your spirit liquid?”

“Come on. I don’t have time to waste here. Don’t think that because I was sleeping that I don’t know what you did. I’ll have you know that I know exactly how much molten metal was extracted from the sword and exactly how much you stole.”

Ye Zifeng didn’t even need to be awake to know what happened. Just by looking at how much liquid was in the box, he can tell that some of it was missing. As an alchemist, he needs to know and be able to estimate a precise amount of ingredients needed for refining. By weighing the sword, he knows exactly how much spirit liquid can be produced.

This Chang Wucheng would never be able to cheat Ye Zifeng in 100 lifetimes.

Seeing how Boss Chang wasn’t reacting, Ye Zifeng continued to talk, “Do you really need me to say it? You took about 80 drops of the spirit liquid, almost as much as half the box. It’s fine if you took a little bit, but you were greedy. Do you think you can fool me after taking so much?”

Chang Wucheng’s mouth twitched and slapped his own head, “Oh my. I’m getting forgetful. I couldn’t fit it all into that box so I stored the rest in a smaller box. If you didn’t say anything, I would’ve forgotten about it.” He thought that since Ye Zifeng was so young, he was easy to fool. Who

would've thought that Ye Zifeng would know the precise amount that he stole. Unlucky.

Ye Zifeng coldly looked at him, "Alright. I don't need you to explain anything. Just go get it."

The imposing expression that Ye Zifeng had startled Chang Wucheng. He immediately went to the back and brought the small box out.

"That's better." Ye Zifeng smiled again. He took the box and left.

.....

Ye Zifeng left the city and went into the wilderness. When he reached his destination, it was already very late.

However, it was better for him to work at night. No one would be able to see him and he can work peacefully.

Under the bright moonlight, he walked towards the place where he kept his cauldron.

With so much meteorite spirit liquid, I refuse to believe that I can't turn you into a profound tier cauldron." Ye Zifeng smiled as he talked to himself.

Chapter 51: Profound Tier Cauldron!

Dans were separated into four categories: Heaven, Earth, Profound, Huang. This was the same for cauldrons.

However, a profound tier cauldron cannot necessarily concoct a profound tier pill. The cauldron can only aid the alchemist and increase his success rate. If someone who doesn't know much alchemy uses a heaven tier cauldron to concoct pills, there is a possibility that they might make slag.

In the pitch black night, the entire area was silent.

"What a quiet place.... I can finally concentrate on my work.

Ye Zifeng gather some tree leaves and covered the entire cauldron. He then tied the cauldron onto a rock and went to gather some firewood. He then placed the firewoods under the cauldron used some of his qi to ignite it. He continuously added firewood to increase the output of the fire.

This time, he wasn't concocting pills. He was concocting a cauldron!

As they say, having a good tool is the prerequisite to the successful execution of a job. After this cauldron becomes one of the profound tier, he doesn't have to worry about getting another cauldron in the near future anymore. This was all thanks to the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword. If it wasn't for the sword, he would not have been able to find so much spirit tier spirit liquid.

The furnace burned until it turned red and sparks started to flying around.

Ye Zifeng closed his eyes and inserted his qi into the cauldron. While doing that, he used his other hand to pour some of the spirit liquid into the cauldron. In a split second, white smoke appeared followed by a sizzling sound.

The spirit liquid cannot be all poured in at the same time or else the cauldron will explode due to the sheer force of the spirit energy.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

As the common tier furnace tried to absorb the spirit energy of the liquid, it began to shake violently. It looked as if it was about to explode.

Seeing this, Ye Zifeng wasn't surprised at all. From his experience, he knew that the cauldron was no where close to exploding.

He smiled and then added more of the spirit liquid.

This time, the cauldron did not only shake. Streaks of flame appeared from the cauldron. Sparks were flying around and landed on Ye Zifeng's arms, creating bright red spots on it. Ye Zifeng didn't care about such trivial things and continued to work on refining the cauldron.

"This should be enough....." Ye Zifeng looked at how the furnace had changed.

If it was a low level alchemist refining the cauldron, the spirit liquid won't be enough. However Ye Zifeng was skilled in doing this. As long as he had the material, he could endlessly upgrade this cauldron.

When Ye Zifeng poured the spirit liquid in for the third time, flames burst into the sky creating a bright red light. Every single part of the cauldron started to absorb the spirit liquid and refine itself. Patterns began to form around the cauldron. It looked as if stars were carved onto the cauldron.

This was a sign that the cauldron was starting to change and was turning into a profound tier cauldron. Ye Zifeng began to smile.

"Haha. With this profound tier cauldron, why would I need that dumb Ocean Containing Bottle!' Ye Zifeng laughed to himself.

Even if the Ocean Containing Bottle can greatly increase one's cultivation, its usage was limited. If one needs two months of time to get from the 4th stage to the 5th stage of qi refining, the bottle might help decrease the training time to one month.

However, making pills and ingesting them was far better. This was one of the reasons why alchemists were so well respected. It was much harder to become and train in the art of alchemy than the way of martial arts. If it wasn't for the fact that Ye Zifeng loved alchemy so much, his cultivation

level would have been much higher than the Martial Lord realm in his past life.

The liquid inside the cauldron turned into steam and disappeared.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng inserted some cold qi into the furnace to try and cool it down a bit. In a few moments, he then greedily poured the rest of the spirit liquid into the furnace.

“Boom!” After receiving so much spirit energy at once, the mysterious patterns on the started to glow brighter and brighter.

The bright moonlight shined onto the cauldron and illuminated it. The entire cauldron looked as if it was golden.

He looked at the cauldron, “Wow. This Ancient Violet cloud Sword’s qi energy is pretty good. To be able to refine the cauldron to such a state.

As a reward for the gathering, the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword is definitely not something simple. He started to feel a bit of regret. It would’ve been great if the sect gave him two swords. One can be used to improve his cauldron and he can use the other one to show off.

To want two swords from the sect. He was being too greedy. In the eyes of other people, this prize was too much already. Heck even Shi Chen’s prize was very extravagant.

Ye Zifeng started to clean the cauldron up. There was only one more step before he can make it a true profound tier cauldron.

He took out the dagger that he got from Wang Lin and put his hands into the cauldron. He started tracing the the mysterious patterns inside.

Sparks flew everywhere and landed all over Ye Zifeng’s arms. However, he didn’t even flinch and continued to trace it. He knew that he couldn’t make a mistake at all. If he move and messed up slightly, it would greatly affect the quality of the cauldron.

He an alchemist like Ye Zifeng, the cauldron was basically an extension of his limbs.

While tracing over the 32 star patterns, they started to become clearer

and clearer. The violent energy in the cauldron moved towards the pattern and started to calm down.

After tracing over the last pattern, the cauldron was completed. All 32 patterns started to glow and a bright light appeared from the cauldron into the horizons. After a bit, it disappeared.

“Finally done!” Ye Zifeng smiled and finally relaxed.

He inserted his qi into the cauldron and after a while, it turned red and the 32 patterns started to glow.

This was something that can only appear on a profound tier cauldron. This showed that he was successful in upgrading his cauldron.

Now with the same ingredients, he can make a higher grade pill than before!

“Alright. Now that i’m done, I’ll call it a day.” He didn’t have any ingredients on him so he decided to go home.

Ye Zifeng hid the cauldron again and went back home.

.....

“Where is that idiot Zifeng. Xueyi, do you think that he might be attacked by a rival clan or something?”

Ye Chongtian was worrying about Ye Zifeng and was walking back and forth in his room.

Ye Xueyi sat there and giggled, “Father, didn’t you always say that brother Zifeng was fooling around outside? Why do you think that he’s being attacked this time?” She was already used to Ye Zifeng coming home late so she wasn’t that worried.

“This....” After the Heavenly Clan Gathering, Ye Chongtian knew that he was wrong in the past. His son’s strength had far surpassed his expectation. In his mind, he decided to discipline Ye Zifeng when he came back. He will use the Ye clan’s resources and turn him into the Ye clan’s successor.

“This.....Let’s just say I was wrong in the past. How can the son of Ye

Chongtian like to go out and fool around.....However, he's still not back yet. How about I got out and look for him."

Ye Xueyi smiled and wanted to say something. However someone appeared in front of them.

"You don't have to go and find me. I'm back." Ye Zifeng laughed and walked into the room.

"Brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi smiled and ran towards him.

At that time, Both Xueyi and Chongtian noticed that Ye Zifeng was missing something.

"Hey Zifeng. Where did that Ancient Violet Cloud Sword go? How come I don't see it."

Chapter 52: I've been waiting for you

"The Ancient Violet Cloud Sword? I asked Boss Chang to melt it down for me....." Ye Zifeng put down his belongings and nonchalantly answered.

Silence. The entire place became silent. It was as if time was frozen.

"What? You melted that treasured sword down?" Ye Chongtian gulped. His neck became stiff and his eyes bulged out so much that he could see his own nose.

The expression on Ye Xueyi's face changed as well. She was so shocked that she couldn't say anything.

Ye Chongtian and Ye Xueyi both looked at each other and came back to their sense.

"Brother Zifeng. You're joking right? Why did you go melt down your sword?" Ye Xueyi didn't believe her brother at all.

A normal person wouldn't go and treat this treasure sword as scrap iron and melt it down.

Ye Zifeng solemnly looked at them, "I'm not lying. I'm pretty sure that Boss Chang will spread the news out tomorrow morning."

His eyes were clear and calm. It didn't look like he was lying. However, who would believe such a thing?

"Zifeng. Let me ask you this one more time. Did you really go and melt down your sword?" Ye Chongtian spoke each word slowly, making sure that Ye Zifeng knows what he means.

"I think that I was clear with you guys. I melted down the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword." Ye Zifeng had an extremely dull expression on his face. He didn't care about it at all. They would find out sooner or later so he might as well tell them now.

Hearing this, Ye Chongtian's face turned pale and became very angry. He almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

He forced himself to calm down, ‘Zifeng. I know that you won due to your own strength and that the sword is yours. The whole Ye clan is very proud of you. However, tell me why. Why would you go and melt down this treasured sword. What are you planning to do?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Isn’t this better? We can let the whole city know that I’m crazy. They’ll start calling me crazy young master ye instead of trash young master ye now. I can use it to my advantage.....”

“You.....” Ye Chongtian stared at him. Unbelievable. What kind of brain disease did this kid contract?

Ye Zifeng continued to smile, “After such a performance during the gathering, I’ve probably made a lot of enemies. If I go around showing off my sword, people would be taunted. Who knows what they would do? Maybe they’ll kidnap me and kill me or something.”

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi understood what he meant, “So you’re trying to say that you want people to underestimate you and lower their vigilance towards you so you melted the sword.”

“That’s right. Exactly.” Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. This was one of the reasons. The other reason is that he could use the spirit liquid of the sword. However, he didn’t want to tell them that yet.

“This..... So that’s it. Zifeng, to be able to think over such complicated things at such a young age, it seems like our Ye clan does have a future!”

Ye Chongtian was finally able to calm down again. Ye Zifeng winning the gathering was the first step of the Ye clan’s revival.

However, the Wang clan and the Liu clan won’t sit around and do nothinig. This is because the resources in Leizhou City was limited. They need to be able to protect themselves.

“Zifeng, I don’t care about the sword anymore. Starting from tomorrow, I’ll be teaching you the Ye clan’s secret moves. From now on, the Ye clan’s resources are your resources. You just need to say something and I’ll get it for you.”

“Really?”

Ye Chongtian laughed loudly, “If I said it, I’ll do it.”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up, “I don’t really need some secret technique but can you get me some contribution points from the sect? As a Martial Lord, he doesn’t need someone in the Martial Spirit realm to give him pointers.

“You want to exchange for stuff?” Ye Chongtian asked shockingly.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “Well I could force someone to give me contribution points but I don’t want to bother them for something so small.”

“You can force someone to give you contribution points? Who don’t want want to bother? Who CAN you bother for points?” Ye Chongtian was confused. If a disciple wants some contribution points, they have to complete missions given by the sect. How can his son force someone to give him points?

Ye Zifeng mysteriously smiled and didn’t answer. He still had some of Elder Shen and Elder Zhao’s soul spirits inside of him. If he really wants some contribution points, it’s not that bad. However, if they ask them for points, they’ll be wondering what he wants it for and bring trouble to himself.

“Alright. It’s only contribution points. I’m good friends with some people from the sect and can get you some. How much do you want?”

“I’ll take 100 points first.” Ye Zifeng wanted to make some more Soul Binding Pills to reinforce his control over soul spirits. There was a time limit on how long the effects last. He needs to take another one before going to Tiandao City.

Only like this can he continue to communicate with the two elders. If something goes wrong, he can call for them and get them to help out. The two elders were basically Ye Zifeng’s bodyguard for the year.

“Alright. One hundred points right? That shouldn’t be too hard.... I’ll get it for you quickly.”

Ye Chongtian let out a long sigh. Recently, he’s been shocked by everything that Ye Zifeng had said. To hear such a normal number coming

out of his mouth, Ye Chongtian felt relieved.

"Thanks Father."

"Oh right. Zifeng. I've thought of another way for the Ye clan to quickly become part of the three great clans in Leizhou City. However...." Ye Chongtian was hesitating. He didn't know if he want to say it or not.

"However what.....?" Ye Zifeng had a bad feeling about it.

"Actually it's about the wedding you have with the Liu clan's second miss, Liu Ningzi... I think that if you guys can be together....."

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted, "So you want to use me to get a hold of the Liu clan. It's a good idea but let me say this now. That day, Liu Ningzi humiliated me. Even if you want her to become my concubine, I won't accept it."

Ye Xueyi was getting mad as well, "Yeah. Let's not talk about if Brother Zifeng agrees or not. I won't agree to it either! Dad, you didn't see how vicious she looked that day when she came to cancel the engagement!"

Ye Chongtian shuddered.... It's was Zifeng's wedding. Who cares if Xueyi agrees to it or not..."

"Actually, Liu clan's second miss is very beautiful and is very elegant. You can marry her first and if you're not satisfied later, you can divorce her....." Ye Chongtian awkwardly laughed. He knows that he can't talk his son into it so he can only play this card.

"No way. That'll ruin my reputation later on." Ye Zifeng had a resolute expression on his face. When he talked, he sounded very angry as well.

Ye Chongtian sighed, "Fine...."

He was the clan leader and Ye Zifeng's father. But recently when he talked with his son, he feels pressured by him.

.....

The next day, when Ye Zifeng appeared in the sect, he was noticed by everyone. This was because he took first place in the heavenly stairs competition and then beat the peak qi refining Liu Bingqian later.

The title of trash was something in the past now. Now he was the champion of Leizhou City.

However, compared to the gathering yesterday, they were more interested in what happened to the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword.

“Did you guys hear about it? Ye Zifeng melted that treasure sword. Look. he doesn’t have it today.”

“He melted the sword? Are you for real? Did he get brain damage from the fight with Miss Bingqian?”

“Crazy Ye. Don’t call him Ye Supertrash anymore. Just call him Crazy Ye from now on.....”

Hearing all these insults, Ye Xueyi smiled and her eyes lit up.

“Wow Brother Zifeng. You were right. Everyone is calling you crazy today!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “During the gathering, many people held back their feelings. Whether it is admiration or envy, I need to let them vent their anger. If they hold it in for too long, they might come find me for trouble.”

“So brother Zifeng. You’re saying that you’re afraid of them?”

Ye Zifeng shook his head and laughed, “Yeah. Of course. If I waste my precious time to fight them, then I won’t have time to increase my cultivation. You should know that that I’ve been stuck at the fourth stage of qi refining for a while now! I can’t waste any more time....”

At that moment, A cold murderous aura flew towards the Ye siblings.

Ye Zifeng lifted his and continued to talk, “However... it seems like not everyone is satisfied by calling me crazy. There are some people who are still very angry.

It was Wang Tianzhi. If it wasn’t for Ye Zifeng, the dark horse of the tournament, he would have been first place.

Now, he was here in front of Ye Zifeng. Next to him were Wang Mengxi and Wang Ruoxing.

For people like Wang Lin and Xiao Mu, they stood by the side like nobodies, not wanting to participate at all. Ye Zifeng was able to beat Miss Bingqian who was at the peak of qi refining, people like Xiao Mu and Wang Lin were nothing to him.

The only person that dared to fight against him was Wang Tianzhi.

“Ye Zifeng. I’ve been waiting for you”

Chapter 53: I'll play with you until the end

It's not like Ye Zifeng didn't expect Wang Tianzhi to come mess with how, but, he didn't think that Wang Tianzhi would come so quickly.

In the Wang clan, other than Wang Lin, the other members of the younger generation were at the 8th stage of qi refining. Wang Tianzhi was at the peak of qi refining. If they really fought, then Ye Zifeng will definitely lose.

Afterall, he relied on the fact that Bingqian held back to beat her. He had to use quite a bit to strength to beat her even while she was holding back. If they fought again, he would definitely lose.

"Oh? What does Young Master Wang need that you are willing to wait here for me?"

Wang Tianzhi let out a cold laugh, "You know what I want." A cold aura seeped out from his body. His expression was not friendly at all.

Ye Xueyi coldly looked at him, "If you want to fight my brother, you'll have to get through me first!"

"Don't be rash." Ye Zifeng pulled his sister back and closed his eyes, "The sect prohibits students from fighting against each other. Do you, Wang Tianzhi, want to break the rules?"

"Rules? Let me ask you this. Do you know who set these rules? If my Wang clan wants to do something in Leizhou City, no one can stop us!"

Ye Zifeng talked to Shen Li through his soul spirit and then continued to smile, "No one can stop you? Haha! Do you think that the elders of the sect are all empty shells?"

Wang Tianzhi began to laugh as well and a mocking expression appeared on his face, "Do you think the elders are so bored to care about these trivial things? Even if I accidentally kill you today, the worst thing that will happen is that I will be expelled. That's nothing much. I'll just bring my siblings and train in the Profound Sect in Tiandao City."

"You want to kill me? You dare do such a thing? Can you handle the

consequences?" Ye Zifeng said this very loudly.

Wang Tianzhi was somewhat startled. He thought that he was being imposing but who would've thought that Ye Zifeng was even more imposing.

"Big Bro, don't be rash...." Wang Mengxi frowned. She didn't want her brother to go too far. However, before she can go talk to Wang Tianzhi, she was pulled back by Wang Ruoxing who looked fiercely at her, telling her not to but in.

Wang Tianzhi was very angry now, "You think that I won't dare? So what if I kill you today? There is no one that can stop me here!"

"Fine. If you want to kill me, then come at me! I'll play with you until the end." Ye Zifeng was as sturdy as a million year old mountain. Even with such a strong opponent in front of him, he didn't move and was not afraid at all.

Wang Tianzhi gritted his teeth and stared at Ye Zifeng. That guy still dared to talk back to him. Wang Tianzhi's eyes lit up and a sky blue colored sword appeared in his hands. A murderous aura exploded out.

Seeing this, the students who were watching the scene were so shocked that they all moved back a few steps. They all thought that they would only argue but they actually started to fight!

"Not good. That's Young master Wang's Sky Dancing Sword. I heard it's a grade 1 spirit tier weapon. It's very strong!"

"I heard that Wang Tianzhi rarely uses his sword and only used his fist in fights. When he brings his sword out, he is out to kill. Ye Zifeng, what are you standing there for? Run!"

"Ye Zifeng, did you really melt your Ancient Violet Cloud Sword? If you didn't, then bring it out right now! If i'm not wrong, it's probably in your interspatial ring right?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "I don't have it. I really did melt did down. Right now I don't have any weapons.....Wait. I almost forgot....."

Saying that, he reached into his robes and pulled out a dagger, “Wang Tianzhi, your brother gave this to me out of respect. Usually I would use this as a fruit knife but today I’ll use this to fight against you.”

Seeing this dagger, Wang Lin’s face sank and looked over at Wang Tianzhi, “Big brother. No matter what, you have to fight for me! Ye Zifeng has bullied me too much!”

Wang Tianzhi became even angrier, “Ye Zifeng. You’re really looking to die!” Originally, he wanted to get revenge for himself but now after Ye Zifeng reminded him, he has to get revenge for his brother as well. Now he won’t even hold back a tiny bit.

Qi exploded out from the Sky Dancing Sword and gloomy shadows appeared from the sword one by one.

“Sky Dancing Shadow. This is a spirit tier weapon’s skill! You should be grateful that you are able to die to this sword!”

Saying this, Wang Tianzhi disappeared with the shadows and when he reappeared, the Sky Dancing Sword was one inch away from Ye Zifeng’s throat.

However, Ye Zifeng had expected this to happen already so he’s been gathering his qi. When Wang Tianzhi and the sword reappeared, Ye Zifeng quickly dodged.

“Die!” After missing the first attack, Wang Tianzhi became angrier. Ye Zifeng looked like he was playing around with him.

Wang Tianzhi roared and continued to chase Ye Zifeng. However, Ye Zifeng didn’t want to fight with him at all. Everytime, Wang Tianzhi got closer, he moved away. When it looked like Wang Tianzhi was about to hit him, Ye Zifeng dodged.

Watching this, Wang Mengxi was shocked, “I feel like..... There’s something weird with Ye Zifeng.”

Wang Ruoxing also felt it, “Third sis, you’ve noticed.....”

Wang Mengxi nodded and became serious, “I can see it. Ye Zifeng

doesn't want to fight with big bro at all. He looks like he's trying to buy time. What is he waiting for?"

The two of them had a bad feeling about this...

The tempo of the battle was getting faster and faster. Wang Tianzhi was using all his strength to strike out. His aura surrounded the entire place, striking fear into many people's heart. Wang Tianzhi was in the air. With his sword, he strike fiercely towards Ye Zifeng.

"Be careful brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi was shocked and couldn't hold back anymore.

She used her qi and struck towards the attack and pulled Ye Zifeng behind her at the same time.

Seeing this, Wang Tianzhi coldly snorted, "Ye Zifeng.... Using your sister as a shield. Are you not embarrassed?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I didn't ask to do such a thing. Let's go again then."

"Alright. At least you're brave! Today, I, Wang Tianzhi, will grant you an intact corpse.

Ye Xueyi's expression was brimming with worry, "Brother Zifeng, I'm afraid that an accident might happen. I'll hold him back. You should run away."

Ye Zifeng shook his head and laughed, "No need. You'll find out soon why I've been enraging Wang Tianzhi. Just leave him to me."

"Brother Zifeng, you....."

He moved Xueyi to the side. He then turned to face Wang Tianzhi and provoked him by curling his finger, signaling for Wang Tianzhi to get at him, "Come on. Let's continue."

To curl your finger against an opponent in the middle of battle was a great insult.

Wang Tianzhi grinded his teeth, "YE ZI FENG! DIE!"

Just before, Ye Zifeng wasn't provoking that much. However, now... this

was a different story.

Wang Mengxi who was hesitating finally couldn't hold back anymore, "Big Bro, let's stop for today. Ye Zifeng is acting very strange."

"Why should I stop now? The show's just starting. If I don't kill Ye Zifeng today, my surname won't be Wang." Wang Tianzhi was about to explode. His veins were popping out already. Why would he stop now?

He moved like lightning, straight towards Ye Zifeng.

"Let's go!" Ye Zifeng laughed loudly. Ye Zifeng started to get serious. He watched as Wang Tianzhi appeared in front of him and dodged away very quickly.

"Ye Zifeng. Are you going to fight me or not?" Wang Tianzhi was so mad right now. To run while provoking someone. That's cowardly. Every strike that Wang Tianzhi sent out either hit nothing but air or was easily blocked. He felt like he was being controlled by Ye Zifeng.

Time slowly passed.

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng felt a weak ripple appear in his mind. When he felt this, his mouth curved up to reveal a sly smile.

The moment that he's been waiting for has finally arrived.

Wang Tianzhi took a deep breath. He can see that if he doesn't beat Ye Zifeng in one hit, he would be endlessly chasing him.

He was thinking to himself and suddenly noticed that Ye Zifeng was in a dead end. He was startled and then became very happy.

"Ye Zifeng. Your time has come!" Wang Tianzhi roared. He infused all of his anger and qi into his Sky Dancing sword. There was so much power going into the sword that it started to cry and tremble.

Ye Zifeng was cornered. He had nowhere to go. He was about to be killed by Wang Tianzhi.

The audience members who were watching all sighed and closed their eyes, not wanting to watch the results.

“Bang!” Wang Tianzhi’s sword was less than an inch away from Ye Zifeng’s chest before it was stopped for a frightening force.

Wang Tianzhi was startled. Before he can pull his sword back, he saw the sword shake and break down. His Sky Dancing Sword crumbled into hundreds of pieces.

“This....” Watching his treasured sword break down, he was feeling shocked. He didn’t understand what happened at all.

Suddenly, a white robed old man walked out from the crowd. It was Elder Shen, Shen Li.

Chapter 54: How can we let you be so domineering

“Zifeng has seen the elder.” Ye Zifeng smiled and politely greeted the elder. He looked as if he was the victor.

Shen Li was one of the more well known elders in the sect. This is because he usually goes around and discipline disciples to make himself feel better.

“Elder....Elder Shen.” Wang Tianzhi was shocked. His heart sank like a capsized ship. If it was a normal day, he would not be afraid of Shen Li. However, this time, he was caught breaking the rules in public, making him feel very nervous.

Shen Li’s face changed and coldly snorted, “Wang Tianzhi. You’ve got the nerves to fight inside the sect and try to kill someone? Do you think that we elders don’t exist?

Wang Tianzhi was stunned and tried to explain, “That is definitely not the case. Junior brother Ye and I are just exchanging pointers with each other. If you don’t believe me, you can ask them.....”

Shen Li looked over at the other people with a fierce expression. He knows that the Wang Clan is very domineering in Leizhou City and most of these people would listen to him. If they don’t, then they’ll have a hard time living in the city.

Everyone that was there shivered. Xiao Mu and Wang Lin both tried to explain for Wang Tianzhi.

“That’s right Elder Shen. We’re just exchanging pointers with junior brother Ye to get to know him better. We get along just fine.”

“Yeah. Just now, when Big bro took out his Sky Dancing Sword, he even let junior brother Ye feel it. However, the qi in the sword went out of control and big bro couldn’t control it. That’s why you saw the scene that you just saw.

They were obviously in the same group and were obviously trying to defend Wang Tianzhi. The people next to them started to talk and tried to help Wang Tianzhi.

Seeing how everyone was going against Ye Zifeng, an angry expression appeared on her face.

“Elder Shen, they’re lying. Wang Tianzhi was saying that he would kill Brother Zifeng before. If he doesn’t kill brother Zifeng, then his surname won’t be Wang!”

When she said that, everyone was startled and held in their laughters. Wang Tianzhi had embarrassed himself by saying such thing.

Wang Tianzhi’s expression sank and clenched his fist. If he knew the elder was going to be here, he would not have said such thing and turn himself into a laughing stock.

Shen Li coldly snorted. Actually he had talked with Ye Zifeng through his soul spirit already. He knew exactly what happen. Also, the lies by these bystanders, he was able to see through it immediately.

“Wang Tianzhi, I’m warning you. Ye Zifeng will be heavily nurtured by the sect. If you dare touch him, the punishment will not be something as simple as expulsion. Do you understand?” Shen Li sounded very strict. A cold murderous aura seeped out from his body and landed onto Wang Tianzhi, suffocating him.

“I.... I understand.” Wang Tianzhi was very arrogant but he was only a qi refining stage disciple. How can he talk back to a martial practitioner elder?”

Shen Li coldly laughed and retrieved his aura. Wang Tianzhi’s face looked very red as if he was a dead pig. The difference in strength was the difference between the heavens and the earth.

Wang Tianzhi didn’t understand what was happening. Shen Li was linked to the Wang clan in countless ways. Why would he help Ye Zifeng and go against him?

One should know that Shen Li even gave him a Supreme True Yuan Dan

as a prize during the gathering! Just what did Ye Zifeng do to pull Shen Li to his side?

Shen Li quietly moved towards Wang Tianzhi and whispered, “It’s not like you can’t ever mess with Ye Zifeng anymore. Just wait. In a year, you can do whatever you want with him. You can go and kill him too.” One year later, the effects of the soul restriction will be lifted. By then, Shen Li won’t care if Ye Zifeng’s dies. Afterall, it won’t affect him anymore.

Wang Tianzhi’s eyes lit up. Even though he didn’t understand why he had to wait a year, he received Shen Li’s instructions and was feeling better.

“I understand Elder Shen’s teachings.”

Shen Li nodded and turned towards Ye Zifeng, “You. Come with me.”

……

After finishing with Wang Tianzhi, Shen li brought Ye Zifeng to the Heart Nurturing Pavilion. This was where Shen Li usually goes to rest. He sat down at his usual spot and started to drink some wine.

“Thanks Elder Shen for saving my life.” Seeing that there were no strangers around, he cupped his hands and bowed.

Shen Li furrowed his brows, “No need to thank me, I rescued you for my own good. I’ve warned Wang Tianzhi just now. He won’t be bother you that much anymore. However, don’t relax just yet. If anything happens, call me immediately.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded.

Elder Zhao started to laugh, “Elder Shen, just by looking at you, it seems like this kid has be causing trouble for you.”

“You know what’s up and you’re still asking?” Shen Li was in a bad mood. He drank some more of his wine to cool down.

As an elder in the sect, all the qi refining disciples will all respect and bow when they see him. However, he was constantly being pushed around by this kid in the fourth stage of qi refining. It seems like for a whole year,

he's going to be Ye Zifeng's bodyguard.

Elder Zhao laughed, "So within this year, I'll have to thank Elder Shen for your troubles. I'll have to go back to Tiandao City in these few days so I'll leave Young Master Ye's safety to you."

As a guest from Tiandao City, he'll return to Tiandao City after a day or two of rest. It was a very normal thing.

Seeing how Elder Zhao was rejoicing in other people's misfortune, Elder Shen was feeling very mad. Every time he thinks about how he needs to protect Ye Zifeng, he would feel very unhappy. Today, Wang Tianzhi was looking for Ye Zifeng, the next day, it could be Xiao Mu. The day after that, Wang Lin might look for trouble too. It was very troublesome.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Elder Zhao is incorrect there. Ten days later, I might be going to Tiandao City. When I get there, I'll have to bother Elder Zhao to look after me."

Hearing this, both of the elders were shocked and spoke at the same time, "You're going to Tiandao City?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded.

"Aish....If you're going to Tiandao City, then you should look for Elder Zhao some more." Shen Li's eyes lit up. It seems like the troubles will be evened out. He was feeling much better now.

Elder Zhao on the other hand, had a bitter expression on his face. His mouth twitched as he asked, "You stinkin brat. What are you doing in Tiandao City?"

Ye Zifeng didn't hide anything and told them about the alchemy competition.

"No way. Liu clan's Liu Bingqian invited you to compete in some Alchemy Competition?

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, "That's right. However, it's only a maybe right now. Even if I want to go, Bingqian needs to get the Liu clan leader's approval."

“What did you just say? Did you call her Bingqian directly?” Both Elders took a deep breath. No wonder why Liu Bingqian was holding back so much. It seems like the relationship between these two far exceeded everyone’s expectation.

“What’s wrong with calling her Bingqian? We’re friends so there’s nothing wrong with that....” Ye Zifeng was startled and replied.

“This....” The two elders looked embarrassed. They thought that Ye Zifeng was pretty smart but it seems like he was pretty dumb when it comes to relationships between a guy and a girl. To say something like this..... He really is inexperienced. The two elders were pretty old already and didn’t want to butt into their relationship so they didn’t say anything.

However, this gave the elders a clearer view on things. It seems like Liu Bingqian fell for the Ye clan’s young master. To invite him to the alchemy competition, it seems like good things will happen.

“Alright. I understand.... When you come to Tiandao City, just come find me if you have any problems.” Elder Zhao sighed and accepted the reality.

“Thank You elders.” Ye Zifeng smiled and turned around to leave.

“Hold on” Elder Shen remembered something and called for Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng looked back and replied, “Does Elder Shen need anything?”

“Your father, Ye Chongtian... Did he ask someone from the sect to give you some contribution points?”

Ye Zifeng was startled. He didn’t think that the news would reach Shen Li so quickly. There were things that happens behind the scene in the sect. The people that were friends with the Ye clan didn’t care about the Ye clan anymore after all these years.

“That’s right. As Elder Shen saw, my cultivation is very low and is easily bullied by people like Wang Tianzhi. I want to train harder so i can make the two elders’ jobs easier. I wanted to get some contribution points and exchange it for some goods.

“Actually. You right. You really are too weak right now. If you didn’t use

the soul spirit to attack Liu Bingqian, you probably wouldn't have beaten her. She could've destroyed you in two hits."

Ye Zifeng laughed. He could tell that Elder Shen understands him.

"It's exactly as Elder said. I need to quickly raise my cultivation level so I won't give trouble to the two elders. So.... If you guys can help out a bit...."

Shen Li nodded, "I can give you contribution points. I'll be in charge of this and gift you 500 points!'

Chapter 55: Get out of my way!

“Many thanks to Elder Shen for the bestowment.” Ye Zifeng cheerfully smiled.

Elder Zhao laughed and looked at Shen Li, “Wow Elder Shen. It seems like the sect has a lot of money to spend for you to be so extravagant.” Elder Zhao visited the sect a few times before and knew that 500 contribution points was a lot for a qi refining stage disciple.

This was an unexpected but reasonable gift in their situation.

“Don’t joke with me. We can’t compare to the big shots like your Tiandao City’s Profound Sect……

“Hahaha….” Elder Zhao laughed and didn’t say anything.

“That’s right. Ye Zifeng. I have something that I want to talk to you about.” Shen Li’s expression suddenly became serious.

Since Ye Zifeng received such an extravagant gift from the elder, he respectfully replied, “Please ask Elder Shen.”

“Don’t tell anyone that it was I who gave you the contribution points. I know you’re smart so I’m sure you can make something up to cover both our asses. We can’t let others know about our relationship unless you’re in a life or death situation.

Ye Zifeng pondered for a bit and thought that Elder Shen was right. If the other families found out that they had this sort of relationship, they would think that something fishy was going on and become hostile towards him. The best solution was to play dumb and pretend that nothing happened.

However, if Ye Zifeng goes too far, the two elders would rather lose their cultivation base than be associated with this guy. Both parties needed to be careful.

“I understand. I know my limits.”

“Alright. Good. You can leave first then.” Elder Shen was full of smiles

and waved his hand.

.....

In front of the hidden treasury.

“Stop. Who are you. If you don’t have a contribution badge you can’t....” When the guard was talking, he caught a glimpse of Ye Zifeng’s appearance and immediately changed his tone.

“You can’t.....Oh so it was Miss Bingqian’s friend. I’m sorry. I was dozing off and I couldn’t see your face clearly. It’s cold out there. Please come in!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and continued to walk forward.

“Hold on. Hong Shen. What are you talking about. What Miss Bingqian’s friend. You’re talking like she makes the rules in the sect. Did you forget about the treasury’s rules? If everyone was so easygoing like you the whole sect would become a mess!”

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng stopped and looked at the guy who was coming towards him.

“May I ask who this brother is.....”

“You’re not worthy to know my name. Let me tell you this. My boss is the third young master of the Wang clan, Wang Lin. My Boss’s big bro is the number one person of the younger generation in Leizhou City, Wang Tianzhi!” That guard who walked over was wearing a grey and golden robe. His robe was bounded by a chestnut colored belt. Anyone could tell that he was a disciple from a rich family that followed the Wang clan.

Ye Zifeng laughed lightly, “Oh that’s how it is. So you’re someone who’s close to the Wang clan. No wonder why you’re so arrogant. Your aura feels just like the aura from the people of the Wang clan. Exactly like a dog’s.”

He had just met Wang Tianzhi a while ago and now a dog of the Wang clan was in his way.

“You! You dare badmouth the Wang clan? Do you want to live?” The guard’s face sank and became very angry.

Hong Shen sighed and patted his buddy’s back, “Alright Long Rui, don’t

fight with him. He's Miss Bingqian's friend and not someone that we can afford to offend."

"The one who can't afford to offend him is you. Don't think that I'm in the same league as you."

Long Rui smiled and snorted at Hong Shen. He then turned around towards Ye Zifeng and arrogantly said, " I'm going to tell you this. From today onwards, other than people from the Wang clan and the Liu clan, no one else can enter the treasury!"

"Oh?" Ye Zifeng coldly smiled, "Such a tyrannical rule... Did you make it?"

Long Rui stuck his nose up and snorted, 'Of course it wasn't me. It was set by my Wang clan. 30% of the senior members in the sect are a part of my Wang clan. Whatever my Wang clan wants to do will definitely be done!"

This Long Rui was saying "my Wang Clan" like his own surname was Wang. However, to flatter the Wang Clan this much, it seems like this Long Rui was a loyal dog of the Wang Clan.

"So that's how it is. After losing the heavenly clan gathering, they stopped others from getting their resources so they made this rule. Not bad. Not bad. This kind of thinking... it was not bad at all. However, even though it's not bad, it's not a good idea either."

Long Rui crooned, "I've been very clear with you. It doesn't matter if you're Miss Bingqian's friend or whatever, unless you're a part of the Wang Clan or the Liu clan, don't even think about entering the treasury."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned serious and slowly said the next few words, "What if I want to enter then?"

Long Rui was startled. He thought that this guy would immediately back off after hearing that the Wang clan was involved. However, this guy was clearly trying to oppose and provoke the Wang clan.

Long Rui turned around and looked towards Hong Shen, "Yo Hong Shen, tell me the truth. When he came last time, what was his cultivation level?"

Hong Shen thought about it, “Well he went to the third floor of the medicine cage so he should at most be at the 4th stage of qi refining.”

Long Rui was at the 5th stage of qi refining and when he heard this, he became much more confident.

His mouth curved up into a smile and looked towards Ye ZIfeng, “If you want to come in then you can try. Don’t blame me if you end up lying on the floor in the corner of there.”

“End up lying on the floor?!” Ye Zifeng laughed loudly and a cold expression appeared on his face, “So an ant like you dare block my path? If I don’t teach you a lesson today, people would think that I only rely on my luck and connections to do things.”

Ye Zifeng doesn’t like fighting with these lowly people but it doesn’t mean that he won’t.

If someone was this arrogant, he won’t need to hold himself back and beat them. He will beat them until they know their place.

Ye Zifeng slowly gathered his qi.

“It seems like you’re pretty unlucky. You’re probably at the fourth stage of qi refining aren’t you.” Long Rui noticed the movement of Ye Zifeng’s qi and asked.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “And so what?”

“Then you’re finished!” After confirming his opponent’s cultivation level, he didn’t hesitate anymore and started to attack. He retrieved a blue sword from his robes and struck towards Ye ZIfeng!

“Come on!” Ye Zifeng coldly laughed. He leapt up into the air and struck Long Rui’s sword with his bare hands.

“Bang.” Long Rui was forced back. His sword was shaking and almost flew out of his hand.

“How could this be.....” Long Rui was shocked.

“I’m not done yet!”

Ye Zifeng laughed. He chanted something and a streak of lightning flew towards Long Rui like snakes. It was the same attack that he used against Liu Bingqian to stop her movements for a second. If it was used against a cultivator at the 5th stage of qi refining, the victim will definitely faint.

“Oh my god!” Long Rui had never seen someone at the 4th stage of qi refining use an attribute attack. He dropped his sword immediately and scrambled backwards. Without noticing, he was already in the corner.

The difference between their strengths was something that Long Rui didn’t expect.

“I’m punching you because you’re too arrogant!”

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and mounted on top of Long Rui and fiercely punched his face.

He had used all his strengths along with his lightning qi with the punch. It gave Long Rui a big bruise and made his nose bleed.

Long Rui started to panic and tried to get away.

“The second punch is for the fact that you’re a dog from the Wang clan!” Ye Zifeng punched him at full strength once again.

Even right now Long Rui still didn’t understand how he lost to this guy who’s at the 4th stage of qi refining while he was at the 5th stage of qi refining. Even if he lost, he shouldn’t have lost this badly.

“The third punch….” Ye Zifeng lifted his fist again and Long Rui’s face ashen.

“Stop… Stop…. Don’t hit me. I was wrong!” Long Rui begging Ye Zifeng at this point.

“The third punch is to help you remember me. Go back and tell Wang Lin, tell Wang Tianzhi, that my name is Ye Zifeng! The people of the Ye clan are not so easily bullied!”

Long Rui was sweating profusely. Before he could react, he was struck by Ye Zifeng.

“Ah!” Long Rui miserably screamed. After the third punch, he was

thrown out. His entire body looked as if it was broken.

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled and then patted his clothes down, “You’re the one who’s going to lie down in the corner over there.”

Chapter 56: Come to the forest with me!

After finishing Long Rui off, Ye Zifeng didn't even look back and walked straight into the treasury.

"Hong Shen.... Hong Shen. Did you hear what he said before? He said that he was Ye Zifeng...." Long Rui struggled to get himself up and a shocked expression appeared in his eyes.

Hong Shen quickly ran towards Long Rui and helped him up and leaned him against the doors. After all, having someone lie there looking half dead in front of the treasury was not a pretty sight at all.

"Yeah. You didn't hear wrong."

"Who's Ye Zifeng?" Long Rui thought about it and felt that this name was very familiar. He didn't know where he heard it before.

"Long Rui. Did you get beaten so much that you lost your memories? Ye Zifeng is the winner of the Heavenly Clan Gathering yesterday. He is the Ye clan's young master who helped the Ye clan climb in ranks once again. Hong Shen had just gotten the news a while ago but he immediately knew who he was.

"No way. That's Ye Zifeng? No wonder why he was so strong at the 4th stage of qi refining...." Let's not talk about Long Rui now. Even Liu Bingqian who was at the peak stage of qi refining lost to him. This news was spread throughout Leizhou City already.

"Yeah. This time you were unlucky." Hong Shen bitterly smiled. He was still thinking about how he bad mouthed Ye Zifeng a while ago. He was worried that Ye Zifeng might come after him because of it.

"Oh my god. Just what kind of person did I just offend..." Long Rui was extremely shocked and felt his entire body shiver.

.....

In the treasury's medicine cage.

A beautiful girl wearing a rose print dress was lost in thought while

looking at a dazzling lineup of ingredients. She sat there not moving at all. She looked like she was dozing off and yet she looked like she was waiting for someone.

Ye Zifeng smiled and called out, “Bingqian.”

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian was startled and looked over. When she saw Ye Zifeng her half conscious expression lit up. It looked as if she came back from the dead.

“Brother rough guy!” She blinked a few times and a happy expression filled her face.

It seems like she was already used to calling him big brother already.

“Well, I’ve kept my promise and came to find you. So don’t say that I still owe you anything.”

Bingqian moved over and wanted Ye Zifeng to sit next to her.

Suddenly, she saw that there was some blood on Ye Zifeng’s hands and got worried, “Brother rough guy, how come you’re injured? Were you fighting with someone?”

Ye Zifeng immediately retracted his hand and shook his hand. In reality, how could that count as a fight. It was completely one sided. It was because he was hitting so hard that some skin came off of his hand.

Of course, Liu Bingqian didn’t know what happened. She suddenly thought about Wang Tianzhi and the others and a cold expression appeared on face, “I got it. Did the people from the Wang clan try to mess with you? You can tell me who try to fight you. I’ll go with you and teach them a lesson.”

Even though Bingqian was very beautiful, she was not very elegant and reserved at all. She was very carefree and did whatever she wanted. Ye Zifeng however, liked this point.

Also, no one would hate someone who truly cared for them.

“It’s nothing. It’s only a superficial wound anyways. Actually I kinda tripped and fell while I was walking here.” Ye Zifeng smiled and didn’t

want her to be rash.

"Really?" Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng's hands carefully.

"Yeah. Think about it. If I was fighting someone, the only place injured won't be my hands." Ye Zifeng was very calm.

Liu Bingqian softly said "Oh," and nodded. She smiled like a lovable girl, "Fine. I'll let it go this time... However, let me tell you this. If Wang Tianzhi or anyone tries to make trouble for you in the future, remember to bring them my way and I'll handle them for you!"

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed. He had Elder Shen standing behind him already. He didn't need to make trouble for Liu Bingqian at all.

However, out of respect, he cupped his hands and smiled, "Then I'll have to bother Bingqian...."

Ye Zifeng knew that Bingqian did not look down on him at all. Even though both of their clans were enemies, she stilled worried for him and thought about his well being. Other than his own family members, Bingqian treated him the best.

Liu Bingqian smiled as well, "Alright. Let's not talk about this anymore. This time, other than talking to me, did you want to bring some ingredients home after coming to the medicine cage? Don't worry about it. I've prepared some for you already."

Bingqian knew that deep down, she needed to use some ingredients to keep Ye Zifeng here every time Ye Zifeng came here. If she doesn't Ye Zifeng might not be interested at all. Even though it was a bit forced, she was taking baby steps.

However, out of Bingqian's expectations, Ye Zifeng shook his head.

"What? You don't need the ingredients that I prepared for you?" A disappointing expression appeared on Bingqian's face.

Ye Zifeng looked at Bingqian's cute expression and laughed, "To a crazed alchemist like me, how could I not need ingredients? This time, I have enough contribution points so I can get some ingredients myself."

Liu Bingqian softly said “oh” again and smiled, “I get it. You must’ve secretly kept some contribution points from before. Let me guess. You still have twenty points? Forty points? Sixty points?”

Looking at how Ye Zifeng continuously shake his head, Liu Bingqian was shocked, “No way. Could it be that you have 100 points left over?”

“Not One hundred. Five hundred.” Ye Zifeng replied.

“Five hundred? Are you kidding? Last time when you completed your mission, you tried so hard and only got 460 points. How can you have more than what you started with.” Liu Bingqian was getting angry. She thought that Ye Zifeng was playing a prank on her and purposely made her disappointed.

“I didn’t lie to you. Look. I have the badges with me.” Ye Zifeng waved his hands and the contribution point badges came out of his interspatial ring.

As the badges fell out, Ye Zifeng was counting, “30, 50, 80, 130…. 500!”

“Holy crap! There really is 500 points! Brother rough guy, what did you do? Did you rob the sect’s storage area?” Liu Bingqian held each badge up one by one and was filled with shock.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “If I have the ability to rob the sect, then why am I even learning here?”

“You’re right…. But….” Liu Bingqian scratched her head. How did Ye Zifeng get 500 contribution points out of nowhere.

She looked at Ye Zifeng and stopped her sentence.

“I won’t ask about how you got these contribution points, but don’t think that you can pay back the 100 points and not come and see me anymore….”

“Of course. These are two separate things.”

“Oh…. Then that’s fine.” Liu Bingqian smiled. If she can see him, then she doesn’t care about it anymore.

After talking with Bingqian for a while, Ye Zifeng started to look at the

ingredients in the medicine cage.

"Not bad Not bad. The Phantom Ginseng, Demonic Fog Grass and other important ingredients are still here. I was afraid that they would be replaced but it seems like I was thinking too much."

If Ye Zifeng wanted to maintain the soul spirit communication between the two elders, he needs to make more Soul Binding Pills to keep their soul spirits intact inside of him.

"Alright. I'll take three of this.... That thing is not bad either. Let me take five of these..... Hmmm those look good too. Let me take eight of these...." While looking at the precious and rare ingredients, he looked like a child who just got his allowance.

Liu Bingqian couldn't help but remind him of something, "Big brother rough guy... All those ingredients are worth more than five hundred contribution points already....."

"What? Five hundred is not enough?" Ye Zifeng returned to his senses and was startled.

Bingqian started to giggle, "In the qi refining stage, there is no one who would spend their contributions on ingredients like you."

Not only did Ye Zifeng use all his contribution points on ingredients, he made it look like he ransacked the entire medicine cage. To make the medicine cage run out of stock on certain ingredients.... It's making the people who were responsible for refilling the ingredients very gloomy.

"However, Brother rough guy. Other than the ingredients you got last time, I don't know any of these new ingredients. What are you trying to make?" Bingqian was very confused.

"This....." Ye Zifeng thought about it for a bit. A complicated feeling arose in his heart.

Finally he sighed and said, "Bingqian, promise me you won't tell anyone. I feel like that I'm disrespecting you as a friend if i don't tell you anything."

Liu Bingqian was startled and looked at Ye Zifeng, “Brother rough guy, what do you want to tell me? Could it have something to do with alchemy?”

“Do you remember that I received the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword yesterday?” Ye Zifeng finally decided to say it.

“…. Yeah. Of course I remember it…..” Bingqian’s face suddenly turned red as she remembered how cool Ye Zifeng looked while holding the sword. She even dreamt about it last night.

“That sword…. I bought it to Boss Chang and had him melt it down…..”

“What? You melted the sword? Why?” Liu Bingqian was taken aback. She looked as if she turned into stone.

Ye Zifeng hesitated but decided to tell her anyways, “Don’t ask anything. If you want to know why, then come to the forest with me tonight…..”

Chapter 57: Well, we are friends....

“Go to the forest at night? That’s.....not too good..... My heart isn’t ready yet. Also I don’t really know you that well yet.....” Liu Bingqian’s eyes showed a complicated expression as she trembled a bit.

Ye Zifeng looked confusingly at her, “Why does your heart need to be ready to concoct pills?”

“Concoct Pills? You want me to go to the forest to concoct pills?” Liu Bingqian stared at him with a red face.

“What else would we do besides concocting pills?” Ye Zifeng was still confused, “Also, if we are going to compete in the alchemy competition, we need to work together. We can use this chance to get to know what we’re capable of.”

“So that’s what you meant.”

Liu Bingqian softly replied and calmed down. However, there was a hint of disappointment in her eyes.

“Then.... What about the secret? What does the sword have to do with concocting pills?

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Come with me and don’t worry about it. You’ll understand once you see it.

.....

This time, when Liu Bingqian walked into the wilderness with Ye Zifeng, she wasn’t scared like she was last time. They’ve known each other for a while now and was pretty comfortable with each other.

“Do you remember the three promises that I told you about last time?” Ye Zifeng suddenly asked.

Liu Bingqian smiled, “Of course. I, Liu Bingqian, always keep my promises no matter what. Don’t worry about it. I’ll keep your alchemy skills a secret.”

“To be so upright.... It seems like you’re completely different from your

sister." Ye Zifeng laughed.

After hearing Ye Zifeng talk about her sister, Bingqian's expression darkened a bit, "I am me and she is she. Of course we're different. Come to think of it, after that I found out that you're Ye Zifeng, I've been wanting to ask you something. Since you and my sister were matched before you guys were born, how do you feel about her?"

Liu Ningzi was completely different from her sister. Liu Bingqian was a lady from a wealthy family but she didn't act like one. Liu Ningzi on the other hand was a bit more refined. It's hard to say what kind of girl Ye Zifeng liked, but he'd prefer someone more on the gentle side.

Ye Zifeng coldly replied, "That day when she came to my house and forced me to cancel the engagement, I vowed to never be with her. Ever. I have no feelings for her at all."

Liu Bingqian's eyes suddenly lit up as she stared at Ye Zifeng, "Oh okay! Then i'm relieved."

"Relieved? Relieved about what?" Ye Zifeng was confused again, "I'm bad mouthing your sister but you're not mad at all...."

"What's there to be mad about? The whole thing was my sister's fault in the first place. I don't care if other people yell at me for taking an outsider's side instead of my family's. I, Liu Bingqian, will speak my own mind and make my own judgment based on what I know.

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed and shook his head. He really didn't understand what this girl was thinking at all.

"Alright. We're here."

Ye Zifeng started to dig. Soon after, the top of the cauldron could be seen.

"When did you paint this common tier cauldron? It looks pretty good. It's all shiny. I like it." Liu Bingqian smiled and helped Ye Zifeng.

"This isn't paint. It is the effect of the starlight diagram patterns."

Liu Bingqian laughed and rolled her eyes at Ye Zifeng, "So you know the

term starlight diagram. That's something that a profound tier cauldron possesses. How can a common tier cauldron....."

She was laughing but when she looked at the cauldron, she suddenly stopped. Her voice was shaking out of excitement.

"No way. This is a real starlight diagram!? This.... What is going on here?"

An alchemist only care about two things: Rare ingredients and a good cauldron.

A profound tier cauldron like this will make every huang tier alchemist go crazy. Looking at the cauldron, Bingqian can tell that this profound tier cauldron was clearly the same cauldron as the one that Ye Zifeng bought.

"Brother rough guy. What's going on. Please tell me what's going on. How can a mere common tier cauldron jump tiers and become a profound tier cauldron.

Ye Zifeng smiled and dug the the cauldron out.

"Do you remember that I melted the Ancient Violet Cloud Sword?

Liu Bingqian was shocked and then realized something, 'The Ancient Violet Cloud Sword? Could it be....."

Ye Zifeng nodded, "That's right. I turned the sword into spirit liquid and upgraded the cauldron to the profound tier.

While talking, he inserted his qi into the cauldron and then thirty two star patterns immediately lit up and a dazzling blue light appeared.

"Holy crap. Brother rough guy, are you some kind of saint? How do you know about upgrading a cauldron. Even I don't know about this. So spirit liquids have this kind of use...." Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and couldn't help but feel a strange aura coming from him.

"This.... You'll know sooner or later." Ye Zifeng mysteriously smiled.

As the number one alchemist in Leizhou City, Liu Bingqian was always praised by many elders and seniors. However, the people who knew alchemy in Leizhou City was very little and none of these people could

help her or talk to her. When she met Ye Zifeng, she felt as if she had met the one. Someone who can spend time with her, help her and talk to her about various things.

After Ye Zifeng inserted his qi into the cauldron, he smiled and looked at Liu Bingqian.

"Bingqian, the starlight diagram is already lit. Help me start a fire. I'm about to concoct a pill."

Liu Bingqian nodded. She had been dreaming of the day when she would be able to use a profound tier cauldron to concoct pills. In the past, she had cried and begged her master to let her use his profound tier cauldron but was rejected every time. Now, Ye Zifeng was going to let her fulfill her dreams. When she thought back to the time when she wanted to make Ye Zifeng her apprentice, she became very embarrassed.

"Alright. Alright. I got it." She immediately got up and found some firewoods for the fire.

Right now, she had already forgotten about her identity as number one alchemist in Leizhou City and was following Ye Zifeng's commands. She was like a servant girl for him. If anyone else had seen her, they wouldn't know what to think of it.

"Bring me the ingredients from last time. Do you remember it? Phantom Ginseng, Demonic Fog Grass....."

Every time Ye Zifeng said something, Liu Bingqian would immediately obey his instructions. Although she didn't know what kind of pill Ye Zifeng was making, she knew what each ingredient was.

"Nice. Using this profound tier cauldron is way better than using that common tier cauldron!" Ye Zifeng laughed. When he looked inside the cauldron, his face suddenly became serious.

He remembered that it took him a sleepless week to concoct just two common grade soul binding pills. He had also failed numerous times. No matter how hard he tried to save his ingredients, he had to use everything up in the end.

Now that he has the profound tier cauldron, it is way easier for him to concoct a soul binding pill.

“Bingqian, can you use your peak stage of qi refining qi to warm the cauldron up a bit. You only need to use a bit of qi.” Ye Zifeng was very serious. He stared at the cauldron and watched as the ingredients mixed together.

Liu Bingqian was staring at Ye Zifeng. That serious expression that he had when concocting a pill made Bingqian feel attracted to him even more.

Seeing how Bingqian didn’t move, Ye Zifeng looked over slightly, “Bingqian. What happened? I was talking to you.”

Liu Bingqian quickly returned to her senses and was embarrassed, “Oh. Sorry. You want me to warm the cauldron up? No problem....”

She hurried over and reluctantly smiled while inserting her qi into the profound tier cauldron.

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up and immediately waved his hands, “Alright. That’s enough. That’s enough.”

It seems like he made the right choice to bring her a long. With her qi, it was much easier for the ingredients to mix into a pill. The ingredient was able to absorb the power of the starlight diagrams much better and faster.

Complete!

Looking at the pill’s grade, it was already at the peak of huang grade, almost reaching the profound grade. A pill like this could be kept for a few days and won’t melt so quickly like the common grade pill he made last time.

“Bingqian, it’s all thanks to you. Your peak qi refining qi is really useful. To be able to concoct a pill this quickly... it seems like I have to quickly increase my cultivation as well..”

Hearing how Ye Zifeng complimented her, Bingqian was feeling very happy, “No no. It’s all thanks to the profound tier cauldron. If it was the

common tier cauldron, it would have exploded from all the qi I inserted."

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He then put the pill away in his sleeves. With this pill, he can now freely communicate with the elders for another month or so.

"Brother rough guy.....I have a request....." Bingqian suddenly smiled and stared at the cauldron.

"Do you want to use this cauldron to concoct pills?" Ye Zifeng laughed and asked.

Bingqian nodded with a excited expression on her face. She was looking forward to using the cauldron.

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Of course you can. The whole point of bringing you here was to tell you about the profound tier cauldron. Who told me to treat....."

"That's great! I've always dreamed of using a profound tier cauldron....."

Liu Bingqian was starting to tear up. Out of excitement, she jumped towards Ye Zifeng and hugged him very tightly. Her ample chest rubbed against Ye Zifeng which caused his mind to go blank.

Ye Zifeng felt like he was in a mess and then continued to talk, "Who told me to treat you as a friend....?"

Chapter 58: Thirty two Stars

Liu Bingqian jumped into Ye Zifeng's embrace suddenly due to her excitement. However after a while, she came back to her senses and her face turned bright red. It was burning hot. She took a deep breath and then pushed Ye Zifeng away.

She was blushing and unconsciously looked up at Ye Zifeng.

"Big brother rough guy.... I'm sorry. I couldn't control myself...."

However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would disregard her and stare at the cauldron instead, "Bingqian, help me gather the remaining material. I want to concoct another pill."

"You!" Liu Bingqian efforts were all wasted..... She was being obvious but who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would be so oblivious.

Ye Zifeng looked over at her, "What's wrong Bingqian? Did I do something wrong? Did my words sound too demanding to you?....."

Bingqian furrowed her brows and muttered, "I'm unhappy because you didn't even feel anything."

However, he anger quickly dissipated and immediately went and helped Ye ZIfeng gather the ingredients.

"Big brother rough guy. What kind of pill are you trying to make? I don't mind if you don't tell me what you made before but you should at least tell me what you're making now.

Liu Bingqian can feel that Ye Zifeng had a countless amount of secrets. It made her very curious.

"Well I had to prepare some things before for the heavenly clan gathering so I neglected my cultivation. So this time, I'm going to use this cauldron and concoct a profound grade pill and help me increase my cultivation." Ye Zifeng smiled and put the ingredients in the cauldron.

At the same time, the thirty two stars in the cauldron lit up.

“Oh I get it! So that’s why you didn’t choose the cultivation increasing treasure as a prize. You’ve already decided to upgrade the cauldron and make your own pills to increase your cultivation. A profound grade pill is indeed much better than the Ocean Containing Bottle.”

If an alchemist created a pill with a profound tier cauldron, the results would definitely be much better than if he had used a common tier cauldron with the same ingredients.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “Exactly. To increase my cultivation, I’m going to concoct a Golden Marrow Pill.”

At the same time, he inserted his qi into the starlight diagram.

“Golden Marrow Pill? No way. I remember that the ingredients for the golden marrow pill are, Golden Marrow Grass, Dragon Leaves, Silver horned fruit and some other ingredients. The ingredients that you have here are the Shinan Flower, Apodidae flower and other things.

Liu Bingqian had a suspicious expression on her face and stared at the ingredients. She had an uneasy feeling in her heart.

“You’re talking about the Huang grade Golden Marrow Pill.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

“Of course..... Hold on... Are you saying that you’re trying to concoct a profound grade Golden Marrow Pill?”

Bingqian was shocked. As a huang tier alchemist, she had neither used a profound tier cauldron or concocted a profound grade pill. For Ye Zifeng to do something like this.... She was extremely shocked.

“That’s right. I’m going to concoct a profound grade Golden Marrow Pill.”

Liu Bingqian had a worrisome expression in her eyes, “No way. You’re really trying to concoct a profound grade pill? Do you understand that if you fail, the entire cauldron might explode.” She finally found out why she was feeling so uneasy.

Ye Zifeng only smiled, “ Of course. That’s why I brought you here.”

He treated Bingqian as a friend so he told her about the profound tier cauldron. However, he also did think about using her to help himself concoct pills.

Bingqiain's expression immediately changed, "No way. It's too dangerous if a Profound Tier Cauldron explodes. I might be able to survive the explosion but your fourth stage of qi refining cultivation won't be able to take the explosion head on. We can't continue.'

While saying that, she wanted to take the ingredients out of the cauldron. However, the cauldron had gotten very hot and she couldn't do it.

Ye Zifeng frowned and pulled her closer to him, "Didn't you see how I concocted the pill before? Didn't you also see how I concocted the Thunder Spirit Pill before? Do you not trust me?"

Thinking about all the things that had happened, a complicated expression appeared on Bingqian's face.

"Trust you?" Liu Bingqian thought about it and then shook her head.

"No. If you want to concoct a common grade or even a huang grade pill, I would trust you completely but you're trying to concoct a profound tier pill, something that even I am not able to do. I'm afraid that something might happen to you....."

"Are you worried about me or trying to stop me?" Ye Zifeng stopped what he was doing and looked into Liu Bingqian's eyes.

Liu Bingqian blushed, "You can think of it like this. I don't want something to happen to you while I'm here. If something were to happen to you while you're with me, my mind won't be at peace for the rest of my life."

Even though they haven't been friends for long, he was the only person who was like a friend to her in all these years. If she lost him due to this, she would be extremely sad.

Ye Zifeng was silent for a bit, "I understand."

A happy expression appeared on Bingqian's face, "You're finally gonna stop?"

"No. I've decided. You can leave. I want to concoct the pill myself."

Ye Zifeng was very stubborn when it comes to alchemy. Once he was set to do something, no one can make him stop. He was like this in his past life and he won't change in this life.

"You!"

Bingqian was startled. She had never seen such a stubborn person in her life. She finally gave in and pouted, "Fine. Fine. I understand. I'll stay here and concoct the pill with you. However, you have to promise me that if you notice something wrong, you have to run away immediately!"

Ye Zifeng thought about it for a bit and his stern expression turned into a smile.

"Alright. I promise you. Thank you, Miss Bingqian."

Liu Bingqian got angry and yelled out, "Call me Bingqian!'

She then shook her head and calmed herself down. She was thinking

about how quick-witted Ye Zifeng was during the gathering but now this guy was very stubborn when it came to alchemy. Could it be that he wasn't afraid of dying at all?

"Alright. What do you need me to help with."

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked over to the cauldron, "Actually. It's nothing much. Do you see the starlight diagram? Just follow my lead and insert you qi into each star later."

Liu Bingqian quickly nodded.

"I heard that when you insert your qi into a profound tier cauldron in a specific order, it is called the spirit diagram technique. However, if you make a single mistake, the qi will run wild and when that happens....."

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "Don't worry about it. Didn't I promise you that if anything happens, I would run away immediately?"

"Fine. Just remember your promise." Liu Bingqian knew that Ye Zifeng wouldn't go back on his words but she was still worried.

After all, in Liu Bingqian's eyes, Ye Zifeng was only a cultivator at the 4th stage of qi refining. His cultivation was considered normal. However, she didn't know where he learned alchemy from. There was no alchemy in the Ye clan. She was worried that Ye Zifeng would fail.

"Bingqian. Come on. The seventh star....." Ye Zifeng suddenly became serious and commanded.

Liu Bingqian nodded and gather her qi on her finger. With soft movements, she inserted the qi from her finger into the 7th star on the cauldron.

When she inserted her qi, the entire cauldron looked like it was a mess. The qi started to swirl around and attach itself to the ingredients and separate the useless parts from the useful parts.

Bingqian was startled again, " Could this be stratification?" When one concocts a huang tier pill, one would need to use their qi to purify the pill by stratification in order for a better outcome. It was a simple process. However, with the starlight diagram, the process became much more difficult.

This was the most important step. It relied on the alchemist's skills and experience.

"Big brother rough guy. You know how to calculate the displacement of the stars as well?"

Every time she inserted her qi, the power of the starlight would move into another star. This was precisely the reason why Bingqian's master did not let her use his profound tier cauldron. It only takes one misstep for the cauldron to explode.

Ye ZIfeng didn't answer her and stared at the change that was going on within the cauldron.

He suddenly yelled out, "Bingqian, the 16th star."

Hearing this, she quickly inserted her qi into the 16th star.

"This time, the 21st star...."

"Now the 30th star....."

"The fifth star...."

Bingqian obeyed Ye Zifeng's every command. Being so close to the cauldron had made her sweat profusely.

While inserting her qi into the cauldron, she can feel the perfect movements of the qi inside the cauldron. With Ye Zifeng's guidance, it will be finished very quickly.

"The last one is the 32nd star!" Ye Zifeng smiled.

Chapter 59: Peak of 5th Stage

"I got it." Liu Bingqian nodded. She was very adept in alchemy and was very quick. Under Ye Zifeng's command, she was able to use her qi to light up all of the stars.

When that happened, a violent qi energy swirled up in the cauldron and rushed into the sky. When the thirty two stars all lit up, it condensed together and formed the starlight diagram.

On the very top of the diagram, a translucent clear pill appeared. The pill resembled nature itself. It continuously absorbed the qi that surrounded it. A golden glow appeared around the pill.

Profound Grade Golden Marrow Pill, Completed!

Liu Bingqian looked clearly at the profound grade Golden Marrow Pill on top of the diagram. Her eyes showed that she didn't believe that this was real.

"I would have never thought that I, Liu Bingqian, would have the honor to help concoct and complete a profound grade pill. Big brother rough guy, you're so awesome!" Her eyes were sparkling as she complimented him.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I told you to trust me....."

"Well now I do."

An embarrassed expression appeared in Liu Bingqian's eyes, "Wow. Since you're so strong. Maybe I'll look forward to the alchemy competition this this."

Ye Zifeng was confused and asked, "What do you mean?"

"You might not know about the competition but this isn't my first time attending the alchemy competition. Every time I go and represent Leizhou City, I would not even get placed. I'm actually pretty scared to go back...."

If someone was not placed for many competitions, they would not want to go back.

Ye Zifeng was startled and immediately replied, "Actually. It's not a bad

idea to send you. In the big Leizhou City, you're the only huang tier alchemist. Without any support, how can you get a good placement?"

"Yeah. In Leizhou City, everyone sees me as the number one alchemist. However, outside of Leizhou City, I'm basically a nobody.

Saying that, Liu Bingqian showed a lonely and dejected expression, making Ye Zifeng pity her.

She the suddenly smiled, "Alright let's not talk about this. Now, take this Golden Marrow Pill.

She picked up the Golden Marrow Pill and put it on Ye Zifeng's hand.

Ye Zifeng nodded. When he was about to use it, he felt that something was not right.

He stopped and looked over at Bingqian, "Hold on. Since you want me to take the pill, why are you still here?"

From his experience, every time that someone takes the pill, they would feel a lot of pain. A profound grade Golden Marrow Pill will definitely make a qi refining stage disciple like Ye Zifeng feel a lot more pain. That is the only way that one is able to absorb the energy from the pilll. Only when one makes sure that no one is around would one intake a pill.

Ye Zifeng thought to himself: As a girl, she should be running away. It's not polite if she stands there and watch.

Liu Bingqian smiled, "It's not like you're taking off your clothes or something. Why do I have to leave. Also, if something happens while you use this profound grade pill, it's better if someone is watching you. Don't worry. I won't tell other people what happened.

As an alchemist, she naturally knew the side effects of using a pill. The pills can help people increase their cultivation but they would also make them feel a lot of pain and can be very dangerous.

"That's not good! When I use a pill, I'm always by myself. I can handle it. I don't need anyone else watching me."

Ye Zifeng was saying whatever that was in his mind. He really didn't

know how to deal with girls. Especially brazen girls like Liu Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian softly grumbled, “Hmph. So stingy. I helped you concoct the pill before and now you’re telling me to leave? So after I become useless, you’re just going to kick me out?”

Ye Zifeng’s mouth began to twitch, “Little Ancestor please. Did you forget that I was the one telling you what to do? This is your good fortune. Even if people begged, I wouldn’t have taught them.

Liu Bingqian thought about it and felt that he was right. She had continuously begged her master before and he still didn’t teach her how to concoct a profound grade pill. Ye Zifeng on the other hand, slowly explained everything and taught her carefully. This was a priceless experience for her!

“Fine. I won’t force you to let me stay then. Oh yeah. If my father doesn’t oppose in letting you come with me, I’ll go and tell you. Then.... I’m leaving...”

“Alright. I’ll be waiting for your news.” Ye Zifeng cupped his hands a bowed, “Also, this time, I really have to thank you for helping me out. In the future, you can use this profound tier cauldron whenever you want.”

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian was very excited, “Why are you being so polite with me. We’re basically family.”

Saying this, she felt like she was going too fast and blushed.

“Sorry. I meant.....”

When she wanted to explain what she meant, she saw Ye Zifeng carefully examining the pill.

Ye Zifeng then lifted his head up and asked, “What happened? Did you want to say anything else?”

Bingqian’s face changed immediately, “Nothing. I wanted to say that I’m leaving!”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “So that’s what you wanted to say. Well be careful. Sorry I won’t be seeing you off.”

Liu Bingqian originally wanted to hide in the dark and secretly watch Ye Zifeng. However, she remembered how indifferent and uninterested Ye Zifeng looked when he replied and angrily walked away.

When she walked for a few steps, she suddenly stopped and turned around, “Should I be looking forward to this year’s competition?”

Ye Zifeng looked up again and laughed, “Don’t worry about it. This time, if I’m there, Leizhou City will definitely not be unranked!”

Liu Bingqian giggled, “If you say so then.”

Saying that, she finally left.

Ye Zifeng watched as she disappeared and then looked at the pill once agian.

In every realm, a practitioner cannot use the same pill more than three times.

Ye Zifeng had used three huang grade Golden Marrow Pills before so as long as he’s in the qi refining real, he cannot use another huang grade golden marrow pill or else his life will be in danger.

However, a profound grade pill was different from a huang grade pill so it won’t be dangerous. This was the reason why he wanted to upgrade his cauldron and concoct profound grade pills.

With this pill, he can now make something that he can use.

Next time, when he gets more contribution points, he will make the remaining two pills.

If he is lucky, then maybe he can get something better during the competition in Tiandao City.

Ye Zifeng looked at the pill in his hand and licked it. He then slowly absorbed the energy from the pill and finally put the pill in his mouth.

Let’s go.

Even though he didn’t directly bite into the pill, a large amount of energy entered his body. However, he quickly moved it into his arms.

However, this time, it was different. The veins on his arms continuously expanded and the red lines became brighter and brighter. Suddenly, his veins couldn't handle the energy and exploded. His veins continuously exploded and blood splattered everywhere.

Ye Zifeng was calm as if nothing happened. He didn't care about it. It was a good thing for him. It didn't matter if it was his arms. He continuously moved the energy into his arms. If he didn't do so, the next thing that will explode might be his heart.

Like the first time, Ye Zifeng's arms suddenly started to absorbed the power of the pill. His arms slightly lit up and his arms were slowly recovering. He wasn't bleeding anymore.

"Finally. You're finally starting to absorb the power from this profound grade Golden Marrow Pill.

Ye Zifeng smiled.

"Good. The more you absorb, the stronger you'll be in the future. If you have the ability, then try and absorb all the energy from this pill.

Ye Zifeng closed his eyes and thunder qi started to gather around his palms. After his arms recovered, he slowly started to absorb the energy from the golden marrow pill as well.

The qi circulated throughout his body and entered every single one of his cells.

Ye Zifeng started to feel the effects of the pill. His heart felt as if it was going to explode. He can feel the change that was happening in his body.

He waited for a while and took a deep breath. Without thinking of the consequences, he bit down on the golden marrow pill in his mouth.

At that time, a dark red light flew directly into his dantian. The soul spirit in his body noticed this and started to move this energy from his dantian into his arms.

After a while, his arms were filled with the power from the Golden Marrow Pill. Only a portion of the pill was actually absorbed by his body.

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and opened his eyes.

“Great! Not only did I break through into the fifth stage, I’ve reached the peak of the fifth stage!”

Chapter 60: Poisoned by someone!

Reaching the peak of the fifth stage meant that he was already on the same level as Xiao Mu and Liu Yige.

He took a deep breath and suddenly became serious. He struck out at a faraway tree with his pam. This time, he didn't use any thunder qi at all.

He wanted to test out how strong his own body was.

The tree was slight bent to the side but didn't fall down.

"It seems like the fifth stage of qi refining isn't what I had expected it to be." Ye Zifeng looked at his hands in disappointment and shook his head.

However in the next moment, a crisp sound was heard. In the middle of the tree that he had just struck, a small crack appeared. The crack then continued to expand and in a few seconds, the bark of the tree cracked opened, exposing the insides.

"This...." Ye Zifeng looked up with a shocked expression.

"Bang." Qi energy seeped out from the center of the tree and at the same time, the tree exploded.

The remains of showered the entire area. Ye Zifeng didn't believe what was happening.

He thought about what happened and then finally understood what had happened. It seems like with the existence of his martial spirit, he was able to have to power of 6th stage while being at the fifth stage of qi refining.

Having the power of 6th stage while at the peak of 5th stage.... He didn't even use his lightning qi.

However, he still can't fight with Wang Tianzhi and Liu Bingqian. After all, they were both heavily nurtured by their families for many years. Ye Zifeng can't possibly catch up so quickly.

However, he will one day surpass these people and become the strongest.

“It seems like this body can’t handle eating two profound grade pills after each other. Well it doesn’t matter. I don’t have another one anyways. I’ll have to get more ingredients from the sect later.”

Ye Zifeng rested for a bit and then got back up. He had been out all night and finally remembered after the sun came up.

“I was out for the whole night again..... They might be worried about me.”

Ye Zifeng walked on the street where his house was located and wanted to go back home. However, he noticed that there were so many people in front of his house that a drop of water probably won’t even be able to slip through;.

He suddenly had a bad feeling about this. He walked towards these people and patted someone’s shoulders at random.

“Hi brother. May I ask why you guys are surrounding the Ye clan’s house?”

The person turned around and sighed, “Since the Ye clan won the Heavenly Clan Gathering obtained a third of the market share with Tiandao City’s markets, small families like mine all came to discuss business deals. However, who would’ve thought that we would be locked out. If the Ye clan wants to close their doors and not see us, then we will go find the Liu clan and the Wang clan to discuss business.”

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng raised his brows.Discussing business was not a small thing. The Ye clan is very weak right now and it is very important for them to make allies through business. They didn’t need to act like a big shot and shut the doors in front of everyone. What was Ye Zifeng thinking about?

He quickly walked towards the Ye clan’s back door and jumped into the property.

“Who’s there? To dare trespass into my Ye clan.....”

Ye Huichi screamed and unsheathed his sword, wanting to teach a lesson to the trespasser. When he looked carefully, he realized that it was

Ye Zifeng.

“So it is brother Zifeng. My bad.” Ye Huichi smiled and sheathed his sword. After the gathering, Huichi had a newfound respect for this cousin.

“But wait. Why did you fly in from the back?”

Ye Zifeng rolled his eyes, “Why else? Did you not see how many people were outside? Do you want me to walk in through that crowd?”

“No way. They’re still here?” Ye Huichi sighed.

“Of course. They’re still yelling outside. Alright, I don’t want to talk with you anymore. Where’s father. I need to talk to him about this.”

A complicated expression appeared on Ye Huichi’s face and walked towards Ye Zifeng. He then whispered in Ye Zifeng’s ears, “Uncle Chongtian went out with a few friends last night. I don’t know what happened but he’s been on his bed and couldn’t get up at all.....”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes widened, “What? There’s such thing? Bring me to him quickly!”

The two of them ran towards Ye Chongtian’s room and saw Ye Xueyi brewing some medicine.

“Brother Zifeng, you’re finally back.” Ye Xueyi saw that her brother came home and was very happy. If it’s Ye Zifeng, then he might be able to do something.

Ye Zifeng looked at his sister and nodded.

“Father, what happened? How do you feel?” Ye Zifeng walked towards the bed and saw that Ye Chongtian’s face was deathly pale and was sweating a lot.

“Brother Zifeng, don’t ask father. He is very weak right now. He hasn’t slept for the entire night.

“No way. It’s that serious?”

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and looked carefully at his father. Ye Chongtian’s lips and teeth were turning dark purple and the area between

his eyebrows were turning dark green.

He was shocked and yelled out, “What sickness is this? He was obviously poisoned!”

“Poisoned?” Ye Chongtian shook his head and made an effort to sit up, “No way. I went out with many old friends last night. How could they have poisoned me?”

While saying that, he coughed heavily and turned even more pale. Ye Xueyi became very worried and lightly patted his back.

“Who cares about them being your old friends? If they got some benefits, they might have sold you out!”

Ye Zifeng sighed. If Ye Chongtian is so careless and open all the time, he won’t even know who he will die to in the future.

“No way. We’ve been old friends for many years. Our clans have been very close. They won’t backstab me just because of some benefits.”

“What if it’s not just some benefit but a big benefit?” Ye Zifeng shook his head.

Ye Chongtian was a straightforward guy. When the Ye clan was at its peak, it was easy for friends to be loyal to him. However, when the clan fell, he still believed in their loyalty and was easily tricked by his friends. As a Martial Lord in his past life, he’s seen many situations like this before.

Ye Zifeng sighed, “Let’s not talk about this. These few days are very important to us. We have to get the smaller clans on our side. If we lock them out on the first day, they might go and talk with the Wang clan and the Liu clan for business. If that happens, then our Ye clan will not be able to prosper at all.”

Ye Chongtian understood this so he didn’t tell anyone about this. He wanted to rest for a bit and then talk with these people.

“Zifeng is right. Come. Help me up and bring me to the living room.” He forced himself up and put his legs on the group. However, he felt as if a

mountain was on his back and couldn't move at all.

"Come on. What are you guys standing there for. Help me out."

Ye Xueyi was very worried, "Alright dad, don't force yourself. If you go out like this, you might even faint later. I'd say that we leave it like this."

"How can we leave it like this? This is an opportunity of a lifetime for the Ye clan. We can't let the Wang clan and the Liu clan look down on us."

While saying that, he tried to get up and spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Father...Look at you...." Ye Xueyi complained. This time, no matter what, she will not let Ye Chontian leave.

As a Martial Spirit practitioner, he won't be killed with this kind of poisoned. However, he needs to rest up and won't be able to get out of bed for a day.

Ye Zifeng sighed and calmly looked at his father, "Alright dad. You can rest up. I'll deal with everything."

When the others heard this, they were all startled and stared at Ye Zifeng.

"What did you say?"

"I said that I'll talk and discuss the business deals with them."

After a while, Ye Chongtian's face changed, "Are you joking? The business deals for the rights to use the market for Tiandao City is very important. Every clan have sent their most reputable representative here. Even if you're very talented, you're nothing in their eyes. Who would want to talk business with a twenty year old kid?"

Ye Xueyi agreed as well, "That's right brother Zifeng. These are all stubborn old people. We won't be able to outtalk them.

Ye Huichi shook his head too, "Cousin Zifeng, I do admit that you are very talented in the martial way. However, business talks are for adults. How can we, of the younger generation, but into their business?

Ye Zifeng had a very solemn expression, "Do you guys have a better idea

then? Do you want father to faint in front of the guests? Or do you want to just leave them out there?"

"This....." The three of them looked at each other and became anxious. Maybe Zifeng was right. Maybe they should let him do the talking.

"If the Ye clan really wants to regain their place as one of the three great families, winning the gathering isn't enough. Neither is teaching the younger generation of other families a lesson enough. This is a good opportunity for us to show the Wang and Liu clan what we're really made of. As for the market shares and the business deals..... We'll show them how the Ye clan really do things around here!"

Chapter 61: Where the wind and wave are the fiercest

Outside the Ye clan manor, the people who gathered started to comment on the situation.

“How long have we been waiting for? Why isn’t the Ye clan opening the doors?”

“Yeah. It seems like instead of having the noble air of a great clan, they have the bad temperament of a great clan. From I can see, we should go find the Wang clan and the Liu clan.

“Hold on. Look. The door is opening……”

When everyone saw the door open, they hurriedly went inside. They had been waiting for the entire morning. It’s about time that they’re let in.

However, the person who came out of the doors was not Ye CHongtian, who they had expected. More than that, it wasn’t the housekeeper or a servant either. It was an elegant looking young man.

He was wearing a dark golden and purple robe with a white jade sash. He had the air of a great noble that caused everyone to be startled.

“Ye Zifeng? Why are you here?” Someone recognized them and called out.

“So someone from the Ye clan is finally here. We’ve been waiting for the entire morning. What’s going on? Give us an explanation!”

“That’s right Ye Zifeng. Don’t think that because your Ye clan won the Heavenly Clan Gathering, that you can look down on smaller families like our’s. Without our support, we’ll see how you can match up to the Wang clan and the Liu clan!”

Ye Zifeng smiled. Before he could even speak, he was showered with comments. From this he can see that these people were all getting angry from waiting for so long. No matter how Ye Zifeng tried to explain the situation, he’ll definitely still be yelled at.

If he can't explain the situation, then he shouldn't explain to them at all!

"My father have sent his words. The first ten clan who supports our Ye clan will get priority when discussing about the business channels in Leizhou City. Not opening the doors in the morning was a test. We want to see if any clan would have our Ye clan's back in this kind of chaotic situation.

Everyone became speechless. They all started to calm down after hearing this.

No matter what world they were in, having a good impression was the most important thing. Ye Zifeng didn't arrogantly reply to them nor flatteringly apologized to them. Instead, he went straight to the point and talked about thing thing that everyone here cared about: the business channel distribution! This captured all the elder's attention very quickly.

After that, he talked about how the situation was a test which explained the reason why the Ye clan didn't open the door. With such a reason, the anger in these people's heart disappeared.

Right now, the entire area was silent. Ye Zifeng glanced at everyone that was present. He knew that this was a good chance for him to go on the offensive.

To get their attention and soothe their anger was the first step. Next, he had to put out the bargaining chips.

"I, Ye Zifeng, will represent the Ye clan and make a declaration. The first ten clans who supports the Ye clan will reap more benefits than other clans. They will be awarded one percent of the business channels in Tiandao City.

"One whole percent?"

When Ye Zifeng said that, everyone was shocked and gasped.

This one percent doesn't sound like much but to the vast amount of business that goes on, this one percent can represent a small clan's entire fortune. This kind of special treatment cannot be overlooked by a small clan. To a small clan, this was a great chance for them to rise in power.

“Nonsense. This is simply preposterous.”

In the group of people, a middle age man started to yell, “My Liu clan and Ye clan have always been very friendly. Why would you give this one percent to someone else? I don’t agree. Call you father out!”

(TL: This is a different Liu clan.)

Ye Zifeng coldly smiled, “If your Liu clan have always been intimate with our Ye clan, then why didn’t you come out and say anything for us when the other people were badmouthing us before? You were standing there badmouthing us too.....”

“This....” The middle aged man’s face sank. He didn’t think Ye Zifeng would have noticed all this movements.

Actually, before Ye Zifeng opened the door, he was hiding in the shadows and watching everyone’s expression carefully. He took note of who was on the Ye clan’s side and who wasn’t. In his heart, he knew who was two faced even before they begin to speak.

The middle aged man paused for a bit and then yelled out again, “I don’t care. I don’t want to deal with a hairless brat like you. Tell your father to get out here!”

He paused for a bit again and then started to incite the others, “Come on everyone. Aren’t I right? We should talk with his father instead.”

Ye Zifeng laughed at his, “I will make a blood oath that I am representing the entire Ye clan and prove that I’m not just making empty promises. If I say that I will give you one percent of the business channels, I promise that I will give it to you.”

The middle age man wanted to get everyone else to call Ye Chongtian out but no one else did anything. They all looked solemnly at Ye Zifeng and couldn’t do anything at all.

“Hey. What happened to you guys? Didn’t we agree to rile up the Ye clan together? Now because of this one percent, all of you changed your mind? You should know that this one percent might not even end up in your hands!”

“Asides from you, they all hope to get the bigger share.”

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted at the man. A smile appeared on his face as he slowly walked towards the middle age man.

The middle age man was startled, ‘What do you want?”

Ye Zifeng shook his head and smiled, “I’m not trying to talk with you. I’m here to talk with him!” Ye Zifeng’s gaze stopped on the person next to the middle age man who was being quiet.

“Senior, may I ask which clan you are from?”

“Dong clan’s Dong Wencai has seen young master Ye before.” Dong Wencai was startled and promptly answered. His Dong clan was a small clan and had never had any relationships with other clans. They always had to rely on others to live a normal life. Now that the Ye clan was giving other clans a chance to become relevant, he came here to see what he can get.

“Good. So it’s the Dong clan. Then do you agree to make a blood oath and form an alliance while becoming business partners with the Ye clan for the next five years?”

The Heavenly Clan Gathering happens once every five years. After five years, everyone will be at the same starting point again. This was the reason Ye Zifeng didn’t try to make an absurd deal and only made Dong Wencai make a blood oath for five years. If it’s only for five years, then everyone will definitely want to join the Ye clan. They can take advantage of the situation while the Ye clan had power. Even after five years, with Ye Zifeng’s skills and talent, he was confident that the Ye clan will rise up above any other clan and retain these alliances.

Dong Wencai’s expression lit up and quickly answered, “I agree. Of course I agree! Don’t say five years, I’ll agree even if it’s for life!”

Ye Zifeng gave him a deep smile, “Not bad. Uncle Dong, it seems like fate has brought our clans together. Congratulations. This one percent is already your Dong clan’s.

While Dong Wencai was looking startled, everyone else had the same

expression.

“No way! The Dong clan got that one percent so easily!”

“Yeah. I don’t remember the Dong clan having any connections with the Ye clan. Why would Ye Zifeng give it to the Dong clan?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and explained, “In the field of business, benefits and profits are the most important things. I’m not here to talk about old relationships or anything special like that. Nevertheless, the relationships that the Ye clan had in the past are all worthless now. So, as of today, everyone will start at the same starting line. No one will have any special advantages. Even though his Dong chan has no relationship with our Ye clan, he is willing to make a blood oath to make an alliance for five years and thus obtaining the one percent of business channels in Leizhou City. If he can get it, why can’t you guys get it?”

He paused for a bit and then surveyed the surroundings, “Right now, I, Ye Zifeng, am representing the entire Ye clan. I will become the clan master sooner or later. If anyone wants my father to come out right now, then you can say it now. You can leave right after, I won’t be seeing you out.”

Ye Zifeng was unyielding and very imposing. Right now, no one wants to go against him unless they really don’t want the benefits given. Ye Zifeng was right. He was the winner of the Heavenly Clan Gathering and the master’s eldest son. If he didn’t become the clan master in the future, who will?

Maybe Ye Chongtian wanted to use this opportunity and test his son out. He wants Ye Zifeng to see how the world works so he sent him out to talk about the business deals.

Everyone started to understand what was happening and nodded.

“Young master Ye, you are very straightforward. A hero amongst the people. I’ll listen to you. We’ll trust you. It seems like the clan master have passed on some of his duties to you already!”

“That’s right. My Gao clan supports young master Ye. We support the Ye

clan. We hope to be able to obtain this one percent."

"My Lu clan also supports the Ye clan! I will listen to the Young master's orders!"

Hearing how the people who were badmouthing the Ye clan before compliment him so suddenly, Ye Zifeng began to laugh in his heart.

He had tossed the first bait out already. As long as he still has cards to play, he doesn't care if they take the bait or not. As long as he can earnestly rope the other clans into their alliance, the Ye clan will be able to easily rise again.

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, "Many thanks for the compliments. How about this, we've been standing outside for a while now. Let's go into the hall and slowly discuss everything."

While everyone was complimenting Ye Zifeng, the middle age man from the Liu clan coldly snorted.

"Guys. Don't listen to this Ye Zifeng's bullshit. The clan master Ye Chongtian is clearly lying on his bed and is unable to get up so he had to get Ye Zifeng out to stall. He's only stalling for time right now. Don't believe anything that he was saying."

With these words, everyone stopped and looked at him.

Someone suspiciously asked, "Liu Xingjian. That's strange. How do you know that Ye Chongtian is lying on his bed?"

Liu Xingjian coldly snorted, "It's like this. I'm not afraid to tell you guys. Ye Chongtian went out with a few of us old friends last night and we poisoned him. Who told him to go against the Wang clan. You guys should listen well too. If you want to oppose the Wang clan in Leizhou City, you will end up like him too!"

Chapter 62: Stepping on your Dignity

From the very beginning, Ye Zifeng knew that this wasn't going to be so simple. The Wang clan must have sent someone to stir up trouble here. However, what he didn't expect was that the person that they sent was the same person who poisoned his father.

Everyone present knew what kind of relationship Ye Chongtian had with Liu Xingjian and couldn't help but gasp.

"What? Liu Xingjian. You're the one who poisoned Ye Chongtian? You guys have been friends for many years. How could you do such a thing?"

"That's right. Chongtian had always treated you as a close brother. How could you do something like that to him?"

Liu Xingjian coldly snorted and looked at everyone, "You guys don't have to pretend to care and try to kiss up to the Ye clan. Let me tell you this. The Wang clan will make trouble for anyone that become allies with the Ye clan.

"This...." Hearing this, everyone's expression changed. They knew what Liu Xingjian meant. They all looked at Ye Zifeng with an embarrassing expression.

However, Ye Zifeng had an indifferent expression on. He walked slowly towards Liu Xingjian with a calm look on his face.

Liu Xingjian was startled and quickly yelled out, "What are you trying to do? My cultivation is higher than yours. I'm not afraid of you!"

Liu Xingjian was a businessman and didn't spend a lot of time cultivating. Even though he was a middle aged man already, his cultivation was still at the 6th stage of qi refining. He was trying to act tough but on the inside, he was feeling very nervous.

Ye Zifeng slowly looked up at the man and a cold look appeared in his eyes. He suddenly reached out and grabbed Liu Xingjian by his collars. Before he could even react, Ye Zifeng had slammed him onto the ground already.

Liu Xingjian was getting old already. His 6th stage of qi refining cultivation was just for show. His actual ability wasn't even at the 5th stage of qi refining.

"You..... You actually hit me?"

"So what if I really hit you?"

The impact caused dust to fly everywhere and the spectators all took a few steps back. They were all shocked in their hearts. This Ye Zifeng was swift and decisive. When he dealing with business, he was refined and elegant, just like a scholar. When he fought, he was like a fierce tiger.

He didn't knock Liu Xingjian away nor did he hurt him. All he did was slam him onto the floor. He put Liu Xingjian's dignity on the floor and trampled on it.

"You.... You're of the younger generation and you dare hit me? You should know that I'm from your father's generation! AH.... Don't hit me. Don't hit me."

When he saw Ye Zifeng raise his fists, he was shocked.

Liu Xingjian's cultivation was suppressed by Ye Zifeng's lightning and death qi and couldn't use any qi to defend himself. Ye Zifeng used his bare fists so Liu Xingjian can remember what happens when he offends the Ye clan.

"Hmph. A clown like you still dare to consider yourself my senior? Take this!"

"Noooo!"

Ye Zifeng's mouth curved up and revealed a sinister smile. He ruthlessly struck the ground next to Liu Xingjian's head. A small fist shaped imprint appeared on the ground with a violent qi coming from out from it. If that had landed on Liu Xingjian's head, who knows what would've happened.

Liu Xingjian was so scared that his face ashen. His heart was beating so fast that it felt as if his heart was going to jump out of his body. He gulped a few times and couldn't say anything.

“It’s fine if you try to mess with our business but to poison one of your own brothers and follow the Wang clan like a dog, your future is over. Someone like you doesn’t deserved to be called my senior!”

Liu Xingjian was horrified. The Wang clan told him to mess with the Ye clan today. Originally, he wanted to make a small scene and then break off his relationship with the Ye clan.

He never would have thought that he would be suppressed by someone of the younger generation and be taught a lesson by the same person in front of all these people. After today, he would never have the face to walk in Leizhou City again.

Ye Zifeng calmly looked at Liu Xingjian, “Didn’t you say that the Wang clan with cause trouble for whoever allies with my Ye clan? I, Ye Zifeng, can say the same. Whoever messes with the Ye clan or our allies will be looking for trouble!”

Ye Zifeng then slowly stood up and looked at everyone else, “In the eyes of the Ye clan, there are only two types of relationships. You’re either an ally or an enemy. If you’re an ally, then you can be like Uncle Dong and receive benefits. You will receive a part of our business channels. In these five years, our Ye clan will help everyone and develop with each other. However, if you’re our enemy then…. Hehe….”

Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped and looked at Liu Xingjian. His gaze was very cold.

“You….. What do you want to do?” Liu Xingjian was scared. He was a senior but in front of Ye Zifeng, he was like someone of the younger generation. He wasn’t worthy of Ye Zifeng’s respect.

Ye Zifeng slowly retrieved a dagger from his robe. Just with a look, one can tell that this dagger was very sharp.

“Don’t come over. I beg you. Let me go.”

“I don’t want to do anything….I just want to tell you this this is your master’s dagger. This belongs to someone from the Wang clan. However, right now, this is in my hands. Do you know why?”

Liu Xingjian gulped and didn't answer."

"Of course this means that even the people from the Wang clan knows the consequences when they try to anger me, Ye Zifeng. If the master don't even dare offend me, then don't even talk about a dog that blindly follow its master for benefits. You follow the Wang clan to try and climb up in the social standings but look at you now. Is the Wang clan going to help you now? So everyone, think about this carefully."

Ye Zifeng paused for a bit and then began to talk again, "Why don't we do an experiment? Let's see if anyone from the Wang clan will come out and save you."

His expression changed and raised the dagger up high. He looked directly at Liu Xingjian's shoulders as if he was going to stab him.

Liu Xingjian looked as if he was going to cry. His eyes were devoid of hope, "No!"

His face turned incomparably red and his heart started to palpitate. He fainted immediately.

Ye Zifeng smiled, slowly got up and put his dagger away. He only wanted to scare Liu Xingjian a bit but Ye Zifeng didn't that that this guy would be so useless that he would faint.

However, this was not bad. This made him looked even more imposing in front of everyone.

When everyone saw how a youngster like Ye Zifeng was able to force Liu Xingjian to this state, the all became very nervous. However, in their hearts, they had a newfound respect for Ye Zifeng.

"Alright everyone. Liu Xingjian openly admitted that he had poisoned my father and became an enemy of the Ye clan. What does everyone think about how I handled this situation?"

Everyone's expressions suddenly changed. Any smart person would understand what Ye Zifeng meant. On the outside, he was asking for everyone's opinion but in reality, he was telling everyone to make their decisions.

If they helped the Wang clan, they will become the Ye clan's enemy. If they help the Ye clan, they will become the Ye clan's ally. In Ye Zifeng's view, there was no third option.

"You did the right thing. The absolute right thing. Liu Xingjian soul his own soul for gain and forgot his morality. He deserved it. My Gao clan supports the young master!"

"That's right. Liu Xingjian is a blind wolf. The young master is correct in his doings. My Qian clan supports the young master."

"Young master Ye, My Huang clan had decided to follow the Ye clan and fully supports the Ye clan!"

With these three people leading off, everyone started to follow. In just a while, everyone present was supporting Ye Zifeng's decision.

Ye Zifeng's methods had left a deep impression with them. As a youngster, he knew when to act and when to back off. He didn't even hold back against Liu Xingjian, someone who was in his father's generation. They all believe that they will be able to reach new heights if they followed the Ye clan.

With such a ruthless and talented young master, the Ye clan is sure to be on the rise.

"Great. If everyone supports the Ye clan, then my Ye clan will not treat everyone unfairly. Everyone here will obtain at least .1 percent of the business channels from our Ye clan."

Hearing this, everyone started to cheer.

"The young master is formidable! The Ye clan is mighty!"

Ye Zifeng used .1 percent of the channels to attract everyone at first and led them to side with the Ye clan. The one percent however, still had to be fought for.

Without a doubt, Ye Zifeng handled the situation beautifully. He was praised by these businessmen who had been working for dozens of years.

"Twenty years ago, other people were calling the young master trash but

I didn't believe it. Look at how he is today. The young master will become a bright new star in the future!"

"The Wang clan's time have passed. With young master Ye, the Ye clan will surely rise!"

Ye Zifeng laughed and cupped his hands together, "This is too much everyone. I, Ye Zifeng, is still not capable yet. I'll have to rely on seniors' guidance in the future."

Hearing this, everyone was extremely happy and the praises continued. They were all being very humble to this twenty year old youngster.

"Alright, everyone who stayed will be our Ye clan's friend. Let us talk business inside. We will discuss the our blueprints for the next five years and write down all of our contracts."

Ye Zifeng smiled and gestured towards the door, "Please."

Chapter 63: Dominating business channels

In Ye Chongtian's room.

"Come on, Xueyi, help father up. I'm feeling a bit better." Ye Chongtian coughed and used both his hands to hold himself up. He slowly got up by himself which showed that he had recovered a bit.

Ye Xueyi gasped. She looked at his pale face and continuously shook her head.

"Father. I think you should wait a bit before getting up. If you're not careful and make your condition worse, I'm afraid……:"

Ye Chongtian forced himself to look better, "Even if my condition worsen, I still have to get up. I'm afraid that Zifeng can't handle it anymore. To make him face so many seniors, it's a bit too much for him.

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi thought about her brother's situation and gritted her teeth. She finally went over and helped Ye Chongtian up. In their minds, they believe that Ye Zifeng had lost control of the situation already and it was probably a mess downstairs.

At that time, someone quickly rushed into the room.

It was Ye clan's housekeeper, Housekeeper Du. His expression looked very anxious.

"Master! Not good. The young master and the people from the other clans are coming in right now!" As Ye Chongtian's most trusted aide, Housekeeper Du naturally knew what happened to his master and what his condition was. How can his master receive any guests right now!

"What?!"

Ye Chongtian was stumped. His heart dropped as if a strong weight was pulling it down.

"So he couldn't hold on after all… But this is not bad. He bought me some time. Come on Xueyi. This time, you really have to help me up."

Ye Xueyi's sighed. Since the situation had become like this, there was no helping it.

The people were all coming into their view and Ye Chongtian hurried himself up. He wanted to get up before they entered the room to show that he was fine.

The door suddenly opened up and Gao Tianyuan entered the room. At first, he had a smile on his face but when he saw Ye Chongtian trying to force himself up, his expression suddenly changed.

"Brother Chongtian. What are you doing? Get back on your bed and rest up. Don't make things worse than it is already.

As Gao Tianyuan was talking, people continued to walk in. When they saw Ye Chongtian's situation, they all earnestly showed their concerns for him.

"Chongtian, listen to Tianyuan. Look at how pale your face is. Why aren't you resting on your bed? If you're like this, we're all going to be worried."

"Uncle Chongtian, you're treating us all like outsiders. If you're sick, then you should just tell us. You don't have to force yourself."

"That's right. With such a talented son, you should be living in ease and comfort and let him take care of things!"

Ye Chongtian was startled. Before he could even say anything, the group of people immediately hurried over and helped him back on his bed.

"This.... What happened to you guys....."

Ye Chongtian was surprised. He looked at Ye Xueyi and then looked back at the group of people. The two of them had a look of doubt in their eyes. Could these people be here to politely greet him instead of questioning him about what happened?

How can these people be so kind-hearted?

Ye Zifeng slowly walked in after everyone else. His had an extremely calm expression on his face. He had an imposing and noble aura around

him, making it seem like that he was the leader of this group of people.

Ye Congtian looked up and asked, “Zifeng, this..... What happened?”

“They know about how you were poisoned. However, the most important thing is.....”

Ye Zifeng showed a smile, “Negotiations complete.”

“What negotiations?” Ye Chongtian didn’t understand what his son was talking about. Ye Zifeng could’ve told these people about the poison but what negotiation was he talking about?

The people from the smaller clans got closer to Ye Chongtian and smiled.

“Brother Chongtian, you son is really talented. We’ve been dealing with business for many years but we have never seen someone like this. To be so charismatic and decisive at such a young age, he will grow up to be very successful.”

“The young master is sure worthy of being Chongtian’s son. Twenty years ago, you, Chongtian, was one of the strongest and most charismatic people in Leizhou City. Now it seems like your son is following your footsteps and is slowly climbing up.”

Ye Zifeng slowly walked towards his father and smiled, “I’ve already made arrangements for the business channels between Leizhou City and Tiandao City. We’ve talked about the future of our business and will talk about the distribution of the business channels later. Around half of Leizhou City’s clans have decided to ally with our Ye clan already!”

“Half?!” Ye Chongtian was so shocked that he became as stiff as a wooden doll. He sat there and didn’t move at all. Generally speaking, if they used the shares to get allies, the Ye clan should only be able to get 30 clans as allies with their thirty percent of business channels. In the best possible situation, they should only have around 30 allies, how could there be around 50 clans that want to ally with them?

If it was Ye Chongtian who was negotiation, with his abilities, he would at most get around 20 something allies. There was no way that he could

get around 50!

This.... This is simply too ridiculous.

Ye Zifeng was a Martial Lord and a Heaven Tier Alchemist. His way of dealing with people were completely different from a normal person's. The way that he described his way of business to these smaller clans made them all feel impassioned. It was completely different from the same old method that the Wang clan and Liu clan employed. Even those people who were originally Wang clan's followers changed their minds and started to follow the Ye clan after listening to Ye Zifeng's plans for the future.

"Half of the other clans is only a starting point. Some clans were indecisive while most clans have decided to work with us already. Everything comes down to the distribution of the business channels....."

Ye Zifeng then paused and smiled, "When other people form an alliance, they use a piece of paper. When our Ye clan make allies, we do a blood oath. The Ye clan's prosperity is everyone else's prosperity as well. When the Ye clan becomes the number one clan, then everyone else will follow suit and join our rise in power!"

The Wang clan and the Liu clan both had similar promises. However, they would at most hand out some of their own extra wealth to the other clans and would never make an alliance like this. Ye Zifeng on the other hand, uses the blood oath and makes a promise to the other clans. In Leizhou City, this kind of thing was unprecedented.

Only by doing a blood oath would the other clans be convinced.

"I agree to ride this wave with the young master!"

"The Gao clan supports the young master. We agree to make a blood oath!"

"For the young master to consider allying with a small clan like ours, we have to set an example for the other small clans too. We agree to make a blood oath!"

"The Gu clan agrees to make a blood oath!"

“The Qian clan agrees as well!”

The group of people were yelling as if they were some hot headed youngsters. However, everyone in this group was way over their primes already. Ye Zifeng’s heated speech touched their hearts and made them unleash the youngster spirit that laid dormant inside of them.

“Alright. My father still needs to rest today. As for the distributions, I will ask our servants to make copies of my plans and send them over to you guys. As for the overall plan, we will talk about it another day when my father feels better.”

Ye Zifeng looked at everyone and bowed towards them. He was showing them all respect. After all, they were all still considered their seniors. This kind of attitude was needed when making a business deal.

Before everyone left, they all said their goodbyes to the Ye clan members and praised Ye Zifeng. They all wished Ye Chongtian a quick recovery and walked out of the Ye clan very satisfied. They all forgot about how they were locked out in the morning.

Ye Chongtian and Ye Xueyi were both still startled and speechless at what just happened.

This was their first time watching Ye Zifeng handle things.They were still shocked after a long time. Someone of the younger generation was able to subdue all these business veterans by himself..... Even Ye Chongtian might not have been able to do such a thing.

“Brother Zifeng..... You’re amazing..... I don’t even know what to say to this!”

Ye Xueyi had grown up with Ye Zifeng by her side. Ye Zifeng had always been bullied by people of the same generation. But now, not only was he able to subdue everyone in the younger generation at the Heavenly Clan Gathering, he was also able to subdue these business veterans in the field of business!

If Ye Xueyi also found out that her brother was already at the peak of 5th stage already, she would be even more shocked.

“Don’t be so happy yet. I spent the entire day brainwashing them into believing me. When they go home and actually think about it, there might be some people who will change sides and choose the Wang clan.”

Hearing this, Ye Chongtian finally understood everything, “I get this. This is why you made them make a blood oath. Even if they want change sides, they can’t.

Ye Zifeng was already three steps ahead of everyone else. He knew what he had to do.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “The blood oath is only a small restriction. The real deciding factor is still us, the Ye clan.”

Ye Chongtian and Ye Xueyi both nodded.

Ye Zifeng waited a bit and then let out a cold laugh, “Oh yeah. You were right dad. Bringing the Liu clan to our side is a good thing, so I’m gonna go over and have a little chat with them.”

Chapter 64: The esteemed guest is here!

During all these years, the business channels between Leizhou City and Tiandao City had been dominated by the Liu clan and the Wang clan. All of the smaller clans wanted to have a good relationship with them.

Thus, when the Ye clan treated everyone else as equals, the gave the smaller clans a special kind of friendly feeling. Ye Zifeng's speech about how the Ye clan's prosperity will become everyone else's prosperity was a great bargaining chip for everyone.

This time, the Ye clan was like a dark horse that appeared out of nowhere and fiercely struck the Liu clan and the Wang clan.

"What? The Ye clan was able to rope in half of the other clans as their ally?" Wang Ruoxing was unconvinced by the news and looked at his older brother.

Not even the flourishing Wang clan has so many allies. How could the fallen Ye clan rope in so many people?

Wang Tianzhi thought about it and then asked, "Did Liu Xingjian failed? How could this be? He definitely told me that he had succeeded in poisoning Ye Chongtian!"

"Young master, Liu Xingjian did indeed succeed. Ye Chongtian was lying down on his bed. The one who dealt with everything was Ye Zifeng!"

Wang Ruoxing was shocked, "What? Ye Zifeng? He's someone from the younger generation. How can he rope in all these businessmen from the senior generation?"

"It is true....."

The messenger didn't know how to explain either. He was only watching outside the Ye clan territory and didn't enter with everyone else. When he saw how everyone came out with a satisfied look on their face, he deduced that Ye Zifeng had done his job and persuaded everyone.

Hearing this, Wang Tianzhi started to think to himself. He thought that Ye Zifeng won the Heavenly Clan Gathering by fluke. However, this time,

he was able to persuade so many seniors into allying with his Ye clan. This was definitely not by fluke.

"This Ye Zifeng is not simple at all. He is a threat to our Wang clan."

Wang Ruoxing knew what his big brother was thinking about and murderous look appeared on his face.

"Big bro, how about we....." He lifted one finger and ran it across his neck as if he was cutting it.

Wang Tianzhi thought about it and then shook his head, "Not right now. He's very hot right now. If we go overboard, the Ye clan will definitely retaliate. We've already plot against Ye Chongtian once. This time, he will be more careful. If he goes crazy, no one will be able to stop him."

Wang Lin coldly snorted, "I don't care. Big bro, Big sis, we can't let him go like this. He'll just continue to grow and become a thorn on our sides. Even if we don't kill him, we have to cripple him."

Wang Ruoxing nodded. He was the closest one to Wang Lin and cared for him the most. After learning about how Wang Lin was bullied by Ye Zifeng, he had been trying to find a way to get back at him.

"That's right big bro, I agree with lil bro. Even if we don't kill him, we have to stop him from becoming dangerous. We'll have to fight sooner or later, so why not do it now. We can't wait until it's too late.

Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing were both waiting for Wang Tianzhi's reply. However, Wang Tianzhi was warned by Elder Shen already and didn't want to trouble Ye Zifeng for the next year.

"We'll talk about this later. You guys heard what Elder Shen said last time right? To protect Ye Zifeng like this..... He must have his own reasons. We shouldn't be so hot headed."

Wang Mengxi nodded, "I agree with big bro."

"Alright. I understand then."

Wang Lin sighed. He then turned towards Wang Ruoxing and exchanged glances with him. The two of them then left together.

As Wang Lin walked out, he groaned with displeasure, “Second bro, I don’t understand. Our Wang clan can easily squish Ye Zifeng. Why aren’t we doing so? Big bro isn’t like how he was before. It’s only a warning from an elder, he doesn’t have to be so scared.”

Wang Ruoxing looked around and when he saw that no one was around he coldly laughed, “From what lil bro is saying, even if big bro doesn’t agree, you won’t let Ye Zifeng go?”

“Second bro, you’re willing to help me?”

Wang Ruoxing laughed, “Little bro, ever since we were little, we’ve being doing bad things behind big bro’s back. Do you think I’ll leave you hanging this time around?”

“Really? That’s great second bro. You’re at the 8th stage of qi refining. If you’re willing to make moves, then this Ye Zifeng will definitely not live to see another day!” Wang Lin laughed very loudly.

Wang Ruoxing shook his head, “Maybe. Ye Zifeng was able to beat that Liu Bingqian who is at the peak of qi refining. He must have some special moves up his sleeves. I feel like we should mount a sneak attack against him!”

“However, we need to wait for a good chance. Are you willing to wait?”

Wang Lin was shaking with excitement, “As long as we can kill that bastard, I don’t care how long I have to wait.” Wang Lin had never been humiliated and bullied by anyone since he was born. Thus, his hatred for Ye Zifeng was on another level. If it wasn’t for the fact that his cultivation was low, he would have made his moves already.

Wang Ruoxing looked up at the sky. He somewhat had an idea of how he would deal with Ye Zifeng already.

.....

It wasn’t unreasonable for Ye Zifeng to want to try and rope in the Liu clan. After all, their clans must be pretty close if they were able to have an engagement. If it was the Wang clan, he would definitely be chased out the second he walked into their manor.

After changing into a brand new blue robe, he walked to the Liu clan by himself.

Actually, Ye Chongtian wanted to go with him but with Ye Zifeng's disapproval, he gave up on going. At least he was going to the Liu clan and not the Wang clan. The Liu clan's clan master Liu Mu had a pretty good relationship with the Ye clan so Ye Chongtian wasn't so worried.

In the Liu clan's family hall.

"No way. Definitely not. Qian-er, when did you become so muddle-headed! You can ask whoever you want to the alchemy competition. Why do you want Ye Zifeng to go with you?"

"That's right. Sister Bingqian. Did you forget that he was the one who beat you to become the number one in Leizhou City? Father will never approve of this!"

Liu Ningzi sighed. She had a helpless expression on her face. She also didn't understand why her sister wants to invite that Ye Zifeng to go with her.

"I don't care. I've already promised him. This time, I'll definitely bring him along. You guys will make me a liar if you make me take back my words." Liu Bingqian complained. Her face showed a resolute expression.

Liu Bingqian saw how angry everyone was and immediately walked towards her dad and lifted his hand.

"Daddy, you've always let me do what I wanted. Come on. Talk to them about it. I've heard that we have a pretty good relationship with the Ye clan too."

While saying that, she shot a glance towards Liu Ningzi. Everyone knew what she meant by doing that. Liu Ningzi and Ye Zifeng had an engagement and the two families almost became relatives.

Liu Mu thought of the old days and shook his head. He bitterly laughed and sighed, "That was many years ago. At that time, the Ye clan was one of the three great clans. But now....."

He sighed again and looked at Liu Bingqian, “It’s not like dad doesn’t want to help you, but..... the two clan’s relationship isn’t like how it used to be.....No one from the Ye clan will even come to talk with our Liu clan anymore....”

At that time, a servant came running into the room with a panic look on his face.

“Master, Master. There’s a guest who wants to see you. He’s waiting in the guest room already. I hope the master can go over quickly!”

Liu Mu furrowed his brows, “Is this the first time you’ve received a guest? Let him sit in the guest room for a while. I need to talk with my daughter and will go over later. Go and tell him that.

In the last few days, many smaller clans have visited him to gain some benefits and give him gifts. He didn’t want to pay attention to them anymore.

“But..... But, that guest is.....”

Liu Mu was very impatient and glared at the servant, “Who is it that’s making you make such a fuss. Our Liu clan is one of the top clans in the city. We shouldn’t do something like this in front of guests. Even if it’s some esteemed guest, you should relax a bit and remember where you are. There’s no reason to be shocked.”

“Master, it’s the Ye clan’s young master. Ye Zifeng is here!”

“What?!?” Liu Mu was shocked after hearing this.

Chapter 65: A young man's ability must be respected!

The entire Liu clan looked at each other with dismay for quite a while. They all had a shocked expression on their face.

"Ye Zifeng? Why would he come to our Liu clan? Did you see correctly?" Other than a shocked expression, Liu Ningzi had another expression on her. One that no one can tell what it represented.

Hearing this, the servant quickly answered, "Second miss, I am absolutely sure that it is the Ye clan's Ye Zifeng. I saw him along with the master during the Heavenly Clan Gathering.

Liu Bingqian was completely shocked as well. She was thinking about why Ye Zifeng came over? Could it be that he wanted to find her?

"After all these years. I didn't expect something like this. I did not expect that someone from the Ye clan would still come to our Liu clan."

Liu Mu regained his composure and let out a long sigh. He looked as if he was thinking about many things that happened in the past.

Twenty years ago, Ye Chongtian and Liu Mu were very close friends. However, a few years ago, due to some dispute over similar interests, the two clans slowly drifted apart. With Ye Chongtian's temperament, he made things difficult for Liu Mu and the two clans eventually broke off with each other.

However, today, Ye Zifeng personally came as the Ye clan's young master.

"Other than Ye Zifeng, did anyone else come?"

The servant shook his head, No one else. It's only him."

Liu Mu's expression changed and furrowed his brow, "A newborn calf is not afraid of a tiger. He's just a youngster and yet he dares to come to the Liu clan by himself?"

Liu Yige snorted, "Clan master, from what I can see, you should send

him away. Our Liu clan doesn't want anything to do with his Ye clan.

Liu Bingqian coldly stared at Liu Yige, "I told you already. When my Liu clan is talking, an outsider should not intervene."

"You!" Liu Yige's face turned red. He fiercely clenched his fist. He looked at Liu Mu and then at Liu Ningzi and finally calmed himself down.

Originally, Liu Bingqian didn't hate Yige. However, this guy was always butting heads with Ye Zifeng and she didn't like that at all. Every time they family talks about Ye Zifeng, they would both go against each other.

"Father, the Ye clan didn't have anyone over in a long time. I feel like we should try and repair our relationship. We can use this opportunity to do so. You can also see if he has the qualifications to come with me for the alchemy competition.

Liu Bingqian pouted and looked sincerely at her father.

Liu Mu smiled and looked at Bingqian, "What's up with you. What kind of abilities does Ye Zifeng have? Why do you want to bring him with you so much? Can he even concoct a pill? Fine. If you want it that bad, then I'll go ask that Ye Zifeng what he's doing here."

A complicated expression appeared on Liu Ningzi's face. She wanted to excuse herself and go back to her room but was stopped by Liu Mu.

"Ningzi, you come with me too."

"I'm coming too……?" Liu Ningzi was startled.

……

The Liu clan's guest room was completely different from the Ye clan's. One can clearly tell that the master paid much attention to the room and extravagantly decorated the room. There were many antiques and paintings everywhere.

Ye Zifeng didn't get bored while waiting in the guest room at all. He carefully analyzed the arrangements of the room. Suddenly a smile appeared on his face.

After a while, Liu Mu and the others appeared in his sight.

“Ye Zifeng greets Uncle Liu!” Ye Zifeng quickly walked over and respectfully bowed.

Liu Mu smiled and waved his hands, “Zifeng, there’s no need to be so polite. I still remember the time when I held you in my arms and now you’re already an adult.....”

These words didn’t have a queer feeling at all. It had a very intimate feeling. However, it was actually telling Ye Zifeng that he was of the younger generation and if he wants to talk business then Liu Mu would not hold back and try to dominate him.

“Zifeng, let me reintroduce you. This is my eldest daughter, Liu Bingqian. You guys have met during the Heavenly Clan Gathering.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Miss Bingqian is a both nimble and tranquil, well versed in letters and martial arts, and has a very pure heart and spirit. To be able to be friends with such an extraordinary girl is my luck.”

Liu Bingqian’s face turned red. How can he say such embarrassing things. However, she was feeling good after hearing this.

“This is my younger daughter...” Liu Mu pointed at Liu Ningzi.

Liu Ningzi looked down. She wanted to leave because she didn’t want to see Ye Zifeng. It would be very awkward if they met. This situation was exactly what she was afraid of.

“Miss Ningzi, we meet again.” Ye Zifeng smiled.

He understood what Liu Mu was thinking. Liu Mu had a smile on his face but his friendly manners were belying hypocritical intentions. He purposely introduced Liu Ningzi to make Ye Zifeng lose control of himself and make him say something bad. This will put Ye Zifeng at even more of a disadvantage when dealing with Liu Mu if that happened.

Thus, all Ye Zifeng did was casually greet her.

“You.....” Liu Ningzi was startled. Seeing how Ye Zifeng didn’t ridicule her, she began to smile again. She was feeling much better.

Liu Mu on the other hand, looked at Ye Zifeng with a deep expression

and laughed. He then called for his servants.

“Where is everyone. What are you guys idling for? Give Young master Ye a seat.”

Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and smiled back, “Many thanks, uncle Liu.”

When everyone sat down, they noticed Ye Zifeng looking around the room, “When I first entered uncle Liu’s home, i was shocked by the amount of antique and paintings throughout the house. For example, this picture of the Pearl Palace made from spirit threads. For uncle Liu to have such an item, you must be a very serious collector.”

“So nephew recognizes this picture of the Pearl palace? Actually this was given to me by a friend. I thought it looked nice so I hung it up. I don’t really know what kind of profound meaning it has.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Oh? So did your friend also give you the picture of the Jade Sea Sword on the left, and the Octo Desolate Realm Diagram on the right too? How about the Ancient Desert King Diagram above the tea set. From what I can see, these four items should be part of a set. If a collector doesn’t have the heart for it, they won’t be able to complete the set.

While saying that, he glared at Liu Mu.

“This.....” Liu Mu looked shockingly at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng looked as calm as always and continued to talk, “The way that they are put up forms a small high level formation. If you boil some spirit tea here, the formation will exert some sort of mental pressure where I am at right now. Uncle Liu, what do you think?”

Ye Zifeng pointed and smiled at the tea set while talking.

When he said this, everyone else was startled. This was the first time that Liu Bingqian and the others heard about this. They felt as if they had been enlightened.

“So it was like this....”

The two girls just realized that the antiques in their house could have such an effect.

Liu Mu's expression changed. He would have never guessed that this Ye Zifeng would know so much about antiques. He even saw through the formation.

It was rare for Liu Mu to find someone who knew so much about antique like himself. He's starting to see Ye Zifeng in a better light and won't treat him as a mere younger generation anymore.

"Hahahaha....That's right. Wow Zifeng, I didn't expect you to know so much about these rare antiques given your young age. You really are a hero amongst the younger generation. Even uncle, I, am admiring your."

Ye Zifeng smiled. Inside, Ye Zifeng was thinking that if these broken things were considered rare, then the gifts he received in his past life would all be considered priceless artifacts.They were all just interesting playthings to him that he looked at when he had free time.

"Uncle, the main reason I came over here was to give you a present."

"Present?"

Everyone in the Liu clan was shocked. Ye Zifeng came empty handed, what present was he talking about?

Liu Yige had been standing there for a while now and couldn't hold it in anymore, "You came here empty handed. What do you have to give as a gift? I'm afraid that you came here to try and rope our Liu clan into your alliance to go against the Wang clan."

Liu Mu fiercely looked at Liu Yige, "Shut up." This phrase sounded very angry but in reality, Liu Mu was only pretending.

If Ye Zifeng can't see through this, then he might as well go die right now.

Ye Zifeng smiled and pretended that he didn't hear Liu Yige.

"Nephew Zifeng, what is this present that you are talking about. Can you take it out so uncle can have a look?" Liu Mu smiled.

"Of course." Ye Zifeng nodded, stood up and extended his hand out. On his hand was a jade interspatial ring.

This wasn't the ring that he extorted from Wang Lin. It was the ring he got from Ye Xueyi after their exchange.

"Uncle, the present that I brought is in this interspatial ring. However, it's a bit too big so I hope everyone can take a step back and allow me to take it out....."

Chapter 66: Unconditional Bet

Ye Zifeng was as calm as water. He inserted his qi into the ring and a large item slowly appeared from the ring.

If he had a high grade interspatial ring, the item would have appeared instantly. However, Ye Zifeng had a low grade interspatial ring so the process was a bit slower.

Everyone from the Liu clan took a few steps back and had a confused expression on their faces.

What kind of gift did Ye Zifeng bring? How come it's so big?

Once the item took shape, Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up and suddenly yelled out, "Why did you bring the cauldron here?!"

The existence of the profound tier cauldron was a secret between the two of them. Now that he brought it here, he was basically trying to expose himself.

Liu Bingqian became worried for Ye Zifeng.

However, she looked at the cauldron again and felt that something wasn't right.

"Ai. That's not right. This is a common tier cauldron. What's going on?" She looked up again and saw that Ye Zifeng had a smile on his face.

Liu Yige laughed, "What a joke. Isn't this only a common tier cauldron. It's not even a huang tier cauldron. So Ye Zifeng is so trash at alchemy that he can only use a common tier cauldron." He wanted to continue talking but Liu Mu's glare caused him to shut up.

"This...." Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and wanted to see what he got up his sleeves.

Liu Mu furrowed his brows and wanted to see what Ye Zifeng was trying to do.

"Nephew Zifeng, could this gift that you're talking about be this common tier cauldron? Did you want to give it to my daughter Bingqian?"

He heard from the sect that his daughter was lacking a cauldron and thought that Ye Zifeng was going to give her this cauldron.

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked up to the cauldron. He rubbed it and shook his head, “This cauldron was a gift to me from the Gao clan. I thought that it was not bad so I brought it over.”

Actually, it wasn’t a gift from the Gao clan. Ye Zifeng went over to their house to look for a cauldron.

The Gao clan did not have an alchemist in their house so the clan master decided to give the cauldron to Ye Zifeng since he asked for it.

Liu Yige couldn’t help but smile. He had been waiting for Ye Zifeng to embarrass himself.

“Has the Ye clan fallen that much? To treat this common tier cauldron as a treasure and try to gift it to our Liu clan. Just who do you think we are?”

Liu Ningzi coughed and pulled Liu Yige to the side, “Senior brother, don’t be so excessive. Ye Zifeng is still a guest in our home.”

“Junior sister, what guest? Did you forget how he treated us when we went over last time?! We’re treating him like a guest but how did he treat us?”

Liu Ningzi’s expression changed immediately, “Alright. Last time, we were in the wrong too. Don’t talk about it anymore.”

When she went over to cancel the engagement, everyone thought that it was the right thing to do. She, herself, even felt relieved to be able to escape a binding to the trash Ye Zifeng.

However, after the Heavenly Clan Gathering, Ye Zifeng became the number one youngster in Leizhou City. Everyone started to pity her decision. Recently, every time she walked out, she would feel people pointing at her and talking about her. Her feelings about Ye Zifeng started to become mixed.

Liu Mu furrowed his brow, “How can you say this. Even though a

common tier cauldron isn't worth much, it's the thought that counts. Besides, Bingqian needs a cauldron anyways. I'm delighted by this gift."

Ye Zifeng who was standing there finally opened his mouth, "I did bring the cauldron over today but I didn't say that I was going to give the cauldron as a gift."

Liu Bingqian thought it was weird too. She didn't know why Ye Zifeng brought a common tier cauldron over. She did need a cauldron but to give something like this to her father.... It was kind of unsightly.

Ye Zifeng paused for a bit and looked at everyone, "Bingqian has probably told everyone that she had invited me to the alchemy competition. I brought the cauldron here to concoct some nurturing pills for everyone. I can guarantee that as long I have the ingredients, I will be able to concoct pills that are worth much more than this cauldron."

"What? You came over so you can concoct pills?"

Liu Bingqian was stunned and her eyes lit up. She understood what Ye Zifeng was doing. He wanted to show his abilities to her father and get permission to go to Tiandao City with her.

So he wasn't here to talk business with her father..... The reason he came here was because he wanted to go to the alchemy competition with her..... Thinking about this, Bingqian's cheeks suddenly turned red.

Other than Bingqian, no one present knew about Ye Zifeng's alchemy skills. They all believed that Bingqian only wanted to bring him due to her own desires.

"You know how to concoct pills too?" Liu Ningzi stared at Ye Zifeng and couldn't help but ask.

Ye Zifeng smiled but didn't answer her. It looked as if he was ignoring her.

In Ningzi's eyes, Liu Bingqian was the number one alchemist. For Ye Zifeng to dare concoct pills in front of her sister, wasn't he afraid of embarrassing himself?

Liu Yige laughed, “Ohhh I get it. Did you secretly learn some skills from sister Bingqian so you came here to show us some tricks.”

“If I can secretly learn from her then you, Liu Yige, should’ve been able to learn a thing or two from her too. After all, you’ve been in the Liu clan for quite a while now. Can you concoct a Qi Nurturing Pill?”

Qi Nurturing Pill was the most basic concoctable. However, those without talent in alchemy won’t be able to concoct it. Liu Yige was this someone without talent.

“I am attending the alchemy competition as Bingqian’s assistant. I, Ye Zifeng, might not be better than her, but I can assure you all that I am better than everyone else in Leizhou City.”

Ye Zifeng is already a rising star in Leizhou City. It was very hard for him to continue to work in the shadows. His secrets will be revealed sooner or later.

Thus, before anyone finds out his secret, he might as well show some of his own strength.

If he kill too many tigers as a dog, then any smart person would get suspicious. However, if he kill tigers as a wolf, people would be less suspicious.

“Good....As long as you’re better than everyone else in Leizhou City.... Good one. Nephew Zifeng is sure ambitious. Are you trying to say that no one in the Liu clan besides Bingqian is stronger than you in the art of alchemy?”

Liu Mu had been holding back for a while now. However Ye Zifeng said this phrase, Liu Mu immediately snorted and showed his true expressions.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Other than Bingqian, I am willing to bet that the Liu clan does not have anyone that can go against me in alchemy.”

Right when Liu Yige wanted to say something, Ye Zifeng’s expression suddenly changed into a serious one.

“If I lose, then I am willing to give 10 percent of the business channels in

Leizhou City to the Liu clan. I, Ye Zifeng, is willing to make a blood oath right now!"

"What?"

"10 percent of the business channels as a betting chip?"

Once everyone in the room heard this, they couldn't help but get up from their seats.

The reward for first place in the heavenly clan gathering was 30 percent of the business channels. The second place gets 20 percent of the business channels. Now, Ye Zifeng was so easily willing to give up 10 percent. He was basically swapping places with the Liu clan if he loses.

"Ye Zifeng, are you joking or what?" Liu Yige yelled out.

"Do you think I'm kidding?" Ye Zifeng coldly laughed and took out two things from his interspatial right, a piece of paper and a pen.

"If you think I'm kidding, I can write down the details, sign my name, get my prints here and make a blood oath to complete the contract. You should know that I'm being real."

"A blood..... blood contract..... You want to make this an absolute bet?" Liu Yige was very shocked and was speechless. This kind of blood contract was required for an official bet. If anyone goes back on their words, they will receive a divine punishment worse than death!

Liu Mu thought about it and came back to his sense, "Hahaha.... Nephew Zifeng really do like to joke. To be ready to do something like a blood contract.... I trust you completely. Fine. Tell me what you want."

10 percent of the business channels. If Ye Zifeng brought that to the Wang clan, they would have to be polite with him.

Ye Zifeng nodded and smiled, "It's simple, If I lose, then I'll give the Liu clan 10 percent of the business channels. If I win.... The first, I want uncle to allow me to enter the alchemy competition with Bingqian.

He then paused for a bit, "Second, I'm not going to ask the Liu clan to become our allies. I just want you guys to stay neutral....."

Chapter 67: Up against a genius?

To bet ten percent of the business channels for the other party to be neutral? Ye Zifeng is either really confident or really knows how to spend and waste money.

From the beginning, Liu Mu didn't care much about the alchemy competition. He just didn't want someone from the Ye clan to participate. He didn't think that so much would be at stake here.

After Ye Zifeng stopped talking, Liu Mu stared at Ye Zifeng for a while.

Liu Mu was someone who had experienced many worldly matters. After a while, he bursted into laughter.

"Good Good Good. Ye Zifeng. When you took first place during the heaven stairs competition, I thought that you won by fluke. When you beat Qian-er, I thought she was holding back. But now, it seems like you do have the ability and can truly deserves to be called a young hero in Leizhou City.

This time, he didn't call Ye Zifeng by "Nephew Zifeng" anymore. This old fox didn't want to pretend anymore. With such a big stake in front of himself, he had to show his true colors.

"Many thanks for the compliments. Then about this bet……"

"I'm willing to bet. Why wouldn't I be. You're looking down on my Liu clan's alchemy skills right? Then I'll open your eyes for you!"

Liu Mu started to laugh out loud and signed his name on the paper and then made a blood oath. He did everything in one go, it was very quick.

He called for one of the servants immediately, "You. Go bring Song Shiyun over. Make it quick. Tell him that I'll reward him with a hundred gold coins."

"Song Shiyun? That alchemy genius next door?" The servant was making sure.

"Who else could I be talking about?" Liu Mu unhappily furrowed his

brows.

"I'm going. I'm going right now."

Liu Mu turned around and looked at Ye Zifeng again, "Zifeng, you said that there's no one better than you in Leizhou City right? This Song Shiyun has a pretty close relationship with my Liu clan. He's basically part of the clan. If I bring him here, you won't have any objections right?"

Ye Zifeng calmly replied, "Well.... Since he's basically part of the Liu clan, then I won't have any objections."

Hearing this Liu Yige coldly snickered, "You can be cocky now, but when Song Shiyun comes over, I really want to see what your face looks like when you're in despair. I'll be looking forward to it."

Ye Zifeng smiled slightly and his face turned cold.

"Same to you....."

.....

The Song clan's residence was right next to the Liu clan's. They were very close. In just a bit, Song Shiyun came running in.

He was dressed in a black robe with a silver belt. His hair was sleek black and he had a noble aura. One can easily tell that he was very well groomed and educated.

"This one greets Uncle Liu, greets everyone, greets...."

Song Shiyun had been in the Liu clan's residence quite a few times now. He knew everyone in the Liu clan so when he saw Ye Zifeng he was a bit confused.

"I'm Ye Zifeng."

"No way. You're Ye Zifeng? That guy who got first place during the Heavenly Clan Gathering?"

Actually, he kinda recognize the person in front of him. However, he heard that the Liu clan didn't have a good relationship with the Ye clan and didn't expect Ye Zifeng to actually be here.

“It is I.” Ye Zifeng simply answered.

Song Shiyun took a deep breath, looked over at Liu Mu and shockingly asked, “Uncle Liu, could it be.....that the person that’s going to compete with me is Ye Zifeng?”

“That’s right.” Liu Mu smiled, “Shiyun, this competition is very important to uncle. You should give it your all. Don’t disappoint me. I’m thinking that you can win even if you casually concoct pills. Uncle believes in you.”

He didn’t say anything about the bet so Song Shiyun won’t be mentally affected. To gain ten percent of the business channels with 100 gold coins, it was very worth it! It was a low cost high reward move.

Song Shiyun was the Song clan’s alchemist. He’s been studying alchemy ever since he was little. Due to the fact that his clan was close with the Liu clan, he would often see the old devil Muyun around and secretly learn some things. In Leizhou City, he is known to be the second best alchemist after Liu Bingqian.

If it wasn’t for the fact that Ye Zifeng appeared out of nowhere, Liu Mu would have asked Bingqian to bring Song Shiyun with her to the alchemy competition.

“Don’t worry uncle Liu. If it’s in the art of alchemy, then Shiyun, I, have confidence that I can win. However if it’s martial arts, then I am definitely not his opponent.

Ye Zifeng laughed and pointed at the cauldron, “If you’re so confident then how about you go first? You can concoct whatever you want and do whatever you want.”

Song Shiyun chuckled, “Alright then. I’ll go first. I’ll show you how to really concoct pills. Maybe you’ll give up and save me some time. If you, Ye Zifeng, want to win against me in the way of alchemy, try again after a hundred years!”

Other than Liu Bingqian, Song Shiyun was confident that he can beat everyone else in Leizhou City. He was being very arrogant.

“Then please.” Ye Zifeng smiled at him.

Song Shiyun proudly snorted and walked towards the cauldron, “A common tier cauldron huh. That’s fine. This is just right for a beginner like you.”

He rubbed the cauldron and then smiled, “How about we compete in speed? As for the pill……let’s see…..do you know how to concoct Qi Nurturing Pills?”

Ye Zifeng looked calm like always, “Qi Nurturing Pill is a simple pill. How could I not know it?”

When Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng, she couldn’t help but laugh. However, before she could, Ye Zifeng shot her a glare causing her to stop.

Song Shiyun laughed out loud, “Great. If you know how to concoct Qi Nurturing Pills then don’t say that I’m bullying you when you lose. Uncle Liu, can you prepare ten sets of ingredients for me? I want to try and challenge my own limits in an hour.”

Qi Nurturing Pill was a very simple pill. It is used to recover a practitioner’s qi. Every clan has some stored in their own home. A large clan like the Liu clan would definitely have a lot of ingredients for this pill.

When Liu Mu saw the confident expression on Song Shiyun’s face, he was extremely happy and immediately called for a servant.

“Did you hear that? Young master Song wants the ingredients for Qi Nurturing Pill. Go find Housekeeper Chen. He should know what they are. Go fetch the ingredients quickly!”

“Yes master.” When the servant heard this, he quickly ran out to gather the ingredients.

Liu Bingqian took advantage of this gap in time and slowly moved towards Ye Zifeng’s side and worriedly said, “Big brother rough guy, I know that your alchemy skills is great but are you sure you don’t have a problem competing in speed? Concocting speed is Song Shiyun’s greatest field.

“What? Worried about me?” Ye Zifeng smiled.

Liu Bingqian’s face suddenly became red and turned around.

“Who’s worrying about you. Don’t be mistaken. I just don’t want you to lose due to a careless mistake.”

Liu Mu saw how the two was talking and coughed, “Qian-er, don’t stand there like an idiot. Young master Song took his time to come over. You should go make some tea for him.”

“No need. There’s still a lot of tea left here.”

Liu Mu’s expression turned cold and yelled with with a commanding tone, “Bingqian, I’m telling you to go!”

“Oh…. Okay then.” Liu Bingqian looked away and had a reluctant expression on her face. She walked out to get some tea.

Liu Mu awkwardly smiled, “I’m sorry Young master Song. You come by so rarely and we’ve neglected you this time.”

Song Shiyun waved his hands, “No way. Uncle Liu has been so nice to me. I’m content already.”

Ye Zifeng started to laugh in his heart, “I’m coming by for the first time in twenty years. Why are you neglecting me?

Thinking about it, it wasn’t weird that Liu Mu made Liu Bingqian leave Ye Zifeng. Liu Mu must’ve had his eyes on that Young master Song and wants to rope him in. Besides, the Ye clan and the Liu clan don’t like each other anyways. It was the right move to make.

After a while, Liu Bingqian brought the tea back and casually set it on the table. She didn’t even pour Song Shiyun a cup of tea and went to sit down. The place where she sat was very close to Ye Zifeng.

Liu Mu wanted to say something to her but the servant came back with the ingredients.

“Master, Master. The ingredients for the Qi Nurturing Pill is here. All ten sets.”

Liu Mu nodded and looked at Song Shiyun, “Don’t give it to me. Give it to young master Song.”

Song Shiyun laughed and received all ten sets. He put five sets of ingredient in front of Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng, the ingredients are here. Let me tell you the rules then. We both have 5 sets of ingredients and whoever makes the most Qi Nurturing Pills in an hour wins. What do you think?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and calmly answered, “It’s very simple. I like it.”

Chapter 68: A gentleman uses his mouth and not his fists!

When Ye Zifeng agreed, a sound of laughter sounded throughout the room.

“Great. To be so daring... As expected of the winner of the Heavenly Clan Gathering. But it’s too bad. You’re going to lose because you’re too arrogant!”

Song Shiyun didn’t waste his breath anymore and started to become serious. He grabbed the cauldron and moved it towards himself. At the same time, he grabbed the first set of ingredients.

“Oh? You’re gonna put the ingredients in before lighting up the fire? Well this is technically a faster way to concoct pill but only if you have an unlimited amount of ingredients.” Ye Zifeng smiled and engrossed in all of his opponent’s movements.

In the very beginning, Ye Zifeng had pointed out a flaw in Song Shiyun’s movements. If Song Shiyun continued what he was doing, it would be very awkward.

“Hmph. Whatever. I’ll light the fire first. The order of things don’t really matter as long as I can make more pills than you. I’ll show you the difference between the heavens and the earth!”

Song Shiyun laughed and gather the qi from his dantian into his fingers. A red flame suddenly appeared from his fingers and scattered around. It was a very magical sight.

Liu Bingqian was shocked, “No way. Song Shiyun, when did you condense a common tier flame?”

If someone can condense a common tier flame, that means that the said person was basically a quasi-huang tier alchemist. They only need to continue practicing using this flame to become a true huang tier alchemist. When this happens, Song Shiyun will become the second huang tier alchemist in Leizhou City.

Liu Mu looked deeply at Song Shiyun, “Young master Song, it seems like your efforts have borne fruit. Congratulations.”

Song Shiyun proudly replied, “Thanks uncle Liu. Truth to be told, I worked very hard to catch up to Bingqian. I hope that we can concoct pills togethers one day.”

The way he looked at Bingqian clearly showed that he liked her and was very infatuated with her. This was a normal thing. Bingqian was very beautiful and many young master of noble families would try to woo her.

“Very promising..... If you can become Bingqian’s helper and concoct pills with her, then I’ll be very happy!” Liu Mu expression was filled with praise.

The meaning of his words were very clear. He hoped that his daughter would bring Song Shiyun to the alchemy competition instead of that Ye Zifeng.

Liu Ningzi giggled and pulled her sister’s sleeve, “Sister Bingqian, did you hear that. He worked very hard just for you.....”

Liu Bingqian didn’t care about it at all, “He’s saying it to sound polite. Why would he work hard for me? He clearly worked hard for himself. Also, we don’t have any relations, don’t talk drivel.

While saying that, she looked over at Ye Zifeng. However, he wasn’t looking at her at all and was staring at the cauldron. This dealt a big blow to her maiden heart.

Ye Zifeng suddenly and unexpectedly opened his mouth and laughed, “Young master Song, it’s not that I’m calling you out, but you’re losing time by talking so much.....”

Song Shiyun coldly snorted, “I got a whole hour, who cares if I waste a bit of time. I can still win against you anyways.”

He relaxed himself and looked back at the cauldron.

“I won’t say anything but I just want to remind you that your common tier flame is of the yin attribute. If you don’t use it on the cauldron soon, it

will continuously burn out the yang energy in your body. Don't you feel like you're getting a headache right now?" Ye Zifeng's mouth curved up into a sly smile.

"This....." Song Shiyun was startled.

Ye Zifeng was completely right. What shocked him even more was that Ye Zifeng knew what attribute his common tier flame was. Any normal alchemist wouldn't have been able to tell the difference between yin and yang.

He furrowed his brows and his expression regained its original composure, "Ye Zifeng, it seems like you know the theories of alchemy very well. If you have the abilities, then why don't you point out all the flaws that I make. If you can do that, then I'll submit to you. If you can't, then shut up!"

While saying that he closed his eyes and slowly inserted his common tier flame into the cauldron to heat it up.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Fine. You're the one who wants me to point out all your flaws. Don't regret it. First, your posture and positioning is incorrect. You're not directly in front of the cauldron and won't be able to insert your qi at any time.... Also, if you close your eyes, you won't be able to control your flames. You won't be able to control the heat intensity and distribution to each ingredient....."

"You..... You....."

Song Shiyun opened his eyes and had a ugly expression. He knew that Ye Zifeng was right. He pointed out every single flaw in his movements. Song Shiyun wanted to retort but couldn't find anything to say.

Ye Zifeng smiled and continued, "Your control over your flame is way too terrible. You can't even control the heat correctly and insert it into the cauldron. I'm afraid that you'll be making quite a bit of slag this time around."

Hearing this, Song Shiyun stared at the cauldron for a while. Other that Liu Bingqian and her teacher, he had never seen someone talk like this in

Leizhou City. All of his words made sense.

"Young master Song, don't just stare at the cauldron. The cauldron is continuously being burned and you might even make a hole in it. Please control your flame correctly."

Song Shiyun hurriedly nodded and did exactly as Ye Zifeng told him and lowered the output of the flame.

If it wasn't for the fact that he was in the Liu clan, he would've definitely pulled Ye Zifeng aside and begged for some advice.

Liu Mu saw that something was wrong and advised Song Shiyun, "Young master Song, all you need to do is be yourself. Don't listen to this guy."

Song Shiyun nodded and inserted his qi into the ingredients. He slowly sent ingredients into the cauldron from the center and started to refine the ingredients right when it entered.

Ye Zifeng started to speak again, "That was wrong too. The cauldron is already at its boiling point so you should not have put the ingredients in from the center. It should have entered the cauldron from the sides. Only after you finish inserting your qi into the ingredients would you move it to the center of the cauldron to be refined. The pill that you refine will have a slight burnt smell and will have some fire attribute due to your mistakes!"

"You're right! It really is like this!" Song Shiyun couldn't help but yell out.

"That's right. Don't blame the ingredients for being bad. Rich kids like you probably all have okay ingredients. The reason why you guys fail is all because of your concocting methods."

Ye Zifeng deeply sighed and shook is head at Song Shiyun. His expression looked as if he was an elder feeling resentful towards a younger generation for failing to meet expectations. When Song Shiyun heard this, he didn't feel any anger at all.

"No.... No way. Is my alchemy skills that bad?"

Song Shiyun's mouth twitched and his eyes were sticking out. His voice

was shaking. Since the beginning, all of his problems and difficulties were easily solved and explained by Ye Zifeng.

Right now, his confidence was slowly and gradually disappearing. He couldn't win against Ye Zifeng.

The most important thing here is that Ye Zifeng didn't even do anything yet. All he did was talk!

Ye Zifeng smiled and once again reminded Song Shiyun about his mistakes, "Young master Song, you should be careful with the amount of ingredients that you put in. Your common tier flame was recently condense and is very limited. Its usage can't even be compared to using firewoods. You're still not used to it at all."

Song Shiyun slightly nodded his head unconsciously. Without knowing, his head was filled with sweat already.

"Then.... Then what should I do?"

"Young master Song....." Liu Mu coughed loudly which caused Song Shiyun to come back to his senses.

"I'm.... I'm sorry uncle Liu. I was a bit too nervous."

From the beginning, Song Shiyun had been listening to Ye Zifeng talk and didn't even concoct a single pill yet. This made Liu Mu very nervous.

"Shiyun, concoct the pills quickly. You only have half the amount of time left."

Song Shiyun gulped. He decided not to listen to Ye Zifeng anymore and concentrate on concocting pills with all his strength. He doesn't care about the grade of the pill. This was a contest of concoction speed, the quality of the pill didn't matter.

He was still nervous and threw three sets of ingredients into the furnace.

Ye Zifeng couldn't help but chuckle, "More haste, less speed. Don't try to run before you can walk. Did you master ever tell you about this saying? Using two sets of ingredients was the limit for people in the qi refining realm. Even Bingqian can't use more than two sets of ingredients at a

time”

When Ye Zifeng concocted the Thunder Spirit Pill, he used a pill division technique to create three pills. In reality, he only used two sets of ingredients.

Song Shiyun’s confidence hit rock bottom, “Then..... What’s gonna happen?”

“Well since you put three sets of ingredients in, then I am sure that one set of ingredients will turn into slag!” Ye Zifeng coldly laughed out loud.

The sound of laughter caused Song Shiyun to feel numb. Every since he was born, he had been surrounded by praises. He had never been attacked like this before.

“Holy shit.....I....I don’t want to do it anymore.....”

Chapter 69: Winning without a fight

Everyone that was present had a shocked expression on their face and were speechless.

Liu Mu stared blankly at Song Shiyun. He didn't expect Song Shiyun to say something so demoralizing.

As one of the alchemy geniuses in Leizhou City, he didn't even dare to compete with Ye Zifeng. His confidence was completely shattered by Ye Zifeng's words.

Ye Zifeng didn't even start concocting pills yet either. All he did was talk for a bit.

"Shiyun. What are you talking about? Continue concocting. Don't be influenced by his blabbering. He's talking bullshit."

Song Shiyun fiercely shook his head, "No. He's right. If I continue like this, I will turn one set of ingredient into slag. He found all the crucial flaws in my concoction process. I can't do this. I'm not worthy to be his opponent."

When Song Shiyun looked at Ye Zifeng again, he saw that Ye Zifeng was smiling. What happened today took all of Song Shiyun's confidence away. This kind of blow to his mental state might affect his future development as an alchemist.

Liu Mu was getting angry. To Song Shiyun, this was only a little friendly competition. However, to Liu Mu, this match had ten percent of the business channels on the line.

"SHIYUN! Quickly concoct the pills. Who cares if you make some slag. Concoct as many pills as you can. Ye Zifeng's only good at talking. In reality, he might not even be able to concoct as many pills as you."

Liu Mu was very anxious and wasn't acting like a noble clan master anymore. It was almost as if he had his hands around Song Shiyun's neck and forcing him to concoct pills. If it wasn't for the face that he didn't know how to concoct pills, he would've pushed Song Shiyun aside and

work himself.

"No.....I can't. I can't win against him."

Liu Mu coldly looked at him and snorted, "Didn't you say that you've been working hard in order to be able to concoct pills together with Bingqian. Could it be that you can't even step over a hurdle like this?" Liu Mu was thoroughly disappointed with this Song Shiyun who appeared fierce while he was cowardly at heart. After this, he won't regard this guy highly anymore.

"Bingqian....Okay....Fine. I'll try." Song Shiyun thought about Liu Bingqian and his expression changed. He gritted his teeth and walked back towards the cauldron.

Ye Zifeng laughed again, "Your feelings are unstable making it hard for you to form your flames. Also using three sets of ingredients is already past your limit. From what I can see, it would be a miracle if you can concoct even one pill." Ye Zifeng continued to exert pressure on Song Shiyun with his talks.

Song Shiyun's face sank, "One pill. I have to concoct at least one pill. I can't act like this in front of Bingqian....."

He knows that if he can't even concoct a single Qi Nurturing Pill, then his title as one of the genius alchemists in Leizhou City will mean nothing.

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted, "Who are you concocting pills for? Is it for yourself or is it for Bingqian? If you don't understand this, then why are you even concocting pills?"

Liu Mu coldly stared at Ye Zifeng, "Alright. Stop talking. If you continue then....."

"Am I breaking the rules? I don't remember you mentioning anything about not talking or commenting on the blood contract." Ye Zifeng answered with a unyielding and confident look.

"That....." Liu Mu's expression changed as he realized that Ye Zifeng was right. Ye Zifeng was a gentleman who uses his mouth and not his fist.

If Liu Mu wants to blame someone, then he should blame Song Shiyun for not having enough willpower and determination.

Liu Mu started to worry. Originally, he wanted to use Song Shiyun's alchemy skills to make Ye Zifeng back off. However, the one who backed off was not Ye Zifeng but Song Shiyun.

Song Shiyun forced himself to calm down. It was just as Ye Zifeng had said. His control over his common tier flame is not very efficient. His fingers had started to shake and his heart sank.

He looked up at Liu Bingqian and gritted his teeth, "I refuse to believe that I can't even concoct a Qi Nurturing Pill today!"

Song Shiyun's face turned serious. The flame on his fingers became much more exuberant and transmitted its energy into the cauldron.

Ye Zifeng lightly shook his head and laughed, "Don't be too excited. If you use such a large flame to concoct pills, you will easily burn all the ingredients....."

He paused for a bit and then continued to talk, "Besides, to concoct something as simple as a Qi Nurturing Pill, why are you trying to show off by using your condensed flame? It's fine to use firewoods you know."

"I don't believe it. I am the number two genius in Leizhou City. How can I not even concoct a Qi Nurturing Pill?"

Song Shiyun continuously shook his head. His mind was slowly sinking as if it was in quicksand. He couldn't free himself from Ye Zifeng's grasp. His flames became wilder and wilder..... Time past very slowly....."

Suddenly, a bang sound sounded from inside the cauldron. When Song Shiyun heard this, his entire body stiffened. He didn't move at all. He didn't know he should do.

"This.... What kind of sound is this?" Liu Mu asked shockingly. He was very anxious. He can already guess what happened but he didn't want to believe it.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "If you want to know what it is, ask him to open the

cauldron."

"Shiyun, open up the cauldron....." Liu Mu furrowed his brows and yelled out.

Song Shiyun's face ashen as he looked up. His movements were very slow. It was as if he was moving towards his execution ground.

"Song Shiyun, move quicker. You're a man aren't you? Show us what you got and open up the covers." Liu Mu was extremely angry. He didn't call him Young master Song or Shiyun anymore but called him by his full name instead.

"Uncle Liu, I....."

"Come on. Unless you want me to come over and open it myself."

Song Shiyun was biting on his lips. After hearing what Liu Mu said, he started to move quicker and reluctantly walked towards the cauldron.

He felt his heart ache as he opened up the cauldron.

Everyone looked over and a shocked expression appeared on their faces.

Inside the cauldron, there weren't any pills at all. It was completely black!

Liu Mu was stupefied. He thought that at the very worst, Song Shiyun would at least make something. However, Song Shiyun actually turned all three sets of ingredient into charcoal....

"You..... You really are useless!" Liu Mu was so angry that he couldn't control himself.

Song Shiyun was the one controlling the flames in the cauldron. He knew exactly what had happened.

"Uncle Liu, I'm sorry. I....."

Liu Mu hatefully looked at him, "Don't call me uncle Liu! You piece of trash. How can you not even make something as simple as a Qi Nurturing Pill. Do you think that you can still call yourself a genius anymore?"

"I....." Song Shiyun's face turned pale and couldn't talk back. If it was

someone else who had turned the ingredients into charcoal, he would have definitely laughed and ridiculed them. Liu Mu's reaction was very kind already. If he was really really angry, Song Shiyun would've been kicked out of the house already.

Ye Zifeng softly laughed and looked at Song Shiyun, "You lost control of your flame, didn't control the temperature correctly and didn't insert you qi at the right time. This is a good lesson for you. Remember this, If you want to teach someone else a lesson, you shouldn't mess up."

Song Shiyun looked at Ye Zifeng with a surprised look. Ye Zifeng was a few years younger than he was but when he talked, he looked like a mature and staid esteemed grandmaster. In the way of alchemy, Song Shiyun has no choice but to respect Ye Zifeng.

"Ye Zifeng, where did in the world did you appear from. How come you know so much?"

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "I didn't appear from anywhere. My skills aren't that high now. I told Uncle Liu already. I'm not as good as Bingqian but I can guarantee that I am better than everyone else."

Ye Zifeng then turned to Liu Mu and smiled, "Uncle Liu, do you think that I still need to show my skills?"

"You?" Liu Mu's expression was very ugly. However, Ye Zifeng was right. Song Shiyun couldn't even concoct a single pill. Even if you randomly call a servant, they were guaranteed to at least a tie.

Thus, the match didn't have meaning anymore. It was impossible for Ye Zifeng to lose.

Liu Mu trembled for quite a while and finally sighed, "Fine. Zifeng. I admit that it's your win..... This match, you won without even fighting.

"Winning without a fight?" After hearing this from her father's mouth, Liu Ningzi was at a loss. She stood there like a wooden doll, staring blankly at Ye Zifeng.

The alchemy skill between the two of them.... Was their skills so far apart that one side can win without doing anything?

Liu Bingqian looked happily at Ye Zifeng, her eyes showed an extraordinary splendor. She knew that she didn't choose the wrong person.

"Uncle, I'll take my leave." Song Shiyun heavily sighed. His face looked extremely ugly. He didn't have any face to stay at the Liu clan anymore. He cupped his hands and bowed to everyone. Under the guidance of the servants, he left the Liu clan's residence. From now on, it seems like Liu Mu won't be caring about him anymore.

Ye Zifeng watched as Song Shiyun left and smiled, "Uncle Liu, It seems like I won the battle without even competing. I wonder if our bet still counts.

"Hold on....." Liu Mu suddenly opened his mouth.

Chapter 70: Who Next?

Ye Zifeng looked at Liu Mu and frowned, “Uncle Liu, you’re not trying to act as if this had never happened are you?”

Liu Bingqian was even more anxious than Ye Zifeng, “Father, How can you be like this?!”

Liu Mu gave his daughter a fierce glance.

“I won’t go back on my words but…. You said that you can beat everyone in Leizhou City expect Bingqian. Is that correct?”

Ye Zifeng couldn’t help but laughed. He knew what Liu Mu meant. His entire expression turned cold, “Even if it’s like this, you can’t get everyone to come and compete with me. Even if I compete until I die, I won’t be able to finish competing with everyone.”

Liu Mu laughed, “Of course not. Don’t worry about it. You only need to win once more. After that, I won’t find anymore excuses.”

“Father, you….” Liu Bingqian couldn’t stand idly and watch anymore. She wanted to yell at her dad but halfway through, she remember that Liu Mu was her dad and stopped.

Ye Zifeng glanced at Liu Mu, “If it’s like this, then I need to add something else to the bet. The first two months after the bet, the Liu clan will be our Ye clan’s ally. After that you will continue to remain neutral.” Ye Zifeng doesn’t like doing things like this without a good cause so he added something to the bet.

“This….” Liu Mu thought about it and nodded. If it’s only for two months then it’s not that big of a problem.

“Alright. I’ll accept.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Nice. Then who’s next?”

“Next?….. Hehe…..”

Liu Mu’s mouth curved up and revealed a cold smile.

“Yige……”

He turned around and and told Liu Yige to get closer to him. He then whispered a few words. At first, Yige's expression was fine but after a while, a shocked expression appeared on his face. He looked up at Ye Zifeng and also started to smile coldly.

Liu Yige coldly snorted, "Ye Zifeng. Just you wait."

It was very clear that these two were conspiring about something.

"Big brother rough guy....." Liu Bingqian mumbled with a worried look on her face.

Since Ye Zifeng used 10 percent of the business channel as a bet to be able to go to the alchemy competition with her, she'll feel guilty if he loses.

She can also see that Ye Zifeng really wanted to go to the competition with her to fulfill both of their promises. While thinking about this, she looked warmly at Ye Zifeng.

However, in Ye Zifeng's mind, he was thinking about the Ye clan's future. He wanted to win and have the Liu clan ally with his Ye clan. As for the competition, he wasn't going for Liu Bingqian. He wanted to go for himself.

In a while, Liu Yige returned with a smile.

"Clan master, Miss Jing has arrived....."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Oh? Who could it be this time?"

After saying that, Ye Zifeng watched as a small delicate white hand opened up the curtain leading into the room. He watched as a fine young lady walked in. She was wearing a white silk robe and had a very angelic appearance. However, Ye Zifeng can see how white her lips were and deduced that she had some sort of illness

"Jing-er greets uncle Liu....."

"Miss Jing, there's no need to be so polite. Sit!"

Liu Bingqian was startled and looked at her, "Senior sister, why are you here?"

The young lady was called Yang Jing. Like Bingqian, she was also the Old Devil Muyun's disciple. She was younger than Bingqian but because she became the old devil's disciple before Bingqian, she was Bingqian's senior.

Yang Jing smiled, "Master old devil sent me here to pick you up for the alchemy competition. I wanted to go see you tomorrow but uncle Liu called me over saying that he needed my help in something."

"Why did master want you to pick me up? You're talking like I don't know how to get there....." Bingqian's eyes were twinkling and was a bit worried.

Yang Jing bitterly laughed, "If it wasn't for the fact that you're scared of being last again and is always looking for excuses to not go, why would I need to come to Leizhou City?"

On the outside, it looked as if she was picking up Bingqian but in reality, she was making sure that Bingqian attends no matter what.

Thinking about her own history in the alchemy competition, she started to become ashamed of herself.

"Ahem...."

If this continued on, the conversation will become a reminisce talk between two teenage girls. Liu Mu noticed this and intervened.

Liu Mu smiled and looked at Yang Jing, "Miss Jing, I'm very sorry. My Liu clan haven't properly entertained you and yet we're asking for your help."

A smile appeared on Yang Jing's pale face, "There's no need. Bingqian and I are basically sisters. The Liu clan is basically like a second family to me. It's my duty to help out at times. However, I'm still unsure about what I have to do....."

Liu Bingqian pulled Yang Jing to the side and whispered softly, "Senior sister Jing, my father wants you to compete with my friend. Can you hold back a bit and lose to him? I want to go to the alchemy competition with him....."

"Your friend....?" Yang Jing was surprised and looked deeply at Ye Zifeng.

She knew Bingqian for quite a while now and this was the first time that Bingqian cared about a guy so much. In the past, Bingqian was enthralled in the way of alchemy and have never talked about guys at all. She probably didn't even have any guy friends!

Liu Mu's expression changed and solemnly said, "Qian-er! This has to do with the clan's interest. Don't try to do anything."

Bingqian softly sighed and returned to her seat.

Ye Zifeng looked at Yang Jing and furrowed his brows, "Uncle Liu, she came from Tiandao City. Could it be that everyone who's a guest in your Liu clan will always become a part of your Liu clan? Can she even count as someone from Leizhou City?"

Ye Zifeng wasn't scared of Yang Jing. He just didn't agree with Liu Mu's underhanded methods.

Liu Mu cheerfully nodded and laughed, "Ahhh Zifeng. You don't know this but Miss Jing is actually someone from our Leizhou City. It's because of the fact that she has a weak constitution that she moved Tiandao City. She needed someone at the Martial Spirit stage to continuously give her Pure Yang Qi so she became a disciple under the old devil Muyun."

He smiled and continued, "So... Of course she can be counted as someone from Leizhou City.

Ye Zifeng nodded and looked at Bingqian, "How's her alchemy skills compared to yours?"

Liu Bingqian thought about it for a bit, "Senior sister's talent is better than mine but she has always been sick and cannot use her qi to warm up the ingredients properly. Thus, she is somewhere on my level. But you have to be careful. She is a lot better than that Song Shiyun."

Liu Yige coldly laughed, "Just give up Ye Zifeng. Miss Jing's alchemy skills are far better than that Song Shiyun's. You should forfeit now to save some face."

"So that's how it is." Ye Zifeng smiled, "Alright. I accept this match. However Miss Jing, how about you let me decide on how we're going to

compete?"

Yang Jing nodded, "Sure."

In her eyes, there was no one else in Leizhou City who can match up with her other than Liu Bingqian. Thus, she didn't believe that this youngster can beat her at all.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Cool. Then we'll compete in making a Pure Yang Dan."

Yang Jing's calm face suddenly changed when she heard "Pure Yang Dan" and immediately stood up from her seat.

"What? How can this be? You can concoct a Pure Yang Dan?"

Her body was weak and needed a Martial Spirit realm expert to pass on their pure yang qi to let her survive. If she had a Pure Yang Dan, then she won't need their help anymore and can rely on herself.

However, even though the pill wasn't hard to concoct, there was an extremely low chance in succeeding. After trying for around a hundred times and failing all hundred times, she finally stopped trying.

Right now, from what Ye Zifeng can see, Yang Jing definitely doesn't know how to concoct a Pure Yang Dan!

Liu Mu furrowed his brows, and looked over at Bingqian, "Qian-er, is this Pure Yang Dan very hard to concoct?"

Liu Bingqian was shocked, "Of course it is. If sister Jing has a Pure Yang Dan, then she doesn't need to stay in Tiandao City and receive help from Martial Spirit experts anymore!"

"So that's how it is." Liu Mu looked at Ye Zifeng. From what he can tell, not even Bingqian can concoct this Pure Yang Dan. If Ye Zifeng is able to, then he is probably better than Bingqian.

Thinking about this, it wasn't bad if Ye Zifeng goes to the competition with Bingqian. However, he still wanted to win that ten percent of business channels.

Liu Mu quickly waved his hands and called for a servant, "Come on. Did

you guys hear it? Bring out the ingredients for the Pure Yang Dan!"

Liu Bingqian shook her head, "No father. Not many people know about the ingredients for this pill. I'll personally go and get the ingredients!"

Chapter 71: Pure Yang Dan's Secret

When Liu Bingqian went out to retrieve the ingredients, everyone in the room was silent.

Yang Jing was unable to take her eyes off Ye Zifeng and continued to stare at him. Her pale face became even more pale due to excitement.

"You really know how to concoct a Pure Yang Dan? You're not lying to me?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Miss Jing, do you think an ordinary person would know the name 'Pure Yang Dan'?

"你……"

"You....."

Yang Jing was shocked by his reply but she knew that he was right. A normal alchemist would not know what a Pure Yang Dan is. Only a huang or above tier alchemist would know the ingredients of this pill. As for concocting it, one's skill need to reach at least the profound tier to be able to succeed.

Originally, Yang Jing's master, Old Devil Muyun can help her concoct one but the ingredients are way too costly. The success rate is very low too. Even her master can at best succeed once in three tries.

"What are you call? Who's your master? When did you start concocting pills? If you know how to concoct pills then why have I never seen you before?"

Yang Jing stared at Ye Zifeng and without even noticing, she asked a series of question. After the words came out, she felt that she forgot her own manners and felt embarrassed.

Afterall, if the youngster in front of her can really concoct a Pure Yang Dan then he is definitely not a normal alchemist. However, she had never heard of him before and was suspicious.

"I'm Ye Zifeng. Also Miss Jing, don't you feel like you're asking a lot of

questions?" Ye Zifeng smiled?

"What? You're Ye Zifeng? Then you're Miss Ningzi's....."

Yang Jing covered her mouth in surprised. At the same time, she looked over at Liu Ningzi who was quietly sitting there.

Yang Jing comes to the Liu clan very often and the girls usually gossip with each other. Thus, she knows about Liu Ningzi's engagement.

Liu Ningzi awkwardly smiled and shook her head, "No. Not anymore..... "

"What's not?" Yang Jing didn't know how to respond. Naturally, she didn't know that Liu Ningzi would go to the Ye clan and cancel the engagement herself. Right now, Liu Ningzi has nothing to do with Ye Zifeng.

However, in Yang Jing's mind, she thought that Liu Ningzi was being shy and didn't think much about it. The thing she cared the most about was the Pure Yang Dan.

"Ye clan's young master, if you can really concoct a Pure Yang Pill, then I, Yang Jing, will admit defeat. I can't concoct the pill but if you fail to concoct it, what happens?

"That's simple. If that's the case, then I'll admit defeat." Ye Zifeng smiled.

"What? You'lll admit defeat?" Yang Jing gasped. There were many people who challenged Bingqian and herself in the past. However none of those people would give themselves such pressure before they even began to concoct.

Hearing this, a smile appeared on Liu Mu's face.

Just from seeing the reactions from Yang Jing and Bingqian, Liu Mu could tell that the Pure Yang Dan was very difficult to concoct. Under this situation, Ye Zifeng proclaimed that he would admit defeat if he couldn't concoct it. He was basically courting his own death.

"Ye Zifeng, after the bet, the master might send me over to your house to pick up the documents for the extra business channels that we're gonna

get. Don't try to back out of it then."

Liu Yige was laughing at how Ye Zifeng was going to fall.

.....

"Move out of the way. I'm back. Sorry for making everyone wait. I've brought the ingredients."

Liu Bingqian's soft voice once again sounded through the entire room.

Liu Mu confusingly asked, "Qian-er, how come it took you so long? Isn't the storage room just around the corner?"

He wanted to say more but when he saw Bingqian order a few servants to bring in a large bag, his expression changed and was so angry that he couldn't say anything.

"Qian-er..... You, this is....What are you doing? Why did you bring so much ingredients?"

Liu Bingqian giggled, "When I went over to the storage room, I saw that we had way too much ingredients. The ventilation in the room is very bad and there isn't much sunlight either. I'm afraid that they'll go bad so I brought a little extra."

"This is a little extra?" Even the silent Liu Ningzi couldn't help but speak

The Pure Yang Dan is hard to concoct but it's not like it can't be concoct it. Thus, Liu Bingqian brought every ingredient that has to do with the pill over. Her intentions were very clear. She wants Ye Zifeng to succeed.

If his ability wasn't there, maybe he can make it up with quantity.

She lifted her head and facetiously looked at Ye Zifeng, "Big brother rough guy, this is all I can do....."

"Ah.....This girl is at that age already. She doesn't even care about the clan anymore and would rather help an outsider." Liu Mu sighed and sat back on his chair.

At this time, Liu Mu didn't care about the bet about attending the alchemy competition anymore. Seeing how Liu Bingqian was helping Ye

Zifeng, even if he didn't allow it, she would forcefully bring him along anyways.

Ye Zifeng smiled and thanked Liu Bingqian. He then walked over the the large bag of ingredients.

He bent down and started to pick up some ingredients, "Dragon Lord Ginseng, Hundred Grass Nectar, Celestial Immortal Flower, Youxiang Silk and many other ingredients. He only took a little bit of each ingredient.

Liu Mu's expression suddenly revitalized, "Nephew Zifeng, are you trying to use one set of ingredient to concoct the pill. If you fail then you lose right?"

After seeing this, he started to call Ye Zifeng by Nephew Zifeng again.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I didn't say anything about that. Since Bingqian was so nice to me, I'll just have to use all these ingredients to concoct a Pure Yang Dan. I can't waste her kindness like this."

Hearing how Ye Zifeng was thanking her, Bingqian's face became red immediately.

Liu Mu's heart sank again. If Ye Zifeng wants to use up all these ingredients, who knows how long it'll take! However, there wasn't anything wrong with doing that.

"However...." Ye Zifeng spoke softly.

"However what?" Liu Mu's face lit up again. As a senior and a clan master, his emotions were being toyed by Ye Zifeng.

"However, if you want me to use one set of ingredients, that's fine too."

"Really?"

Ye Zifeng nodded, "However, you have to extend the alliance between our clans to half a year if I win!"

Ye Zifeng slowly increased the amount of time the two clans had to be allies. He made it look like he had a disadvantage and made Liu Mu increase the time of the alliance. For Ye Zifeng to have such a cunning nature, it made Liu Mu continuously praise him in his heart. Right now, he

hated that Ye Zifeng was Ye Chongtian's son and not his own son.

Liu Mu gritted his teeth, "Fine! Half a year it is. Even if the Wang clan is unhappy, I'll take responsibility for this. I don't believe that you can concoct a Pure Yang Dan with just one set of ingredient!"

For Liu Bingqian to bring so many sets of ingredient over, she was obviously saying that this pill was very hard to concoct.

"Alright then!" Ye Zifeng laughed. Without wasting anymore time, he walked towards the cauldron with his ingredient and threw everything in there.

Liu Yige couldn't help but be surprised, "Ye Zifeng, didn't you tell Song Shiyun that you can't do this?"

Ye Zifeng smiled back, "Song Shiyun is Song Shiyun and I am me. Rules are never set in place. He is considered a beginner. Only when you really understand alchemy can you use different methods to concoct under different situations...."

"Changing the method to concoct under different situations....." Yang Jing was surprised by these words. She felt that this guy in front of her was not simple at all. She couldn't help but keep her eyes on him.

In her eyes, for a man to be so close to Bingqian.... He must not be simple at all.

Ye Zifeng took a firewood from the servants and put it under the cauldron. After lighting it up, he turned to Yang Jing and smiled at her.

"A pill like the Pure Yang Dan is considered a low-mid tier pill. However, do you know why it's so hard to concoct the pill? Did you master ever tell you why the success rate is so low?"

Yang Jing thought about it and shook her head. She was curious. Failing to concoct a pill is very normal. What reason was there?

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Experts don't think that this pill is worth their time and beginners don't know how concoct the pill. As for the people in the middle, they've heard too many rumors about this pill and have never

truly researched a proper concoction method.

"If i'm not wrong, your master doesn't want you to understand this. This is why he probably made it look like it was hard to concoct the pill in front of you guys. He wants you guys to figure it out yourselves."

"This....." Yang Jing had thought about this already. However, if her master wants this, it was for her own good anyways.

"Then how about you? What are you? An expert? A beginner? Or someone in the middle?"

Chapter 72: I'll win even if you act shamelessly

Ye Zifeng thought about it and then involuntarily laughed, "Which one am I? Well you'll know after you watch me concoct the pill."

"You....." Yang Jing's expression changed.

In Leizhou City, there isn't man who wouldn't honestly answer her when she asked a question. There was nobody who answered like Ye Zifeng and kept her waiting. This guy is simply too hateful.

"Alright. I'm going to start. Please don't disturb me."

When Ye Zifeng turned to face the cauldron, he became very serious as if he was a different person.

A Pure Yang Dan isn't as hard to concoct as the rumors. However, to someone with a 5th stage of qi refining cultivation, this was a pretty hard task to accomplish. If he makes even one tiny mistake, the entire set of ingredient will turn into slag.

He looked at the cauldron and inserted his qi into it to slowly warmed up the ingredients. After a while, he added some more firewood into the fire.

Yang Jing saw his movements and was surprised, "Dual-tasking! To be able to increase his qi's temperature and the flame's temperature at the same time while maintaining the same temperature for both. This is a move that experienced alchemists use. As expected, this Ye Zifeng is not simple at all.

Yang Jing watched as Ye Zifeng slowly inserted the firewood into the flames and gasped.

Liu Mu furrowed his brows and looked at Bingqian, "Qian-er, is Ye Zifeng's dual-tasking method that extraordinary?"

Liu Bingqian was shocked as well. When she heard her father's question, she started to laugh.

"Of course it's extraordinary! When you insert your qi into the cauldron,

you need to know how much you inserted and need to feel around. While doing that, Zifeng is also controlling the temperature of the fire by adding more and more firewoods. Just look at what he's doing. The amount of wood that he puts in is different every time."

"Really?"

Hearing this, Liu Mu started at Ye Zifeng's hand.

The first time, it was two small firewood. The second time, it was a large firewood. The third time, Ye Zifeng chopped a firewood in half with his bare hands and inserted one piece.

"It really is a different amount everything. Who would've thought that something as simple as inserting firewoods would have such a profound method..... However, from what I know, Ye Zifeng doesn't have an alchemy master. Could he have learned this all by himself?"

Liu Mu stared at Ye Zifeng with a confused and surprised expression.

"I don't know about this either.... Maybe he really did learn this by himself...." Liu Bingqian shook her head. She didn't meet Ye Zifeng too long ago and doesn't know many of his secrets. If Ye Zifeng doesn't say anything, then she won't ask anything.

However, she was sure of one thing. The Ye clan didn't have an alchemist. If Ye Zifeng wants to learn alchemy, he would have to read from books....

.....

In just a while, a purple gas appeared from the cauldron.

"This.... What is this purple gas?"

Liu Mu saw this scene and couldn't help but ask. Originally, he thought that Ye Zifeng would definitely not be able to concoct the pill but when the saw the expression on the two girl's faces, it looked like Ye Zifeng was doing fine.

Liu Bingqian smiled and explained to her father, "When a purple gas appears, it means that the ingredients are slowly melting and condensing

into a pill."

Liu Mu furrowed his brows. Could Ye Zifeng actually successfully concoct the pill?

He looked over at Liu Yige, signaling him to come over. Yige saw this and hurried over.

"Clan master, what do you need?"

Liu Mu suppressed his voice and whispered, "It seems like this Ye Zifeng is about to concoct a Pure Yang Dan. We can't just sit here and do nothing."

Liu Yige felt delighted and asked, "Then clan master means...."

"You see....." Liu Mu pointed at where Ye Zifeng was sitting.

Liu Yige didn't know what he meant and scratched his head, "This.... May clan master clarify..."

Liu Mu sighed, "You stupid blockhead!"

(TL: In chinese blockhead (木头) is the same as log (木头).

"Blockhead?" At first Liu Yige thought Liu Mu was yelling at him but when he looked over at the logs of firewood besides Ye Zifeng, he quickly realized what Liu Mu meant.

Liu Mu wanted to mess with the firewoods that Ye Zifeng was using!

Liu Yige understood this and smiled, "Alright. I got it. I'll go right now!"

"Be a bit more low-key. Don't be too excessive....." Liu Mu delightfully smiled and nodded.

"Of course."

Liu Yige looked around and when no one was looking at him, he slipped out of the room.

He quickly returned with a servant who put a bunch of new logs of firewood by Ye Zifeng's side.

Ye Zifeng was concentrating very hard since he had reached a crucial

moment.

However, when he picked up one of the new log of firewood, a shocked expression appeared on his face. He felt it a bit more and realized what happened.

He furrowed his brows, and looked over at Liu Mu. It seems like this old fox still has tricks up his sleeve. Liu Mu sat there with a sly smile, waiting for Ye Zifeng to mess up.

As the Liu clan's clan master, he was shamelessly trying to sabotage a youngster.

"Nephew Zifeng, why are you not concocting the pill and staring at me. Could there be a problem?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I want to say something. The firewood that this servant bought is a bit too light..."

Liu Bingqian looked at the firewood and gasped, "Could those all be hollow wood?" She walked over a picked up a firewood and examined it, "Father, what's going on?"

While concocting a pill, one will need to use solid wood. Even a beginner knows that. If they use a hollow wood, then the fire won't be strong enough for the pill to take shape.

After hearing this, Liu Mu's expression changed and coldly looked at the servant, "You useless thing. What are you doing? Who told you to bring hollow wood. Go back and get some solid wood.

"I'm sorry master. I saw that there were some leftover wood in the yard and brought them here. This one did not know that they were useless for concocting pills. I'm sorry. I'll go back right now."

After being yelled at, the servant apologized and turned around.

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted, "No need. If I wait for you to come back, I'm afraid this pill will turn into slag already...."

Liu Mu pretended to awkwardly smile, "Nephew Zifeng. I'm so sorry. I didn't know that my servants would be so useless. I hope you can excuse

him."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned very cold. For Liu Mu to do something so underhanded, he'll be losing face even if he wins.

"Whatever. When I came to the Liu clan by myself, I've already prepared for things like this."

Ye Zifeng sighed and looked back at the cauldron with an even more serious expression.

Liu Yige and Liu Mu looked at each other, shocked. It seems like Ye Zifeng is still going to continue.

"Ye Zifeng, if you waste this set of ingredient then you lose. You said it yourself. You only have this one chance." Liu Yige yelled out to remind him.

"I don't need you to remind me of my own matters." Ye Zifeng threw the last solid firewood into the fire. His eyes lit up and a glistening ray of light appeared from his body. On his fingers, a tiny amount of light entered the cauldron.

Yang Jing's expression changed and stood up, "Light from your fingers? This is something that appears before one condenses a common tier flame! Could it be that you're almost a huang tier alchemist?"

It was a very crucial moment for Ye Zifeng so he didn't answer her.

Right now, he was only at the fifth stage of qi refining. If it wasn't for the fact that Liu Mu had forced him, he would not have used this move. If one doesn't have enough strength, not only will one fail, one will also feel a recoil effect.

Because of this, Ye Zifeng didn't condense his flame but used a fire qi instead. He infused the fire qi with the last firewood to increase its temperature.

"You have to succeed....." Liu Bingqian was shaking. She closed her eyes and prayed for Ye Zifeng's success.

After a bit, the cauldron started to shake and make a hissing sound. The

last firewood had been burned out and the temperature of the cauldron wasn't high enough. Bingqian heard this and her heart started to beat very fast.

After a bit, the shaking finally stopped. Everyone was silent.

"Complete!"

Ye Zifeng let out a long sigh. His entire back was filled with sweat.

"Since you're done. Open the cauldron up and show us." Liu Mu was staring at the cauldron hoping that Ye Zifeng had failed.

Ye Zifeng nodded and opened up the cauldron. When he opened it up, a burnt and charred smell leaked out.

Chapter 73: Are you satisfied now?

After smelling the charred smell coming from the cauldron, Liu Mu was very happy.

This was because if Ye Zifeng had failed, then ten percent of Ye clan's business channels will be the Liu clan's. This was not a small amount! With this, the Liu clan's strength will increase once again.

Liu Yige saw this and started to laugh, "Ye Zifeng, it looks like you've lost. What do you have to say now?"

Ye Zifeng stood in front of the cauldron and opened up the cauldron. All that could be seen was a bunch of black slag.

"Ai....." Yang Jing who was looking forward to the completion of the pill suddenly became disappointed. When she thought about it, this was pretty normal. The Pure Yang Dan was very hard to concoct. How can he succeed in one set of ingredient. Why did she place her hopes on this youngster?

Liu Bingqian was staring blankly at the pile of slag. In her heart, she was angry at Ye Zifeng for being so arrogant.

She couldn't sit there and do nothing at all. She walked up in front of Liu Mu.

"Father, when Ye Zifeng was concocting the pill before, he didn't get to use solid firewoods. We are the ones in the wrong. So you should let him try agian."

Liu Mu was startled. His happy mood was suddenly turned sour from Bingqian's words.

Liu Mu snorted, "Hmph. What do you mean try again? Did we agree that he'll only use one set of ingredient to concoct the pill once? He can't say anything now that he's failed. You can't say anything for him."

He wanted to stop Ye Zifeng from having any wishful thinking and immediately shut Bingqian down.

Ye Zifeng laughed while his back was to the crowd, "Failed? Who said I

failed?"

Liu Yige fiercely looked at him, "Bullshit. What else is there besides slag? If you didn't fail, then what is it?"

Liu Mu acted as if he understood what Ye Zifeng was doing, "Nephew Zifeng, I know that you're in a bad mood but this is reality. No matter what happens, you can't change reality."

Ye Zifeng's face turned cold as he moved out of the way.

A ray of golden line shined across the room. The sudden light filled the entire hall. Liu Mu who was laughing saw this golden ray of light and couldn't help but look up at the cauldron.

"This..... What's happening?" Liu Mu couldn't comprehend what was happening at all and was very shocked.

In the pile of slag, a red striped pill continuously released golden light into the room.

Ye Zifeng didn't fail! He was able to use the last firewood and his qi to condense the ingredients into a pill!

"Pure Yang Dan..... This is a Pure Yang Dan!" Yang JIng rushed up too look at the pill. Her pale face became even more pale.

"Impressive. Very impressive! This is simply unimaginable. If it was me, I definitely wouldn't have been able to concoct it!" Yang Jing excitingly praised.

"This..." Liu Mu felt as if he had fallen into a hole. He was an esteemed clan master. He was also someone from Ye Chongtian's generation. However, this time, he lost a bet to Ye Zifeng!

Liu Yige also had the same look on his face. His efforts of making the woods hollow were for naught. He thought he could get back at Ye Zifeng but Ye Zifeng still competed the pill.

Bingqian's watery eyes started to light up, "I knew it. I knew that you would succeed."

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked over Liu Mu, "Uncle Liu, I bet you're

interested as to why I was able to finish concocting the pill even though my flames weren't strong enough."

Liu Mu quickly nodded and asked, "Yeah. How did you do it? Tell me."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Actually, it's all thanks to Uncle Liu's help."

"Me? Did I help you?" Liu Mu was shocked. He had been against Ye Zifeng since the very beginning. How did he help him? He didn't even move from his seat.

"Uncle Liu, do you remember what I said about the four paintings that you have here? I told you that when the four paintings are together, they have a special effect.

"Hold on....."

Liu Mu was shocked, "Could it be? Could you have used the formation of the paintings to your benefit?"

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Well technically, I only used the Ancient Desert King diagram's effect.... Look at where i am standing. It's right in front of the diagram."

When Ye Zifeng walked into the Liu clan, he scanned the room for everything that he could use and remembered their positions.

"This.... You can even use this to your benefit?"

Liu Mu looked at the Ancient Desert King Diagram and it was directly in front of where Ye Zifeng was. The Ancient Desert Diagram was able to arouse one's yang qi in their blood. It was perfect for Ye Zifeng when concocting a Pure Yang Dan.

"No wonder why you're saying that I helped you. So it was like this." Liu Mu bitterly laughed and shook his head. His own collection and hobby had led to his downfall. It made him sigh with sorrow.

While shaking his head, Liu Mu remembered something. He only knows the effect of this Ancient Desert King Diagram because an expert had explained it to him. How did this Ye Zifeng who was still wet behind his ears know about this? His knowledge can't be underestimated.

“If i’m not wrong, the reason that you want to concoct a Pure Yang Dan is because of this diagram isn’t it?”

“It’s one of the reasons.” Ye Zifeng smiled and replied.

“Incredible.” Even a sly old fox like Liu Mu was continuously praising like Ye Zifeng. However, Liu Mu had a weird feeling inside his heart. Ye Zifeng’s words and actions did not resemble someone that was twenty years old. If he knew that Ye Zifeng was so talented, he would have stopped Liu Ningzi from cancelling the engagement.

After thinking about it, Liu Mu realized that he was short-sighted. He lifted his head and looked over at Liu Ningzi. No one can tell what he was thinking about.

Liu Yige was still in shocked, “No wonder why you’ve been staring at the diagram instead of the cauldron before. So you’ve been trying to use the formation from the diagram!”

He realized that there was a purpose to everything that Ye Zifeng did.

“You…. You’re not as stupid as I thought you were.” When talking to someone that he hates, Ye Zifeng didn’t save them any face.

“You!” Liu Yige gritted his teeth.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at everyone here. He saw that they all had a look of disbelief in their eyes.

When Ye Zifeng said that he was going to the Liu clan alone, Ye Chongtian and Ye Xueyi didn’t let him, thinking that the people of the Liu clan would bully him. They did try to bully him but wasn’t successful in doing so.

“Uncle Liu, the bet states that if I can use one set of ingredient to concoct a Pure Yang Dan, it is my win. So let me ask you this. This bet…. It counts as my win right?”

“That’s right. It’s….It’s your win. Ahhh a younger generation’s skills should not be underestimated. It should not be underestimated at all.” Liu

Mu was feeling a bit depressed. After all these years ruling over Leizhou City, this was the first time that he had tasted defeat from someone of the younger generation.

Liu Bingqian tried to suppress her happiness and asked, “Then father, according to the bet, you’ll allow big brot....I mean, Ye Zifeng to go to the alchemy competition with me.”

Liu Mu nodded, “Since it was in the contract, then I can’t refuse you guys. Go ahead....”

“That’s great!” Liu Bingqian looked over at Ye Zifeng and blushed. If it wasn’t for the fact that Ye Zifeng came, then with her abilities, she will definitely be shut down by her father.

Ye Zifeng came at such a good time.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up. It was true that he had won but it wasn’t until Liu Mu admitted it himself that Ye Zifeng can consider this a victory.

Of course, he had to be cautious and asked again, “Then about the alliance between our clans.....”

Liu Mu thought about it for a while and answered, “About this.... After what happened, today, I have a different idea.”

“Father, how can you be like that? Allying with the Ye clan is part of the bet. Didn’t you agree on it?” Bingqian wanted the two clans to ally with each other and thus quickly yelled at her dad.

Ye Zifeng’s eyes turned cold, “Could Uncle Liu be going back on his words?”

Liu Mu laughed loudly, “Look at you guys. Do you think that I, Liu Mu, is someone so untrustworthy? Everything that I do is for the good of our clan.”

“Then father’s meaning is.....”

Liu Mu patted Bingqian’s head and looked over at Ye Zifeng.

“Nephew Zifeng. I’ve thought about it. With someone like you in the Ye

clan, I don’t have to worry about anything in the future. Thus, my Liu clan will ally with your Ye clan for at least one year!”

Chapter 74: Departure

The alliance between the Liu clan and the Ye clan was announced the very next day. It quickly became the hottest topic in Leizhou City. It was even hotter than when Ye Zifeng obtained first place in the Heavenly Clan Gathering.

After all, no matter how strong Ye Zifeng was, in the eyes of the senior generation, all he has is potential. In just a few days, they all forgot about it and started to think about more important things.

However, the news of the Liu clan allying with the Ye clan was not a simple one at all. This implied that the major powers in Leizhou City is changing once again.

Everyone started to talk about how the Ye clan was on the rise. There were some who admired them and some who were jealous of them. However, all of the talk was undoubtedly about Ye Zifeng.

Even the people in the Ashen Spirit Sect were discussing about what happened.

"Did you hear about it? The first place of the last Heavenly Clan Gathering, Ye Zifeng actually went and melted the treasure sword that he received from the sect. He's crazy!"

"Bros, what kind of old news are you talking about? Don't you know? A few days ago, many seniors from smaller clans went to the Ye clan residence to talk business. They've all to ally with the Ye clan for the next five years. Also, the one who struck the deal wasn't Ye Chongtian, but his son Ye Zifeng!"

"Your news is pretty old too. Someone saw Ye Zifeng walk into the Liu clan residence alone. The next day, the Liu clan immediately announced their alliance with the Ye clan! Do you think that this has to do with Ye Zifeng?"

Hearing all these praises for Ye Zifeng, Wang Lin coldly snorted.

He couldn't take it anymore and started yelling at these gossipers.

“Stop talking right now! Stop saying Ye Zifeng this, and Ye Zifeng that. Is he a god or something?”

All these people were suddenly startled and looked over at Wang Lin. They realized that this was the young master of the Wang clan. They all stopped talking and walked away.

Wang Lin was very angry and looked over at Wang Ruoxing.

Wang Ruoxing’s face looked as cold as ice and smiled, “Brother Lin, tell brother the truth. Can you not bear it anymore and want to deal with Ye Zifeng?”

Wang Lin furrowed his brows and nodded, “Yes! If I don’t deal with him soon, I’m gonna go crazy. His existence has been bothering me like a bad dream.”

He looked up at Wang Ruoxing and asked, “Second brother, last time, you told me to wait. We’ve been waiting for so long already. How about we.....”

Wang Ruoxing coldly laughed. He knew what Wang Lin meant. He wanted to deal with Ye Zifeng himself too.

“Brother Lin, originally, I planned something out for half a month later. At that time, i can guarantee that Ye Zifeng will suffer. But, if you want to do it now, I can help you too.

Wang Lin’s eyes lit up and became very excited.

“Second bro, really? You’ll help me teach Ye Zifeng a lesson? You don’t have to take his life, just teach him a lesson for me.”

Wang Ruoxing nodded and laughed, “Since i’m your big brother, I have to take care of you. Take a guess at what I’ve been doing outside the sect these days.

Wang Lin rubbed his head and asked, “I.... I don’t know. Could it be that you found someone to teach him a lesson?”

Wang Ruoxing laughed, “Of course not. Do you think it’s that easy to find an expert to fight for us?”

“This..... You’re right.” Wang Lin sighed. He thought about how the people that he hired were all useless and was beaten. If they found any random cultivator, they won’t be able to beat Ye Zifeng.

Wang Ruoxing smiled, “Actually, for the past few days, I’ve been keeping an eye on Ye Zifeng’s movements. I had to understand his movements and habits. Also, I heard about something recently.....”

“What did you hear about?” Wang Lin asked.

“Ye Zifeng is going to participate in Tiandao City’s Alchemy Competition with the Liu clan’s Liu Bingqian.”

Wang Lin had thought that this was some good news and sighed, “I heard about this too. We can’t do anything with Liu Bingqian, a peak stage qi refiner next to him.....”

“Brother Lin, do you think there isn’t an opportunity where we can strike? You should know that they have to leave Leizhou City to get to Tiandao City.....” A sinister expression appeared on Wang Ruoxing’s face. It was filled with murderous intent.

Actually, he doesn’t have any beef with Ye Zifeng. However, Wang Lin was his little brother and he couldn’t sit there and watch his brother get bullied.

“Leaving the city?”

Wang Lin started to think about it as Wang Ruoxing started to talk again, “Also, Ye Zifeng won’t always be with Liu Bingqian anyways. They have to separate at some point. When that time comes, we’ll teach him a lesson.

Wang Lin was excited. After listening to his brother’s plans, he was feeling a lot better.

“Second brother, I’ll do whatever you say!”

“Well, we’ll wait until they depart tomorrow....”

.....

In the Ye clan’s residence, everyone had smiles on their faces.

It was all because of Ye Zifeng. He was able to strike a deal with the smaller clans and had them ally with the Ye clan for five years. The Liu clan has also allied themselves with them for a year.

At this moment, Ye Zifeng told everyone about how he was going to Tiandao City with Liu Bingqian to represent Leizhou City in the alchemy competition. Everyone in the whole city was talking about this. The fact that Ye Zifeng is an alchemist was spread throughout the entire city.

Today, Ye Zifeng was about to depart to Tiandao City. Ye Xueyi skipped her classes and came to see Ye Zifeng off. Ye Chongtian and Tang Feng didn't blame her. This was because Ye Zifeng was going on a long trip and will be gone for a while.

If this was the old Ye Zifeng leaving, no one besides his father and Xueyi will see him off. However, it was different now. Ye Zifeng was now a very important person in the Ye clan. Even Ye Chen who hated Ye Zifeng in the beginning couldn't help but admire him.

Ye Chongtian sighed with sorrow and helped Ye Zifeng fix his robes.

"Ahh Zifeng. I didn't think that you would be able to rope the Liu clan in to ally with us. When did you get so close to Liu Bingqian? You're even going to Tiandao City to participate in an alchemy competition with her.

All these years, Ye Chongtian had wanted to repair the damages between the Ye clan and the Liu clan. However, he was too stubborn to admit his wrongdoings and never had the chance to. However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng was able to easily ally the two families together.

Ye Xueyi had a complicated look on her face, "Father, you're talking like brother Zifeng has some close relationship with that Liu Bingqian. Don't be stupid. She only invited Brother Zifeng because of his talent in alchemy. Am I right Brother Zifeng?"

Ye Zifeng lowered his voice a bit, "This....."

"What? So you guys had some sort of relationship?" Ye Xueyi pouted, and furrowed her brows. Her expression looked very weird as if she was

angry.

Ye Zifeng laughed. The few days after going to the Liu clan, he had nothing to do so he would always hang out with Ye Xueyi. Looking at how she was happy and angry for him at the same time, he was feeling very blessed. He finally had someone who would care for him. He would work hard to provide for the people close to him and will always be with them

This was what having a family feels like.... It was because of this reason that Ye Zifeng fixed his relationship with Ye Huichi and started to guide him.

Ye Chongtian smiled, “Alright Zifeng, let’s not talk anymore. Go over to the Liu clan. They’re probably all waiting for you already.”

“Father, Xueyi, Huichi, Madam Tang, Second Uncle..... Everyone else, Zifeng is leaving first.”

“Take care, Zifeng.”

Ye Zifeng nodded and decided something at this moment. No matter how strong he becomes and how high he climbs, he will never forget the people who were there for him when he was a weakling.

He took a deep breath and walked out the door.

Liu Bingqian was standing outside of the Ye clan’s residence waiting for Ye Zifeng. When he came out, her eyes lit up.

“Why aren’t you waiting for me at your own place? Why’d you come over here?” Ye Zifeng asked and walked over.

Liu Bingqian smiled, “My dad wanted you to save some energy and asked me to come pick you up.....”

While saying that, she pointed at the carriage behind her.

Ye Zifeng raised his brow, “No way. Is your dad that kind?”

“Please. My dad isn’t a scourge. Everything that he has done has always been for the good of the clan.”

Liu Bingqian smiled and walked over to the carriage. She opened up the

curtains and looked back at Ye Zifeng.

“Alright. It’s time to go, my big brother rough guy. Please come in……”

Chapter 75: I'll have to see

Ye Zifeng was never a courteous person so when he saw Bingqian invite him, he went right into the carriage.

As he was climbing onto the carriage, he almost collided with a young lady inside.

The young master was dressed in all white with very light red lips. No matter how you look at it, she looked like a very sick girl.

"So it was Miss Jing. I'm sorry. Did I hurt you?" Ye Zifeng quickly cupped his hands and apologized.

Yang Jing was here to bring Bingqian to Tiandao City so her presence here wasn't a surprise to Ye Zifeng.

Yang Jing shook her head and didn't mind it, "The carriage is a bit small. It'll be a tight fit with three people in here. Bumping into each other is something that's bound to happen. Don't worry about it."

Bingqian giggled and got in the carriage as well.

"He's a rough guy. He won't be worrying about it at all."

"I'm a prudent person. How am I rough?"

Liu Bingqian started to laugh, "Because I said so. You can't retort against it!"

Ye Zifeng raised his brows and shook his head while laughing. He really didn't understand women. Women were people that he couldn't argue with at all. He knows that he'll lose no matter what he says. Now that there were two women in front of him, he can't say anything carelessly.

He started to think about something and couldn't help but open his mouth, "It's kinda strange. The Liu clan isn't lacking money. Why are you guys using such a small carriage? Isn't this kinda making the Liu clan lose face?"

Liu Bingqian sighed and shook her head, "To tell you the truth, I want to ride in a big carriage too. However, the Liu clan's carriage was sabotaged

by someone last night so we had to use the smaller backup carriage."

"Sabotaged? Who would dare touch something from the Liu clan?" Ye Zifeng was surprised.

"I thought it was strange too but we can't help it either. It already happened. It's very hard to investigate something so insignificant like this."

Liu Bingqian sighed again. She didn't want to look into this either and treated it as a prank from someone.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I got it. Since the big carriage is broken, we have to use the smaller carriage. So this was why Uncle Liu allowed you guys to come over and pick me up. Putting a small carriage in front of the Liu clan is really embarrassing for you guys isn't it?"

Ye Zifeng sighed in his heart. Liu Mu would go this far to save face for his own clan. So this was why the Liu clan was able to maintain their position as one of the three great clans in Leizhou City for so long.... It's because Liu Mu had always been working hard for the clan and cared for it so much. Compared to Ye Chongtian, Liu Mu was on another level as the master of a clan.

"Hold on...."

Ye Zifeng thought about it some more and felt a bad feeling. The entire city knows about his plans to go to Tiandao City with Liu Bingqian. If they dared to sabotage the Liu clan's property, then they're probably not scared of the Liu clan.

With this reasoning, the chances of it being someone from the Wang clan is very high. He then thought about Wang Lin.

"What's up? Why did your expression suddenly become so unsightly?" Liu Bingqian asked.

"Hold on Bingqian. Don't talk for a sec and let me think."

Ye Zifeng calmed himself down and closed his eyes. A strand of cold qi flew from the carriage towards the Ashen Spirit SEct.

At the same time, in the Nurturing Heart Hall, Shen Liu's expression suddenly changed.

"Well, the lesson will end early today. You guys go and rest for a bit and I'll bring Elder Lin here for the next lesson." Shen Li suddenly ended his lecture which caused many students to be confused.

His face sank as he quickly walked out of the lecture hall.

He closed his eyes and started to connect with Ye Zifeng.

"Ye Zifeng you brat. What is it now? Do you have some troublesome task for me again?"

Shen Li as different from Elder Zhao. He calls Ye Zifeng by brat and Elder Zhao adds a word in front and calls him a stinking brat.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Elder Shen. It's not that troublesome. It's just that I'm leaving Leizhou City right now and I'm afraid that someone is tailing me, trying to ambush me...."

Shen Li's became furious, "I'll skin whoever that dares to harm you!"

"The Wang clan. Do you dare to skin them?"

"Oh... Someone from the Wang clan? Well then.... I'll leave them be."

Hearing this, Shen Li stuttered for a bit and then awkwardly smiled, "No way. How can it be someone from the Wang clan? I warned Wang Tianzhi already. I know how he is. Even if he's really mad, he won't do anything to you right now."

"You warned Wang Tianzhi. This doesn't mean that his brothers will let me go. If I'm not wrong, then the one who wants to harm me might be Wang Lin." Ye Zifeng muttered.

"The youngest young master huh..... If it's him... Then that might be possible."

Shen Li thought about that bossy and domineer but weak younger brother Wang Lin..... The younger brother Wang Lin usually do things without using his head and might really be ambushing Ye Zifeng...

“What do you want me to do then?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “It’s simple. Use your soul’s divine sense to check if there’s anyone following me.”

“What? You’re calling this simple?” Shen Li was dumbstruck. If Ye Zifeng was in front of him right now, he would take his shoes off and smack him on the head with it right now.”

“Then... You can come over and protect me.....”

“Nonsense! Do you think I have time to go over and protect you as one of the three elders of the sect?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Is that so?”

Shen Li was startled. He wanted to yell at him but stopped himself.

He finally realized his mistake. Becoming a host of the Heavenly Clan Gathering was a grave mistake. Meeting Ye Zifeng was the thing that he regretted the most in his life.

“Okay. I’ll listen to you and use my divine sense to help you check your surroundings.”

Shen Li took a deep breath and sent his divine sense towards Ye Zifeng.

A while later, Shen Li replied, “Hold on. Brat. Are you almost out of the city? I checked the surroundings already. There’s no one following you.”

Ye Zifeng was startled, “No way. Are your senses limited because you’re too far away?”

Shen Li couldn’t hold back and yelled at Ye Zifeng, “You brat. How can you underestimate my abilities? Let’s not talk about you still being in the city, but even if you’re almost in Tiandao City, as long as I know where you are, I can easily check up on you.”

He didn’t lie and say that he could sense Ye ZIfeng even if he was in Tiandao City. Instead he said almost in the City. This was because there was a special formation in cities that Martial Practitioner realm cultivators aren’t able to feel through from the outside.

If it was somewhere between the two cities, he was able to check up on Ye Zifeng if he knew his position.

Ye Zifeng muttered to himself, “That’s strange. If Wang Lin wants to ambush me, he should be following me right now? Could it be that the ones who destroyed the carriage wasn’t someone from the Wang clan? Was it just a prank?”

Hearing this, Shen Li became curious, “What’s that about a destroyed carriage?”

Ye Zifeng thought about it again and smiled, “Alright. I’m good. I’m getting a bit too far now. With my cultivation, I can’t keep up the connection with you. If something really happens, then I’ll notify you again....”

“If something really happens, can I even get there in time? Also you brat, what do you see me as?” Shen Li started to yell at him. He saw how Ye Zifeng was treating himself like a bodyguard, casually calling for himself whenever he wanted. Shen Li was a bit unhappy about this.

Ye Zifeng didn’t care at all and opened his eyes. The connection between the two was cut off.

“What happened big brother rough guy? Are you alright? You look very pale, almost as pale as sister Jing!” Liu Bingqian was very worried.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I’m fine. That’s right. Did something happen while I was dozing off?”

“Something happen?” Liu Bingqian thought about it and shook her head, “No. Nothing stranged happened. Oh yeah. We’re almost out of the city.”

Yang Jing looked outside and smiled, “Oh yeah. Young master Ye, could it be that it’s your first time out of the city? Is that why you’re so nervous?”

Ye Zifeng laughed and looked out the windows. He looked afar and had a complicated look on his face.

“Could it be that I’m too sensitive?”

His expression then changed, “Even if you want to ambush us, you can’t

go and deliberately destroy the carriage and inadvertently alert the enemy..... Are my opponents retards or are they really smart? Hehe... I'll just have to wait and see.

Chapter 76: Avoiding Confrontation

"Second Bro, we've been waiting idly here for quite a while now. Is Ye Zifeng really going to come?" Wang Lin was a bit skeptical about this.

There were only two paths to go from Leizhou City to Tiandao City, a big path and a smaller narrower path. The Wang brothers were already hiding at the big path outside of the city and waiting for Ye Zifeng. There was a clear advantage to hiding outside the city. Ye Zifeng will see that there's no one following the carriage and it makes the ambush more of a surprise. The only disadvantage is that Ye Zifeng might not take this path.

"Brother Lin, why do you think I asked you to get people to destroy the Liu clan's big carriage?"

Wang Lin thought about it. Truth to be told, he didn't really know. He thought that it would inadvertently alert the enemy and that his brother made a mistake. He shook his head and asked, "Why?"

Wang Ruoxing revealed a sly smile and explained, "If the Liu clan's big carriage goes on the smaller path, it might be a little unstable but the people inside the carriage can still bear with it. However, if it's a small carriage going on the smaller path, it will be extremely shaky and unbearable."

Wang Lin was still skeptical about the whole thing, "But, Ye Zifeng is very cautious. You should know that this guy is very slick and doesn't think like a normal person."

Wang Lin knows Ye Zifeng's methods well enough. He had been wanting to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson and have observed him for many days.

"If he's traveling alone, then I would agree with you. However, you should know that he's also traveling with Miss Bingqian and an alchemist from Tiandao City."

Wang Lin was startled and started the put the pieces together, "Second bro is saying....."

Wang Ruoxing smile grew bigger, "Even if Ye Zifeng feels that

something is wrong, he can't neglect the other two's opinions. I heard that Ye Zifeng wasn't good with women so he might not be able to convince them. Also, with the fact that we're not following him, he'll probably think that someone pulled a prank on the Liu clan and destroyed their carriage. This time, I dare to say that he will definitely take the big path!"

From Leizhou City to Tiandao City, the big path is shorter and smoother. Generally speaking, if one doesn't have brain damage, one would choose to go on the big path.

An hour passed..... Two hours passed.....

"Second bro. It's been so long. Ye Zifeng didn't really take the smaller path did he?"

"This..." Wang Ruoxing had been waiting for Ye Zifeng for so long that he became very anxious. He had all his brothers and friends hide in the big path with him. If Ye Zifeng really went on the smaller path, then all his efforts are wasted.

"Let's wait for a bit more.... Maybe there was some delay...."

Half an hour passed..... An hour passed.....

"Second bro, it's been so long. No matter how much delay they had, they should at least be here by now. How come I can't even see a single shadow?"

Now, even Wang Ruoxing was uncertain his own plan.

Did Ye Zifeng really go on the smaller path?

Could the news about him being bad with women be fake?

.....

On the smaller path, the carriage with jumping up and down as it moved.

Liu Bingqian's clear eyes were staring at the resting Ye Zifeng.

Suddenly, the carriage ran over a small rock and landed very hard as the entire carriage shook.

“Aiya……”

Liu Bingqian’s delicate body shook slightly as she fell towards Ye Zifeng. Under this situation, she reached her hands out and grabbed onto his hands.

Ye Zifeng opened his eyes, helped Bingqian up and smiled, “Bingqian, the carriage shook twelve times and yet you fell thirteen times already. You even fell a second time right after getting up once. When did you become so fragile…..?”

Liu Bingqian’s face turned red as she looked over at Ye Zifeng and muttered, “Mind your own business. Who told you to go on the smaller path. If we took the bigger road before, I wouldn’t be in such a sorry situation!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Well if that’s the case, then why is Senior Sister Jing able to keep herself still? Every time something happens, you always make a big deal out of it. Also, why do you always fall in the same direction? Towards me….”

“I…..I don’t want to talk with you anymore.”

Liu Bingqian’s cheeks turned red. Her intentions were seen through by Ye Zifeng. Seeing how he was uninterested, she sighed and turned towards Yang Jing and held her hands.

“Senior sister Jing, it’s nothing for Zifeng and I to be on the smaller road but it must be hard for you. Look how pale your face has become. I’m worried……”

Yang Jing nonchalantly smiled and waved her hand, “My face has been pale for the past few years. Compared to that, the Pure Yang Dan that Young master Ye gave me is slowly making me feel a lot better. Come to think of it, I still need to thank Young master Ye for it.”

“No need to be so polite. This time, we’ve caused trouble for Miss Jing for having you come pick us up.”

Yang Jing needed the support of the Pure Yang Pill to live and since Ye Zifeng was able to concoct one for her, she is very grateful to him.

Therefore, when Ye Zifeng suggested to take the smaller path, she gritted her teeth and agreed.

As for Liu Bingqian, she immediately agreed. She immediately thanked the people who wrecked her clan's big carriage.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked out the window of the carriage. The smile on his face became very serious.

"I'm on the smaller path already. Will you still try and catch me?"

.....

Two hours passed. Wang Ruoxing's calm expression finally turned into an impatient one.

"That's strange. Could he really have gone to the smaller path?"

Wang Lin dully looked at his brother. If Ye Zifeng really went on the smaller path, then didn't they just waste their time waiting here?

"Second bro, what should we do now? How about we set off too. Maybe we'll be able to catch up to him."

Wang Ruoxing furrowed his brows and finally shook his head, "No. We can't do that. If we frantically rush over without preparing anything, we're basically publicly announcing that we're going against the Liu clan. That would defeat the purpose of us being cautious.

Wang Ruoxing had some people lay down a spirit formation here and if Ye Zifeng had taken the bigger road, the formation would have been able to separate him and the girls. It's fine if they fight in some other place but he can't afford to offend the Liu clan.

No matter how much he wants to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson, he doesn't want to offend the Liu clan and make the two families fight. His father, the clan master would definitely punish him. However, the Ye clan were already enemies with the Wang clan. If he beats Ye Zifeng up, nothing will change.

"So what now second bro? If we don't decide quickly, they'll reach Tiandao City before us!" Wang Lin was very impatient. It's starting to look

like his wish of teaching Ye Zifeng a lesson won't be coming true today.

"Don't worry lil bro. Ye Zifeng can avoid us once but he can't avoid us forever. When he gets to Tiandao City, he definitely won't be in the same room as the girls. We'll strike then!"

Hearing this, Wang Lin became happy again, "Second bro. That's a great idea! Since Tiandao City is pretty far away from Leizhou City, Ye clan's clan master won't know what happened. Even if we cripple him, he probably won't find out."

"Lil bro, when the time comes, I'll let you cripple him yourself."

"Thanks second bro. Second bro is the best!" Wang Lin was extremely happy right now.

The two had always been pranking and bullying others ever since they were little. They can already imagine the look on Ye Zifeng's face as he begs them to let him go.

.....

On the smaller path, inside the carriage.

"Ahhh. Being famous has its price.... I don't even know if I'm right or wrong by doing all this...."

Ye Zifeng laid back on his seat and felt a bit tired.

He wanted to silent concoct pills and only after his cultivation rises would be come out. However, if he hides too much, he might alert other people. Last time when Ye Chen sabotaged his cauldron was an example of this.

Right now, he showed a bit of his own ability and became very important in the Ye clan. However, this came with responsibilities.

With great power comes great responsibilities. All good things will come with bad things. His future will depend on what he does now.

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was always in deep thoughts and not looking at her, Liu Bingqian was feeling a bit disappointed.

“Big brother rough guy. Since we have nothing to do, why don’t you tell me how you learned alchemy? I didn’t hear anything about the Ye clan hiring an alchemist master.”

Yang Jing smiled and nodded in agreement, “Actually I’ve been wanting to ask too. Who is your master? How can you concoct something so difficult like the Pure Yang Dan so easily?”

The two girls stared at Ye Zifeng. Their gazes pierced through him.

“Actually. I don’t have a master. I flipped through a few books and read about alchemy.....”

Naturally, Ye Zifeng won’t be telling them the truth. Let’s not say anything about the girls not believing it, even he himself won’t believe how he learned alchemy.....

Liu Bingqian looked disappointed, “Hmph. Fine. But I’m willing to bet that you’ll tell me sooner or later.”

When she said that, she had a cute childish look on her face.

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn’t answer her.

They’ve been jumping up and down so much that they’ve gotten used to it. Ye Zifeng closed his eyes as his mind returned to the Black Tortoise Continent, the place where he started to learn alchemy.

He sighed as silently muttered two words, “Jia Lan.....”

Chapter 77: Entering the city!

The fact that Tiandao City has an abundance of qi from the heavens and the earth was something known throughout the many smaller cities that surrounded it.

Unlike Leizhou City, this place was very suitable for a cultivator to train and cultivate. Many people would come from smaller cities to secretly train and awaken their martial spirits here.

However, if you want to stay in Tiandao City, you must have your own residence or have a short-term stay due to special reasons. Otherwise, the patrolling black armor guards will deport you out of the city.

When Ye Zifeng and the girls reached Tiandao City, it was already night time.

“Finally. We’ve finally arrived at Tiandao City.” Yang Jing looked out the window and smiled.

Traveling on the smaller road and jumping up and down had given her a headache. When she saw that they have arrived, she felt very happy.

“Big bro rough guy. Wake up. We’re here.” Liu Bingqian moved towards Ye Zifeng and tried to wake him up.

In the past, she was always unwilling to attend the alchemy competition. Everytime she went on the stage, it was as if she was going onto her own execution ground. But now, she has Ye Zifeng with her and wasn’t feeling scared anymore.

Ye Zifeng opened his eyes and returned to the present world from the world in his memories. Ye Zifeng still felt a bit dazed. He saw an elegant and refined girl right in front of himself staring right into his eyes.

“Bingqian.....”

“Big brother rough guy. We’re here.”

At that time...

“Get out of the carriage. What business do you have to come to Tiandao

City so late? Do you have the admission documents?"

Outside the carriage, a man impatiently yelled out. It was one of the guards from Tiandao City.

A hint of anger flashed in Liu Bingqian's eyes, "That guard is probably looking down on us because of our small carriage. That's why he's yelling like this!"

Yang Jing smiled, "Then... Do you regret sitting in the small carriage?"

"This...." Liu Bingqian's cheeks turned red. She looked at Ye Zifeng, "Well..... There are some benefits..."

"Did you hear me? I'm telling you guys to get out of the carriage!" The man outside continued to yell.

"Coming. Coming. Stop yelling like that. Senior sister Jing, give them the admission documents." Liu Bingqian sighed and looked over at Yang Jing.

If one wants to enter Tiandao City, unless you already have your qi registered as a honored guest, then you must have admission documents as proof.

Yang Jing smiled and nodded. She took out a piece of paper with the words "Tiandao City Old Devil" on the front and handed it to the guard through the windows.

"Do you not know how to come out and give me the documents?"

The guard snorted and received the documents. He looked down and was startled.

"What? Old Devil? You're the Old Devil's guests?"

The guard stared blankly at the document as if he had been beaten by someone. His heart sank like a capsized ship.

"Old Devil?" Another guard heard this and quickly walked over to hit his head.

"You can't even tell who's here and display such an attitude? You newbies don't know how to do things at all!"

After saying that, the other guard revealed a big smile and walked towards the carriage, “I’m sorry. My friend is new here and don’t really know the rules. It’s late at night and he’s feeling pretty tired. I hope you guys won’t mind it.”

Yang Jing softly laughed, “No worries. I know that you guys have worked very hard already. Now that you know who we are, quickly let us in.”

Hearing that Yang Jing didn’t mind, the guards felt better and quickly commanded the others.

“Did you hear that? Open up the gates. Let Old Devil’s friends in. If you are any slower and make them mad, don’t even think about coming back tomorrow.”

The newbie guard’s expression suddenly changed and quickly nodded, “I’m sorry. I really am a new guy and don’t know the rules. If I offended you in any way, I hope you guys can let it go.”

Yang Jing smiled, “No worries. If one doesn’t know any better, one cannot be held responsible. Now open the gates. We’re in a hurry.”

“Thank you. Thank you.” The guard quickly took out an azure colored treasure and inserted his qi into it. With that, the gate started to open up.

After this little incident, the three returned to their seats and waited.

“Senior sister Jing. That guy was very rude. Why are you so polite with them. We’re Old Devil’s disciples. We don’t have to be afraid of them.” Liu Bingqian was a bit mad. Even though she was around the same age as Yang Jing, she was far less mature than Yang Jing.

“Just leave it. Even though they’re a bit snobbish, it’s part of human nature. The only reason why they were so vicious was because they wanted some benefits from us when we entered. They’re probably not that bad.” Yang Jing sighed and had seen through the guard’s intentions.

“But.....” Bingqian pouted.

“Compared to that.....” Ye Zifeng had been silent for a while now and finally opened his mouth, “Is Old Devil really all that? Even the guards

know who he is? He's probably a top figure in Tiandao City right?"

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing both looked at each other and laughed.

"Of course he's all that. He's one of the best alchemist in Tiandao City! Since you came all the way here, I'll introduce you."

Liu Bingqian laughed loudly and then a worried expression appeared on her face, "However, Master Old Devil's temperament is a bit weird. So don't....."

"Don't what???" Right when Ye Zifeng was gonna ask, his eyes lit up and immediately opened the curtains to look outside.

Right when the gates opened, an abundant amount of qi energy gushed out from the city. The qi would make any cultivator want to calm themselves down and try to absorb it.

"To be able to experience this every time I come to Tiandao City. This really is helpful for my cultivation." Liu Bingqian took a deep breath.

Ye Zifeng's expression changed as well, "Yeah. The qi here is much better compared to Leizhou City..... If I can train here....."

Liu Bingqian smiled and shook her head, "It's no use. Don't think about it. Tiandao City has a rule that prohibits outsiders from training here. This time we came because of master Old Devil but we can only stay here for at most half a month. It's pretty hard to get any results in half a month."

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows, "Really? That's strange tho. What if I hide in a corner and secretly cultivate. Can they still find me?"

"In accordance of the rules, anyone found overstaying their welcome will be severely punished."

Liu Bingqian opened the curtains and pointed outside, "Do you see those black armor guards? They patrol the city every day to find such people. If any outsider were to be found overstaying, even with my master's help, they would get beaten up."

Ye Zifeng looked at the black armor guards. All he can see is that they have a special treasure in their hands and was looking for something.

He smiled and then felt the qi around his body. He understood what she meant now.

So when an outsider enters the city, the city gates would leave a qi imprint on their body for fifteen days. After fifteen days, the imprint would disappear and the guards will be able to find them easily.

“Big Brother Rough Guy. What are you thinking about?” Liu Bingqian watched as Ye Zifeng stare out the window.

Ye Zifeng looked back at her and smiled, “Nothing much. Oh yeah. Where are we going to stay tonight?”

“Where are we going to stay? This……”

An embarrassed expression appeared on Liu Bingqian’s face. Yang Jing had the same expression too.

“No way. We don’t have a place to stay for the night?” Ye Zifeng couldn’t help but yell out.

“As of right now…. No.”

Ye Zifeng was astonished. The two women in front of him….. Can it be possible that these two had rushed things and forgot about the most important thing?

“Well we were suppose to have a place to stay but since you took the smaller path, we lost a lot of time and all the inns are probably full…..” Liu Bingqian’s voice became softer and softer.

“How about…. We go and live with your master?” Ye Zifeng’s mouth began to twitch.

This time, Yang Jing bitterly smiled and answered, “Master Old Devil hates when people come over at night. If we go over right now, we will definitely be yelled at.”

Ye Zifeng looked at the two girls. If Yang Jing said this, then it must be true.

“If the three of you don’t mind, you can come stay at our inn.” A deep voice sounded behind the three.

Chapter 78: You want to take advantage of me?

Ye Zifeng and the girls all turned around at the same time. The person talking was a middle aged man. The man was slightly bald with thick black eyebrows. His eyes looked like they were full of spirit. This guy is someone who knows how to do business.

“That’s great. This inn unexpectedly has some space when it’s so late!” Liu Bingqian’s eyes lit up as she jumped up and down.

Yang Jing smiled and felt that they were very lucky. Normally, all of the inns would be filled up. Who would’ve thought that there would be some rooms empty.

Ye Zifeng looked suspiciously at the middle aged man, “There aren’t any inns on this street. Boss, why would you walk so far to get some customers? Also, how do you know that we don’t have a place to stay at in Tiandao City?”

The middle age man was startled and quickly responded with an apologetic smile, “This little brother doesn’t know. Usually, no one comes into the city this late. I just happen to see your carriage enter the city and saw that you guys didn’t have anywhere to go. Thus, I deduced that you guys don’t have a place to stay for the night.”

“Oh? Really?” Ye Zifeng was still a bit suspicious.

Liu Bingqian was very tired. The sickly Yang Jing was even more tired.

Bingqian looked at Yang Jing’s pale face and urged Ye Zifeng, “Big brother rough guy. This guy is just looking for business and is probably randomly asking us. Don’t think badly of him. It won’t be too much gold coins right?”

The middle age man quickly shook his head, “It’s cheap. It’s cheap. Our Tianfu Inn is in a kinda desolate place and can’t compare to the bigger inns in the city. It’s harder for us to get business so we have to get customers by lowering our price. Since there are three of you, how about I

give you guys two rooms for 5 gold coins?"

"Two rooms for 5 gold coins?"

Liu Bingqian looked at Yang JIng and smiled. They were both thinking about how cheap this is.

"Let's go senior sister Jing. We'll leave our carriage with the guards and follow the owner to the inn."

Yang Jing smiled and nodded. She was worried about having to sleep on the streets but now it seems like she was overthinking.

.....

Ye Zifeng smiled. However, in his heart, he was still very cautious.

"For merely 5 gold coins.... Is it worth for the owner to run all the way out here? I would lose face if I did something like that. Whatever. I'll just have to deal with whatever it is and concentrate on the alchemy competition."

Consequently, as the middle aged man led the three of them, Ye Zifeng surveyed their surroundings. If he notices that anything is wrong, he will stop walking and look around.

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing were walking in front of Ye Zifeng. The group had been walking for a while now and Bingqian couldn't help but ask, "Owner, where is this inn of yours? We've been walking for so long already. Why aren't we there yet?"

"Almost. Almost there. It's just up there."

The middle aged man smiled and picked up his pace. With his back to Ye Zifeng and his group, he revealed a sly smile.

After who knows how long, Liu Bingqian was already out breath. Yang Jing was in an even worse condition than her. She was already sick and had to suffer the bumpy road of the smaller road. She was so tired that she almost couldn't stand up anymore.

"Owner.....!" Liu Bingqian couldn't help but open his mouth.

“We’re here. We’re here. Look. It’s right there.” The middle aged man pointed at the shabby inn in front of them and smiled.

Liu Bingqian lifted her head, saw the shaking and almost falling signboard and bitterly laughed.

“Wow owner. Your inn is really shabby. It seems like no one has been here in awhile. Whatever, we’re only gonna stay for one night. Here’s 5 gold coins.”

Even though Bingqian was the young miss of the Liu clan, she had been concocting pills since she was little and was used to shabby places already. She didn’t care much about it.”

The middle age man accepted the 5 gold coins and smiled, “Alright. Please come this way. Even though the inn is a bit broken, we still provide grade A service. Have you guys eaten yet? How about I bring some food over later?”

“There’s food too? Well I am a bit hungry….” Bingqian smiled and had an embarrassed expression on her face.

She did bring some rations for the trip but it wasn’t enough for her.

Yang Jing giggled, “Junior sister, it’s been so many years and you still love eating midnight snacks. You better watch yourself. If you keep eating like this, you won’t be able to keep your slim figure anymore.”

Liu Bingqian’s expression changed and gave Yang Jing the death stare telling her that there was someone else here. She turned towards Ye Zifeng and noticed that he had his eyes closed and looked as if he was resting.

“Big Brother rough guy. You’ve been pretty quietly lately. If it wasn’t for the fact that you’ve been walking with us, I would think that you’re asleep. Are you alright?”

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng came back to his senses and opened up his eyes, “If you guys want to have so snacks then count me in. Owner. Give me some too. Put a little more in mine.”

The middle age man's eyes flashed with coldness and smiled, "Of course. There will definitely be a portion for the young master."

He turned around and instructed the worker, "Tong Sheng. Bring the three guests to the two rooms on the east side. Do it quick."

Tong Sheng smiled and quickly walked over, "Alright. This way please."

.....

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing sat in the guest room and was speechless. A complicated expression appeared on their face.

"Big brother rough guy. No way. Is this inn really a black inn? The owner seems really kind."

(TL: Black Inn is a inn that robs and kills guests?)

"That's right. Young master Ye. Could it be that you're too tired and feel a bit nervous? Why don't you go rest?" Yang Jing didn't feel that anything was wrong either.

The two girls were inexperienced and naive. They were obviously not on the same level as Ye Zifeng. The owner's eyes.... Ye Zifeng was able to see through his greed with one look. From what he can guess, the inn owner is probably companions with the ones who want to harm him.

Based on what Ye Zifeng can see, there was definitely someone here before them. The inn was in such a remote place.... It's a surprise that anyone can find it, let alone come in.

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, "The dust in the hallway has been accumulating for quite a while now. It's obvious that this place hasn't been cleaned in a long time. The owner didn't ask us about our relationship and immediately gave us two rooms. Do you think that's a bit strange?

Liu Bingqian was shocked and embarrassed at the same time as she looked at Ye Zifeng, "From what I can tell, you're the one being strange. Why wouldn't the owner give us two rooms? Could you be thinking about sleeping together in one room??!"

Yang Jing was at the age where she understood these things and her pale face turned red.

“Young master Ye. I didn’t think that you were this kind of person…. It seems that I was wrong about you.”

“Hold on.”

Ye Zifeng bitterly laugh and felt that he had been wrongly accused, “What I mean is….. Why didn’t he give us three rooms? The inn was empty anyways.”

The two girls lightly yelped as their faces burned up. They were so embarrassed and had to look down.

“You should say things more clearly. It’s easy to misunderstand…..”

Liu Bingqian bit her lips and finally answered again, “Fine. We’ll listen to you. If this inn really has some problems, then what do you plan to do?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Do you remember that they told us that they would get us some midnight snacks?”

“Could it be….Do they want to….” Yang Jing’s eyes widened and became very anxious.

She was a scaredy-cat and was very weak. She was at the seventh stage of qi refining stage but her actual abilities were only at the sixth stage. Thus, she was always afraid of fighting.

“Don’t worry about it. I have everything planned out. The strongest one in their ranks only has a cultivation at the 8th stage of qi refining. Also, they want to fight me so you guys don’t have to worry about anything.

Hearing this, Bingqian’s eyes showed a worried expression while she looked at Ye Zifeng.

“No way. Big brother rough guy. How do you know that there’s someone at the 8th stage of qi refining around here?”

Using one’s qi to survey the surrounding was not that hard. However, only people at the Martial Disciple realm can utilize this technique. As to checking someone’s cultivation, one must be at the Martial Practitioner

realm

Ye Zifeng was a cultivator at the fifth stage of qi refining. How did he do it? Liu Bingqian was continuously thinking about how Ye Zifeng did such a thing.

Ye Zifeng smiled mysteriously and didn't answer her.

"Well. Let's not worry about that right now. We're in danger right now. Bingqian, will you help me?"

Liu Bingqian's face turned red and looked away, "Hmph. Who wants to help you, you block head."

"Is that so? Then I'll just have to ask Miss Jing..." Ye Zifeng said indifferently.

"Young master Ye.... I....." Yang Jing slight smiled. To be between Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian.... It was very hard to take sides.

"Hold on...."Bingqian turned around and looked at Ye Zifeng, "Senior Sister Jing is very weak and might get blown away by the wind. Yet, you still have the nerves to ask her to help? Tell me what you want. I'll think about it."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's nothing much. I just need you guys to pretend that you've been poisoned. By doing that, the masterminds will definitely show themselves. I want you guys to put on a show for them and show off your acting skills.

His calm face became very serious. It looked as cold as ice.

"This time, I need to teach them a lesson. To actually want to mess with I, Ye Zifeng?

Chapter 79: Never falter!

"Second bro. You really are crafty. Who would've thought that Ye Zifeng and the girls would be stupid enough to enter the black inn that we opened up in Tiandao City. Your brother, I, admire you!"

In one of the rooms on the first floor, Wang Lin couldn't hold back his excitement and continuously praised his brother. He will bow down to whoever that can help him teach Ye Zifeng a lesson."

Wang Ruoxing laughed loudly, "Since they chose to go onto the smaller path, they were bound to arrive late at night. There won't be any inns open at all at this time. If they don't come over, then they'll have to sleep on the streets!"

"Second bro is right. This.....I think the drug's effects should be kicking in now. Should we get the innkeeper to check it out?"

Wang Lin was feeling very energetic. He was thinking about how he can beat Ye Zifeng up later and started to crack his knuckles.

"It's not like you're going to sleep with the two girls. It's only teaching that Ye Zifeng a lesson. You don't have to be so excited....." Wang Ruoxing shook his head and lightly smiled.

"Right..... What are we going to do with the two girls later? We can't offend them....."

After being reminded about the existence of the girls, Wang Lin started to fret.

"That's why we had the innkeeper separate them into two rooms. When they wake up tomorrow, they'll find Ye Zifeng beat up and unconscious. They won't even know what happened. They definitely can't trace it back to us."

"Hahahahaha. So that's how it is....great....GREAT! Second bro, to be able to get revenge this time.... It's all thanks to you!" Wang Lin felt very grateful to his brother.

Wang Ruoxing nodded and called the innkeeper over, "Feng Cheng, go

up and check them out. If the two beauties are out of it, come down and tell us immediately alright?"

"As you wish, second young master."

Wang Ruoxing immediately called innkeeper Feng again, "Hold on."

"Does the second young master have anything else for me to do?" Innkeeper Feng was startled.

Even though he was way older than Wang Ruoxing, with his position, he still had to be polite with the kid.

".....Feng Cheng. This time, you've done a great deed. I've brought some gold coins with me today. I'll give it to you as a reward. If you continue cooperating with us, you'll get endless amount of benefits."

Wang Ruoxing smiled while taking out a small bag of coins and placing it on Feng Cheng's hand.

Innkeeper Feng received the bag and weigh it with his hands. He can feel that there was around a hundred gold coins in there. He stood there and smiled.

He stood there and smiled, "Many thanks to the second young master."

"Alright. Now go up and check out the situation."

Other than meeting up with Feng Cheng, Wang Ruoxing also brought two of his bros with him from Leizhou City just to be safe. One is at the 8th stage of qi refining and the other is at the 7th stage of qi refining. With their large muscles, they look like two towers while standing next to Wang Ruoxing.

Liu Bingqian who is at the 9th stage of qi refining is the only one that can threaten Wang Ruoxing. Thus, he had to drug her and separate her from Ye Zifeng. With that, Ye Zifeng will definitely be finished.

While thinking about what's gonna happen, Wang Lin couldn't help but smile. He felt so pleased that his mouth went dry.

After a while, Feng Cheng returned with a smile on his face and reported, "Second young master, I've already checked up on them. The two

girls have eaten the food and are lying down on the table."

"Great!"

Wang Ruoxing had been suppressing his feelings because he was very anxious. Now that his plans have borne fruit, he can finally release his joyful emotion. He was stuck on the big road waiting for Ye Zifeng for about half a day and could not get him. This made Wang Ruoxing very angry.

Wang Ruoxing revealed an evil smile, "Lil bro, your chance has come! Come upstairs with me. Tonight, you'll be able to beat Ye Zifeng and no one will stop you!"

The two brothers laughed and with a few of their bros, they rushed upstars.

"It's the 2 eastern most rooms. Right here....."

Wang Lin smiled and kicked the door open.

They saw the two beauties lying down on the table with the midnight snacks half eaten besides them. It seems like they were knocked out.

"Second bro. The drugs worked!"

"Of course."

At the same time, Wang Lin looked lustfully at the two girl's body. Images started to appear in his mind and he started to lose himself.

Wang Ruoxing coldly smiled and looked over, "Lil bro, are you having some wicked thoughts? Do you want to make moves on them?"

Hearing this, Wang Lin came back to his sense, "How would I dare? I'm just looking. If I offend them, I won't be able to live anymore."

Wang Ruoxing laughed, "Well.....they're drugged, so they won't know anything. Even if you want to do something to them.... They won't know at all...."

Wang Lin smiled and revealed a mischievous look, "Second bro is right! After I finish teaching Ye Zifeng a lesson, maybe I'll come over and cop

some feels...."

"Hahahaha....Lil bro. How many years have we been together. I know exactly what you want."

The two brothers had grown up together and had done many deeds together. They know each other very well.

"Ugh...."

Suddenly a weak voice sounded from somewhere.

Wang Lin stopped laughing and furrowed his brows, "Second bro. Did you hear that? I feel I heard someone was groaning."

Wang Ruoxing looked over at his brother and then at the people behind him, "Did you guys hear anything?"

"Nothing." The people behind them were pretty far and couldn't hear anything.

"Brother Lin, could it be that you're so excited that you hallucinating?"

Wang Lin thought to himself for a bit. The other people didn't hear anything but he knows that he really did hear it. It was very weird. Could he really be hallucinating due to excitement?"

"Whatever. I don't care about that right now. Let's leave the girls here for now. Second bro, let's go teach that Ye Zifeng a lesson."

Wang Ruoxing shook his head and called his friends over.

"Alright! Let's do this. We're going to cripple that Ye Zifeng. We'll beat him until he turns retarded!"

Wang Lin laughed and rushed up to knock down Ye Zifeng's door.

"Ye Zifeng! Your time has come. Watch me beat you down today!"

However, before he could step into the room, he felt a surge of qi energy coming from inside the room.

Before he could even react, he was sent flying out of the room. He slammed against the wall on the other side and fainted.

“Lil bro!” Seeing this, Wang Ruoxing was shocked and ran towards his little brother.

Wang Ruoxing’s reaction was lightning quick as he immediately helped Wang Lin up. He checked him out and saw that it was not a life threatening injury.

Wang Ruoxing looked up and saw that Ye Zifeng was solemnly sitting by the table, looking at the midnight snack in front of him.

“You! You’re still awake?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked towards Wang Ruoxing, “In order to teach me a lesson, you guys actually came all the way to Tiandao City from Leizhou City….You guys really have nothing better to do.”

“You. You didn’t eat the food?” Wang Ruoxing’s eyes widened and looked at Feng Cheng, “What happened Feng Cheng? Didn’t you say that they ate the food already?”

“It’s true. They really did!” Feng Cheng was extremely shocked and scared.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “All I did was throw the food out. Did you really think that I ate it?”

Wang Ruoxing listened carefully and smiled, “You said that you threw the food away?”

“That’s right. Exactly. You know how to listen very well.” Ye Zifeng laughed.

Wang Ruoxing’s eyes lit up, “Good. Good. Good thing I was prepared or else I really won’t be able to teach you a lesson this time..”

Feng Cheng was startled and didn’t understand what Wang Ruoxing meant. It seems like Wang Ruoxing had something else up his sleeves.

“The second young master means….”

Wang Ruoxing replied, “Ye Zifeng. I’m not afraid to tell you this. I didn’t only drug the food. I also poisoned the plates with the Ten Step Qi Shattering Poison. Since you’ve touched the plates, the poison in your body

should be taking effect now."

When Feng Cheng heard this, he was shocked and his throat turned dry.

"Second young master... This... You didn't tell me this at all."

Wang Ruoxing impatiently turned around towards Feng Cheng, "It's not life threatening. It'll only make you faint. Get someone to bring you to your room to lay down. The poison's effect should be activating soon. The effects will disappear by tomorrow."

"Alright... Alright..." Feng Cheng's face ashen as he got someone to bring him to his room.

Ye Zifeng nodded and stood up, "Oh? Ten step qi shatterer. Well is the poison what its name implies? If I walk ten steps, will I fall too?"

Wang Ruoxing chuckled, "If you don't believe me, how about you take a few steps and see. I'll even help you count down."

"Thank you for you trouble." Ye Zifeng had a deep look in his eyes and really stepped forward.

Wang Ruoxing laughed and extended both of his hands to help Ye Zifeng count down.

"One step, Two steps...."

"Five steps, Six steps...."

"Nine steps, Ten steps..."

"Now fall!" Wang Ruoxing had a cold look in his eye and yelled out.

However, Wang Ruoxing was shocked. Ye Zifeng was standing there, not falling at all.

"How.... How is this possible?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Do you want me to help you continue? Eleven, Twelve....."

Chapter 80: I'm gonna beat you down!

Wang Ruoxing was shocked and gulped.

Right now, even an idiot can figure out that Ye Zifeng wasn't poisoned at all.

"You.... Why aren't you poisoned?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Before the innkeeper brought me my food, I asked Bingqian for a handkerchief. I used the handkerchief to throw away all the food."

Since Ye Zifeng felt that something was wrong, he might as well be cautious all the way. He even thought about the plate being poisoned and used a handkerchief just in case."

You can't blame Wang Ruoxing for not thinking things through thoroughly. You can only blame his opponent for being too cautious.

"Used a handkerchief?" Wang Ruoxing's mouth twitched and looked at Ye Zifeng with disbelief.

"Could it be that you already know that something is wrong? When did it start? When did you know that there was something wrong with this inn. Is there someone helping you?"

Wang Ruoxing thought that he was sneaky and cautious enough. He took Ye Zifeng's cautiousness into consideration and didn't even send a single person to tail Ye Zifeng. This was all because Wang Ruoxing didn't want Ye Zifeng suspecting anything.....

Ye Zifeng stayed silent and didn't say anything back.

The fact that he can spiritually communicate with Elder Zhao in Tiandao City is a secret that only he needs to know. Unless he has to, Ye Zifeng won't tell this secret to anyone else.

After a long period of silence, Wang Ruoxing look like he remembered something and a horrified expression appeared on his face.

"Hold on..... Shit! Then Miss Bingqian and them already know about

it....."

"Your reaction speed isn't too bad." Liu Bingqian's cold voice sounded behind Wang Ruoxing.

She had heard every single word that came out of Wang Lin's mouth before. If it wasn't for the fact that Ye Zifeng told her to restrain herself, she would have attacked them already.

"Just now... Were you talking about how you can do whatever you want to us without us knowing because we're knocked out?"

Liu Bingqian's face turned colder. A murderous aura surrounded her.

"I....." Wang Ruoxing couldn't say anything. This time he had offended the Liu clan. This was not something that he can afford to do.

Yang Jing was also very mad.

"This is the first time that we've met. Why do you want to harm me?!"

Wang Ruoxing's face ashen. This time, not only did he offend Liu Bingqian, he also offended someone with high standings in Tiandao City. If the clan master, his father, finds out about this, he will definitely be beat.

Wang Ruoxing coldly stared at Ye Zifeng and started laughing, "Good. Good. Good. Ye Zifeng. You've plotted against me!"

"I mean... If you didn't come find me for trouble all the time, why would I have to do something like this?"

Ye Zifeng knew that there were tigers on the mountain but went towards it anyways. In reality, he wanted the two brothers to offend the Liu clan and Yang Jing. If not, he wouldn't have done all of this and avoided the inn.

The two guys that Wang Ruoxing brought along looked at each other and started moving towards Ye Zifeng. They know that they're not Liu Bingqian's opponent so they quickly moved against Ye Zifeng.

"Ye Zifeng. Die!"

If two cultivators, one at the eighth stage of qi refining and one at the seventh stage of qi refining, want to beat someone at the fifth stage of qi refining, it'll be as easy as squishing a bug.

Wang Ruoxing thought about it already. Since he's already offended the Liu clan to a point of no return, all he can do is fight now. Before they fight Liu Bingqian, he wants to take care of Ye Zifeng first.

In a split second, qi energy exploded from Wang Ruoxing and his two friends. The strong energy caused everything in the room to start shaking. The shabby inn was on the verge of collapsing due to the pressure.

Wang Ruoxing yelled out as he threw himself at Ye Zifeng. His two friends did the same as well. They blocked Ye Zifeng's path of escape and forced him into a corner.

"Do you guys know why I'm standing here, waiting for you guys to make a move first?"

Hearing Ye Zifeng's laugh, Wang Ruoxing became very nervous.

"You!" Wang Ruoxing was affected by Ye Zifeng's imposing look and became very anxious.

All he can see was the coldness coming out of Ye Zifeng's dark eyes. Wang Ruoxing and the other two all stopped moving when they saw those eyes. They blankly stared at Ye Zifeng. They didn't know what happened, but their bodies had become frozen in place.

"This……This is the move you used on Liu Bingqian during the competition!" Wang Ruoxing understood what happened and yelled out.

"You figured it out too late. Bingqian, Miss Jing, do it!"

Ye Zifeng's face was very pale. He had used up too much energy controlling the spirit's divine sense. It was very hard controlling three people at once.

"Got it!"

Liu Bingqian had been waiting for this moment. She was extremely angry at what Wang Lin had said before. When she finally received Ye

Zifeng's permission to attack, she immediately gathered her qi and sent a palm strike at Wang Ruoxing.

This was not all. Yang Jing gathered her qi on her fingers and combined it with her common tier flame. If one were to be struck by her attack at full power, one would immediately blow up.

As an alchemist, not only can her flames be used to concoct pills, she can use it to teach other people a lesson too.

After beating Wang Ruoxing up, the two girls felt much better.

"Ah!" Wang Ruoxing felt the flame explode on his face and flew back into the wall behind him. He then dropped onto the floor very hard with blood all over his face. Part of his face was burnt... It looked very scary.

The two helpers that Wang Ruoxing brought had it better. Only a part of their arms were burnt. They didn't take much damage.

Wang Ruoxing rubbed the blood off his mouth and yelled out, "Ye Zifeng. If you have the guts, then fight by yourself. Stop hiding behind the two girls."

Ye Zifeng laughed, "You have three people and we have three people. It's only fair for me to fight three on three."

"This...." Wang Ruoxing was taken aback. Ye Zifeng was reasonable.....However, thinking about all this made him angry while he looked over at his two bros.

"Get up. Both of you. Get up. Even if we can't win, we'll find a way to win! We have to beat them no matter what!"

He had already made up his mind. As long as they can win..... They will beat Ye Zifeng up and cripple him. Then they'll bring Yang Jing and Liu Bingqian to one of the Wang clan's experts in Tiandao City. They will have the soul searching technique used on them and have their memories erased.

If they can't win, then Wang Ruoxing won't be able to afford the consequences.

He was fixed on this plan already.

Wang Ruoxing revealed a cold smile and retrieved a small bottle from his robes. Ye Zifeng saw this and was startled.

“Bingqian, don’t let him eat the medicine!”

Ye Zifeng didn’t ask Elder Zhao to come over because he felt that Wang Ruoxing was not a threat to himself. However, he didn’t think that Wang Ruoxing would have a special pill.

In the end, Ye Zifeng was still too careless.

That’s a Spirit Increasing Pill! It will allow a cultivator to increase their qi by two fold. In the qi refining realm, it can increase a cultivator’s strength by one stage. However, the side effects of this pill was very severe. After a few hours, the user’s qi will completely deplete and will feel depress for a week to a month.

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing both moved towards the three guys and knocked the medicine out of the two brother’s hands.

Ye Zifeng was already at his limit and released the soul spirit’s divine sense on the three of them.

Wang Ruoxing however moved very quickly and ate the Spirit Increasing Pill in one go. When Bingqian reached him. It was too late already.

“Ye Zifeng! You forced me!” Wang Ruoxing hysterically yelled out.

He had been waiting for Ye Zifeng to teach him a lesson. However, who would’ve thought that Ye Zifeng had seen through everything and was always one step ahead of him. His little brother Wang Lin was beat unconscious and he was beat too. He had no choice but to use the Spirit Increasing Pill.

The Spirit Increasing Pill was something very uncommon. It was very hard to concoct. It wasn’t a toy either. Sure it can increase one’s strength, but no one was willing to use this unless it was a life or death situation.

Wang Ruoxing got this pill from one of his relatives in Tiandao City.However

For just a while, Wang Ruoxing is able to maintain the strength of a ninth stage qi refining cultivator. With this borrowed power, he is able to hold Liu Bingqian back. At the same time, the two brothers saw what was happening and knew what they had to do. They move towards Ye Zifeng and Yang Jing.

“Ye Zifeng, you’re finished! Let’s see what kind of moves you have up your sleeves this time!”

Ye Zifeng’s expression changed. As a top tier alchemist, how could he not think of the possibility that his opponents might have pills skip past him.

Right now, it wasn’t time for him to regret not thinking about it. There were two large guys running right at him right now.

At this time, a voice suddenly appeared in Ye Zifeng’s mind.....

Chapter 81: The Martial Spirit's Might!

The voice appeared out of nowhere. Ye Zifeng felt as if he had fallen into an abyss. The place was very foggy. There were mountains everywhere. This was the place that he had been trying to get to but couldn't!

Starlight filled the sky. The stars were aligned just like the diagrams in the ancient times. A large eerie shadow appeared in the sky.

"Bring me back. Someone's trying to fight me!"

If this was any other time, Ye Zifeng will definitely stay and have a chat with the shadow ghost. However, right now, he was in a fight with someone. He didn't have the time to be here chatting away.

".....Don't fret. The time here is tens of million times slower than the time outside. You can stay here for a year and not even a second would have passed "

Ye Zifeng was startled. This kind of nonsense.... He had never heard of such a thing before, even in his past life."

"Then what do you want from me?" Ye Zifeng curiously looked at the mysterious martial spirit in front of himself/

The shadow ghost coldly snorted, "You dumbass.... What kind of situation are you in right now? You're about to be beat up. I had to step in before your body starts using my energy to recover itself!"

Ye Zifeng was surprised and continued asking questions, "Then.....You have healing properties and can condense death qi....could it be that you're a dual martial spirit?!"

It is very rare for a person to have a dual martial spirit. If Ye Zifeng can awaken the dual martial spirit when he reaches the martial disciple realm, then without a doubt, he will be the number one young genius in Leizhou City.

"Don't try to probe me with useless words. I'll stay this again. Right now, you have the strength and the ability to be on even grounds with me. You just need to remember one thing. Don't die. If you die, I'll have problems

too."

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Then when I'm in danger or a life or death situation, how are you going to help me?"

Ye Zifeng likes to plan ahead. He knows that he will bring danger to himself in the future. He wants to see what this martial spirit will do when the time comes.

The shadow ghost was silent for a bit and then sighed, "Alright. Since you've been feeding me for so long, I'll lend you some of my power and show you what I can do. Don't get scared....."

When Ye Zifeng used the Thunder Spirit Pill, the profound tier Golden Marrow Pill and even when he used the Soul Binding Pill, the spirit would absorb most of its power.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Heh. Nothing under the power of a Martial lord will scare me. I'll see what this guy's got." As a martial lord in his past life, he had seen a lot of things already. There aren't many things that can scare him.

"Fierce huh. I like it.... But if this is the first time you see my power... hehe.... You might even vomit."

"Vomit?" Ye Zifeng was startled, "Is it really that serious?"

At that time, light engulfed the space that he was in as Ye Zifeng started to fly upwards.....

.....

When Ye Zifeng returned to his senses and opened his eyes, the two large guys that Wang Ruoxing brought along were standing in their original positions. They haven't moved at all.

"That shadow ghost didn't lie... The time in the mysterious space is completely different from the real world." Ye Zifeng's mouth curved up into a smile.

Yang Jing was standing very close to Ye Zifeng and lifted one of her eyebrows, 'What shadow ghost? What lie?"

Ye Zifeng couldn't explain anything because the two large men had rushed towards him and was prepared to strike his chest.

Ye Zifeng gritted his teeth and quickly dodged. He hurled the table in front of him to the two guys. "Bang." The table exploded from the two guy's punches.

"So I'm the weak link here huh? You're both focusing me..... Wait.... I forgot to ask that shadow ghost how I can use his power....Could it be the same way as before?"

Ye Zifeng started to concentrate. He felt a bit worried.

"Young master Ye, how about we....." Yang Jin looked at the doors. Anyone can tell that she was trying to run away.

"You want to run? Do you think you can get away?" Wang Ruoxing smiled sinisterly. He cut off their escape as quickly as he ate the Spirit Increasing Pill. He had used the Spirit Increasing Pill already. How can he let them escape after doing all this?

"Big Dong, Little Dong! Go block the exits. Don't let them escape."

"Got it!"

One of the two guys quickly moved towards the door and blocked the exit. The other one stood in front of the on guarding the door and fiercely stared at Ye Zifeng.

At the same time, Wang Ruoxing didn't waste any time and gather qi energy in his arms. He lifted a large cabinet and blocked the windows.

Now that the doors and windows have been blocked, the entire place was like an inescapable cage.

"Ye Zifeng, either you die, or I die. Don't think about running away!" Wang Ruoxing was furious.

Ye Zifeng softly chuckled, "Who said I was going to run away? I don't remember saying anything about running away."

Even if he's weaker than his opponent, he won't choose to run. In such a small place, he won't be exposing his back to the enemy. That is

something that a rookie would do, not something that Ye Zifeng who has been through many battle would do.

"You're looking to die!" Wang Ruoxing snorted. His expression became twisted from anger.

With an explosive and strong movement, nine streaks of qi energy appeared from Wang Ruoxing's palm like snakes and flew towards Ye Zifeng.

Seeing this, Liu Bingqian jumped in between the streaks of qi and Ye Zifeng. Qi energy condensed on her palm and formed a shield.

The horrifying qi landed on the qi shield and created sparks.

"Wang Ruoxing, I'm your opponent! Watch yourself!" A cold expression appeared on Liu Bingqian's face.

Wang Ruoxing was originally at the 8th stage but after consuming the Spirit Increasing Pill, he was able to unleash the power of someone at the peak of the 9th stage. If Ye Zifeng really fights him head on, Ye Zifeng will be blown away very quickly.

Wang Ruoxing was a smart guy. He was controlled by the soul spirit's divine sense before and knows not to get close to Ye Zifeng anymore. If he gets controlled by Ye Zifeng again and gets a beating from Liu Bingqian, he won't be able to survive."

"Ye Zifeng, stop hiding behind a woman. Fight me one on one!"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Jokes. Do you think we're competing on a stage right now? Also if you can't beat someone who's lost to me, what qualifications do you have to fight now?" Even though Ye Zifeng's cultivation was not that high, he still has his imposing manner to make up for it.

The fact that he has beaten Liu Bingqian is known throughout Leizhou City. Wang Ruoxing can't rebutt at all.

"Big Dong, Little Dong. Your mission is to take care of Ye Zifeng for me!"

Wang Ruoxing was being hindered by Liu Bingqian and couldn't do anything. All he can do now is command the other two to do his work.

At that time, Ye Zifeng's expression became serious. He looked over at Yang Jing, "Miss Jing, can you hold that guy at the 8th stage back for a bit? I want to see if I can take care of this guy first."

He didn't want to fight against the 8th stage cultivator and wanted test if he can use the martial spirit's power on the 7th stage cultivator first.

"Alright. Fine." Yang Jing nodded. Even though she was weak, she still had to try.

That guy at the seventh stage of qi refining was Little Dong.

Little Dong cracked his knuckles, "It seems like I'm being underestimated. For a mere fifth stage qi refiner to say that he'll take care of me.... I don't even know where this guy got all that courage from."

Wang Ruoxing turned around and reminded Little Dong, "Don't be too careless. Don't fight in close combat. I don't know what kind of secret this guy has. It can stop your movements."

"Don't worry boss. I know what to do."

Little Dong's mouth curved up into a sinister smile. For Ye Zifeng to say that he can beat himself was a kind of humiliation to him. Little Dong really wants to beat Ye Zifeng up.

On the other side, Ye Zifeng was concentrating his energy and tried to condense the death qi into his palm. He can feel that all the energy in his body was flowing towards his arms into his palm. Two of the very visible veins on his arms started to glow.

"You dirty brat. You're looking to die by standing there!" Little Dong coldly laughed. He gathered his qi into his hands and created a white mist.

"Go!" He commanded the white mist to attack Ye Zifeng.

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng opened his eyes and struck his palm out towards the white mist. A giant black palm appeared and dissipated the white mist.

The palm strike felt gloomy, cold, evil and was filled with killing intent. As it flew towards Little Dong, it started to condense itself until it struck him. Right before it struck Little Dong, the black qi turned into a large

monster and completely enveloped Little Dong. Seeing this, even Ye Zifeng was shocked at what was happening.

The seven foot tall Little Dong couldn't even react at all. A large mouth appeared from the black qi and swallowed Little Dong. Immediately, an indescribable, miserable scream echoed throughout the entire inn.

"Holy shit.... This.... What the hell is going on....." Wang Ruoxing was shocked as he watched the scene and stopped moving. He felt cold sweat running down his back.... Both his legs started to shake.....

Chapter 82: I'll beat you anyways

The meat paste/mutilated body that Ye Zifeng had imagined did not appear. However, the seven foot tall Little Dong continuously screamed miserably without stopping.

This giant mouth was formed by Ye Zifeng's own qi and after it swallowed Little Dong, it disappeared into the air, leaving no trace of its existence behind.

After suffering from such an attack, Little Dong unexpectedly didn't die!

The scene that unfolded in front of them seemed like a dream and reality at the same time. It was simple unimaginable.

Ye Zifeng shockingly looked at his own hands. Even he didn't know what this Martial Spirit did.

This was because when he gathered the martial spirit's death qi, it activated by itself. Ye Zifeng could not control it at all.

"Little Brother Dong. What happened? Are you alright?"

Wang Ruoxing moved away from his battle with Liu Bingqian and rushed over to support his bro.

Little Dong shook his head and looked blankly at Wang Ruoxing, "Boss, what just happened? I feel like I was being eaten alive. It felt very painful....."

After a while, he looked down and his expression changed. His mouth was opened so wide that he can fit a bowl inside.

"Holy shit. Boss look. My... my hand.... Why is my hand like this?"

After saying that, everyone looked over at his hand and was shocked at what they saw.

Everyone saw that his hand looked like a dried up rotten tree branch. Starting from his fingers, his hands slowly grew older and older until it rotted.

This horrifying scene caused Wang Ruoxing to be scared shitless and

took a few steps back. He looked at Little Dong as if Little Dong was a monster.

"Boss. Save me.... What's happening to me? It hurts so much.... I feel like I'm about to die....."

"Don't come any closer." Wang Ruoxing was shocked and pushed Little Dong away as if he had contracted some sort of weird disease and didn't want it to spread.

On the outside, Wang Ruoxing acts very differently compared to Wang Lin. However, Wang Ruoxing is someone who is afraid to die as well. When it comes to a life or death situation, he becomes a lot like Wang Lin.

"Boss....." Little Dong had a look of despair on his face. The rotting process spread out through his hand and to his arm. It slowly moved up towards his entire body, causing Little Dong to continuously scream in pain.

On the other side, Big Dong fiercely stared at Ye Zifeng.

"Ye Zifeng. What the hell did you do to my little brother?" Big Dong was different from Wang Ruoxing. Little Dong was his blood related brother. After seeing that his little brother was beaten up like this, Big Dong became furious "I....." Ye Zifeng was at a loss of words.

He was prepared for what was going to happen after the shadow ghost told him that it was going to lend him some of its strength. However, he didn't think that the death qi was going to be so powerful. It completely exceeded his expectations!

Yang Jing was right next to Ye Zifeng and saw everything. She was completely shocked at what happened.

"Big brother rough guy....." Liu Bingqian was confused. The attack that Ye Zifeng just had resembles a martial spirit's attack. When she thought about it, she immediately rejected the idea.

How can someone at the fifth stage of qi refining awaken their martial spirit? That's simply absurd!

Big Dong watched as Ye Zifeng stayed silent, thinking that Ye Zifeng was pretending to be aloof. His anger exploded through the roof.

"Ye Zifeng! I'm going to kill your right now and avenge my little brother!"

Wang Ruoxing heard this and hurriedly yelled at Big Dong, "Don't be so rash. Do you see what Ye Zifeng did to your brother?"

He wasn't worried about Big Dong's safety. Instead, he was worried for himself. If Big Dong goes down as well, then he won't be able to handle Ye Zifeng, Yang Jing and Liu Bingqian all by himself.

Big Dong looked fiercely at Wang Ruoxing, "Wang Ruoxing, I know what you're thinking about. I won't have a good time if I follow a scaredy-cat like you. If you won't help me avenge my little brother, I'll just do it myself."

"You....." Wang Ruoxing stared with a complicated expression on his face.

After hearing what Big Dong said, Wang Ruoxing wanted him to go in and die by himself. However, he remembered that he can't fight three on one either and charged forward as well.

Wang Ruoxing, Big Dong and Little Dong.....The three of them had been very close since they were just kids. They knew what each other's weaknesses are and could cover for each other.

Big Dong was so angry that his eyes became bloodshot. Qi energy exploded from his body. A streak of bright red fire appeared on his palm as he charged towards Ye Zifeng like a rocket.

"Big brother rough guy! Use that move that you just used!"

Liu Bingqian was being held back by Wang Ruoxing and can't help Ye Zifeng. Yang Jing's true strength was at the 6th stage of qi refining and couldn't help at all.

"Alright!" Even if the death qi is too cruel, Ye Zifeng won't hesitate to use it if someone is targeting his own life.

Ye Zifeng calmed down and tried to remember the feeling of the move from before. He quickly gathered and condensed the death qi in his palm.

Streaks of cold, evil, and murderous qi appeared in the air and attacked. The monster with the big mouth appeared once again.

“Big Dong. Run!” Wang Ruoxing yelled out.

Big Dong gritted his teeth and yelled back, “Worry about yourself!”

However, at that time, the qi that was coming out of Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped coming out. The black qi that he condensed suddenly dissipated. It became a small drop of death qi as it hit Big Dong on his chest.

When it hit Big Dong, nothing happened to him.

“This... What’s going on?”

The martial spirit’s attack actually shrank and became nothing!

Ye Zifeng couldn’t help but curse at it. Ye Zifeng reacted very quickly and dodged Big Dong’s attack. If he had stayed at the same spot, he would have a hole in his chest by now.

“It failed? Ye Zifeng. I know what’s going on. It seems like you can’t continuously use this move!”

Big Dong laughed out loudly. He wanted to charge forwards and suicide with Ye Zifeng when the strange qi was on top of him. However, he would have never thought that Ye Zifeng would fail. This made him feel much better.

“Even if I don’t use that move, it’s not like i can’t be your opponent. I’ll beat you anyways!”

Ye Zifeng laughed and calmed himself down. It was a three on two battle already. Since Bingqian was taking care of Wang Ruoxing, it was a two on one.

Big Dong laughed loudly, “Laughable. Do you think two people at the sixth stage of qi refining will be able to beat someone at the eighth stage of qi refining? Let’s not talk about two people. Even if you bring five, no even ten more people at the sixth stage of qi refining, the results will be

the same!”

Ye Zifeng eyes scanned the room and then smiled, Miss Jing, when I charge forward, release your common tier strength to the maximum and send it towards me. Alright?”

“But…. This….” Yang Jing was startled. From what she can tell, it seems like Ye Zifeng wanted to suicide with this Big Dong.

“Don’t worry Miss Jing. Just throw it over. I’ll be fine.”

After saying that, Ye Zifeng moved like lightning and charged towards Big Dong.

“Big Dong, don’t let him get close to you!” Wang Ruoxing looked over and reminded him.

After Big Dong calmed down, he looked at Ye Zifeng and threw out a punch towards Ye Zifeng. A red beam appeared from his fist and flew towards Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng then smiled and suddenly turned around to dodge the attack. The beam continued to fly towards Little Dong.

“Big brother! Save me…..” Little Dong was on the floor, still in pain. He couldn’t move at all. The rotting process had already reached his shoulders. His face ashen. He was in so much pain that he couldn’t even lift his own arm.

“Ye Zifeng. You bastard!”

Big Dong cared for his brother and quickly retreated his attack while jumping back. He didn’t want to get close to Ye Zifeng.

“Do you think that this is all I got?” Ye Zifeng laughed and lightning qi appeared from his hands. He looked at the lamps in the room and struck them with the lightning qi.

Wang Ruoxing’s expression changed immediately. While fighting Liu Bingqian, he was slowly moving towards Ye Zifeng, looking for a chance to make a move. Who would’ve thought that Ye Zifeng would have a move first.

“Shit. Not good. That guy wants to run!” Wang Ruoxing cursed inwards. He quickly condensed some qi energy and struck the lightning qi flying towards the lamps to divert it.

After that, he took a deep breath. It was very late at night already. If the lamps were to go out, the battlefield will become chaotic and Ye Zifeng will definitely be able to control them.

Wang Ruoxing gulped. This Ye Zifeng is very crafty and hard to deal with. Why did he get himself into this mess....

Chapter 83: Defeating you in one move

The lightning qi that Ye Zifeng sent out was quickly dispelled by Wang Ruoxing.

In the next moment, Wang Ruoxing flew towards Little Dong and threw him over to Big Dong. After that, he turned around again and sent a palm strike filled with qi towards his opponents.

There are some things that you either don't do or have to do. After everything that had happened already, he has to kill Ye Zifeng.

"Big Dong, leave your brother on side for a bit. Killing Ye Zifeng is our number one priority!" Even though Wang Ruoxing was being blocked by Liu Bingqian, he was still able to see what was going on and talk.

"You heartless thing. I don't need you to teach me how I do things!"

Big Dong yelled back as he caught his little brother. He couldn't stop his movements and had to drop his brother on the floor instead of softly placing him down.

His hands moved like lightning as he knocked away Ye Zifeng's palm strikes and fiercely grabbed Ye Zifeng's neck.

Even with the martial spirit lending its power to Ye Zifeng, Big Dong was still three whole stages above Ye Zifeng and can completely crush him. He grabbed Ye Zifeng by his neck to show him how cruel he will be.

However, Ye Zifeng wasn't that stupid to let himself grabbed like that. He had a plan to go against Big Dong the whole time.

"Miss Jing, now!"

Yang Jing nodded and gritted her teeth. On her fingers, the condensed flame had grown very big. With Ye Zifeng's signal, she didn't hesitate at all and threw the fireball towards Ye Zifeng.

When one's cultivation is lacking, one needs to learn to adapt. One needs to learn how to create opportunities when facing a difficult situation.

On the path of cultivation, your enemies won't always be on the same level as you are. When facing a stronger opponent, you must go above and beyond your limits. You must use everything in your arsenal and everything that's at your disposal.

Even weak cultivators can have their own methods and deal with people stronger than themselves.

叶子锋的背后，只见一道焦灼的火焰夹带着炫目的光芒，在陈大东的瞳孔之中不断放大。

Behind Ye Zifeng, a large blazing fireball was flying towards the Ye Zifeng and Big Dong.

"No!" Big Dong yelled out

Even if Yang Jing's true power was at the 6th stage of qi refining, she was still a cultivator at the 7th stage of qi refining. After preparing for a while, her fireball had the power of an attack at the 7th stage of qi refining. Along with her innate fire abilities as an alchemist, the fireball had a very strong destructive power.

"Too late. You've already lost."

Ye Zifeng laughed. He was prepared while Big Dong wasn't. When the fireball reached them, Ye Zifeng quickly lowered his body and dodged the fireball. It slipped by his arms and flew straight into Big Dong's chest.

A piercing cry sounded. When the fireball struck Big Dong, it left a deep imprint on his chest with a sizzling sound. Big Dong's shirt was burnt and a bloody imprint could it seen.

"Ah!" Big Dong's expression became twisted as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

After yelling, the rough muscle on Big Dong's body started to expand until the veins started to pop out. After experiencing this devastating attack, Big Dong looked up as if he had been reborn.

After coughing for a bit and spitting out another mouthful of blood, Big Dong smiled, "This miss from Tiandao City, your abilities aren't bad at all.

If your cultivation was a bit higher, then I might have been burnt to crisps by now!"

Yang Jing bit her teeth. Her face drained of color. If such a strong attack couldn't kill her opponent, she doesn't know what to do anymore.

Seeing how resoluted Big Dong was gave Wang Ruoxing a shock. Even he who have consumed the Spirit Increasing Pill would have a hard time dealing with that fireball.

"How about you try this move then!"

Ye Zifeng moved towards Big Dong.

"Come on!" Big Dong laughed, "Ye Zifeng, your friend took so much time to form that fireball and I've taken the blow already. Let's see what kind of moves you got now!"

Right now, Big Dong was feeling invincible as if he can block anything in the world.

Suddenly a "hidden weapon" type of thing flew towards Big Dong. Without even looking at it, Big Dong jumped backwards and caught the object. This thing couldn't hurt him at all.

"Ye Zifeng. Do you have nothing better? You're starting to throw random things now? I'm disappointed."

"Big Dong.... You...." Wang Ruoxing was shocked. His mouth was wide open as if his face had been pulled down by someone.

"Wang Ruoxing, looking at your face, it seems like you're shocked by my hidden strength. Let me tell you something. I've already broken through into the middle 8th stage of qi refining!"

Wang Ruoxing's face turned ashen and cursed, "Big Dong. You retard! Look at what you're holding!"

Hearing this, Big Dong wanted to curse back but looked down first. When he saw what he was holding, his face swelled up like a pig and was extremely shocked.

"What? This.....This....." He was so shocked that he couldn't talk.

He was holding the poisoned plate in his hand.

The Ten Step Qi Shattering poison wasn't used on Ye Zifeng but on Big Dong instead. Ye Zifeng had an amused look on his face.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "This time... Do you want me to countdown for you? Let's see. You walked quite a few steps already. One, two, three, four, five.... Eight, nine! Whoops. You only have one step left. There's no need for me to count down. Wait no. When you grabbed the plate, you had one foot on the ground... So you only have a half a step left."

Ye Zifeng revealed a cold expression and continued to talk, "Don't say that I didn't remind you. If you even if your foot up by a little bit, you will faint immediately."

Hearing this, Big Dong was shocked. Both of his feet felt like they were weighed down by an anchor. He didn't dare to lift his leg up at all. He had lost all his will to battle.

On the other side, Wang Ruoxing sighed with a face filled with disappointment. This time he had traveled so far for Leizhou City in order to mess with Ye Zifeng. Who would've thought that not only would he not succeed but will also suffer from Ye Zifeng! This is simply absurd!

Ye Zifeng turned around and smiled, "Wang clan's second young master... It's the general's turn...."

"I...." Wang Ruoxing gaze swept through the entire room. Little Dong was painfully lying down on the floor. Big Dong couldn't move his feet at all, standing there like a statue. The two of them could not fight at all.

The tides have changed very quickly. It was now a three on one. Wang Ruoxing was by himself. His defeat was certain.

Ye Zifeng saw that his opponent didn't want to fight and smiled.

"The Spirit Increasing Pill's effects is very clear. However, it overdrafts your cultivation. Every time you use overuse your strength there will be a load charged to your body. If you want to continue cultivating in the future, then I suggest you stop right now."

Wang Ruoxing gritted his teeth and yelled out, “I have no way of returning now. If the people in my family knows about this, then I will definitely be abandoned by my clan. They will give me up to the Liu clan, so what’s the point of stopping now?”

Wang Ruoxing was clear. His father, the clan master is a decisive man. As long as it benefits the clan, he is willing to give up his own son.

Liu Bingqian coldly snorted and became angry, “This guy is too stubborn. Big brother rough guy, I say that we kill him right now!”

Wang Ruoxing shuddered. He was someone who is afraid of death. He didn’t think that by talking back just now would make Liu Bingqian have this kind of reaction.

Ye Zifeng sighed and rubbed his hands, “Bingqian. You’re right. We have to deal with the roots of the problem. If we let him live, he’ll be a threat to us.”

He looked at Wang Ruoxing with a cold expression. The three people walked closer and closer to Wang Ruoxing and forced him into a corner.

Wang Ruoxing continuously moved backwards and yelled out, “Stop. Don’t kill me. I’m the second young master of the Wang clan. If you kill me, my big brother won’t let you go. My father won’t let you go either!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Even if I don’t kill you, the people from the Wang clan still won’t let me go. Why do I have to be scared anymore?”

Wang Ruoxing was scared and then remembered what happened to Wang Lin last time, “Big Brother Zifeng. Don’t kill me! I beg you. I’ll do the same as Wang Lin. I’ll give you all my treasures. I’ll give you everything!”

Chapter 84: Using treasures to trade for one's life

"Oh? So you know that I like treasures!" A big smile suddenly appeared on Ye Zifeng's face.

Wang Ruoxing cursed inwards. He still remembers how Ye Zifeng cleaned his little brother, Wang Lin out last time.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Wang Ruoxing's face as well, "Boss Zifeng, who doesn't love strong treasures. Here. Have everything that I have. Okay? Please let me go. I'm willing to make an blood oath too and never cross your path again."

Ye Zifeng's mouth curved up, "If making a blood oath really works, then why did your little brother come and bother me again?"

"This……" Wang Ruoxing's face became stiff and didn't know how to give an explanation.

The blood oath is something that activates when one steps into the Martial Disciple realm from the Qi Refining realm. For someone like Wang Lin who has no hope of stepping into the Martial Disciple realm, the blood oath meant nothing to him.

"Boss Zifeng, I….." Wang Ruoxing wants to prove that he won't mess with Ye Zifeng anymore….

However Ye Zifeng coldly replied, "Don't call me Boss. Do you think I'll believe someone who was trying to kill me just because they change their tone of voice?"

Wang Ruoxing's face turned ashen, and didn't know what to say anymore.

Liu Bingqian snorted with a cold look on her face, "Big brother rough guy. This is will continue to mess with you in the shadows. If you let him live, he'll try to get back at us sooner or later. I say we kill him. Am I right? Senior Sister Jing."

Yang Jing yelped in surprise. Her body was very weak so she doesn't go out much, much less fight and kill. She wasn't used to this so she was surprise when Bingqian mentioned killing.

Liu Bingqian shot a meaningful glance at her. Yang Jing understood this and quickly nodded.

"Junior sister Bingqian is right. If we were the ones who ended up in his hands, who knows what we'll become. Since he is so vicious and merciless, we can't let him go either. Let's make it quick."

Yang Jing smiled and looked back at Bingqian, showing that she's done her job.

Wang Ruoxing didn't expect the two girls to be so vicious. He thought that he would be able to escape death by kissing Ye Zifeng's ass as if Ye Zifeng was his own dad.

Ye Zifeng did do anything and smiled, "Wang Ruoxing. Don't be so nervous. When I, Ye Zifeng, do things, I do it with sincerity. As long as you can bring out items that's worth your life, I'll spare you. Oh yeah. Take out those Spirit Increasing pills that you have and let me see their grade."

Wang Ruoxing continued to curse Ye Zifeng inwards. Let you see their grade my ass. He probably wants to take them.....

Even though he cursed in his heart, he still have a respectful appearance on the outside, "Alright Boss, I still have one more."

Saying that, he gritted his teeth and painfully took out a Spirit Increasing Pill to give to Ye Zifeng.

This Spirit Increasing Pill isn't cheap. If sold on the black market, it could bring in around a thousand gold!

"Only one?" Ye Zifeng raised his brow and gave Wang Ruoxing a cold stare.

"Yes. I only have one left. Really. I can make a blood oath to guarantee it!"

"I told you already. I don't believe in those blood oaths anymore."

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, “But it’s too bad. This one Spirit Increasing Pill can only buy you an arm……”

“What hand? Are you talking about…..” After thinking for a bit, Wang Ruoxing’s face turned ugly, “You mean…. I’m using money to buy my life right now?”

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly.

“I’d like to call it a “sincere” trade or an “equivalent” exchange.”

Seeing how vicious Ye Zifeng was, Wang Ruoxing felt like he offended someone that he shouldn’t have offended. He was feeling bitter and dejected on the inside.

Wang Ruoxing’s mouth twitched as he retrieved a jade pendant from his clothes.

“An interspatial pendant? This seems like a common grade pendant. As for it’s value…..it can exchange for three of your fingers.” A cold smiling expression appeared on Liu Bingqian’s face as she valued the pendant.

Wang Ruoxing felt as if his heart was being stabbed but still had a smile on his face, “The thing that I want to show you isn’t this interspatial pendant but the thing inside. Do you guys remember the prize that I got from the Heavenly Clan gathering?”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up, “Could it be that Spirit Tier 1st Grade, Violet Gravel Armor?”

Wang Ruoxing’s jaws dropped and was surprised, “No way. You remember?” He was just casually asking. Who would’ve thought that Ye Zifeng would remember.

Wang Ruoxing thought about it. Could it be that Ye Zifeng foresaw this happening and remembered what he received? Ye Zifeng really is fearsome.

However, in reality, not only did Ye Zifeng remember what prize Wang Ruoxing got, he even remembered what kind of prize Xiao Mu got. Ye Zifeng would naturally remember what his enemies received so he can

prepare for the future.

Ye Zifeng smiled and took the Violet Gravel Armor from the shaking Wang Ruoxing. He looked at it for a bit and nodded with a satisfied expression.

“This Grade 1 Spirit Tier armor really isn’t shabby at all. Along with the pendant.... It’ll buy you another arm and a leg.

“What? A Grade 1 Spirit Tier armor, the third place prize from the Heavenly Clan Gathering that happens once every five years is only worth.....” Wang Ruoxing was so mad that he took off his shoes and threw it at Ye Zifeng. Wang Ruoxing had seen all kinds of vicious people but have never seen anyone as vicious and hateful as Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled and patted Wang Ruoxing’s shoulders, “Wang clan’s second young master. Don’t undervalue yourself. You’re worth way more than you think!”

This phrase seems like it was complimenting Wang Ruoxing but to Wang Ruoxing himself, it was even worse than cursing at him.

He even took out his prize from the gathering and yet Ye Zifeng still isn’t satisfied.

He can participate again after five years but at that time, he isn’t so sure he can get something like this again.

Under an immeasurable amount of chest pain, he took out everything that he had. A bunch of gold coins scattered all over the floor. Qi Recovery Pills rolled everywhere. There was also a Customs Document for Tiandao City.

“This is everything that I have on me!” Wang Ruoxing bitterly laughed.

If Ye Zifeng still isn’t satisfied then he doesn’t know what he can do anymore.

Ye Zifeng picked up the customs document without looking at the other things and smiled.

“I guess that you had some relationships with someone from Tiandao

City to be able to come in here. It seems like I was right. It seems like your Wang clan has some pretty good backings here in Tiandao City."

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was smiling so slyly, he felt that something bad was going to happen.

Ye Zifeng continued reading the document and saw that the recommender was someone named Wang Rui from the Profound Sect.

"Profound Sect's Wang Rui? Is he someone from the Wang clan? What's his relationship with you?"

Wang Ruoxing was silent and didn't want to say anything.

Seeing how Wang Ruoxing wasn't going to talk, Ye Zifeng turned around and smiled, "Bingqian, do you remember how much the second master exchanged for?"

Liu Bingqian smiled, "Let's see..... The Spirit Increasing Pill for an arm, the armor and pendant for another arm and a leg. Hmmmm all these gold coins and pills can probably get him half a leg back... We'll just have to cut off the other half."

Ye Zifeng extended his hand. He calculated for a bit using his fingers and then nodded, "Wang Clan's second young master. Did you hear that? We'll cut off one leg. What do you think is the better choice?"

Wang Saying that, Ye Zifeng smiled as he looked at Wang Ruoxing's legs. He stared at the left leg for a bit and then the right leg.

Wang Ruoxing couldn't help but bitterly laugh. This inn was opened so he can rob other people. He had done many bad deeds here. However, this time, against Ye Zifeng, he was the one being robbed in his own inn.

"Alright. Alright. I'll talk. Wang Rui is my father's big brother, which is my uncle. It's all because of uncle that the Wang Clan is able to become one of the top clans in Leizhou City. He pampers me the most so if anything happens to me, he will definitely avenge me."

Of course, Ye Zifeng didn't believe him. How can his uncle like such a gross looking guy? Unless... his uncle doesn't have eyes..... He probably got

this customs document from his uncle after continuously pestering him about it.

"Profound Sect.... Profound Sect.... Why does this sound so familiar?"

Ye Zifeng thought about this for a while and an image came into his mine, "That's right! Elder Zhao. He's from the Profound Sect. How could I forget about this!"

A smiled revealed on Ye Zifeng's face. He planned on asking Elder Zhao about joining the Profound Sect so he can raise his cultivation faster.

"That..... I've already told you everything I know and gave you everything that I have. Can you.... Uhhh... let me go?"

Wang Ruoxing looked at Ye Zifeng with a sullen look. He doesn't even have enough money to go home now and would probably have to ask a few friend to borrow some.

If Ye Zifeng doesn't want to let him go, then Wang Ruoxing would really fight them. He already started to gather his qi in his palms already.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, "Alright. Sure. Since you're so cooperative, I'll let you go....."

Hearing this, the qi that he gathered in his palms dissipated.

He happily looked at Ye Zifeng, "Really? You're not lying to me?"

Chapter 85: Letting him go?

This time, Ye Zifeng had reaped a large profit. To be able to get so many treasure and gold coins after a fight, this was very worth it for his time.

After taking all of Wang Ruoxing's treasures, Ye Zifeng feels that Wang Ruoxing won't go around telling people in order to save face.

"I'm letting you go because I'm a nice person. But.... How are you going to promise me that you won't find me for trouble anymore?"

Ye Zifeng smiled at Wang Ruoxing and reminded him, "Let me remind you. I don't trust blood oaths anymore. If you're like your brother and want to come at me with your life on the line again, I really am a bit scared....."

Wang Ruoxing cursed. You. Scared? How about you have a scared expression on your face before you say that?

"Boss. Please don't be like this. How about I make a Inner Demons Oath?" Wang Ruoxing rolled his eyes and then smiled.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "Whatever. Don't think that I don't know about it. The Inner Demons Oath only affect people when they become a Martial Practitioner..... Let's just make a blood contract."

"What? Blood Contract?" Wang Ruoxing was shocked.

He knew that the Blood Contract is one of the strictest things there is. It has a very strong binding effect. If one party goes back on their words, then they will definitely die painfully!

"Boss....I don't think we have to make such a big deal out of this....."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned cold, "So you're still trying to revenge for yourself?"

Wang Ruoxing bitterly laughed, "Don't joke around boss. After this all this, my lil bro and I will never forget this day. After suffering so much, how would we dare to mess with you again."

"Hmph. All talk."

Ye Zifeng took out a piece of paper and pen from his interspatial ring.

Seeing this, Wang Ruoxing's expression turned ashen.

"No way.... You actually have a blood contract with you....."

"Write your name down and leave your fingerprint there. Draw some blood and make a blood oath. If you even miss a single step then.... Hehe..." Ye Zifeng walked around Wang Ruoxing and then took out a dagger from his robe. It was the same exact dagger that he extorted from Wang Lin.

"Boss.... Don't... Alright. I got it. I'll do it now!"

Ye Zifeng had seen through Wang Ruoxing a while ago. Wang Ruoxing was all talk and no bark. This guy was afraid of dying. This was why he liked to fight against people who were weaker than himself.

Wang Ruoxing gritted his teeth. He had completely given up. He couldn't do anything against Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng was only at the fifth stage of qi refining. Even those at the 6th stage of qi refining can't beat him. If he can't control Ye Zifeng now, then when he grows up, he will not be stopped.

"What are you thinking about? Put your fingerprint there and draw your blood to make a blood oath!" Ye Zifeng reminded Wang Ruoxing very loudly.

"Alright...." Wang Ruoxing closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He then gritted his teeth and completed the blood contract.

This time, Wang Ruoxing really admitted defeat. If he tries to mess with Ye Zifeng again, then he will suffer the consequences.

Ye Zifeng smiled and put away one of the blood contracts into his interspatial ring.

"There are two contracts. You take the other one. Take a look at it when you're bored. You know what will happen if you go back on your words right?"

Wang Ruoxing received his part of the contract and felt very depressed.

He came all the way here from Leizhou City to mess with Ye Zifeng. However, who would've thought that he would be the one that was messed with.

"Boss... I gave you everything that I have already and signed the blood contract. This time, can you let me go now?" Wang Ruoxing's was hopeful that Ye Zifeng would let him go.

It's better to have a bad life than to have a good death. Wang Ruoxing gulped and looked at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng looked at him with an amused expression, "Well I don't like to lie people. I said I'll let you go so I'll let you go. But....."

Wang Ruoxing felt relieved at first but when he heard the second half of what Ye Zifeng said, his heart shuddered. After everything that happened, what else does Ye Zifeng want?

"But what.....?"

"I'm letting you go..... But I don't know about Bingqian and Miss Jing....."

Ye Zifeng turned around and saw Bingqian's eyes lit up. It looked very cold as she looked at Wang Ruoxing. She really didn't plan to let Wang Ruoxing go.

Wang Ruoxing was flabbergasted. He tried very hard to hold himself back.

"But.... But.. Aren't you guys doing this together....?"

It's fine if one person messes with him. But if they want to mess with him one by one, then Wang Ruoxing doesn't know what to do anymore. The most important thing is that Wang Ruoxing has nothing left on his body. If Ye Zifeng had wanted some more things, then he would've stripped naked and gave him his clothes.

However, he made the blood contract already. If he wants to fight Ye Zifeng, then he will receive divine punishment. He can't do anything but comply to their demands.

"Who said we're together? He's from the Ye clan and I'm from the Liu

clan. Senior sister Jing is from the Yang clan. He does what he wants and I'll do what I want." Liu Bingqian revealed a big smile.

Wang Ruoxing also had a smile on his face. However, the smile looked even worse than if he was dead, "Then.... What do you girls want?"

Liu Bingqian giggled and released her killing intent, "You tried to drug us before and if big brother rough guy wasn't so cautious then we'll probably be in your hands right now. How can I feel good if I don't beat you for a bit?"

"Beat? Look at me already. You still want to beat me?"

Wang Ruoxing started to sweat and felt like he was going to faint. If someone at the 9th stage of qi refining beats him, it's not fun and games.

Wang Ruoxing looked at Ye Zifeng and only saw that Ye Zifeng had his eyes closed. He was trying to say that he has nothing to do with this.

Technically, Ye Zifeng didn't lie. He really did let him go without doing anything.

Wang Ruoxing couldn't rely on Ye Zifeng at all. He turned to his right and saw Yang Jing standing in front of him. He saw her graceful, elegant and peaceful look and tried to beg for forgiveness.

"The miss from Tiandao City. I don't have any enmities with you. I've realized that I'm wrong and will change in the future. Please help me persuade Miss Liu to not beat me up."

Yang Jing saw how sorry Wang Ruoxing looked and felt sorry for him. She took a deep breath and pulled Bingqian's sleeves.

"Junior sister.... I think that he was muddle minded back there. Let's give him a chance or maybe you can hold back a bit. Don't beat him to death in one hit....."

"What? Beat to death?" Wang Ruoxing felt like he was closer and closer to fainting. What kind of women is Ye Zifeng traveling with.....

Liu Bingqian looked over at Ye Zifeng and smiled, "Big brother rough guy, it might get a bit rough when I beat him.... Can you turn around and

not look?"

Ye Zifeng raised his brows and looked back at her, "Uhh....It's okay...."

Yang Jing coughed a bit and smiled at Ye Zifeng as well, "Young master Ye. You should go rest for a bit. Leave it to us."

Ye Zifeng was dragged into a room by the two girls and continuously shook his head.

"Alright. I'll wait for you girls in here...."

After Bingqian sent Ye Zifeng away, she sighed, "That blockhead....How come he still doesn't understand after all these hints. I'm so mad!"

Yang Jing laughed, "You don't want to let him see your rough side right?"

Bingqian giggled and didn't say anything.

They were giggling as they chatted with each other. However, when they saw Wang Ruoxing again, a cold expression appeared.

"Please..... We can talk about this..... Ahhhhh!"

.....

Wang Ruoxing screamed miserably throughout the entire ordeal.....

After a while, the two girls happily skipped downstairs to towards the rooms.

"That Wang Ruoxing really is trash. I didn't even use 30% of my strength and he was screaming so miserably."

Yang Jing giggled, "You got the better part. Right after he saw that I had condensed my flame, he fainted...."

On the outside, Yang Jing looked weak. She really didn't like fighting at all. However, after being around Bingqian for so long, she learned some of Bingqian's methods of doing things.

"Big brother rough guy, do you want to beat that Wang Ruoxing up?" Bingqian happily skipped down the stairs.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng was walking out of his room. He lifted his head and smiled, “I’m a righteous person. If I told him that I’m going to let him go, I’ll let him go.”

Liu Bingqian shook her head. She was just casually talking. If Ye Zifeng were to go upstairs and beat Wang Ruoxing, then Wang Ruoxing will really go crazy.

“We taught him a lesson today and made him sign a blood contract. I don’t think he’ll find us for trouble anymore. Oh yeah.... When are we going to the alchemy competition? When are we going to find your Master Old Devil?”

Liu Bingqian thought about it and smiled, “How about tomorrow morning?”

Chapter 86: Definitely cannot offend!

Being in the center of five small cities, Tiandao City was a place endowed with the energies of the heavens and the earth. To these smaller cities, it was a place that transcended the nine heavens and was filled with unlimited resources.

In the early mornings, a multi-colored qi would appear in the Rooftop Pavilion, located at the highest point of the Profound Sect. It gave off a unique feeling to cultivators. This was the reason why Tiandao City is said to have unlimited resources.

In the Inn.

“The qi energy here is sure plentiful. If I can stay here and cultivate, my cultivation will increase much faster than cultivating in Leizhou City.

When Ye Zifeng woke up this morning and took a deep breath, he felt as if his entire body had been refreshed. Even the violent and disturbed qi in his body started to calm down.

“Heh. Quit dreaming. The people of people that can stay in Tiandao City is limited. Who in the five small cities don’t want to stay in Tiandao City? Do you think you can stay whenever you want?”

Liu Bingqian smiled and suddenly appeared behind Ye Zifeng.\

“But.... If you want to stay then it’s not impossible....” Liu Bingqian said as she lowered her voice.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng became interested in what Bingqian had to say.

“Bingqian, what do you mean that it’s not impossible?”

A complicated expression appeared on Bingqian’s face, “.....It’s pretty easy. Actually, my Liu clan has some relationships with an esteemed elder in Tiandao City. It’s not hard for him to make an exception..... He might help you if you become a part of the Liu clan.....”

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng’s expression changed as he coldly snorted.

“Impossible. Not with how Liu Ningzi treated me that day. I told you

already. I will never be with her. There's no way you can talk me into it!"

Liu Bingqian was startled as a complicated look appeared in her eyes and muttered, "You dumb blockhead. Am I not someone from the Liu clan……"

At this moment, Yang Jing's jolly voice sounded from behind the two.

"The two of you are up pretty early. Did you want to see Master Old Devil that much?"

Liu Bingqian giggled, "I haven't seen master in a while. If it wasn't for the fact that master is nagging to attend this alchemy competition, I would definitely go and visit more often."

Ye Zifeng looked around and smiled, "Well since we're done with Wang Ruoxing, why don't we go to your master and prepare for the competition?"

Hearing the name Wang Ruoxing, the two girls' mouth curved up to reveal a smile.

Last night, the three of them had mercilessly punished Wang Ruoxing and beaten him half dead. The other two were also forced by Ye Zifeng to sign a blood contract and won't bother them anymore. Ye Zifeng also handed them a sound transmission talisman and would try to extort more from them later on.

The only thing that Ye Zifeng regretted was not keeping an eye on Wang Lin. He searched the entire inn and couldn't find him. Wang Lin probably woke up in the middle of the fights and slipped away when he saw that things weren't going his way.

Liu Bingqian looked over at Ye Zifeng and replied, "Alright. Let's go. We'll probably reach our destination by noon."

Even though Tiandao City was big, the group was lucky that they were pretty close to their master's place. Under Yang Jing's guidance, the group moved quickly.

When they reached the Muyun Clan's residence, it was almost noon.

“Welcome Miss Jing!”

“Welcome Miss Liu!”

The Muyun Clan had expected for them to come and had two rows of guards welcome them at the front door. When they saw the two girls, they welcomed them loudly.

Yang Jing smiled and waved her hands, “I didn’t even leave for that many days, there’s no need for such a big welcome.”

The leader of the guards cupped his hands, “This is master Muyun’s orders. We don’t dare to disobey!”

Yang Jing looked at Liu Bingqian and revealed a smile.

“Junior Sister Liu, look how much face you have. Every time you come over, master always makes a big deal out of it!”

“It’s because master treats me with such kindness that I’m here. If not, then I have no reason to be here. I always get last place every time. I always get embarrassed during the competitions. Do you know that?”

Yang Jing laughed lightly and didn’t say anything else. She turned around and looked at the guards.

“That’s right. Did Master Old Devil wake up? I don’t want to make master unhappy if we barge in.”

Ye Zifeng looked at Yang Jing with a shocked expression, “No way. It’s already noon. How can your master not be up?”

Yang Jing shook her head, “Well..... Normally, master sleeps for about another hour..... We can wait for a bit.”

The guard had an embarrassed look on his face, “This.... Miss Jing is correct. Master Muyun isn’t awake yet. Please enter slowly.....”

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing looked at each other and stood in place. They were going to wait.

“Still an hour?” Ye Zifeng suddenly remember how Bingqian told him that her master’s temper was a bit weird. But this is super weird.

It's normal if their master doesn't want to be disturbed late at night but it's noon right now. We can't even enter the house because their master is asleep? That's not normal.

Ye Zifeng was suddenly curious about this Muyun Old Devil. How can a person be so weird?

"Alright then. You guys can stay here and chat around. Since there's an hour, I'll go and take a stroll." Ye Zifeng told the girls what he was going to do so they won't get worried.

"Big brother rough guy.... Be quick. I plan on introducing you to master right when we go in!"

.....

THe guards saw Ye Zifeng and couldn't help but gossip with each other.

"Who is that guy? How come I've never seen him before?"

"Master Muyun allowed Miss Liu to bring someone over. From what I can see, Miss Liu brought a pretty boy here to help cheer her up. Did you hear what she called him? What kind of relationship do they have?"

"Since it's a pretty boy, then his alchemy skills are probably trash. Miss Liu is probably going to be last place again."

These guards were not that familiar with Liu Bingqian since she's always in Leizhou City so they carelessly gossiped about her. Yang Jing on the other hand.... They don't dare talk bad about her.

Ye Zifeng smiled as he walked around the area around the Muyun Residence. He wasn't the type of person who would spend his time waiting. Time is precious so he might as well look around.

When he saw that there was no one else around him, he closed his eyes. A cold qi condensed in his brain and shot out of his body towards the Profound Sect.

In the Profound Sect, Elder Zhao was eating and having fun with his acquaintances. Suddenly, he felt his soul fluctuate and immediately put down his food.

“Everyone, please continue eating. I’m full. Please excuse me.”

The people he was eating with saw that Elder Zhao had barely touched his food and looked confusingly at each other.

After leaving, Elder Zhao hurriedly found a quiet place and communicated with Ye Zifeng.

“You stinking brat, you woke this old man up last night and now you want to mess with me during my meal time?”

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “No way. I’m just trying to see how you’ve been.”

“Whatever. It seems like I’ve owed you in my past life or something. Tell me straight up, what happened?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Nothing much. I saw that it was pretty late last night so I didn’t want to bother you again. By the way, how much do you know about Wang Rui in your Profound Sect?”

Hearing the words “Wang Rui”, Elder Zhao’s expression changed, “You stinking brat. Tell me the truth. Did you offend him or something?”

Ye Zifeng suspiciously asked, “What? Does he have a lot of influence in your sect?”

“He’s at the Martial Spirit Realm.”

Everything was clear after these few words. A Martial Spirit realm cultivator was much stronger than one at the Martial Practitioner realm.

Ye Zifeng thought that Wang Ruoxing was randomly spitting out names but now it seems like this Wang Rui is real and is part of the Wang clan.

It seems like the reason why the Wang Clan is so daring is because they have a Martial Spirit realm cultivator backing them.

Twenty years ago, Ye Chongtian was able to shake up the entire Leizhou City by himself because he was at the Martial Spirit realm. However, the Wang Clan now have two Martial Spirit Realm cultivators and one of them even has influence in the Profound Sect.

“Don’t worry. I haven’t offended him yet....” Ye Zifeng laughed.

“What are you saying? What do you mean by “yet”?!?” Elder Zhao froze up a bit after hearing this.

“You stinkin brat. This is your first time in Tiandao City right? Let me tell you this. In Tiandao City, there are three people that you cannot offend!”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up and was interested in the topic, “Oh? Which three people? I’d like to hear about it!”

Chapter 87: You can't really judge a book by its covers

Elder Zhao calmed himself down and the continued to talk.

"First is the people of my Profound Sect. Everyone has connections with each other and experts are like clouds in here. If you don't want to die then don't provoke anyone from the sect."

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Continue...."

"The second group is the people from the Spirit Martial School. However this group of people is very mysterious is the school in Tiandao City is only a small branch of the main school. You probably won't run into them so you don't even have to worry about them. Don't think too much about them."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Alright. I'll remember it....."

"You stinkin brat. I'm telling you to not think about them!" Elder Zhao was so mad that he was about to find Ye Zifeng and slap him a few times. This kid is extremely infuriating. This guy was basically sent by Hades to deal with Elder Zhao.

"And the third?"

Elder Zhao gulped, "The third.....is Muyun Old Devil. This person is kinda....."

"Huh? Kinda what?" Ye Zifeng couldn't help but smile

"Kinda...>..."

Right when Elder Zhao was going to speak, Ye Zifeng felt as if he had bumped into something. He immediately broke off the divine sense communication.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brow and opened his eyes to see who he had bumped into.

"Who are you? Why are you walking with your eyes closed? Simple

preposterous!"

Ye Zifeng turned around and saw a young woman wearing a long white robe. Her long sleek black hair went down to her waists. With her big bright eyes and white teeth, she was an absolute beauty.

However!

On her pretty oval face, she had a long beard! From the looks of it, it seems like she had glued it on or something!

Ye Zifeng's jaws dropped. This woman was too shocking. He had never seen something like this even in his past life.

"Your....beard. A beautiful girl like yourself.... Why would you paste a beard on yourself?" Ye Zifeng couldn't help but ask.

The beauty glared at Ye Zifeng and stroke her beard a few times and then fixed it into place again.

"Little brother. Tell me the truth. Is my beard beautiful?"

Ye Zifeng's mouth began to twitch and wanted to say no. However, he saw that her eyes were filled with killing intent and quickly shut his mouth again. Ye Zifeng felt that this beauty was not simple at all. If he said something wrong, then he will definitely be killed.

"Come on. Tell me. Do I look beautiful with this or not?"

Ye Zifeng sighed inwards and said, "This young miss, the beard gives you a special kind of beauty....." He really didn't want to say that it looked beautiful so he took an indirect approach.

Hearing this, the beauty laughed and patted her attendants next to her, "Did you hear that? You guys are always hatin on my beard but this little brother has good taste. He knows how to appreciate real beauty!"

"This... Yes. that's right...." The attendants smiled and couldn't help but sigh.

"Alright. I won't talk with little brother any longer. Both of my disciples have returned today and I should be greeting them soon."

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and felt that something was not right. He turned and looked at the Muyun residence and then back at the beauty in front of him. He put two and two together and his mouth began to twitch.

“Hold on! Your disciples.... Are they called Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing?”

Hearing this, the beauty stopped and stared at Ye Zifeng, “What? Could it be that you know my disciples?”

Ye Zifeng was startled and took a deep breath. Bingqian had told him that her master’s character was a bit weird and even Elder Zhao tried to warn him about it. It seems like it was exactly as they have said.

The character of this beauty in front of him was more than a bit weird. It was a special kind of weird!

“So then... you’re Muyun Old Devil????” Ye Zifeng began to sweat but force these words out anyways.

The attendants besides the beauty all frowned and a cold expression appeared on their face.

“Impudent! What Muyun Old Devil. You should say Senior Muyun!”

Muyun Old Devil waved her hands, telling them to shut up. She then smiled, “It’s alright. Anyone who praises my beard is a good person. This little brother, I allow you to be my friend. I don’t mind at all.”

She smiled and gazed at Ye Zifeng, “Oh yeah. Little brother, It seems like you know me from somewhere. Did we ever meet before?”

Ye Zifeng was so shocked that he couldn’t return to his senses at the moment. In his mind, Murong Old Devil was someone that was respectable and eloquent.

“I.....”

Elder Zhao said that this Muyun Old Devil is someone that he definitely cannot offend. Also, when Ye Zifeng entered the city, the guards were all scared shitless after they saw that the customs document was signed by Muyun Old Devil. It seems like she is someone very amazing.

However, from what Ye Zifeng can see, this beauty looked like she had some problems with her head. She didn't look like someone with any abilities at all.

Ye Zifeng thought about it again. Could this Muyun Old Devil have shown her true strength if he said that he disliked her beard?

Ye Zifeng was able to come to this conclusion but didn't dare to try it. He was not stupid.

At this moment, Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing saw Muyun Old Devil's back and a smile appeared on their faces. They quickly ran over.

"Bingqian, Jing-er. You're here." Muyun Old Devil laughed lightly.

"Master...." The two girls cupped their hands and bowed.

Liu Bingqian giggled and grabbed her master's hand, "Master. I've missed you."

"You brat. If you really miss me then why would I have to send Jing-er to go pick you up every year? Why don't you come by yourself? You should know that the alchemy competition starts tomorrow!"

"Alchemy competition....Ai....." Liu Bingqian's expression darkened. It was very clear what she was thinking about.

"Tomorrow?" Ye Zifeng was surprised. He didn't think that it was be so fast.

"Big brother rough guy, why are you with master? Did she do anything to you?" Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and felt worried. However, she didn't know what she was worried about.

"Peh. Do you think that I would actually do something? This little brother is very kind. He praised my beard and called it beautiful. How can I do anything to him?"

Muyun Old Devil laughed. Her age doesn't resemble her act at all.

Ye Zifeng wasn't surprised at this at all. Afterall, Beauty Retaining Pills can be concocted.

Muyun Old Devil suddenly stopped and reacted to what Bingqian said, “Hold on. Bingqian. What did you call him? It feels so intimate. Who is he to you?”

Earlier, she thought that it was weird that Ye Zifeng knows the name of her disciples. But now it seems like that Ye Zifeng wasn’t outside her residence by coincidence.

“What special person? We don’t have much of a relationship.” An embarrassed expression appeared on Liu Bingqian’s face, “But Master Old Devil, Do you remember that you gave me two invitations to the alchemy competition.”

Muyun Old Devil lightly yelped with a shocked expression in her eyes.

“No way. You gave the other invitation to this guy? I wanted you to give it to someone who’s talented in alchemy, not some pretty boy. That Song Shiyun that you brought last time…. Why didn’t you bring him? Even though he’s kinda ass at alchemy, he can at least help you out and gather ingredients. Do you really want to be last place again?”

When speaking about alchemy, Muyun Old Devil’s expression turned very serious. She didn’t play around anymore.

“Master, don’t mention something like that. Even if I brought Song Shiyun, it won’t change anything.” Liu Bingqian retorted.

Yang Jing stood on the side and suddenly chimed into the conversation, “Master, you don’t know about this but this Young master Ye is much more knowledgeable and skillful in alchemy than that Song Shiyun.

“He…. He knows alchemy? Is he even at the level of a common tier alchemist?” Muyun Old Devil furrowed her brows as she didn’t believe her disciples.

“Little brother. What’s your name? What’s your cultivation level? Can you condense a common tier flame? Let me tell you this, knowing alchemy and praising my beard is two different things. Don’t like to me.”

“Ye Zifeng. Five stage of Qi refining. As for a common tier flame….. I still haven’t condensed it yet.” Ye Zifeng truthfully replied.

Muyun Old Devil glared at Yang Jing, “You brat. What are you saying? This guy didn’t even condense a common tier flame yet. If Bingqian brings him to participate in the competition, then she will lose even more face.”

Liu Bingqian softly laughed, “Master, this time, you’re really underestimating him.”

Muyun Old Devil bitterly laughed and shook her head, “Bingqian, you brat. You’ve been lied to. Can you not make your own judgment. His cultivation is low. Now matter how talented he is, his alchemy skill won’t be that high. Whatever. The competition is tomorrow and you won’t be able to find a replacement anyways. We’ll just have to let him join you....”

Chapter 88: To be in awe.

Due to the fact that Liu Bingqian had been dragging her trip to Tiandao City out, her master had no choice but to send Yang Jing to go pick her up at the last second. This was why they had no time to prepare for the competition.

In reality, the only reason Liu Bingqian came was because she respected her master and not actually for the competition.

This was because the host for the competition this time was the Muyun House itself.

“Bingqian, Bingqian. It’s the alchemy competition today. There’s only an hour left before it starts. Why are you still trying to sleep?” Ye Zifeng had been knocking on Liu Bingqian’s door for a while now, trying to wake her up.

Liu Bingqian was the one who dragged him to the alchemy competition. Now that they’re here, why is she trying to stay in her room and not come out?

After Yang Jing finished washing herself, she saw Ye Zifeng knocking on Bingqian’s door and walked over.

“Young master Ye, you don’t know about this but junior sister has some past traumas with the alchemy competition. If you guys go early, you’ll ridiculed by other people. That’s why she’s pretending that she’s asleep.”

Ye Zifeng sighed, “Then Miss Jing, can you please go in and call her out?”

“That’s simple.” Yang Jing giggled. She walked towards the door and whispered, “Junior sister, I know that you’re up already. Young master Ye has been waiting out here for a while. It looks like he’s getting a little angry!”

“What?”

Hurried footsteps sounded from inside the door. To Ye Zifeng’s surprise, Bingqian rushed over and immediately opened the door. Since she got up

so suddenly, she didn't have time to get ready and looked like a sweet mess.

"Big brother rough guy. Don't be mad. I'm up!"

Liu Bingqian looked a bit anxious but when she saw that Ye Zifeng didn't look mad at all, she turned around and glared at Yang Jing.

"Senior sister. Is it fun to mess with me?"

Yang Jing laughed, "If I don't do this, then you'll be late to the competition like last time. That's not good you know."

Ye Zifeng chuckled. Who would've thought that weak-looking girl have such a side to her. If she was healthy, then she would be a troublesome trouble-maker!

Liu Bingqian smiled embarrassingly and nodded, "Fine. Whatever. This time, i have big brother rough guy helping me anyways. Maybe I won't get last place anymore!"

She looked at Ye Zifeng and felt a bit more confident.

"Let's go." Ye Zifeng opened up his mouth. He wanted to see what kind of alchemists existed in this continent. He was looking forward to the competition.

"Alright!" Liu Bingqian quickly fixed herself up and followed Ye Zifeng and Yang Jing out.

In just one day, the empty Muyun Residence was now bustling with people.

Right when the three of them walked out, they were crowded by the people.

Ye Zifeng couldn't help but raise his brows, "What's going on? Is this an alchemy competition or a food market? Why are there so many people here?"

If one out of ten people can be a cultivator, then it would take one out of a hundred to become an alchemist. Anyone who's attending this competition should be the elite of the elite. From what Ye Zifeng can see,

there shouldn't be that many people here.

Yang Jing smiled, "Young Master Ye, you don't know about this but during the alchemy competition, the pills concocted will be sold to the spectators. The competitors will give a portion of the earnings to the host for supplying the ingredients. These people aren't here to compete but here to buy pills concocted during the competition."

"So that's how it is."

Ye Zifeng smirked. This Muyun Old Devil is pretty shrewd to do something like this.

The crowd noticed Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing and began to giggle and gossip.

"Old Hong, do you see that beautiful girl over there? That's Miss Liu from Leizhou City, the one who always gets last place. Her face is pretty thick huh, to come back every time...."

"Hahahahaha.... Old Feng, from what I can see, that Miss Liu is the most interesting part of the competition. To see her shed silent tears every time from being last.... I won't ever forget that scene."

"But look, this time she brought someone else with her. I wonder if he's strong or not. Maybe Miss Liu won't be last this time because of him!"

"Preposterous. How strong can a hairless brat be? Brother Chu opened up a betting stand. Do you want to go bet? I'm betting that Miss Liu will be last place!"

"Me too! I want to bet that Miss Liu will be last!" Someone else screamed out.

It was getting louder and louder until Bingqian and the others heard what they were talking about.

Liu Bingqian frowned and wanted to refute but didn't know how to. After all, she had lost really badly during the other competitions and was so affected by it that she didn't want to attend another competition. This was why she was hiding in her room before.

Yang Jing sighed and held Bingqian's hands. The looks in her eyes showed that she cared for her junior sister.

Ye Zifeng was silent for a bit and then opened his mouth, "It's not time yet.... I'm going to go look around and then come back. Don't go in without me."

Liu Bingqian gave him a weird look and wanted to ask for the reason but smiled instead, "Alright. Then come back quickly."

She was the one that dragged him here for the competition so she won't restrict his movements at all. She didn't want him to get angry at her either.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He walked into the crowd and disappeared.

A handsome and elegant youth suddenly appeared within the group of people that were slandering Liu Bingqian.

Some of these people immediately recognized him as the person who was with Liu Bingqian and asked, "Kid. What do you want?"

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted, "It's fine if you guys gamble around but this is the Muyun Residence. It is the alchemy competition today. If you guys do something like this....."

The leader of these people's expression changed, "What do you want? We're making some private bets to play around. We're not doing anything wrong."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "What I mean is.....Can I join you guys?"

Everyone present was shocked, "No way. You're a participant. If you enter the bet then....."

"Aren't you guys just playing around private? Why are there so many rules?" Ye Zifeng smiled back.

The leader saw that he wasn't doing anything wrong and sighed, "You can join us if you want.... But we have to see how you bet. If you bet that Liu Bingqian will lose, then I'm afraid that we can't comply with you...."

When he said that, everyone started to laugh.

That's right. Everyone here believes that Liu Bingqian will be last no matter what. If Ye Zifeng wants to bet that he loses, then there's no point.

"Also, do you have money to bet? You're just a kid from Leizhou City, do you even have that much money?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and took out a large bag of gold coins from his robe. From the looks of it, there was at least a thousand gold coins in there. Now they're finally respecting Ye Zifeng.

"Money? I have that. There's 1200 gold coins here. Not one less."

These gold coins came from Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing. It also included some money that he got from Ye Chongtian.

The leader's eyes lit up and looked at Ye Zifeng again.

"I'm Liang Nine. You can call me Brother Nine. Tell me. How do you want to bet? Let's see if we can agree." He wanted to do some small scale betting but who would've thought that it would become so big. He made Ye Zifeng state the rules so it was easier for him to follow up.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Let me ask this first. How many people are there participating in the competition?"

When the group heard this, they all bursted out in laughter. They were laughing so hard that they had to hold onto each other. They all looked at Ye Zifeng with a look of disdain.

"Little brother. You dare enter the competition without knowing this? It seems like Miss Liu really will be last again!"

"Yeah. The competition is for the five smaller cities that surround Tiandao City so there are only 5 groups participating. Did Liu Bingqian not tell you this?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Five groups huh? We'll probably at least be in the top 3. How about this? We'll make a blood contract. If my group can't get in the top 3, then you can have the 1200 gold coins!"

Liang Nine was so shocked that he stood there like a rock. Even with the

vast amount of experience he had accumulated over the years, he was still shocked by this guy. This was definitely the first time that he's been here.... How can he be so confident? However, the 1200 gold coins was very appealing. It was a large amount for anyone other than large families/sects.

Liang Nine gulped, and nervously asked, "Then..... What happens if you get within the first three places?"

Chapter 89: Alchemy Competition

Ye Zifeng grinned, “It’s simple. If I get placed in the top three, then you guys will have to make the highest bid and buy my pill!”

Liang Nine and the others stared at Ye Zifeng and then laughed.

“Little brother, I like your thinking. But do you know where we are? We’re not in a city that’s lacking alchemists and pills like your Leizhou City. The prices for pills here are at least three times cheaper!”

“Hehe..... Just leave it Brother Nine. Don’t talk to him anymore. He’s talking like he’s actually going to enter the top three. The alchemists from the other cities aren’t as weak as the people from his Leizhou City!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “So how about it? Are you guys willing to bet?”

“Bet! Of course we’re willing! Even if you can somehow get into the top 3, your pill probably won’t be worth much either. Why wouldn’t we take the chance?”

Liang Nine roared out in laughter. He was the boss of these people. How could he not have the courage to bet with this kid?

“Alright then. Let’s make a blood contract right now!”

“Let’s go. Who’s scared of who! Little brother, let me tell you this first. Don’t say that big brother is bullying you after you lose. This is what you asked for.”

“Of course.” Ye Zifeng revealed a sly smile.

.....

Under the guidance of the guards, Ye Zifeng finally found Bingqian and Yang Jing. They had been waiting in the large hall for a while now.

“I’m not late right?” Ye Zifeng smiled and looked around. It was still very noisy so he concluded that there was still some time before the competition starts.

Yang Jing sighed, “Even though it hasn’t started yet, you can still hear how these people are making fun of junior sister. I can’t comfort her

anymore. Why don't young master Ye try?"

Ye Zifeng revealed an awkward smile. He really doesn't know how to comfort women. In his past life, all his relations with women were filled with pretense. He didn't have many private relationships at all.

"Miss Jing. If you comfort her and if I comfort her.....wouldn't it yield the same results?"

Yang Jing looked deeply at him and helplessly smiled.

"That.... Of course it's different. Go comfort her. I'm afraid this will affect her concocting abilities."

"But..... Fine."

There were two people representing each city. If there was something wrong with his partner then it will affect the result of the pill. If they failed, then Ye Zifeng can only blame himself.

Thinking about this, Ye Zifeng walked over to Liu Bingqian and smiled, "Bingqian, are you scared that you'll get last place again later?"

Seeing that Ye Zifeng had come, Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up and returned to her senses.

"Big brother rough guy.... Truth to be told, the past few times that I've attended the competition, I've only gotten last place. Everyone is treating me as a joke. I overheard someone talking with my master before saying that if I got last place again, then Leizhou City's qualifications to enter the competition will be revoked in the future.... I don't think I can assume such a big responsibility."

Ye Zifeng smiled and tried to comfort her, "It's only a suggestion by that person. No one agreed to it yet. Also, have some faith. With me here, you won't get last place anymore. This is the promise that I made to you."

Liu Bingqian was startled and looked at Ye Zifeng.

"But... If it's like this.... Then wouldn't there be a lot of pressure on you?

"Pressure?" A big smile appeared on Ye Zifeng's face. He was one of the greatest alchemist in the world. There were times where his life was on

the line when he concocted pills. Compared to that kind of pressure, this was nothing at all.

"Don't worry about it. This won't affect me at all."

Liu Bingqian giggled, "I was a bit too unreasonable before... Don't worry about me. I'm fine." To have Ye Zifeng personally counsel her, she was feeling a lot better already. She even forgot about the consequences of her getting last place already.

Ye Zifeng's expression suddenly turned cold, "Anyways.... Who was the one who suggested to revoke Leizhou City's qualification?"

Liu Bingqian hesitated and then pointed at young man. The young man was dressed in all white with a light green belt on his waist. With a single glance, one can tell that he was from a very influential family.

"The one that suggested it is that guy. He's the son of the city lord of Tonghuo City. He has a lot of influence around here and was 2nd place in last year's competition. His flame is at the peak of common tier already."

Ye Zifeng coldly snorted, "No matter how strong it is, it is still a common tier flame. Bingqian, tell me about the other competitors. It'll be easier if I know what they're capable of.

Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and thought, 'Bro... You didn't even condense your common tier flame yet....' However, she understands that even without a common tier flame, Ye Zifeng is still able to overpower normal alchemists like Song Shiyun.

"Alright. Let me start from the beginning. Other than our Leizhou City, there are four other cities around Tiandao City.

Ye Zifeng replied, "Linfeng City, Tonghuo City, Qushui City and Huangtu City." Each city was named after an element so remembering them wasn't a hard thing to do.

(Leizhou City = Thunder, Linfeng City = Wind, Tonghuo City = Fire, Qushui City = Water, Huangtu City = Earth)

Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng with a surprised look, "That's right.

From each city, Master Muyun picked out the best alchemists from the younger generation to participate in the alchemy competition."

Ye Zifeng listen carefully and noted the keywords, "So everyone who's competing is a junior?"

Before he came here, Ye Zifeng had no knowledge of the competition at all. Now, he basically knew all the basic rules and stuff.

"That's right. The senior alchemists will all be judging the competition. It's usually like this..."

"Usually like this?" Ye Zifeng raised an eyebrow.

"Well.... The competition is different every time so even I don't know what's going on this time. My master wants to be impartial so she didn't tell me anything either. She clearly wants me to be a fool out there."

Liu Bingqian pouted and had an unhappy expression on her face. She was disappointed that she didn't get any special treatment as her master's disciple.

At this time, a loud, clear, voice sounded throughout the hall.

"Everyone. Please settle down."

Hearing this voice, everyone immediately stopped talking. They all know that this was the voice of Muyun Old Devil. Even if they have a high position in the city, they all shut their mouths to give her face.

She was wearing a long white robe today with her a jade hair piece stuck in her tied up hair. As for her chin..... The long beard was still glued on. This made some people laugh lightly.

Muyun Old Devil didn't pay attention to everyone's gazes and smiled, "Everyone, this competition is a very important competition in our Tiandao City. This year, my Muyun House is responsible for hosting this. I, Old Devil, am very honored. Now let me explain the rules for this year's competition."

When the rules were mentioned, all of the representatives from each city all listened up.

Ye Zifeng pretended to listen. Instead of listening, he looked around at the competitors and noted their movements.

On the other side Muyun Old Devil was explaining the rules, “There will be two parts to the competition. For the first part, I will give everyone a topic to concoct. The time limit will be one hour. Those who go over the time limit or make slag with be immediately disqualified. If a pill is concocted then it will be graded. The top three will enter the second round.”

After pausing for a bit, she smiled, “As for the rules pertaining to the second round, I will explain it when we get there..... Are there any questions?”

“No questions. Let’s begin!”

“That’s right. We can’t wait to advance to the second round. Allow me to awe everyone with my Tonghuo City’s superior alchemy techniques.” The young master from Tonghuo City laughed.

On the outside, he looked scholarly and elegant but on the inside, he was brainless arrogant bastard.

This time, many high ranking people from Tiandao City was in attendance. The young master from Tiandao City wanted to get them to notice him and have them take him in so he can forever cultivate in Tiandao City.

Muyun Old Devil nodded and smiled, “If there aren’t any questions..... Then the alchemy competition will officially.....!”

“Hold on.... Senior Old Devil. I have a question.” Ye Zifeng voice sounded all the way from the back. At the same time, his hand was raised up high.

Chapter 90: The last place will be eliminated

Liu Bingqian and Yang Jing both stared at Ye Zifeng, thinking if he had hit his head or something.

The only reason why they were standing near the back is because they didn't want any attention to themselves. After the competition is over, they can leave quickly and not be criticized.

Also, Muyun Old Devil is being polite by asking everyone if they had any questions. For Ye Zifeng to cut her off like this..... This was not good.

Muyun Old Devil furrowed her brows, "Little brother. What do you want to ask? Let's not waste everyone's time and make it quick."

She was giving her disciples face and restrained herself. If it was anyone else, she might have started to yell.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I want to ask that if there's someone who always get last place during the alchemist competition, then is there even a point in allowing them to attend the alchemist competition anymore?"

After he said this, the entire audience was shocked.

Young master Hua from Tonghuo City began to laugh, "Did everyone hear that? Even the people from Leizhou City feel that they don't have the qualifications to enter the competition. How about we just leave them out next time? Watching them get last every time pains me as well.

Many different thoughts were going through Liu Bingqian's mind as she shockingly looked at Ye Zifeng, "Big brother rough guy... What are you doing? Do you want me to lose face in front of all these people?"

Other than her relatives, the person that Liu Bingqian trusts the most is Ye Zifeng. She trusts him even more than Yang Jing! However, now he was standing there, slowly pouring salt onto her wounds.

Muyun Old Devil's face turned dark as she glared at Ye Zifeng. On the outside, it didn't look like she was was helping Liu Bingqian but she had

been doing things behind the scene. She was her disciple so of course she would help her out.

However, right now, Ye Zifeng was undoing all of her hard work.

Since one of the representatives from Leizhou City had opened their mouth about the matter, there wasn't anything she could do about it anymore.

"That's right. Lord Old Devil, I agree with this little brother. The last place of this competition should lose their qualifications. How about we start an elimination system right now?"

"I agree. By having the last place eliminated, it would make the others work harder on their alchemy skills. It will be useful for everyone!"

Everyone believed that Liu Bingqian would be last so it doesn't really matter. They can say whatever they want.

After hearing all this, Muyun Old Devil's face turned very ugly.

"Ye Zifeng. What do you mean by this? Say it clearly!"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I mean exactly what everyone is saying. However, I want to take it to an even higher level. From now on, if you cannot enter the top 3, you will be eliminated and won't be able to attend the next competition.

"What?"

After Ye Zifeng said this, the people from Qushui City and Huangtu were shaken. Their abilities were not the best and would always take 3rd and 4th place. That means that one of them would be eliminated as well.

"You brat from Leizhou City. What are you saying? Are you trying to drag someone else down with you?"

The representative from Huangtu City, Xu Zhen, heard Ye Zifeng's suggestion and became angry.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "So what you're saying is that you won't be able to get into the top 3? Are you admitting that you're weak?"

“You!” Xu Zhen didn’t know how to refute.

Ye Zifeng respectfully cupped his hands towards Muyun old Devil, “I hope Lord Muyun can meet everyone’s expectations and allow this.”

“This.....” Muyun Old Devil muttered to herself.

If Ye Zifeng wants to eliminate one group, then Muyun Old Devil would not agree to it. However, if it was two groups, then it would look better for Bingqian.

Thus, Muyun Old Devil started to think that Ye Zifeng suggested this idea because he didn’t want to watch Liu Bingqian suffer anymore in the future. He chose the quickest way to end her suffering. While thinking like this, her expression became better.

Asides from Muyun Old Devil, it seems like Liu Bingqian understands his action as well and began to smile.

“Fine. I’ll agree and change the rules this time! Whichever group’s not in the top three, then they will not be able to attend the next competition.

Silence.... The place was absolutely silent.

Everyone was shocked at the rule change/

Of course, the competition will also have five groups. It’s just that there will be other people.

In a bit, everyone started to talk about it.

“No way. Is this really happening? Muyun Old Devil is really bold!”

“Rubbish. Who do you think Muyun Old Devil is? Even the experts in the Profound Sect have to be polite with her. Who dares to not listen to her words?”

Muyun Old Devils words were like the laws during this competition. Eliminating the last place was suppose to be something not so tensed and yet it escalated to this level.

“Alright everyone. Are there any more questions?”

Muyun Old Devil looked over at Ye Zifeng, wanting to see if Ye Zifeng

had any other tricks that he wants to pull. However, all Ye Zifeng did was shake his head and smiled.

With this, Muyun Old Devil stroke her beard and became serious, “Since no one has anymore questions then I, Muyun Old Devil, will hereby announce the start of the competition.

After this, everyone became serious.

“Bring out the ingredients!”

Several of the guards in the Muyun Residence appeared and placed five cauldrons onto the stage.

Along with that, a massive amount of ingredients were brought out as well. Every batch had the same amount to ensure fairness.

“We’ll line up according to the results from last year’s competition. Lingfeng City will be first, Tonghuo City will be second, then Qushui City, Huangtu City and finally Leizhou City.

The five groups of twos all went towards their respective areas and stood in front of the cauldron.

Before the start of the competition, people started to gossip for a bit.

“I don’t know about the others but Qi Zimo from Lingfeng City will definitely be first and Liu Bingqian from Leizhou City will definitely be last.....”

“Maybe. Young master Hua from Tonghuo City has improved quite a bit from last year. Maybe he can beat Qi Zimo this time.

“Ah... After the rule change, we still can’t be sure about who’s going to be fourth place. Will it be Qushui City’s Yi Hao or Huangtu City’s Xu ZHen...”

Liu Bingqian stood in front of the cauldron with an awkward expression. She looked at the ingredients and then looked at Ye Zifeng.

“Big brother rough guy. Do you know what kind of pills these ingredients make?”

Ye Zifeng's expression changed and looked at her, "No way Bingqian. You don't know?!"

Actually, Ye Zifeng felt that something was wrong since a while ago. As the number one huang tier alchemist in Leizhou City, it's fine if she doesn't know the ingredient for a Spirit Binding Pill since it's a bit rare, but how could she not know the ingredients used to concoct a Thunder Spirit pill? That was a bit weird.

Liu Bingqian pouted and hung her head down in embarrassment, "Ever since I was young, only when master gives me a list of ingredients would I go and try to concoct the pills. I have never seen all these weird ingredients in my life so how would I know how to use them...."

"This...." Ye Zifeng was shocked. Now he finally understand where the problem lies. It's not that her alchemy skills were bad, but it's the basics that she has problems with. Knowing the ingredient is the most basic step to becoming a great alchemist.

Since her foundation was weak, her advancement in the way of alchemy was weak too. If she doesn't know how to recognize and measure the ingredients herself, then she will never advance to the next level. Ye Zifeng had finally found Liu Bingqian's flaw!

Muyun Old Devil looked at the competitors and reminded them, "The time limit is one hour. The pill that everyone needs to concoct is the Yuan Increasing Pill. Other than that, I won't give anymore hints. Also, anyone who cheats will have their qualifications revoked for the next competition. If everyone understands then begin! I hope that everyone does their best.

A Yuan Increasing Pill can not only increase the quantity of one's spiritual qi, but also the quality of their qi. People at all levels of cultivation can use this. Muyun Old Devil used this pill for the competition because it will be easier to sell when they finish concocting it.

All of the competitors began to move after Muyun Old Devil told them to begin. Even the playful young master Hua from Tonghuo City became serious.

Common tier flames lit up everywhere. They were all different colors,

showing that they all had different attributes and strength.

Normally, the main alchemist will concoct the pill while the help will help with the fire. This was the reason why two people were needed for the competition.

Compared to the other competitors, Liu Bingqian's positioning was slightly worse than theirs since she was used to concocting by the books.

Next to her, Ye Zifeng looked like he was doing even worse. Since the start of the competition, he didn't even move a single muscle. He was looking at the other competitors, especially at that young master from Tonghuo City who suggested that Leizhou City's qualifications should be revoked....

Chapter 91: Ancient Concocting Technique

The spectators were all standing behind a red line, keeping a distance away from the competitors while watching them.

“Are you guys seeing this? I told you that Leizhou City’s Liu Bingqian will be last place. Everyone else have already started to prepare their ingredients while these two aren’t even doing anything. From what I can see, she probably doesn’t know what ingredients she should use!”

Liang Nine revealed a smile, “This little brother……And here I was worrying about what sort of tactics you have to dare bet with us. It seems like you were too overconfident.”

“Hehe. Brother Nine, our group has 10 people. How are we going to use the 1200 gold coins?”

Liang Nine laughed, “That’s easy. Everyone will get 100 and we will use the remaining two hundred to have a good meal at the Classic Moon Restaurant.” The Classic Moon Restaurant is the best restaurant in Tiandao City. Their spirit wines are of the top quality.

“Great! Brother Nine is sure straightforward!”

Seeing how the Leizhou City group haven’t moved, they’ve already established them as the last place already. They all started to talk about who the fourth place was going to be.

The top 3 was able to enter the 2nd round but this time, the top 3 will be able to keep their spots in the competition next year while the other two will have their qualifications revoked.

Ye Zifeng was finally done scouting his opponents. In just a few glances, he was able to estimate his opponent’s abilities. He turned around and looked at Bingqian. He noticed that Bingqian was having some trouble with the ingredients and revealed a kind smile.

“Bingqian, just follow what I say and gather the ingredients.”

Liu Bingqian was shocked after hearing this, “No way. This Yuan Increasing Pill isn’t a qi refining realm pill. You really know how to gather and prepare the ingredients?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “This isn’t the first time I’ve concocted in front of you. Do you still not believe me?” In front of normal people, he would hide 90% of his abilities, but in front of Liu Bingqian, he would only hide 50%. This 50% was probably enough for her to believe him.

Liu Bingqian laughed, “I don’t really know how much ingredients to gather and how to prepare them. I really need some advice from you. Come on big brother rough guy. I’ll do as you say.”

Normally, when she concoct pills, she would have a book with her and follow the book step by step. However, they were at a competition right now. Where is she going to pull her book from? This was one of the reasons why Bingqian could not unleash her full potential in the way of alchemy. Now that she has Ye Zifeng by her side, she has nothing to worry about.

“That’s better.” Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “Listen up. Three Fire Wind Fruits, two strands of Golden Wood Grass, Two Spirit Converging Ginseng, Three Fire Dream Leaves followed by ten drops of Dragon Swallow Dew. Put them in the cauldron first.”

“Alright!” Liu Bingqian nodded and became serious. She quickly gathered the ingredients and put them onto a plate. Now that she has someone guiding her, her movements became way faster than before.

Muyun Old Devil’s gaze swept across all the competitors and stopped when she looked at Liu Bingqian.

“Huh? When did this girl’s ingredient allocation ability get so high? I don’t think I taught her anything about that recently. Could it be that she’s been studying and preparing for the competition?”

Muyun Old Devil also noticed that Ye Zifeng was saying something but she thought that he was just chatting with her and didn’t take any note of it.

With this, Yi Hao and Xu Shen from Qushui City and Huangtu City both became very anxious. The reason why they were able to beat Liu Bingqian was because she didn't know how much ingredient she needed to concoct the pill. When the pill formed, it would be much weaker due to the imbalance between the ingredients. However, it seems like Bingqian had learned to gather ingredients.

Without moving Ye Zifeng continued to talk, "The Profound Tier Cauldron has 32 star positions. A common tier cauldron is separated into North, West, South, and East, the four cardinal positions. Bingqian, if you want to concoct a Yuan Increasing Pill that everyone can use, you must put different ingredients into different cardinal positions.

Liu Bingqian was shocked and confused, "Big brother rough guy, then how should I position the ingredients?" If she didn't hear Ye Zifeng, then she would have randomly put the ingredients into the cauldron without caring about the "rules".

"Fire Wind Fruit goes to the north side. The Golden Wood Grass goes to the south side. Spirit Converging Ginseng to the west side and the Fire Dream Leaves on the east side. Also put two drops of the Dragon Swallow Dew on each side and the last two drops in the middle."

Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up. While doing what she was told, she asked Ye Zifeng,

"Big brother rough guy. How come you're so familiar with the Yuan Increasing Pill? Could you have concocted it before?"

The amount of pills that Ye Zifeng had concocted had already exceeded Liu Bingqian's knowledge already. This mere Yuan Increasing Pill was easily something that he had concocted before. Right now, he didn't want to fully answer her.

"Don't worry about it and concentrate. If you put the ingredients in the wrong place, then it will affect the concoction process.

"Hmph. You never tell me anything." Liu Bingqian pouted. She then nodded and finished up putting the ingredients into the cauldron. At that time, Ye Zifeng had started to light up the firewood under the cauldron.

All of the competitors were all minding their own business and didn't care about anything else.

What they didn't know was that everyone was chatting in the audience.

"This..... This is!" A few senior alchemists that Muyun Old Devil invited stared at Liu Bingqian and their faces turned white and then red.

Some of them who are here for the first time were shocked, "No way. She's so young. How does she know the ancient concocting method? How does she know how to put the ingredients in each cardinal position? Didn't you guys say that she's always been last place?"

"Last place.... This...." The other judges felt their head go numb.

If someone can use the ancient concoction method and still get last place, then the level of the alchemy competition must be extremely high. However, this was not the case.

Even some outsiders can tell that something wasn't right.

Some people returned to their senses and nudged Liang Nine, "Brother Nine, could it be that Liu Bingqian had been practicing all year for this? How come it seems like she's a completely different person. Say.... Are we going to....."

Liang Nine furrowed his brows, "Shut up you jinx! I'll admit that this Liu Bingqian had grown a bit but look at her helper. He hasn't even condense his common tier flame yet and is still using firewoods. I'd like to see how long they can last."

"Hold on. Brother Nine. look. That guy looks like he wants to condense his flame right now!"

"What?!" Liang Nine rubbed his eyes and looked towards Ye Zifeng.

They saw that Ye Zifeng was guarding his dantian with one hand while he was trying to condense a common tier flame with his other hand.

Everyone had been watching him and was holding their breath. When they saw that Ye Zifeng had condense the flame on his fingers, they all gasped. Now that he has condensed the flame, it would make Liu

Bingqian's life easier.

In the next moment, Ye Zifeng sat down and inserted the flame qi into the cauldron while adding firewoods.

Yang Jing was standing on the side watching Ye Zifeng. It reminded her of how he concocted the Pure Yang Dan. His movements were elegant and perfect.

"Brother Zhen.... Look at that guy. What... What is he doing?"

Xu Zhen's assistant couldn't help but ask.

Xu Zhen revealed a cold smile, "Don't worry about it. From what I can see, his flame isn't enough to boil the ingredients so he's using the firewoods to supplement it. However, even though it is smart idea, it is very hard to control your flame to match the intensity of the firewood. From what I can see, the fire will go out of control soon and they will make a pile of slag. They're basically looking to die!"

He looked at his helped and said, "Remember this. Don't worry about what Leizhou City does. Yi Hao from Qushui City is our true opponent. If you're so free, go look at what they're doing."

From what Xu Zhen can see, even if Liu Bingqian's abilities went up by a bit, it won't be that much. It'll still be easy to beat her.

"Bingqian, when I'm controlling the fire. Don't let any of the ingredients fall. Add some of your own qi into the cauldron.

"Alright!" Liu Bingqian was in her follower mode and would do whatever Ye Zifeng tells her. She had been following his every step and can hear the praises from the audience.

Ye Zifeng saw that it preparation was almost done and after he inserted the last firewood, he looked up.

"Bingqian, you've already secured the ingredients in place and the flames are strong enough already. From now on, I'll only be guiding you with my words and won't help out anymore."

Liu Bingqian's expression changed, "No way. No way. If you don't do

anything, how can I beat them? What are you thinking?"

Ye Zifeng revealed a smile, "Don't you think that it'll be better to let them show off first and then beat them down in front of everyone? It'll feel much better this way!"

Chapter 92: Battle of Dignity

Ye Zifeng had absolute confidence in her and had already completed the most crucial step already. If she can concoct the pill herself, it will help her get rid of her own inner demons.

To get past the elimination round.... Ye Zifeng feels like he doesn't have to do anything yet.

"Bingqian, if you don't use your own abilities to beat them, you will never get rid of your inner demons. It will affect your future potential. So, be more confident. Your only flaw is that you don't know how to allocate and distribute the ingredients. When it comes to concocting the pill, they're definitely not your opponents!"

After receiving praise from Ye Zifeng, a surge of confidence appeared in Liu Bingqian. Ye Zifeng was right. If she doesn't clear away the humiliation that she received during this competition, animosity will appear in her heart and will create bottlenecks when she wants to advance to the next level.

Thus, this competition was also Bingqian's battle for her dignity. It was a battle for her to make a name for herself!

"Alright. You don't have to help me but I need you guiding me."

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at her eyes, "Don't worry. I know what to do. Since I'm kinda free now, I'm going to look at the other competitors.

Liu Bingqian's expression became much more serious than before and her common tier flame appeared in her palms, continuing what Ye Zifeng was doing before.....

When other people saw this, they were all shocked at this unbelievable sight.

"Oh my god. What is that helper from Leizhou City doing? Why did he suddenly stop? Unless.... Did he think that he was going to lose so there was no point in continuing?"

"They should've admitted defeat immediately. Look. That Bingqian is

taking over right now. It seems like she's concocting the pill by herself!"

"She's someone who alway gets last anyways. There's nothing fun to watch anymore. They should've just forfeited!"

In a two people group, the main alchemist controls the first while the helper helps control the qi. However, Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian was doing something completely different. Liu Bingqian was the one doing everything.

Muyun Old Devil couldn't sit there anymore and stroked her beard in anger.

"Preposterous. Jing-er. Look at the guy that Bingqian bought. He's basically causing trouble. Look at that attitude. If he isn't just a pretty boy, then what is he?"

Yang Jing looked at Ye Zifeng for a bit and felt that this wasn't that simple.

"Master, just watch for some more. I feel like Ye Zifeng isn't what he appears to be. Maybe there's some deep meaning in doing this...."

"Really?"

Muyun Old Devil was unfamiliar with Ye Zifeng so it was normal for her to feel this way. After Yang Jing's reminder, she feels like that there is something deep behind his actions as well.

In such a short amount of time, she can't really say what this deep meaning is.

"Alright. I'll just keep watching. If I find out that he's really negative and gave up, then I will punish him even if he praises my beard!"

.....

"Bingqian, listen up. First immerse the Fire Dream Leaves on the east side with your qi. When you feel that it is filled with your qi then immediately move over the Fire Wind Fruit on the north side."

Ye Zifeng stood behind Liu Bingqian with a calm look on his face. He was guiding her step by step as if he was teaching her how to concoct

pills.

Liu Bingqian was shocked. It seems like Ye Zifeng's knowledge towards alchemy is on the same level as her own master or maybe even higher.

"Bingqian, concentrate. Don't think about anything else. Your flames are pretty steady. That's good. Now you can warm up the Golden Wood Grass on the south...."

Ye Zifeng didn't use his qi to check what was happening in the cauldron. All he did was look at the color changes and the reactions when Bingqian inserts her qi. By doing so, he was able to tell how the concoction process was going.

If he wasn't such an experienced alchemist, how would he be able to give such a detailed explanation and guidance.

When Liu Bingqian inserted her qi into the cauldron, the senior alchemists all couldn't help but stand up.

"Holy shit. Am I seeing this correctly? It really is the ancient concoction method. Using the four cardinal directions to permeate the different types of ingredients. Incredible! This little girl from Leizhou City is not simple at all!"

Even the senior who questioned Liu Bingqian couldn't help but praise her.

"It seems like after losing all these years, not only did she study the allocation of ingredients, she also learned the ancient concoction method. Knowing how to grow and never giving up after being shame. She is worthy of being respected!"

"Ancient concoction method.....The pill created by this method will definitely be a big commodity." A middle aged man wearing a purple robe calmly said.

"What? Even the esteemed elder of the Profound Sect is looking forward to the completion of the pill?" One of the judges glared over at the middle aged man.

“Who doesn’t want a good pill?” The middle aged man replied, “ If that miss doesn’t make any errors towards the end, then I will definitely buy the pill, no matter at what price. However..... Will she really succeed?”

.....

With his free time, Ye Zifeng looked at everyone’s expression and listened to them. He found that everyone was praising Liu Bingqian while loathing himself as if he was really just a pretty boy here to mess things up.

However, he didn’t care about it. At least it was better than when the people of Leizhou City called him trash.

He looked around at the other competitors. That Young master Hua can really back up his words. His alchemy skills are probably better than most people in his age group.

However, this wasn’t enough for Ye Zifeng to keep an eye on him.

The one that Ye Zifeng had his eyes on is Qi Zimo from Lingfeng City, the winner of the last competition.

“This Qi Zimo actually has a few moves huh. It seems like before I can condense my common tier flame, it’ll be pretty hard for me to beat him.”

Ye Zifeng was muttering to himself and at the same time, Qi Zimo felt Ye Zifeng’s glare and looked over.

What kind of expression ins that? His expression looks so empty. Only someone who’s heart is completely in tune with alchemy can have that kind of expression. Even Ye Zifeng was startled by this.

“Master. What’s going on? Is there something wrong?”

Qi Zimo’s servant felt that it was weird. His master had never lost concentration while concocting a pill.

Qi Zimo looked back down, “Nothing. Let’s continue.”

“Yes.....”

.....

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked back at Bingqian. He then began to instruct her again.

“Bingqian, now concentrate all of your qi onto the Qi Condensing Ginseng on the west side!”

Bingqian was startled and revealed a shocked expression, “All of my qi?” To put everything she had onto this was very daring. She was a bit worried.

“That’s right. The other three cardinal directions are full. Now you should put the rest of the qi into the west! This is the single most important step. All of the other steps before were done to prepare for this one step. Don’t make any mistakes!”

“But.... I’m afraid.....”

Hearing that this was the most important step, Bingqian’s expression changed. Her hands started to shake. She had always been last place during the competitions but now, with Ye Zifeng’s help, she can finally escape her fate of being last.

Of course, when it came to the real deal, she was still very nervous.

Ye Zifeng know how she’s feeling and smiled.

“Bingqian, if you want other people to respect your abilities, you have to respect your own abilities first. Don’t worry. With your skills, as long as you use all your strength, this won’t be hard for you.”

“Alright!” After receiving some words of encouragement from Ye Zifeng, Liu Bingqian gritted her teeth and forced a smile.

Next, she closed her eyes and inserted all of her qi into the cauldron, towards the Qi Condensing Ginseng!

She put everything she had in this one move. As long as Ye Zifeng asked for it, Liu Bingqian will comply.

In a split second, right after Liu Bingqian inserted her qi, a purple light exploded from the cauldron and pierced the heavens. The light surrounded the entire area.

“This.... The appearance of the purple light. Did she really complete the pill?”

The seniors that Muyun Old Devil invited here were all here just to comment and look around. None of them would have thought that Liu Bingqian would be able to use an ancient concoction method. They were all surprised.

Right now, Bingqian had reached the stage where purple qi was appearing from the cauldron. All of the seniors couldn’t help but stand and look towards Liu Bingqian

Even that esteemed elder from the Profound Sect had his eyes lit up.

.....

On the other side, the guy from Huangtu City didn’t see Liu Bingqian’s concoction method and only saw the purple light appearing from her cauldron.

Xu Zhen coldly snorted, “Hmph, who cares if she’s a bit faster. What’s there to be surprised about? Those seniors really do get surprised so easily over something so small. Well of course, since Liu Bingqian’s master is the host, they’re probably trying to be polite. I, for one, do not believe that she can make anything good.”

“Brother Zhen. What are we going to do now? That Liu Bingqian.....”

“Quiet. That Liu Bingqian will never escape her fate of being last.” Xu Zhen looked over at Yi Hao. After looking at Yi Hao, his expression darkened, “Shit. It seems like that Yi Hao is going to finish too. We need to hurry up too and not fall behind!”

Chapter 93: Two pills at once?!

After the other groups saw that Liu Bingqian had already condensed purple qi in her cauldron, they all started to speed up.

This was because none of them want to be slower than the one who was going to get last place. It would be too embarrassing.

One stick of incense burned up.... Two sticks of incense burned up....

Under Ye Zifeng's careful guidance, Liu Bingqian slowed down and focused on improving the pill's quality.

"Big brother rough guy. You're incredible! I can already feel that this is the best pill that I will ever concoct in my entire life!"

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "Don't say that. I can guarantee that this won't be the best one you'll concoct in your life. There will be more to come...."

"Alright!!" Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up and became very excited.

In her heart, she understood that without Ye Zifeng, she would never have been able to concoct a pill like this.

In the four other groups, the first one to complete their pill was not the first and second place winners from last year. It was Qushui City's Yi Hao!

Right when he succeeded in concocting his pill, he started to laugh wildly as if he had been holding it in for quite a while. He then turned around and smirked at Xu Zhen.

"Brother Xu, our abilities are almost on par. The pills that we concoct are about the same as well. When the judges give their judgment, they will definitely factor concoction speed into the evaluation. It seems like I won't be seeing brother Xu in the next competition..... Actually, I feel kind of sad not being able to see you...."

While saying that, his expression showed that he was rejoicing in Xu Zhen's failure.

Xu Zhen let out a cold snort. After being provoked by Yi Hao's words, he began to work even faster. A golden light appeared from the cauldron

causing Yi Hao to stare in shock.

“Completed!”

Xu Zhen laughed loudly and opened up his cauldron. He slowly and carefully retrieved the pill from the cauldron and placed it onto a cloth.

The pill was sparkling and translucent. A hint of black was infused into the dark green color creating a shiny luster coating. Compared to Yi Hao’s pill, anyone can tell that it was at least one grade higher!

“You.... You!” Yi Hao gasped, his eyes filled with shock.

“I’m sorry brother Yi. I know that I won’t be as fast as you so I used all my strength to refine an even better pill. Look at my pill, it’s at least an entire grade higher than yours. I believe that the judges already have their decisions!”

While saying that, Xu Zhen smiled as he turned around to look at the judges.

Very quickly, his expression turned into one as if someone had stepped on his face.

This was because none of the judges were paying attention to him or Yi Hao at all. They were all looking towards Liu Bingqian.

Xu Zhen and Yi Hao both looked at each other. They can see the shock in each other’s eyes.

“What’s there to see from a mere last place? What’s so good about her? Could it be that condensing the purple qi early is some sort of phenomenon?” Xu Zhen didn’t understand why these elders were watching Liu Bingqian.

At this time, the first place Qi Zimo also completed his pill. However his expression was very calm as if he had finished some common chore that he was suppose to do.

“It seems like Zimo’s skills is still so exquisite. I, Young master Hua, am impressed. I’m not ashamed to be inferior to you!”

Tonghuo City’s young master Hua had been chasing Qi Zimo in these

past few years. However, no matter how hard he tried, his talents can't match up to Qi Zimo's at all. He had been behind Qi Zimo his entire life.

However, he had lost to Qi Zimo so much already that he didn't feel ashamed in losing anymore.

Qi Zimo looked at young master Hua expressionlessly, "Three things. We're not close so don't call me Zimo. Second, I don't have a good opinion of people who call themselves young master. Third, let me give you tips. Don't think about anything else while you're in the process of concoction, or else you'll never be able to become a first rate alchemist.

When Qi Zimo said these words, he wasn't giving young master Hua any face at all.

Young master Hua would have never thought that he would receive such a reply and was infuriated.

"Qi Zimo. Don't think that you're all that just because you can win the alchemy competition all the time. What else can you do besides concocting pills? Are you going to stay in your little Lingfeng City and concoct pills your whole life?"

Qi Zimo looked at him with a cold expression and didn't want to talk trash with him anymore. He went towards his cauldron and took the pill out. He looked at the pill and inserted his qi to clean out the last impurities.

His actions didn't do much to the pill but to someone who seeks perfection like Qi Zimo, it was a necessary action.

When the judges saw what he was doing, they all praised him in their hearts.

After a while, four teams had completed their concoction. The only group left was Ye Zifeng's group. Naturally, everyone had their eyes on the two of them.

"Miss Liu looks like she's improved quite a bit. It's just that she's a bit slower. It seems like she won't be able to escape her fate of being last."

“From what I can see, if Liu Bingqian loses, all the blame will be on her helper. Other than helping out with the fire, it seems like he didn’t do anything at all. He pushed all the work towards Liu Bingqian. If they win, I will kill myself!”

“When I saw that they had condensed the purple qi first, I thought they had a chance. However, it seems like I was thinking too much.”

Everyone started to talk about Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng. Liu Bingqian heard some criticisms and suddenly trembled.

“Bingqian, don’t worry about what they say and concentrate on concocting. Shut their mouths with your ability.” With Ye Zifeng’s words, Liu Bingqian started to concentrate again.

“I got it.”

They were already at the final step so Bingqian cannot get distracted.

“Bingqian, the purple qi had already formed. We have to assemble the ingredients together and form the pill. This is the most important part. Use your qi to assemble the pill. Don’t let any of your qi leak out!”

Liu Bingqian took a deep breath and did what Ye Zifeng told her to do. Actually, she didn’t even need Ye Zifeng to tell her this step. She knew that she was at the final step and would’ve done the same thing.

In her heart, Liu Bingqian was feeling very happy. This was because under Ye Zifeng’s guidance, she was able to take her understanding of alchemy to a new level.

Countless amount of silver sparks appeared and the cauldron lit up in fire. This caused an uproar amongst the audience. This was because many people had never seen flames appear inside a cauldron, especially a silver flame.

Liu Bingqian was shocked herself. She didn’t dare make any mistakes. At this time, all of the judges began to move towards the stage and anxiously watched her movements. They didn’t dare make any sounds.

Amongst these senior alchemists, not everyone knows the ancient

concoction method. The people that do know, have probably used this technique many times over their career. If Liu Bingqian succeeds, then she will be the first person in the younger generation to concoct a pill using this technique during the alchemy competition.

"Complete!" Liu Bingqian felt that the qi had condensed into the pill. A red light bursted out of the cauldron and knocked the cover of the cauldron off the stage. Two pills surrounded with red qi descended from the sky.

"Two Yuan Increasing Pills?" Everyone was shocked.

Ye Zifeng saw how shocked Bingqian was and smiled.

"Bingqian, what are you doing? Retrieve the pills. Don't let them hit the floor."

"Alright."

Bingqian was shocked and extremely happy at the same time. She quickly retrieved the two pills and placed them onto the pill tray. She felt as if she was dreaming.

All of the seniors were shocked and immediately walked towards Muyun Old Devil, "Master Old Devil, what's going on? Isn't there only one set of ingredient? How did she concoct two pills? DId you give her some extra?"

Muyun Old Devil came back to her senses and looked over, "Preposterous. You guys saw the ingredients that were distributed. Everyone had the same amount of ingredients. You're asking me about how she concocted two pills? Even I don't know. I was about to ask myself!"

"……I get it…..It must be a special effect of the ancient concoction method." One of the senior alchemists thought about it and understood what happened.

Chapter 94: To obtain a whole new level of respect!

Two pills with one set of ingredient!

This was very shocking. Even Lingfeng City's Qi Zimo couldn't help but look over at Liu Bingqian. Everyone, including young master Hua, was staring at her with their mouths opened.

Huangtu City's Xu Zhen was the closest one to Liu Bingqian. When he saw this, he felt as if his heart was burning and couldn't help but open his mouth.

"I don't believe this. Senior Muyun, did you give her an extra set of ingredient in secret? If not, then how can she create two pills?!"

Qushui City's Yi Hao raised the same question, "I agree with brother Xu. I don't believe that with Liu Bingqian's ability that she can concoct two pills with one set of ingredient. I hope that Senior Muyun investigates this."

The two people who always went against each other were now talking for each other.

This was because they understood that if the pill that Liu Bingqian concocted actually works, then they would both be eliminated immediately!

They were the ones who ridiculed Liu Bingqian the most every time she got last place. If they got eliminated by her, then this would be a big blow to them.

Muyun Old Devil glared at the two boys. How dare they be rude to her?

"So you're saying that I, Old Devil, as the host of this competition is cheating?"

"I didn't say that...."

Xu Zhen's voice got softer and softer, "That Liu Bingqian is your disciple. She's always been last so you might have helped out a bit....." His voice

was so soft that not many people could hear it at all.

“Impudent!” Muyun Old Devil is one of the most prominent figures in Tiandao City. She was the leader of alchemy in Leizhou City of her time.

Xu Zhen was impetuous when he said those words and immediately regretted it. He immediately shut his mouth and didn’t dare to talk anymore

Muyun Old Devil’s face darkened and didn’t say anything.

She was filled with questions herself as well. Did Liu Bingqian really use the ancient concoction method? Could this be a special effect of the ancient concoction method?

“Bingqian, how will you explain this?”

Liu Bingqian hesitated. As the person who concocted the pills, she was shocked herself and didn’t know how to answer. At this time, Ye Zifeng pulled her over and was going to give an explanation.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Xu Zhan, “Let me ask you this. For one Yuan Increasing Pill, even if it’s one of the highest grade, how many Fire Wind Fruit, Golden Wood Grass, Fire Dream Leaf, and Spirit Converging Ginseng do you need?

Xu Zhen was startled and looked at Ye Zifeng. He had a disdain expression on his face.

“Who do you think you are? A mere helper doesn’t have the qualifications to talk to me.”

Far away, Lingfeng City’s Qi Zimo suddenly opened his mouth.

“Even if it’s the highest grade Yuan Increasing Pill, the ingredient is still less than what Senior Muyun gave us. But, what are you trying to say?”

Muyun Old Devil was afraid that some people might make a mistake so she gave a bit more ingredients to everyone. She gave around 30% more to everyone.

Ye Zifeng looked at Qi Zimo, “If there are extra ingredients, and one separates their qi into two, then what do you think will happen when that

person concocts a pill?"

"So what you're saying is that when the purple light appeared for the first time, the first pill has been completed? You use the time later on to concoct the second pill?!"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "You're pretty smart."

"You.....So that's how it is." Qi Zimo's eyes lit up. He nodded his head like he had gained some enlightenment. He finally understood what happened.

So that's why Liu Bingqian used so much time to complete her concoction after the purple light appeared. So they were concocting two pills.

After the judges heard what happened, they immediately realize what happened.

"I got it. The ancient concoction method draws the extra potential of the ingredients. With the extra ingredients that Old Devil gave, she was able to draw out the ingredient's maximum potential and concoct two pills."

"That's right." Ye Zifeng nodded. This wasn't something hard for people to understand.

The senior couldn't help but take a deep breath, "To be able to use ingredients to this extent.This is simply too shocking. To be able to see such a display of ability during this competition, it seems like I made the right choice in coming this year....."

When he said this, all the other seniors were like parrots as they repeated these words. They all praised Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng. These words were like swords that pierced Xu Zhen and Yi Hao's ears. They felt as if they had been stabbed hundred times over.

After hearing Ye Zifeng's explanation, Muyun Old Devil finally understood what happened. At the same time, she was shocked. She had to re-evaluate this Ye Zifeng.

"Alright. Since all five groups have completed their concoction, will all

the judges decide on the top three?"

"Let's look at these pills shall we." The judges smiled and walked over to each contestant. First, they walked over to Qi Zimo and looked at his pill.

Liu Bingqian was feeling excited. She was waiting for the results from the judges.

She was always last place during the competitions. Now with Ye Zifeng's help, she can finally escape her fate. If she fails this time, then she will lose her qualifications to compete next year and will also lose her confidence as an alchemist. It will be a big blow to her growth. If she succeeds in going to the next round, then she will be very happy.

She closed her eyes and waited for the results.

Ye Zifeng looked over at her and chuckled, "Bingqian, they're starting with Qi Zimo. We still have quite a bit of time before they come over to us."

Liu Bingqian pouted and shakingly said, "But...."

"Don't worry about it. Be more confident in yourself. Believe in me. If I'm not confident then why would I tell your master to eliminate the bottom two? You should know that this is a battle for your dignity and a battle for you to regain your confidence."

Liu Bingqian's expression changed and nodded. Now, her eyes were filled confidence.

At the same time, the judges have already finish grading Qi Zimo and had moved over to young master Hua.

"No wonder why Zimo is always the first place. His ability is simply too shocking."

"Such a big Yuan Increasing Pill, it's effects must be extraordinary. It probably has the same effect as two normal Yuan Increasing Pills!"

Muyun Old Devil smiled as she brought the seniors to the second contestant.

"Next, Tonghuo City's young master Hua."

“Young master Hua’s abilities are very extraordinary as well. However, you’re still a few steps behind Qi Zimo.”

Hearing this, Young master Hua quickly waved his hands, “Zimo’s abilities are way higher than mine. I’ve tried very hard during every competition but still fall to him in the end. I guess that I will wait for Zimo to teach me a lesson again in the second round.”

“It seems like young master Hua has the qualifications to enter the second round. Don’t you guys agree?” One of the judges looked at the others and smiled.

“Hold on.....”

Ye Zifeng’s expression changed as he raised his hand.

Muyun Old Devil’s face became stiff, “Ye Zifeng, it’s not your turn yet. What do you want this time?”

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “I only want to say that you should make your final judgment after you judge everyone else. You haven’t judged the other three groups and want to promote that guy with the surname Hua to the second round?”

Young master Hua looked coldly at Ye Zifeng.

“So you’re saying that the pill that your group concocted is better than mine?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Exactly!”

“What?” Young master Hua has a history of bullying Liu Bingqian at the competition. He would have never thought that Leizhou City would have someone as hard headed as Ye Zifeng.

“Listen to me carefully. The Yuan Increasing Pill that Liu Bingqian concocted is way better than the one that you concocted!” Ye Zifeng glared at him.

That’s right. I, Liu Bingqian, earnestly request that you seniors judge the pill that I concocted before deciding whether this young master Hua can be promoted to the next round!”

While saying this, she crossed her arms under her chest and puffed her chest out in an imposing manner.

In the past, Liu Bingqian would always try to find a place to hide during the competition and will immediately return to Leizhou City after the competition.

However, she had finally rediscovered her confidence. She was able to say what she wanted in front of all these people.

Without Ye Zifeng, this would have not happen.

Ye Zifeng smiled at her and clapped his hands. Next, Yang Jing clapped, then Muyun Old Devil, then the other people from the Muyun residence. It was as if these claps were contagious.

“Not bad. Not bad. Not bad at all.”

Many of the seniors praised her confidence, “Since Leizhou City’s Liu Bingqian is so confident, then we’ll make an exception and judge her pill first!”

Chapter 95: Advancement

"This....."

For Liu Bingqian, someone who had always been last place during the alchemy competition, to be so bold in front of the elders, this caused everyone to be stupefied. The entire hall was filled with chatter as they talked about her.

Some supported Bingqian, while some slandered her.

"Alright. Stop chattering now. Quiet down."

As the host, Muyun Old Devil had to keep things in order.

"Ye Zifeng is right. We must consider all the factors before allowing anyone to advance to the next round. We will make a decision once we judge everyone else's pill! Thus, Tonghuo City's young master's advancement will be revoked for now. We will announce the results after we finish judging."

As the host, and one of the leaders of the alchemy society in Tiandao City, her words were like the law in front of others.

After a round of applause from everyone, Hua Shao looked over at Ye Zifeng. If it wasn't for Ye Zifeng's meddling, he would have advanced to the next round already!

Ye Zifeng smiled at Hua Shao, "Don't keep staring at me. Think about how you wanted to treat Leizhou City before. To try and eliminate Leizhou City from future competitions... this will be...."

Ye Zifeng's eyes suddenly became sharper as if his glare had pierced through Hua Shao's soul.

"This will be the reason of your fall during this competition!"

"You....." Hua Shao was startled. His eyes were filled with fear. For him to be scared by a little helper brought by Liu Bingqian... It was the most embarrassing thing that had happened to him in his life.

From Ye Zifeng's tone, it seems like he was sure that he was able to

advance and will also try to suppress Hua Shao in the second round!

In just a bit, they were broken up by Muyun Old Devil.

“Next, Qushui City’s Yi Hao!”

Yi Hao longed for speed instead of quality. He was barely able to create the pill. The pill that he concocted was a common rank middle grade pill.

Thus when the judges used their qi to check the pill out, they all shook their heads in disappointment.

“Yi Hao, you should work harder. If you have time, go learn a thing or two from Liu Bingqian. Look at how much effort she put into improving during the past year.”

“That’s right. Even if you get third place by luck the other times, that was then and this is now. You need to work even harder now.”

These words were always spoken to Liu Bingqian but now it was spoken to Yi Hao. Yi Hao felt his heart shook. He knew that his skills were about the same as before. He’s been studying hard for the past year but now the elders were saying that it was not enough?

Even though the elders didn’t say anything, they had already eliminated Yi Hao.

“Alright. Let’s go look at Huangtu City’s Xu Zhen’s pill.”

Xu Zhen had already taken a step forward and smiled.

“The elders have worked hard. This Yuan Increasing Pill had been concocted using my Huangtu City’s secret technique!”

The elders waved their hands, signaling for him to stop talking nonsense. They will judge for themselves whether the pill was worthy or not.

“Hm. This Yuan Increasing Pill is not bad. It is definitely a lot better than the one that Yi Hao concocted.”

Hearing this, a smile appeared on Xu Zhen’s face as he looked over at Yi Hao. They had been rivals all these years so after the elders praised him

over Yi Hao, he was very happy.

"But.....I think that this Xu Zhen won't be able to escape the fate of being eliminated either.... Alright. Let's go look at Liu Bingqian's pills."

Xu Zhen's expression immediately turned ugly. He thought that he would be safe if he could beat Yi Hao. However, it seems like his real opponent was Liu Bingqian.

"The last group, Leizhou City's Liu Bingqian!"

These elders were looking forward to this and quickly walked over towards Liu Bingqian.

Actually, when they were off the stage, they were already watching Liu Bingqian already. She had used an ancient concoction method and had created two pills whereas the others only concocted one. The elders already had a good impression of her already.

They all gathered around to look at the two pills.

"Not bad. Not bad. Looking at the streaks on the pill, it is definitely concocted with the ancient concoction method. Miss Liu, where did you learn such a technique?"

Another elder patted this elder on the shoulders, "Old Sha, I know that you're filled with questions but we're judging her pills right now. Don't ask too much right now."

Old Sha smiled and reached for the pill. However, when he was about to touch the pill, his finger was burned by the red qi.

"This.... Red Qi? Could it be that this is a Huang Tier high grade pill?!"

Old Sha gasped and couldn't help but yell out.

"What? No way. A Huang Tier high grade Yuan Increasing Pill?"

For some pills, when it reaches huang tier high grade or better, there will be some special effects. This pill clearly had one of these special effects!

"A pill created using the ancient concoction method is sure extraordinary! I haven't seen such an outstanding pill during the alchemist

competition in a long time."

"A huang tier high grade Yuan Increasing Pill.... It will have a tremendous effect on anyone that is under the Martial Spirit realm. This girl from the Liu clan sure is skillful."

Even the people who didn't know alchemy were shocked when they heard Huang Tier high grade. They couldn't help but stare at the pill.

In the audience, Liang Nine's face looked extremely ugly.

"Brother Nine, what do we do now? This is a Huang Tier high grade pill. That little brother wanted us to buy the pill with the highest bid. What are we going to do now?"

Liang Nine started to curse, "Who am I supposed to ask? I already made a blood contract with him! Shit. No wonder why I felt that it was strange. Why would he have a blood contract with him anyways? I'm afraid that he carries them around to cheat people!"

.....

A Huang Tier high grade pill.... It isn't as if it had never been done during the competition before. However, the person who concocted the pill isn't Qi Zimo but the girl who was last every year, Liu Bingqian.

Even Muyun Old Devil was shocked by her own disciple. She never taught Liu Bingqian how to concoct a Yuan Increasing Pill..... In the beginning, she was worried that Liu Bingqian wouldn't even be able to pick the correct ingredients but she was wrong.

Muyun Old Devil was the host so she had to show a calm composure. She stroked her beard and looked at Elder Sha and the others.

"Alright everyone. You've seen the pills that the five groups created. It is time to deliver the results."

The elders all smiled. It seems like they have all unanimously decided on the placements already.

Elder Sha stepped forward to announce the results, "The three who will advance to the next round are Qi Zimo, Hua Shao and....."

Liu Bingqian was feeling a bit nervous but she was confident that she will advance.

“And Leizhou City’s Liu Bingqian. The three of you will advance to the next round!”

The results were very clear already. Even without the judges saying anything, everyone could’ve guessed the results.

“This... Is this real?”

Liu Bingqian stared at Elder Sha with a hint of disbelief in her eyes. She quickly pinched her arms and felt the pain. Only then did she realize that she had escaped her fate of being last!

This.... This is simply unimaginable!

“Yay!” She screamed and turned around to hug Ye Zifeng.

In everyone’s minds, Liu Bingqian won this by herself. However, Liu Bingqian knew that this was only possible because of Ye Zifeng. Without Ye Zifeng, she would’ve had trouble picking the ingredients, let alone using the ancient concoction method.

“Big brother rough guy..... We did it! We really did it!” Liu Bingqian cried out in joy as she held Ye Zifeng’s hands.

Ye Zifeng had helped her when no one else could. The people in her Liu clan couldn’t help. That Song Shiyun couldn’t help. Even her master would only give her some pointers and wasn’t much of a help either.

Ye Zifeng had fulfilled his promise in helping her out.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Bingqian. Don’t get too excited. This is only the beginning. The real show is just starting.

He slowly turn his head and looked towards Qi Zimo.

At the same time, Qi Zimo was looking at him. A smile appeared on his usually expressionless face.

Chapter 96: To the highest bidder goes the pill

The first round of the competition had ended. Some people were very happy while others looked gloomy.

However, Qushui City's Yi Hao and Shentu City's Xu Zhen didn't leave the stage yet. This was because after the first round, the competitors will each auction off their pill.

Muyun Old Devil didn't want to give these ingredients to the competitors for nothing. Thus, she came up with a great idea. She had the audience pay for the ingredients. During the auction, she will get 50% of the profits that the competitors receive.

"Big brother rough guy, you're the one that basically concocted the pills. I won't take a single gold coin from you later."

Liu Bingqian's was all smiles. She had actually advanced to the second round!

She didn't care for the auction at all so she had Ye Zifeng take care of it.

Ye Zifeng smiled, looked at the audience and then looked back at Bingiqan.

"If you really don't want a single gold coin, I'm afraid that you'll cry later."

Liu Bingqian giggled, "That's what you think. Do you think that I, Bingqian, am someone greedy for money? This time you helped me get rid of my past embarrassments. I still have to thank you. Why would I take your things?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and then sighed.

Ye Zifeng treated Liu Bingqian as a close friend because she was treated him very sincerely. Back then, he didn't even care for her last name and became friends with her.

If she wasn't sincere in the beginning, then he probably would not care

about anyone from the Liu clan because of what Liu Ningzi did.

.....

"Shentu City Xu Zhen's pill. Is there anyone going to bid higher. Four hundred gold coins going once. Four hundred gold coins going twice. Sold!"

Xu Zhen smiled towards Yi Hao. Yi Hao's pill only sold for three hundred gold coins.

Since the competition was stopped for the auction, everyone started to gossip around again.

"A common tier cauldron is worth at most 300 gold coins. Who would've that Senior Muyun is so crafty. She made three hundred fifty gold coins from these two pills alone. This was worth way more than the ingredients already!"

"That's not it. This is only the beginning. The better pills have yet to come. Who knows how many gold coins the pills from the other three are worth."

Muyun Old Devil smiled and continued to host the auction.

Everyone saw how the pills were concocted. There were no tricks involved. Some people were here to buy the pills for their own personal use while some were here to flaunt their wealth.

"Hua Shao's Yuan Increasing Pill. The quality of this pill is guaranteed. Hua Shao already told me that the starting price will be six hundred gold coins. He won't sell for any less!"

"Seven Hundred. I'll bid seven hundred!" From the group of audience, a voice called out.

"I.....I bid seven hundred fifty!"

"Eight hundred gold coins!"

No one else dared to raise the price. Eight hundred gold coins was a lot.

This was double the amount used to buy Xu Zhen's pill. In reality, Hua

Shao's pill was worth at most six hundred gold coins.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Bingqian, "What do you think of the price?"

Liu Bingqian thought for a bit and then spoke, "I feel that it's a bit expensive for it. However, it's not beyond reasonable limits."

Ye Zifeng nodded and looked at the group of people, "If I'm not wrong, this Hua Shao invited someone over to drive up the price of his pill."

"You can even see through this?"

Ye Zifeng laughed and pointed at the person who bid seven hundred fifty gold coins, "When everyone was concocting, I notice that Hua Shao had looked at this person quite a few times. From my experience, they must be colluding together."

"Weren't you guiding me at that time? Could it be that you weren't paying attention to what I was doing?"

Liu Bingqian was stunned. She had her back towards Ye Zifeng the entire time and couldn't see what he was doing at all.

"This.....well...." In reality, Ye Zifeng had been looking around and didn't pay any attention to her since the beginning.

Liu Bingqian's expression changed, "Back to what we were talking about. I don't think that's possible. You should know that this is against the rules."

"Against the rule? Not really. That Hua Shao is pretty smart. The auctioneer is someone close to him. Even if the auctioneer wasn't there, Muyun Old Devil wouldn't care that much unless it goes out of hand. Eight hundred gold coins for a Yuan Increasing Pill like his was a bit much but not too much. In the eyes of the other people, this was very impressive. Hua Shao wanted to show off and had achieved his goal."

Liu Bingqian gasped and then nodded, "I thought that this Hua Shao was very arrogant and unruly but now, he seems like someone who is cautious and calculative. And... Big brother rough guy. How about you? What kind

of person are you?"

"Me?" Ye Zifeng caught off guard by Liu Bingqian's question.

Luckily, Ye Zifeng was called up for the auction so he didn't answer Liu Bingqian's sudden question.

"Next. Liu Bingqian, it's your turn."

Muyun Old Devil was happy for her own disciple's success and thus when she looked at Ye Zifeng, she had a kind expression on her face.

"Bingqian, will you also make a starting price like Hua Shao?"

Liu Bingqian smiled and looked over at Ye Zifeng, indicating that everyone was up to his choice.

Ye Zifeng thought about it and then asked, "Can I make it any price?"

Muyun Old Devil's heart shook and felt that his kid was about to make some moves. She quickly reminded him, "Yes, any price is fine. However, I suggest that you don't make it too high."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It won't be that high. I've decided to make it one gold coin."

"A starting price of one gold coin?"

Everyone in the audience was surprised. The previous pills sold for three hundred, four hundred and eight hundred respectively. Hua Shao's starting price was at six hundred!"

Right now, Ye Zifeng had put the starting price at one gold coin! No one knew what he was thinking about.

Suddenly, before everything can return to their senses, a deep voice called out.

"Nine hundred gold coins!"

Everyone looked towards where the voice came from. They wanted to see what kind person has so much money to burn.

After hearing this, Hua Shao's face turned green. He had prepared so many things to make his pill worth eight hundred gold coins. However, in

just a few seconds, Ye Zifeng easily surpassed him.

It was a middle age man wearing a purple crane robe, tied together with a blue tiger striped belt. Looking at this person, some people around him couldn't help but take a step back.

"Oh my god. Look at that attire. He's an elder from the Profound Sect. No wonder!"

"But you heard it too. He raised the price up to nine hundred gold coins from one gold coin in one go. No matter how rich he is, he shouldn't be wasting it like this."

"What do you know? This one gold coin starting price is only a feint. It is a strategy. How can rich people go around bidding five or ten gold coins? They would definitely raise the price up by a lot with the first bid."

"Oh!..... So that's how it is. Even though this Ye Zifeng doesn't look like he can concoct pills, he's pretty smart. He has potential in the business field!"

An elder from the Profound Sect had personally raised the bid on the pill. Normal people had to think about the consequences before they offend this big shot.

The entire place was quiet. No one else dared to increase the price.

No one except Liang Nine!

"Nine hundred and one gold coin....."

Liang Nine's voice was trembling. The people who didn't know him would think that he was sick.

"One thousand gold coins!" The elder furrowed his brows and raised the bid once again.

"One thousand..... One thousand one gold coins....." Liang Nine was in pain. It was as if someone was stabbing his heart over and over again.

"One thousand two hundred gold coins....."

The elder's expression started to change. Anyone normal person would

respect him due to his status as an elder in the Profound Sect and give him some face. However, this Liang Nine had been increasing the price one gold coin at a time. It was obvious that Liang Nine wanted to fight.

"One thousand two hundred and one gold coins....."

As expected, Liang Nine once again increased the price by one gold coin.

When Ye Zifeng was betting with him, Ye Zifeng took out one thousand two hundred gold coins to bet. Now, not only will Liang Nine not win this one thousand two hundred gold coins, he had to use this much to buy Ye Zifeng's pill.

The elder's finally flipped and coldly looked at Liang Nine, "This brother. Why are you trying to fight me with for this pill?"

Liang Nine bitterly laughed, "Boss. I don't want to either but I don't have a choice!"

"What do you mean you don't have a choice? Fine. I'll bid one thousand five hundred gold coins. Try and add one more gold coin to the bid!" The elder was definitely angry now.

"Then..... One thousand five hundred and one gold coin." Liang Nine's expression was extremely ugly. It looked like his entire family had died or something. He hated himself for signing the blood contract with Ye Zifeng.

"You.....!" The elder's face turned pale. It doesn't matter how much money he bids. It looks like this guy will try to one up him no matter what.

Chapter 97: To reap a large profit!

When Liang Nine was trying to fight with Yao Chong, an elder from the profound sect, many people that knew Liang Nine felt that it was weird.

“Did Liang Nine eat a bear’s heart and a leopard’s gall or something? When did he get so bold? In the past, even though Liang Nine is a bold and unconstrained person, he would still act like a good kid in front of people from the Profound Sect. It seems as if he’s a different person.”

“Yeah. I heard that every year he comes to the competition to make some small bets with his friends. There is absolutely no reason for him to be interested in this Yuan Increasing Pill.”

At this moment, Liang Nine was crying in his heart. When he made the blood contract, he was instigated by Ye Zifeng and prohibited any details regarding this matter to be leaked. At first, he laughed at Ye Zifeng for being so cautious but now it seems like Ye Zifeng knew what was going to happen.

Yao Chong’s expression was very ugly. He really wanted Huang tier high grade Yuan Increasing Pill created using the ancient concoction method. One thousand five hundred gold coins was already a bit too much for the pills. He never would have thought that this Liang Nine would appear out of nowhere and try to outbid him!

Liu Bingqian’s eyes lit up. She never would have thought that the pill that she concocted would be so popular.

“Big brother rough guy. If you really make a thousand five hundred gold coins, then can you.....”

Ye Zifeng smiled and deeply looked at her, “What’s wrong Bingqian. Didn’t you say that you wouldn’t take any of the money? Now that there’s so much money on the table, are you feeling jealous?”

She’d be lying if she said that she wasn’t jealous. One thousand five hundred gold coins. Even if Muyun Old Devil takes half, there will still be seven hundred fifty gold coins! This was worth way more than a single pill!

Liu Bingqian giggled, “I, Bingqian, always keep my words. But.....You earned so much this time. Shouldn’t you get me a gift?”

“Gift? What gift?” Ye Zifeng replied.

From what he can see, Liu Bingqian was the the elder daughter of the number one family in Leizhou City. She was not lacking in money at all. Why would she need him to buy her a gift?

Liu Bingqian cursed inwards, ‘You dumb blockhead.’ She then looked shyly at Ye Zifeng, “Well.... Get me whatever you want.”

Ye Zifeng scratched his head, “Uhhh. Okay. I’ll take note of this.”

When the two of them were chatting around, a fight had broken out in the audience.

Yao Chong coldly glared at Liang Nine, “Because of you, I’ve already raised the price to one thousand eight hundred gold coins! Do you still dare to outbid me?”

Liang Nine and his brother had taken out all their money and can only gather around one thousand eight hundred gold coins in total. This was approaching their limits.

“Senior I, Liang Nine, beg you. I really need this pill. I have to get it no matter what. Please let go of this matter and let me have the pill.”

“Nonsense. When did my Profound Sect need to give face to others?” Yao Chong never cared for these insignificant people and would not bother with them at all.

Liang Nine was done too. His expression darkened, “Let me tell you this. No matter what you say, no matter who you are, I, Liang Nine will take this pill today!”

“Preposterous!” Yao Chong’s expression darkened as well. He unsheathed his long sword from his back with a cold expression in his eyes.

With this move, everyone in the audience became very nervous.

As the host, Muyun Old Devil saw this and wanted to say a few words.

However, Ye Zifeng moved faster and spoke, “All you guys want to do is buy a Yuan Increasing Pill. Why do you guys need to be so unhappy?”

“It’s all because of you!” Liang Nine and Yao Chong both looked over and yelled at Ye Zifeng at the same time.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Actually, there is a better way to resolve this matter.”

“What do you mean?”

Ye Zifeng laughed and pointed at the Yuan Increasing Pills.

“Bingqian and I concocted two pills. You guys can each get it. Wouldn’t that make it easier for everyone?”

Yao Chong coldly stared at him, “That’s simple for you to say. However, I want both pills. Why do I have to give him one?”

Liang Nine was very angry too, “That’s right. I’m using my money to buy the pill. Why do I have to give him one?”

Ye Zifeng slowly revealed a sly smile, “That’s right. I understand how you guys are feeling. Thus, I have an even better idea.”

“Yuan Increasing Pill, one for one thousand eight hundred gold. If anyone is willing to offer three thousand six hundred gold coins the he will be able to take both.”

“Three thousand six hundred gold coins? Why do you just rob me?” Even though Yao Chong had seen many things in his life, he was shocked by Ye Zifeng’s highway robbery offer.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I do things very fairly.I know that three thousand six hundred gold coins is not a small amount. Thus, it is better for you guys to both split it. Of course, if the elder wants to take out three thousand six hundred gold coins, then the other person must accept the outcome, right?”

Liang Nine sighed and gritted his teeth, “I feel that this is acceptable.”

Yao Chong looked over at Liang Nine in shock, “You....You’re going to agree to buy one pill at one thousand eight hundred gold coin?”

Even if it's concocted using the ancient concoction method, a Yuan Increasing Pill for one thousand eight hundred gold coins is very expensive.

"If you don't agree then, we can keep on fighting it out. I can go even if it reaches ten thousand gold coins. What are you going to do then? Beat me down?" Liang Nine sighed.

"This....seems like a good idea....." Yao Chong was too angry already. If it wasn't for Ye Zifeng, he would started to beat Liang Nine down already.

Now that Ye Zifeng suggested something that can help Liang Nine complete the contract, Liang Nine would definitely agree to it. He didn't want to drag this on any longer either. If it goes on any further, then he would actually go bankrupt!

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked towards Muyun Old Devil, "Senior Muyun, am I allowed to sell the pills separately?"

Muyun Old Devil cursed at Ye Zifeng for being a devious thief and pulling her into his plans. However, the higher Ye Zifeng sells his pills, the more money she'll make. Thus, she didn't object to anything.

"This.....If you and Bingqian both agree to it then I don't see any problems with it."

Ye Zifeng turned back around and smiled at Liang Nine and YAo Chong, "Well Senior Muyun has spoken. You guys should give Senior Muyun some face and buy the pills at one thousand eight hundred gold each...."

Ye Zifeng had use Senior Muyun in his negotiation. Even Yao Chong was admiring his mastery of the negotiation language.

Liang Nine was the first to open up, "Okay. One thousand Eight hundred gold coins it is. I, Liang Nine will buy it. You, the big shot from the Profound Sect, if you have the ability then buy both pills with three thousand six hundred gold coins!"

Yao Chong fiercely looked at him, "Do you think I'm stupid? Even if I'm rich, I won't be burning money like it's nothing. Fine. I'll give Senior Muyun some face and buy one for one thousand eight hundred gold coins

then."

"The two seniors are sure understanding. Very straightforward. Zifeng is impressed!"

This time, Ye Zifeng was able to make one thousand eight hundred gold coins in one go after splitting half with Muyun Old Devil. He had reaped a large profit. He didn't mind and complimented the two of them with a few words. It'll help them feel better.

Yi Hao's pill sold for three hundred gold coins. Xu Zhen's pill sold for four hundred. Hua Shao was a bit crafty and sold his for eight hundred gold coins. The combined total was only one thousand five hundred gold coins. It wasn't even half of what Ye Zifeng's pills sold for. The result caused everyone's jaws to drop.

Those who were calling Ye Zifeng a pretty boy immediately changed their tones.

"Damn. Which family is so lucky to give birth to a business genius. This family must not have to worry about being poor anymore!"

"It seems like Liu Bingqian brought someone to help her sell her pills instead of helping her concoct her pills. This guy is indeed worthy."

While everyone was gossiping, Liang Nine and his brothers walked over to Muyun Old Devil and gave her the one thousand eight hundred gold coins. Muyun Old Devil was smiling very happily.

After completing the transaction, he bitterly walked over to Ye Zifeng.

"Little brother, I knew that you had something like this up your sleeves. Why didn't you resolve the matter faster. Are you not afraid that I'll really fight that Yao Chong and make a big deal?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I know what I'm doing. I've been watching you guys since the beginning of the competition. I know how much you guys can afford."

"So that's how it is. You know how much we can handle...."

Liang Nine nodded and then walked back to his brothers. In his heart

however, he felt that something was wrong.

After a bit, he finally understood what happened and cursed out loud, “So that’s why he didn’t resolve the matter faster. He wanted to squeeze everything out of us!”

Chapter 98: Free for all

In the audience's minds, Ye Zifeng's way with words helped Liu Bingqian earn a huge profit.

But in reality, all of this happened because of the blood contract that he signed with Liang Nine. If he didn't do that, then the pills would have probably sold for at most one thousand two hundred gold coins.

After everyone finished talking about Ye Zifeng, they all started to quiet down again.

This was because on the stage, there was one more person who hasn't sold their pill yet. It was Liangfeng City's Qi Zimo!

"The last one, Lingfeng City Qi Zimo's Yuan Increasing Pill!" Muyun Old Devil's voice echoed throughout the entire hall.

"Two thousand gold coins!"

Right after Muyun Old Devil finished talking, someone immediately raised their hand and bidded. It was a high bid. That person was wearing a bamboo hat and a black cloak. He clearly didn't want people to know who he is.

"Two thousand and one hundred gold coins...." Someone else raised the bid by one hundred gold coins.

"Three thousand!"

The man wearing the bamboo hat was not patient at all. His tone behind his words sound like a threat.

Everyone was shocked at the price and wanted to see what kind of person this man was. However, he kept himself well hidden and didn't reveal anything about himself at all.

Muyun Old Devil on the other hand was extremely happy. Ye Zifeng had just sold his pills for three thousand six hundred gold coins and now the bid for Qi Zimo's pill was at three thousand gold coins already. She was making a killing!

Due to the fact that Qi Zimo was always the champion of the competition, everyone knew that his pills were good. Qi Zimo's control of his flame of at a very high level. It had broken through the peak of common tier flame and had reached the level of a huang tier flame. By using three thousand gold coins to buy Qi Zimo's pill meant that the man in the black cloak was giving Qi Zimo face. He probably wants to invite him to help concoct some pills later on.

"Three thousand gold coins going once... going twice....is there anyone willing to bid higher?"

"Alright then.... Sold!"

In just the first round of the competition, eight thousand one hundred gold coins worth of pills were auctioned off. Muyun Old Devil had earned four thousand gold coins without doing anything at all!

Ye Zifeng smiled at the cloaked man, "He actually used three thousand gold coins to purchase a Yuan Increasing Pill? It seems like this Qi Zimo isn't simple at all.

Muyun Old Devil's happy expression slowly faded away and turned into a solemn one.

"Since the first round and the auction is finished, then....."

She revealed a smile once again, "Then we should start the second round right now!"

The three groups that were left on the stage all became serious when they heard this.

Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng both looked at each other.

In the past, Liu Bingqian would be sneakily leaving the stage by now. However, this time, she remained on the stage and will fight until the end. She will fight for her honors.

Muyun Old Devil turned serious too. Since she had announced the start of the second round, she needed to act like a host.

"Guards, listen up. Bring out all the ingredients!"

“Yes master Muyun!” the guards quickly answered and ran out of the hall. They quickly brought tables of ingredients in front of each competitor.

Seeing how the guards were bringing out all these ingredients without any hint of stopping, Liu Bingqian began to fret.

“How way. How many pills do we need to concoct. With all these ingredients, it’s going to take us the whole day!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn’t say anything. He didn’t believe that Muyun Old Devil would ask them to use all of the ingredients. If the competition was too long, the spectators won’t like it. They would get bored very quickly.

Massive amount of ingredients appeared in front of the competitors like they weren’t worth anything. The ingredients were all the same and equal in amount. Muyun Old Devil had basically brought out half of all her ingredients!

When the guards finished moving everything, a stick of incense worth of time had passed already. The pile of ingredients was like a small mountain. They could not guess what kind of pill Muyun Old Devil wanted them to concoct at all.

“Master Muyun, we’ve split the ingredients in threes and brought them all out.” One of the guards respectfully said.

“Good!” Muyun Old Devil revealed a smile and looked at everyone.

“Since my Muyun House is hosting this competition, I, Muyun Old Devil, want to make the competition as interesting as possible! Thus, I brought out all these ingredient to test the limits of these young alchemists.”

“Limit?” The members of the audience looked at each other. None of them can tell what was going on.

“That’s right. The limit of the young alchemists. I brought so many ingredients here to see the potential of these young alchemists. Without the shortage of ingredients, I want to see what kind of pills they can concoct. I want them to concoct the best pill to the best of their abilities

and show me how far they have immersed themselves in the dao of alchemy!"

Ye Zifeng was looking at these ingredients like a crazy pervert. In his eyes, these ingredients were like beauties to normal men.

Thus, he didn't hear anything that Muyun Old Devil said and continued to stare at the ingredients.

"Not bad. Not bad. I guess that I didn't come here in vain after all. I never would have thought at I would be able to see so much ingredient gathered in one place so soon after crossing over.

Ye Zifeng laughed very loudly. He was a crazed alchemist in his past life, so when he saw all these ingredients, he revealed his true self and laughed very loudly.

In other people's eyes, Ye Zifeng looked like a crazy person. Some people even cursed at him for being so crazy.

Hua Shao glared at him, "What kind of country bumpkin is he? From the looks of it, it seems like he turned crazy from seeing so many valuable ingredients gathered in one place. He's basically making a fool out of himself!"

Hua Shao's follower reacted the same way and coldly snorted, "The young master is right. From what I can see, they must've already known that they had to concoct the Yuan Increasing Pill before hand and had already prepared for it. Now, in the second round where you show your potential and concoct the best pill you can, they will definitely lose! How can they be young master's opponent?"

"Hahaha.....That's right!"

A lot of people had the same thought as Hua Shao. They all know that Liu Bingqian was Muyun Old Devil's disciple and it isn't impossible that she might have some information regarding the first round.

Qi Zimo however was observing Ye Zifeng. He saw that Ye Zifeng had the same kind of eyes that he does and smiled.

He turned towards his helped, “Sword servant, listen to me. Don’t help me gather ingredients later. Observe Ye Zifeng for me and tell me his every move!”

“No way. Master is planning on going all out?” This sword servant was shocked. He knows his master better than anyone else here. His master has never had this kind of serious expression on his face before.

“Stop chattering and just do as I say!”

“Yes…. Yes, master.”

Qi Zimo’s looked very serious as he stared at Ye Zifeng, “This guy…. He isn’t as simple as he looks. For Liu Bingqian to have this kind of performance this year….this guy must’ve been guiding her. I can’t be careless!”

All three group of competitors have become very serious. Muyun Old Devil saw this and was very happy.

“Allow me to explain the rules a bit. The time limit is one hour and you can concoct whatever pill you want. The amount of attempts and the quality of the pill will be judged. Also, you cannot concoct more than three pills!”

After a while, she looked over at Ye Zifeng and asked, “Ye Zifeng, do you have any questions?”

She was afraid that Ye Zifeng might have some kind of weird moves up his sleeves so she asked him if he had any questions first before asking everyone else.

Ye Zifeng finally returned to his senses from looking at all the ingredients.

“Oh yeah… I do have a question. I want to ask if the three groups are going to be far apart when we concoct our pills.”

“What does the distance between each group have to do with anything?” Muyun Old Devil was confused.

Ye Zifeng smiled and both his eyes lit up.

“If the distance doesn’t have to do with anything, then I suggest that we should concoct our pills closely together. This way, the audience can watch all of us at the same time. Also, the judges can concentrate on one spot and thus further evaluate our alchemy techniques.”

“This.....”

Muyun Old Devil stared at Ye Zifeng for a while and couldn’t tell what he was planning. She then looked over at Qi Zimo and Hua Shao.

“Do you guys have any problems with that?”

Chapter 99: The battle of the top 3

Hua Shao stuck his nose out and coldly snorted, “I don’t really care. It’s actually better for me. This way, the judges can easily tell that I’m way better than them. Now that I think about it, this is a great idea.”

Muyun Old Devil nodded and looked over at Qi Zimo, “Then, how about Zimo?”

“I.....” Qi Zimo’s expression was a bit stern. He knows that Ye Zifeng didn’t do this just so it makes everyone else’s life easier. However, in such a short amount of time, he can’t see through Ye Zifeng’s thinking process at all.

Since it’s like this, he might as well let it pass and see what kind of cards Ye Zifeng has to play.

“I don’t really care. I’m fine with it.”

“Alright. Since you guys don’t have any objections then we’ll do as Ye Zifeng suggests.....”

After obtaining the agreement of the other two, Muyun Old Devil looked over at her guards, signaling them to prepare everything.

Even though she didn’t understand what Ye Zifeng was trying to do, there was one thing that she knew. Having Ye Zifeng on stage with her disciple, Liu Bingqian, was a good thing. His suggestion didn’t break any rules so she’ll allow it.

As a result, Ye Zifeng’s cauldron was moved in between Qi Zimo’s and Hua Shao’s.

The three cauldrons were side by side and had an imposing look to it.

“I will now announce that the second round of the competition will now officially start!”

This round wasn’t the same as the last. One had to concoct their own pill and they can at most concoct three pills. Thus, the most important part of the round was choosing the right ingredients.

“Big brother rough guy, look. There’s Chalcedony Grass, Dragon Leaves, Silver-horn Fruit, and Scarlet Essence Lotus. Why don’t we concoct a Golden Marrow Pill?” Liu Bingqian flipped through all the ingredients and smiled.

“Bingqian, don’t be impatient. Let’s wait and see.” Ye Zifeng smiled back at her.

Liu Bingqian showed a puzzled expression and then looked over at the other two groups.

She saw that the Qi Zimo and Hua Shao were both staring at the ingredients and wasn’t in a rush. They only had three chances so they can’t be careless at all.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “What we have is time. Don’t be impatient. The most important part of this round is the quality of the pill. A Golden Marrow Pill is a qi refining stage pill. It is not going to be enough.”

“Then….What should we make?” Liu Bingqian was confused once again. She had never been in the second round of the competition. She would sneakily run away and have never seen Qi Zimo or Hua Shao concoct with all their skills.

“Wait a bit more. Don’t worry….. I will personally make a move this round.” Ye Zifeng comforted Liu Bingqian. At the same time, a strange smile appeared on his face.

“Really? That’s great!” Hearing that Ye Zifeng was personally going to make a move, Liu Bingqian was delighted.

During the first round, all Ye Zifeng did was start the fire and then he sat there to observe. Liu Bingqian finished concocting the pill by herself.

However, the existence of Qi Zimo gave Ye Zifeng some sort of pressure. He had to make a move himself.

Of course, the reason why he’s pressured is because of his cultivation. He couldn’t even form a common tier flame right now. Ye Zifeng would definitely beat anyone in alchemy if they were in the same circumstance as he was.

“Look, that Hua Shao couldn’t help it started to concoct already….” Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Liu Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian quickly looked over at Hua Shao.

As expected, Hua Shao and his servant were starting to concoct. They were both very quick and nimble. From the pile of ingredients, they quickly gathered what they needed and put it to one side.

“From the looks of it, he’s trying to concoct a Spirit Nurturing Pill for Martial Disciples.” Ye Zifeng nodded as if he understood everything Hua Shao was trying to do. He was able to see through Hua Shao with one look.

Liu Bingqian gasped, “Spirit Nurturing Pill? This Hua Shao is indeed very impressive. To be able to think about refining a pill at the Martial Spirit stage.

Ye Zifeng just smiled and didn’t comment at all. Instead, he turned to look at Qi Zimo. However, all he saw was Qi Zimo standing there, not moving at all. Qi Zimo also looked over every so often. It seems like Qi Zimo wants Ye Zifeng to start refining first.

“Big brother rough guy…….how about we start as well.

Liu Bingqian anxiously looked at Ye Zifeng but all she got was a smile in return.

Her heart sank. However, she trusted Ye Zifeng. He must have some sort of plan. The amount of respect that Liu Bingqian has for Ye Zifeng is already at the max so she will follow his words.

In the end, after a while, Qi Zimo couldn’t control himself anymore. He looked over at Ye Zifeng and then went to gather his materials to start concocting.

It looked like he was casually gathering ingredients but he was extremely fast and precise. However, Ye Zifeng still saw through his movements, “Qi Zimo is trying to concoct a Supreme True Yuan Dan.”

“What? A Supreme True Yuan Dan?” Hearing this, Liu Bingqian was shocked. She remember when Wang Tianzhi won a Supreme True Yuan

Dan for finishing second during the Heavenly Clan gathering. She would never have thought that she would be able to watch someone refine the same exact pill!

"Alright. Since they've made their move, it's time for us to make our move too." Ye Zifeng saw that it was about time that they started and became very serious.

Liu Bingqian was fretting, "Big brother rough guy. What are we going to do? They're both refining such incredible pills. What should we answer with?"

"Bingqian, where did all your confidence go?" Ye Zifeng smiled.

"I was confident because you're with me..... Now that you mention it, should I be looking forward to the results of the second round?"

Liu Bingqian was staring at Ye Zifeng at this point.

"Well.... I can guarantee that we'll beat this Hua Shao." Ye Zifeng deeply nodded.

"Really?" Liu Bingqian was getting excited.

She had always been last during the competition. If she can get an even higher placement, then she would be extremely happy!

"But....Are you sure? Big brother rough guy. What kind of good methods do you have?"

"Bingqian, do you know why I suggested that we should all refine our pills together?"

Obviously, Bingqian didn't know the answer to this. She looked at him hoping that he would give her an answer.

"You'll find out after we're done."

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was teasing her, Liu Bingqian pouted.

"Alright Bingqian. Use the fastest speed to gather all these ingredients and then put it into the cauldron. Don't let anyone else see what you took. Alright?"

“Uhh…. Okay.” She didn’t know why he wanted to hide what he was concocting. Could it be that Ye Zifeng was going to concoct some sort of forbidden pill?

However, she didn’t have time to ponder about these trivial matters. She quickly retrieved the ingredients for Ye Zifeng.

“Two strands of Demonic Fog Grass, two Wild Steel Flower, one Golden Thorn Fruit….”

Liu Bingqian was moving so fast that she was confusing herself. She gathered all the ingredients and immediately put it into the cauldron. She can guarantee that no one saw what she took from the pile. Even if someone saw, they probably won’t know what Ye Zifeng was concocting.

On the other side, Ye Zifeng was standing in front of Qi Zimo’s camp and blocked them from seeing anything.

Qi Zimo’s sword servant was suppose to be observing Ye Zifeng’s movement but Ye Zifeng had blocked his view. Liu Bingqian was also very fast so he didn’t get to see anything.

“Master, what do we do? Ye Zifeng was blocking the way so I couldn’t see what they were trying to make.”

Qi Zimo was startled and looked up.

“So it seems like this Ye Zifeng has treated us as the real opponents since the beginning.”

Ye Zifeng blocked Qi Zimo’s view and not Hua Shao’s because in Ye Zifeng’s eyes, Hua Shao wasn’t worth anything.

From what Ye Zifeng can see, even if his whole process was seen by Hua Shao, he would not be able to see what kind of pill Ye Zifeng was making.

“Interesting….I was too impatient and started before him. Let’s see if he can catch anything and challenge me. I really am looking forward to this.”

Qi Zimo’s eyes lit up and he licked his lips. His mouth curved up into a smile. This was the expression of a predator when it found a tasty prey.

Chapter 100: To burn with three flames!

When everyone saw that Ye Zifeng was just standing there like a wooden doll, they started to talk about him again.

“I do admit that this Ye Zifeng’s talent in the field is business is excellent. But... Why did Liu Bingqian bring him to the alchemy competition. Can he even refine any pills? At least that Song Shiyun can condense a common tier flame.”

“Right? At least least he helped start the fire last round. Now, he’s just standing there, not moving at all. What is he even thinking about?”

“Whatever, for Liu Bingqian to be able to get into the second round, this is a heaven defying matter already. You shouldn’t ask anything more from her. She’s already done her best.....”

The audience were busily gossiping and talking about what was happening while the other competitors were working very hard.

“Big brother rough guy. This time, should we use the four cardinal directions to refine the ingredients?” Liu Bingqian looked over at Ye Zifeng and asked.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “No need. Even though the ancient concoction technique can refine high quality pills, it has its downsides. First, it takes too long. And second, it takes up a lot of energy. Do you not remember how tired you were after refining the Yuan Increasing Pill?”

Liu Bingqian thought about how she felt when she was refining the pill. She does remember how she used a lot of energy and felt a bit tired.

“You should know that we aren’t only refining one pill. We’re refining three. If we don’t save some energy for our opponent’s counter attacks, then how will we win?”

Liu Bingqian was confused and didn’t understand what Ye Zifeng meant, “No way. We’re just refining pills. What kind of counter attack are they going to make?”

Ye Zifeng revealed a mysterious smile, “Alright. Let’s not talk about this

anymore. We still have to refine our pill. We have to refine this pill very quickly!"

Hearing how they had to refine the pill very quickly, Liu Bingqian suddenly became very serious.

"Alright. Let's do this. I've condensed my common tier flame!"

Ye Zifeng smiled and added some firewoods under the cauldron. At the same time, he ignited some fire qi on his finger.

The natural flames created by the firewoods, Liu Bingqian's common tier flame, and Ye Zifeng's fire qi, it seems like Ye Zifeng is planning to use all three to refine his pill.

The three types of flames burned wildly. Without a doubt, Muyun old Devil and the judges were all surprised. It's not like this isn't allowed but this was an extreme method. This method helps with the refining speed but the quality will be very low. Thus, this kind of method was looked down upon by everyone.

"That dumb brat. What is he doing now? Why can't he refine normally?" Muyun Old Devil pulled on her beard and was worried.

At first, she didn't have any expectations for Liu Bingqian. But now, her disciple had entered the first round for the first time in her life. Muyun Old Devil had high hopes for her disciple once again. However, looking at Ye Zifeng's method, it seems like her disciple was fated to fail. Everything was destroyed by Ye Zifeng! How could she not be worried?

Everyone yelled at Ye Zifeng for not doing anything. But now, Ye Zifeng made a move and everyone were still yelling at him.

When Hua Shao saw this, he started to laugh very loudly, "Do you see that? Those two dumbasses actually used this kind of extreme method to achieve faster speed. Who cares if they if their pill forms faster than ours? The quality of their pill must be even trashier than trash!"

Hua Shao's servant smiled and answered, "Young master is right. They're basically looking to die. They will definitely lose now."

Liu Bingqian was also shocked, “Hold on. Big brother rough guy. This isn’t too good. The quality doesn’t matter but I’m afraid we’ll directly burn the ingredients!”

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “If we don’t increase the temperature, how can we finish before the others? Don’t worry. I have my plans. Just trust me!”

After hearing what Ye Zifeng said, Bingqian nodded and condensed more flame out of her finger.

She was only able to reach this far because of Ye Zifeng. She trusts him so she will do whatever he asks of her.

“Alright! Light it up!”

The three flames gathered around the cauldron and created a dazzling display. It looked as if a phoenix had descended onto the cauldron and was continuously circling around it.

“Bingqian, use your other hand to send your qi into the cauldron. Split your qi and flame equally.”

“Got it!”

Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian both had their eyes closed and were sitting next to each other with a serious expression on their faces. Ye Zifeng controlled the flames from the firewood and the fire qi with his other hand while Liu Bingqian controlled her common tier flame and her qi. The entire cauldron had turned red from the three flames.

They had already interacted with each other for quite a while now and had a mutual understanding of what the other person wants. Even without Ye Zifeng explaining everything thoroughly, Liu Bingqian knew what to do.

The flames were getting stronger and stronger. Some people in the audience who practiced alchemy were getting more and more anxious. To give up quality for speed... This made everyone look at Liu Bingqian differently.

Even the judges were talking about it.

“Insolent. They’re basically fooling around. How can they refine a good pill like this? This Liu Bingqian is second-rated. No. She’s a third-rate alchemist!”

“But wait..... Ye Zifeng is using three types of flame... With such high temperature, how come there’s no burnt smell at all?”

“This.... If they have good control over their flame then it shouldn’t burn at all.

Elder Sha pondered for a bit and then chimed in, “From what I can see, that can be one of the reasons. However, I think that it has to do with the ingredients that they are using.”

“Ingredients?”

The judges all looked at each other.

Just before when Liu Bingqian was gathering the ingredients, she did it very quickly. They were seated at a bad angle and couldn’t see very clearly. Thus, they don’t know what kind of pill they’re refining.

Elder Sha furrowed his brows, “If I’m not guessing incorrectly, Liu Bingqian probably chose ingredients with yin attribute. Thus, after being burned by three different types of flame, it looks as if it was being refined normally.”

After thinking about it, the other judges believed Elder Sha’s words. Using three types of flame was an extreme method but that all depends on what kind of ingredients they use. If they really did use extreme yin ingredients, then maybe this was part of the refining process.

“This.... We’ll just have to wait and see.” One of the elders sighed.

At this time, Hua Shao and Qi Zimo were both busily refining their own pills. They didn’t have to time to look at Ye Zifeng anymore.

However, they were both sure that Ye Zifeng’s pill won’t be as good as theirs due to the method used. If they work a bit harder and refine a high quality pill, then their victory will be guaranteed.

.....

“Done. The pill is forming!” After the time it takes a stick of incense to burn passed, Liu Bingqian showed a happy expression.

The purple light appeared from the cauldron and condensed into purple qi.

“Bingqian, don’t relax yet. Stabilize your qi in the cauldron. If you make a single mistake, then there will be a big problem with the quality of the pill!”

“Got it.” Liu Bingqian nodded and became serious again. She closed her eyes and continued to stabilize the qi in the cauldron.

Ye Zifeng wasn’t idling around either. Liu Bingqian was pouring her qi into the cauldron and Ye Zifeng had to back her up. If he finds any mistakes or holes, he would use his own qi to fix it.

Using three flames to refine pills is a very extreme method. However, compared to Ye Zifeng’s crazy experiments in his past life, this was nothing at all.

If he wasn’t crazy then he would not have taken the risk to refine the Nine Reincarnation Pill that sent his consciousness into this trash Ye Zifeng’s body.

……

“Com…Completed!” Liu Bingqian sounded very excited.

“Big brother rough guy. What kind of pill is this? I helped refine the pill and yet I don’t know what it is….”

She was filled with questions. If it wasn’t for that fact that Ye Zifeng didn’t give her permission, she would’ve opened up the cauldron to see what was inside.

“Hold on Bingqian. We’ll take out the pill later.” Ye Zifeng smiled and then looked at the other two groups.

He saw that Qi Zimo and Hua Shao were almost done as well. They were at the last step of refinement already.

“Why is that?” Liu Bingqian curiously asked. She didn’t know what he

was planning at all.

During the competition, one would usually take out their pill immediately and start to refine the second one.

“The opportunity isn’t here yet.....”

Chapter 101: The time is now!

All of the judges had been waiting for Ye Zifeng to make a fool out of himself for a while now.

It's one thing to watch an expert refine a good pill and another to watch a noob refine the ingredients into slag. It was not fun to watch at all.

As for why Ye Zifeng stopped moving after his pill formed, no one knows. It gave everyone a mysterious feeling.

The audience couldn't watch anymore and was very impatient. Liang Nine was the first one to start yelling.

"Ye Zifeng, you ugly good for nothing. Quit trying to be mysterious and open up the cauldron. Let everyone see what you made!"

"Yeah. THe time limit is one hour. If you keep this up, it won't be good for yourself either. You should pour the slag in the cauldron out and actually make some pills even if they're trash." Some of Liang Nine's brothers yelled out as well.

After hearing this, Ye Zifeng turned around and smiled at them, "But didn't you guys spend one thousand eight hundred gold to buy my trash pill?"

"You!" Liang Nine wanted to use this chance to make fun of Ye Zifeng but who would've thought that he would be the one made fun of.

He was the one who fought and offended an elder of the Profound Sect in order to buy Ye Zifeng's pill in front of everyone else.

Even if other people call Ye Zifeng's pills trash, Liang Nine couldn't. After all, if the person who called the pill that he used one thousand and eight hundred gold coins to buy trash, then isn't that person very stupid?

Papapa. A light appeared from Hua Shao's cauldron.

"Done!"

Hua Shao wiped off the sweat from his forehead and revealed a smile. The Spirit Nurturing Pill is a Martial Disciple level pill. It was pretty

difficult for Hua Shao to completely refine it.

However, after working so hard, he finally succeeded. At the same time, he received a lot of praise from the judges.

“Ye Zifeng, you used three flames to refine your pill in order to achieve speed but I finished before you anyways. If you have the skills, then why don’t you open up your cauldron and let me see what’s inside?” Hua Shao was making fun of Ye Zifeng. It was as if he was trying to step all over Ye Zifeng.

“Young..... Young master. Look at Qi Zimo....”

Hua Shao’s servant also wanted to slander Ye Zifeng a bit to get on his master’s good side but when he looked at Qi Zimo, his expression changed.

When Hua Shao heard the words ‘Qi Zimo”, his expression changed as well.

Hua Shao had lost to Qi Zimo year after year. He’s always wanted to beat Qi Zimo, but Qi Zimo was too strong. Even Hua Shao couldn’t help but admit defeat.

Hua Shao furrowed his brow and looked over at Qi Zimo’s position. Even though he was mentally prepared, he was still shocked at what Qi Zimo refined.

Supreme True Yuan Dan!

There was a red qi surrounding the pill as if it was burning it. This meant that it was atleast a Huang Tier high grade pill!

“No way.....Qi Zimo can already refine this kind of pill?”

Hua Shao couldn’t help but take a deep breath. From an alchemist’s point of pill, Qi Nurturing Pills were entry-level pills while pills like the Golden Marrow Pill were on a little higher level. Pills with attributes like the Thunder Spirit Pill and pills like the Yuan Increasing Pill were normal level pills.

The Supreme True Yuan Dan however, is a much higher level pill

compared to the Yuan Increasing Pill. It was very hard to refine such a pill.

"It seems like in the way of alchemy, I can't beat Qi Zimo at all...." Hua Shao bitterly laughed and shook his head. He had worked very hard for this year's competition but Qi Zimo beat him once again.

Qi Zimo didn't care about Hua Shao at all. He wouldn't even look at a loser like Hua Shao a second time.

"Congratulations master. To be able to refine a Huang Tier Supreme True Yuan Dan meant that you'll now be recognized as a highly appreciated alchemist within Tiandao City!" The sword slave stood behind Qi Zimo and congratulated his master.

"No need to be polite with me....."

Qi Zimo didn't care about anything else right now. He was carefully observing someone.... Ye Zifeng.

He can see that Bingqian's victory had something to do with this Ye Zifeng. However, he was confused about something. For someone to be so well-versed in the dao of alchemy, why couldn't he condense a common tier flame?

"Ye Zifeng didn't open up his cauldron yet? DIdn't they finish a while ago?"

"Maybe they're scared that they'll be laughed at when they open it up and reveal a bunch of slag." The sword servant replied.

"Is that so?" Qi Zimo's found it hard to believe that Ye Zifeng would make a mistake like this.

Qi Zimo believed that he's done enough. Ye Zifeng's pill can probably outclass Hua Shao's but it won't be better than his Huang Tier Supreme True Yuan Dan.

"Alright. Let's not talk about Ye Zifeng. Sword slave. Put that Supreme True Yuan Dan to the side. We'll take advantage of the fact that the cauldron is still hot and refine the second pill!"

"Yes master!"

Qi Zimo furrowed his brow and couldn't help but feel that something isn't right. However, he calm himself down and started to prepare himself to refine the second pill.

The audience was praising Qi Zimo like crazy. It sounded much better than when they were talking about Ye Zifeng.

"He deserves to be called the young alchemy genius. Always getting first place at the alchemy competition! Look at those movements and his expression. Simple magnificent!"

"Ye Zifeng. Qi Zimo is about to refine his second pill and you're still standing there. The second round is going to be finished by the time you start moving. Don't even compete anymore and go straight back to Leizhou City!"

"That's right. To put Qi Zimo on the same stage as Ye Zifeng.... It's basically an insult to Qi Zimo's skills!"

Liu Bingqian was getting angry at these people and started to shake. However, without Ye Zifeng's command, all she can do is stand there and watch.

Ye Zifeng looked towards Qi Zimo and Hua Shao's direction and suddenly revealed a grim smile.

"Bingqian. It's time. The opportunity is here."

Liu Bingqian was startled, "What opportunity?"

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "Since Qi Zimo and Hua Shao are both starting to refine their second pill, it's time for us to take our pill out."

"Right now?" Liu Bingqian didn't understand Ye Zifeng's thinking but complied anyways.

She was wondering why Ye Zifeng didn't take the pill out just like everyone else. From his tone just now, it seems like he was doing this on purpose.

Why did they have to wait until the other two to finish refining their pills to take theirs out? Do the two things have some sort of connection?

Liu Bingqian walked towards the cauldron and opened it up.

A green smoke appeared from the cauldron and while a cold white streak of light exploded from it.

“This.... This is.....” Muyun Old Devil’s expression immediately changed.

There was no burnt smell. There was no golden light either. All that came out of the cauldron was a cold and chilling aura.

Liu Bingqian look as the cold aura appeared from the cauldron. She was getting very nervous and confused at the same time. They had used three flames to refine the pill. The pill and the cauldron should’ve been very hot. However, the pill in front of her was very cold.

It didn’t feel like a pill at all. It felt like a thousand year old ice cube!

Bingqian returned to her senses after a while and retrieved the pill from the cauldron. When Muyun Old Devil saw this, her face ashen. She was extremely shocked.

“No way..... So that’s it. That’s how it is. Ye Zifeng, so this is why you asked me to move you guys closer to each other!”

Yang Jing’s face showed a shocked expression as well and asked, “Master Muyun, what kind of pill is this? Why are you so shocked?”

Muyun Old Devil was shook, “This is a Spirit Absorbing Pill!”

“Spirit Absorbing Pill? What kind of use does this pill have....?” Yang Jing was startled. She had followed her master for many years and have never heard of this pill at all.

“This....” Before Muyun Old Devil could reply, spirit qi extruded from Qi Zimo and Hua Shao’s pills. The spirit qi from the two pills converged together and released a golden light.

When Hua Shao saw this, his jaws dropped. He was stunned at what was happening.

“Come!” Ye Zifeng smiled.

More and more spirit qi was gathering in the air. Suddenly it seemed as

if the spirit qi had found its destination and flew towards Liu Bingqian!

Chapter 102: Strong Competition

The spirit qi was like a surging tide that gushed towards Liu Bingqian!

Before she can even react, the spirit qi disappeared into the spirit absorbing pill!

The originally dull green Spirit Absorbing Pill was now brimming with color!

Liu Bingqian couldn't do anything but stand there and watch the scene. She felt cold sweat running down her back.

"Holy....Holy shit. What just happened? Someone tell me what just happened?"

Hua Shao was completely stunned. He felt as if he had lost his voice and couldn't stop shaking.

He stared at the Spirit Nurturing Pill that he refined. The pill looked as if it had a hole in it or something. The spirit qi inside the pill continuously poured out towards Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill.

"No....No. My Spirit Nurturing Pill....."Hua Shao was frightened as he covered his Spirit Nurturing Pill with his hands, not wanting any more Spirit Qi to escape. However, his hands could not contain the qi. It was no use. He could not stop the qi from flowing out.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's no use."

As expected, after all the spirit qi escaped from Hua Shao's Spirit Nurturing Pill, it slowly shriveled up. It wasn't as elegant looking anymore. It must have dropped a few tiers.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill was becoming more and more alive. It completely emptied out Hua Shao's Spirit Nurturing Pill.

Qi Zimo's Supreme True Yuan Dan also started to die down a bit. The red aura surrounding the pill slowly turned blue, then white, until the aura completely disappeared.

It was very obvious that this Supreme True Yuan Dan was not a Huang

tier pill anymore.

The scary part is that, the Spirit Absorbing Pill was still absorbing the qi from the Supreme True Yuan Dan.

The sword servant's face turned pale with fright and couldn't help but open his mouth, "Master. What do we do now? Who would've thought that they would refine such a domineering pill that can absorb the qi straight from the Supreme True Yuan Dan!"

A smile appeared on Qi Zimo's face. He suddenly clapped his hands and laughed loudly.

"Good. Good. Good. Ye Zifeng, I didn't make a mistake. You really didn't disappoint me! So that's why you had us get closer. You wanted to take full advantage of the Spirit Absorbing Pill's abilities.

These words sent shock through the audience's minds. It was not what they had expected.

To be able to receive an applause from Qi Zimo during the alchemy competition... This Ye Zifeng is not simple at all. This was his first time participating and he had easily received an applause from Qi Zimo. Not even Hua Shao had ever received one!

The sword servant looked at Qi Zimo's expression. His master rarely showed this kind of expression. However, the sword servant didn't know whether his master was happy or angry right now.

"Master.....What should we do?"

Qi Zimo let out a cold smile and suddenly threw the Supreme True Yuan Dan on the floor. With a stomp, the entire pill exploded. The pill was trashed. He basically refined this pill for nothing!

"Ma...Master, You....." The sword servant was startled. He didn't think that his master would be so impulsive.

Qi Zimo glared over, "What? Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill is going to absorb all the qi and turn this pill into trash anyways. Might as well stop it early. Or do you want his pill to reach the peak of Huang tier?"

The audience members were shocked at how Qi Zimo stepped on and destroyed his pill.

"No way. Just what the hell did Ye Zifeng make? It's looks so evil. How can it absorb the qi from Hua Shao and Qi Zimo's pills?"

"To be able to force Qi Zimo to this step, this Ye Zifeng is not simple at all. I was wrong and thought that he was just a pretty boy."

"This year's alchemy competition is way better than the other years where Qi Zimo was dominating the whole time. I will support Ye Zifeng."

However, most people sighed in their hearts, "It's a shame.... For a huang tier Supreme True Yuan Dan to be destroyed like this.... It's a shame! Why not sell it to me?"

Most people in the audience were in the qi refining stage. Even though there were some who were in the Martial Disciple realm, they still have families and friends who were in the qi refining realm. They were all sad to see such a pill destroyed like this. What a pity.

Ye Zifeng smiled and praised Qi Zimo, "Not bad. This Qi Zimo is not bad at all. To be able to make such decisive decisions at such a young age, he really isn't simple at all."

Liu Bingqian stared at Ye Zifeng, "What are you talking about? Aren't you a year younger than he is?"

"I....." Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed. He didn't know how to explain this.

It was a good thing that Liu Bingqian didn't continue to press the matter. Instead, she shook her head, "This Qi Zimo. To destroy his own pill after refining it. If it was me, I won't be able to. Also, that isn't any normal pill. It is a Supreme True Yuan Dan!"

Ye Zifeng chuckled and looked at her, "It's because you can't do that that you're not as strong as he is."

To some people, a Supreme True Yuan Dan is a very precious treasure. However, to an accomplished alchemist, it is nothing much. Only experts would be able to treat something like a Supreme True Yuan Dan as an

everyday item.

“Stop making fun of me....” Liu Bingqian stuck her tongue out at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled at the scene and then looked back at Hua Shao and Qi Zimo.

“Young master, Young master Hua.....Are you good?” Hua Shao’s servant was calling nonstop but it doesn’t seem to have any effect.

“The Spirit Nurturing Pill is gone.... All of its spirit qi was sucked away. Ye Zifeng, how am I suppose to refine any more pills?”

Hua Shao was still in shock. His confidence was at an all time low. He doesn’t know how to deal with this Spirit Absorbing Pill at all. If Ye Zifeng makes two more of these pills then he won’t be able to compete at all. This had destroyed Hua Shao’s confidence.

On the other side, after the initial shock, Qi Zimo had returned to his normal expression.

“Sword servant. Stand over there and block Ye Zifeng’s view. This time, I will use all my strength to beat him. Does he think that I don’t have a way to counter this Spirit Absorbing Pill?!” Qi Zimo was very arrogant. He had never lost before.

“Yes....master!” The sword servant quickly complied.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “This kid is not bad at all. To be able to grasp the meaning of free for all in an alchemy competition. Not bad.”

Liu Bingqian was all smiles right now, “Big brother rough guy, why don’t we make two more of these pills? We’ll suck all of their pill’s qi away and win!

Before she met Ye Zifeng, all she did was refine pills for elders and higher ups. She didn’t feel like it was fun at all. However, during this competition, Ye Zifeng had shown her the true way of alchemy.”

“That’s not good. This pill is only good for a surprise attack. It’s a one time trick. If people know what we’re refining, then there will be an easy

way to counter this. This was the reason why I had you gather the materials very quickly and blocked everyone's line of sight."

Liu Bingqian was shocked, "The Spirit Absorbing Pill is so strong. What kind of counter is there?"

This pill can even absorb a Spirit Nurturing Pill and a Supreme True Yuan Dan. How can there be a counter to it?

Suddenly, Hua Shao looked as if he thought of something and immediately raised his hand.

"Master Muyun, I want to separate the three of us. The further the better!"

The Spirit Absorbing Pill is strong but the range is limited. This was the reason why Ye Zifeng had them move closer to himself in the beginning.

Hua Shao's reaction was very quick. He thought about it for a few minutes and immediately found a solution.

Muyun Old Devil was silent. The Spirit Absorbing Pill is a bit domineering. If she lets Ye Zifeng continue like this, then there might not be a point in competing anymore.

"This....."

On the side, bother Ye Zifeng and Qi Zimo opened their mouths, "I agree."

The two looked at each other and smiled as if they were old friends who haven't seen each other in a long time.....

Chapter 103: The mantis reaps the locust without noticing the bird behind him

Due to Hua Shao's suggestions, the distance between the three competitors increased.

With this, the usage of the Spirit Absorbing Pill will drastically drop.

Of course, Ye Zifeng didn't care about this at all. This Spirit Absorbing Pill was made to kill Hua Shao in the first place. An expert like Qi Zimo won't be shaken up like Hua Shao at all.

If Ye Zifeng wants to concoct the same pill, then he's basically looking to die.

Liu Bingqian was bewildered, "Big brother rough guy, why would you agree to Hua Shao's suggestion? This was a good chance to beat him."

Ye Zifeng laughed, "It's easy to beat this Hua Shao. There are many ways to do it. However, don't you want to experience being first place at all?"

"First place?" Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up and looked at Ye Zifeng. She had an extremely complicated look in her eyes.

She had always been last place during the alchemy competition. It was a miracle that she had made it past the first round. As for beating Qi Zimo, she had never even thought about it. She didn't even think about beating Hua Shao at all.

"When we refined our first pill, didn't we beat them both? What. Do you not have confidence in yourself?" Ye Zifeng looked at her.

"I....." Liu Bingqian replied shyly, "I had confidence but now we're too far away from them. We can't use the Spirit Absorbing Pill to its maximum output. If we're talking about competing in alchemy, then Qi Zimo outclass us by many times."

She knew that Ye Zifeng was well versed in the Dao of alchemy. However, he can only condense some fire qi and not even a common tier flame. He is also at the fifth stage of qi refining and does not have any qi

energy in his body. He can't compete with Qi Zimo who is at the peak of qi refining at all.

If Ye Zifeng wants to fight Qi Zimo head on, he will definitely lose no matter what.

"Bingqian, do you know what I used this one shot wonder trick as the first pill?" Ye Zifeng revealed a mysterious smile.

Liu Bingqian realized what was wrong and thought about it, "Could it be that you wanted to surprise them and take a W first?"

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "Think about it. Do you think that Qi Zimo will think like you?"

"This....." Liu Bingqian pondered.

"Qi Zimo is an alchemist genius. He is very self centered. He definitely despises us because you were last place during the other competitions. However, now that we beat him with our first pill, he will despise use even more!"

Liu Bingqian was startled, "But, he was applauding you before. It doesn't look like he's despising you at all. He's treating you as a true opponent."

"Opponent?" Ye Zifeng smiled and then pointed at Qi Zimo.

"Nope! He sees us as a prey. Only a self centered person can act like this. When he sees that his prey has the ability to fight back, he will feel excited.

Liu Bingqian stared blankly at Ye Zifeng and felt that he was right....

She feels that even though she is physically close to Ye Zifeng, they weren't close mentally at all. She didn't understand him at all. She didn't know what he was thinking about all the time. She doesn't know what kind of person he is at all!

Can a twenty year old have this kind of personality?

"Big brother rough guy...can you refine a pill that counter Qi Zimo's pill right now?" She was worried about the second pill.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Hold on. Let me ask someone.”

“Ask someone? Who are you going to ask?” Liu Bingqian didn’t know what was going on.

All Ye Zifeng did was smile back and her and then closed his eyes. A cold energy appeared from his brain and circled around the audience. It then flew towards the audience area behind Qi Zimo.

An elder suddenly lifted his head up. His expression turned very ugly.

“Elder Zhao, thanks for coming today.”

Elder Zhao’s was extremely rigid and angrily stroked his beard, “You stinking brat. I didn’t tell you that I was going to come. How did you know what I was here?”

He thought that he had hid his aura pretty well but it was still discovered by Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “First, the alchemy competition is very attractive. There must be people from the Profound Sect here. Didn’t your friend come as well?”

“Yeah. He randomly lost one thousand eight hundred gold coins because of you. He’s so mad that he’s about to kill you after the competition ends.” Elder Zhao was pretty angry.

Ye Zifeng laughed. He knew that he had anger that other elder.

“Second, I told you that I was going to be in Tiandao City before. You probably came because you heard that I was participating.”

Elder Zhao’s face sank, “It’s all because of you. If not, then why do I have to act like a bodyguard and come watch over you?”

“Also, I’ve already noticed you since the beginning.”

During the first round, Ye Zifeng didn’t personally refine the pill. He used this time to look at the other competitors and also look for Elder Zhao.

Elder Zhao was startled, “You stinking brat. You’re good. Who knows

what kind of terrible being you'll become when you grow up..."

To be called a terrible being by an elder of the profound sect, if it was anyone else, they would be so scared that they won't be able to sleep at night. To Ye Zifeng, this was nothing at all.

"It doesn't matter what I become when I grow up. Zifeng will not forget Elder Zhao and Elder Shen's help during this time." Ye Zifeng's words were very sweet.

It won't hurt to say a few good things. He might need Elder Zhao's help in the future so he was trying to get a good relationship with Elder Zhao.

"You stinking brat, you really know how to kiss ass." Elder Zhao was feeling good.

"Elder Zhao, now's not the time to chat. I need your help with something." Ye Zifeng's tone suddenly became serious.

He knows that Elder Zhao was here to protect him in secret. However, since he's here, Ye Zifeng might as well use him for a bit.

Elder Zhao laughed, "You stinking brat. You really are evil. After confirming my location, you pretended to be calm and accepted Hua Shao's proposal of separating the competitors. In the end, you just want me to help you cheat huh."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "This isn't the first time....Do you think that I would be so arrogant without my trump card, you?"

"好一个可一而不可二。"

"Good one."

Elder Zhao shook his head while smiling. He admired Ye Zifeng's mature personality. Ye Zifeng was more meticulous and cautious than he was. He was a special kind of genius.

Age and experience were both factors of personality. Even innate talents are a factor in determining one's personality.

"Alright.....How do you want me to help?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, “It’s simple. Tell me what kind of ingredients Qi Zimo picked for his second pill.”

“So you want to refine something that counters his pill huh? Good thinking.”

In the audience, there was only one person who believed that Ye Zifeng could actually beat Qi Zimo. That was Elder Zhao. In his eyes, Ye Zifeng was able to play around with two people in the Martial Practitioner stage. What is a mere Qi Zimo to him?

Elder Zhao laughed and looked towards Qi Zimo. He saw that Qi Zimo was standing there, staring at the pile of ingredients. After a while, he quickly gathered some ingredients.

Qi Zimo’s sword servant was blocking Ye Zifeng’s view.

“Demon Emperor Grass, Green Asura Fruit, Golden Ginseng, Black Lotus Flower, and some other stuff that I don’t really know....” Elder Zhao listed out what he saw to the best of his ability.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “That’s enough. I know what he’s refining.”

Elder Zhao was shocked, “No way. You already know? What is he making?”

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Spirit Explosion Pill. A Martial Disciple level pill. It has the same effect as a Qi Increasing Pill. It can counter my Spirit Absorbing Pill.”

“Counter.....How can it counter it?” Elder Zhao didn’t understand alchemy, but after watching such a display of excellence this year, he was a bit curious about it.

“The Spirit Explosion Pill contains a lot of spirit energy. It will make my Spirit Absorbing Pill explode. It can be said that it is my Spirit Absorbing Pill’s nemesis. This Qi Zimo is really not simple at all. To be able to find something to counter my pill.”

Elder Zhao shook his head, ‘However....He doesn’t know that even though he’s coveting gains ahead without noticing the dangers behind

him.”

Chapter 104: Disregarding the positions of primary and secondary alchemist

Every pill has a weakness.

In certain situations, even a low level pill will be able to beat out a higher level pill. The Spirit Absorbing Pill is a good example of this.

If Qi Zimo successfully refines the Spirit Explosion Pill, then no matter what, Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill will lose its effect and became a useless pill.

This is what one would call countering the effects of another pill.

Ye Zifeng's eyes lit up and looked towards Bingqian, "Bingqian, block Qi Zimo's view for me. This time, I'll personally pick the ingredients."

In a battle between experts, limiting the opponent's knowledge is very important.

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian was surprised, "Really? You'll personally do it this time?"

"The reason that I didn't make any moves before was to help you get some face back. It's to let others know that you, Liu Bingqian, is not as weak as they expect. However, we're at a crucial moment right now. If I don't make a move now, we might even lose."

Liu Bingqian nodded, "Big brother rough guy, so you've thought about me. I thought you were....."

"What? Did you think that I was being lazy?" Ye Zifeng coughed in embarrassment.

"I didn't say that. Big brother rough guy, it's good that you'll make a move."

Liu Bingqian smiled and listened to Ye Zifeng's instructions. She continuously nodded while Ye Zifeng talked.

Ye Zifeng looked at the ingredients and smiled. He shook his head and

dove right into the small mountain of ingredients to pick out what he needed.

When he picked up the ingredients, it didn't look as graceful as Liu Bingqian. He casually looked at some and threw them to the side. When he picked his ingredients, he grabbed a bunch at a time.

While watching this, Muyun Old Devil couldn't help but be shaken up, "No way. This brat's gathering method is too rough. Either he's a complete newbie or he's an experienced expert. With his age, he must be the former."

Yang Jing giggled, "Master Old Devil, I forget to tell you something last night."

"What?" Muyun Old devil carelessly replied.

"Ye Zifeng refined a Pure Yuan Dan for me in one try."

Muyun Old Devil yelled out a bit. After staring blankly at Ye Zifeng for a bit, she looked over at Yang Jing.

"What did you say? Refined a Pure Yuan Dan in one try? Why didn't you tell me this earlier?" Muyun Old Devil was in a disarray. She was so shocked that her beard was about to fall off.

Yang Jing bit her lips, "This... Master never asked me anything."

.....

Ye Zifeng's method of gathering ingredient was very simple and rough. In just a bit, he gather a large amount of ingredients already.

"Big brother rough guy, why do we need this much ingredient? We can make two pills with this!" Liu Bingqian looked at what Ye Zifeng gathered and asked.

"Bingqian, listen up. This time, we are going to refine two pills....." Ye Zifeng thought about it and replied. It seems like he has a plan already.

Liu Bingqian nodded, "Are we refining two pills like what we did during the first round?"

She would never forget about the time she refined the pill using the ancient concoction method. This was her single most glorifying moment in her career.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “No. Refining two of the same pill won’t do us any good in the competition.”

“Then you mean…. Could it be….?” Liu Bingqian’s eyes lit up.

“That’s right. We’re going to refine two different pills! I plan on duo-refining with you. We’ll refine the two remaining pills and directly make them surrender!”

“Oh my god…..” Liu Bingqian was shocked and was filled with disbelief.

It takes extraordinary skill for someone to refine two of the same pills at once. Now they were trying to refine two different kinds of pill. This was harder than hard. The ingredients will mix and affect each other. Also, it will be very hard to control the flames.

This was basically a desperation move!

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Bingqian, it’s not that bad. Since this competition is allowing two people, there are two ways we can go about this……”

Liu Bingqian let out a soft sound, “Two ways……? Isn’t it so one person can be the primary alchemist while the other person is the secondary alchemist that helps out? How else can it be?”

“But…..What if both people are the primary alchemist?” Ye Zifeng revealed a cold smile.

Liu Bingqian was shocked. In all these years, all of the competitors have brought helpers. She has never heard of anyone bringing another primary alchemist. Every group will always only have one person refining the pill at all times.

Anyone can see the way that Hua Shao, Qi Zimo and the other treated their helpers. They never thought of them as a partner.

Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng on the other hand had mutual respect for each other. They didn’t think about their positions at all.

“Bingqian, they’re all underestimating their own helper’s ability and cannot unleash their maximum potentials. This will be the reason for their failure.”

Liu Bingqian looked over at Ye Zifeng, “You mean…. I can help you?”

Ye Zifeng stuck out three fingers, “Your skills aren’t bad at all. There are three reasons for your past failures. First, you don’t know how to gather ingredients at all. Second, you don’t have enough experience. Third, you don’t have enough confidence. If you can conquer these three weaknesses, then you will become an extraordinary alchemist. Of course, I will help you along the way.”

“Alright! Since big brother rough guy said so, I, Bingqian will try my best!” Liu Bingqian didn’t want to drag Ye Zifeng down at all.

“Then, let’s begin!” Ye Zifeng smiled and dropped the big tray of ingredients into the cauldron. He then separated the ingredients to the sides since they are refining two different pills.

“There are many clear benefits when refining two pills at once. The most difficult part is keeping the ingredients away from each other…..!” When Ye Zifeng was separating the ingredients, he casually reminded Liu Bingqian.

“That’s what I was worried about!” Liu Bingqian nodded and couldn’t help but open her mouth.

“Then, watch me as I take care of this problem….”

Ye Zifeng mysteriously smiled and quickly placed the Spirit Absorbing Pill into the cauldron.

“Big brother rough guy, you….” Liu Bingqian was shocked. She finally regained her senses after a while.

“So that’s how it is.”

She finally understood what Ye Zifeng was planning to do. The Spirit Absorbing Pill that they had refined was not only used to beat Qi Zimo and Hua Shao but it is used to refine the two pills later on. It can help

balance out and stop the ingredients from mixing with each other during the concoction process.

It wasn't hard to realize this after everything was put in place. However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng had planned this all out since the beginning. Who other than Ye Zifeng would be so bold to refine two different pills at once?

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked overa at Liu Bingqian.

"I'll on the left and you'll be on the right. Remember to use your qi to keep the ingredients in place and not let it leak out to the other side....."

"I got it!" Liu Bingqian nodded and condensed her common tier flame on her fingers to light up firewood under the cauldron.

Ye Zifeng wasn't idling around either. He wasn't kidding when he was talking about having two primary alchemists.

Right now, the insides of the cauldron had been split into two sides. Neither of them can mess up now. They have to do their best to finish their task. They were working together as equals.

Neither Qi Zimo nor Hua Shao could beat Ye Zifeng in the aspect of teamwork. This was because Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian were friends and mutually respected each other.

However, Qi Zimo and Hua Shao's situation was different. They would feel embarrassed if they had to share the same position with their helpers. This was because they were their servants.

"Two people refining huh? This Ye Zifeng is quite creative." Qi Zimo sighed and looked at his sword servant.

When Qi Zimo saw this, he didn't seem to care at all.

"Say, sword servant. Do you think my Spirit Explosion Pill will be able to take down Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill?" Qi Zimo knew that his pill was the nemesis of Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill. However, he felt that something was wrong.

The sword servant confidently replied, "That's not a problem. The end

result will always be the same. Master will obtain first pace. I am very confident in master's ability!"

"Really? Can I really get first place this time?" Qi Zimo furrowed his brows. He didn't care about the first place anymore after winning so many times. However, after he met Ye Zifeng, he felt a bit flustered as if he was going to lose his place at the top.

"Master....." The sword servant was a bit worried about Qi Zimo.

Of course, this only lasted for a moment. Qi Zimo's confidence returned very quickly.

"It's nothing. Maybe it's because I haven't felt like this in a while. Ye Zifeng is only a prey. I will crush whatever dreams he have of obtaining the first place from me. I'll teach him what it means to mess with me, Qi Zimo!"

Chapter 105: I won?

Qi Zimo wasn't really being arrogant right now. He was just so used to winning that this feeling came naturally.

It's like how a successful general won't be startled by some movements in the grass. He was confident in his abilities destroy whatever's in his way.

Qi Zimo wasn't oversensitive. His gut feeling was correct in the fact that Ye Zifeng was a dangerous opponent. After all, who in the world besides Ye Zifeng himself, knows that Ye Zifeng was a supreme expert class alchemist that crossed over from another world into this trash's body?

With Ye Zifeng exerting his pressure and dominance, Qi Zimo couldn't help but feel a bit nervous.

However, no matter how the opponent was feeling, Ye Zifeng had to do his best. If he didn't, then he won't be able to win.

"Bingqian, you have to listen to my instructions because this is the first time you're refining with someone else. Don't mess up." Ye Zifeng was very serious.

He can guarantee that he won't make any mistakes but he doesn't know if Liu Bingqian would.

"Alright. I'll do exactly as you say." She had followed Ye Zifeng for a few times now so she's quite used to his methods.

Ye Zifeng nodded, "The first step is to harmonize our qi. Give me your hand."

Liu Bingqian squealed. Her face turned red, "Do we really have to do this?"

"Of course. Didn't you just say that you'll do as I say? Are you lying to me?" Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and extended his hands towards Bingqian.

"I'm not lying to you....."

“Then do it quickly.” Ye Zifeng saw that the qi energy inside the cauldron is starting to become unstable and hurriedly said.

Liu Bingqian’s beautiful face was flushed with embarrassment as she agreed. She extended her jade hands towards Ye Zifeng’s hands. When the hands touched, Ye Zifeng quickly grabbed onto her hands.

Her held it tightly as the qi from Ye Zifeng’s hand started to enter into Liu Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian was at the peak of qi refining while Ye Zifeng was at the fifth stage of qi refining. If they refine the pills together, their qi won’t match and an accident might happen. Thus, Ye Zifeng was trying to balance out the qi inside of Liu Bingqian right now.

From her hands, Liu Bingqian can feel Ye Zifeng’s qi enter her body. This unceasing stream of warm qi made her feel as if she was floating in the clouds.

The feeling of their qi combining was very unique. It made Liu Bingqian’s heart trembled a bit.

Could this be.... Could this be the legendary duo-cultivation?

However, Liu Bingqian did not have a deep understanding of this matter. Compared to real duo cultivation methods, this hand touching was nothing at all!

“Bingqian.....Bingqian.....”

Bingqian was immersed in this unique and mysterious feeling until Ye Zifeng’s voice brought her back to reality.

She slowly opened her eyes and saw that Ye Zifeng was staring at the cauldron while calling her name. He didn’t even look at her.

“Bingqian, did you rest properly last night? You’re falling asleep on me!”

These words completely woke her up. With a red face she looked back at him, “No I’m not!”

“Then concentrate. I’ve already harmonized our qi. Our qi won’t be clashing with each other anytime soon. We have to start refining quickly!”

Hearing the words ‘start refining’, Liu Bingqian became nervous. She was responsible for half of this refinement.

Ye Zifeng smiled at her, “Don’t worry too much. Relax and listen to my instructions. All you need to do is take care of the ingredients on your side and do everything normally. I’ll try to help out if I have time.”

“Also, don’t let go of my hand!”

“Alright. I remember.” Liu Bingqian’s face was back to normal and started to become serious.

“Start!”

The two smiled at each other and started at the same time.

.....

Hua Shao was sitting there with sweat all over his head.

“Congratulations to young master for completing the Soul Controlling Pill.” Hua Shao’s servant’s face was filled with joy. Even though this Soul Controlling Pill’s quality was not as high as the Spirit Nurturing Pill, it was much harder to refine.

To be able to regain his composure and refine such a difficult pill in a short amount of time. This wasn’t easy for Hua Shao to do at all.

He had exhausted his qi to refine this pill. Hua Shao was sitting there trying to catch his breath.

“Don’t worry about me. Go take a look at what Qi Zimo and Ye Zifeng are doing.

The servant quickly looked up and looked around.

“There’s purple qi coming out of Qi Zimo’s cauldron. It seems like he’s almost done with his second pill too. As for Ye Zifeng.....

The servant was startled and didn’t finish his sentence. A strange look appeared on his face.

“What are they doing? Tell me quickly.” Hua Shao saw that his servant had stopped talking and yelled out.

“They’re duo-refining..... I think they’re trying to refine two different pills at once. From what I can see, they’re still at the beginning stages.” The servant was afraid of his young master and quickly replied.

“Duo-refining? Are they trying to lose?”

Hua Shao was startled and then laughed, “Even the heavens are helping me. I thought that I would lose to Liu Bingqian but now it seems that they’re so desperate that they have to use this move. They’re basically looking to lose!”

Hua Shao had lost his honor already. In this competition, he doesn’t want to try and beat Qi Zimo anymore. As long as he beats Liu Bingqian, it’ll count as a win!

.....

The purple qi had formed while Qi Zimo stared at his cauldron. In the last moments, he was still trying to increase the quality of this Spirit Explosion Pill.

After a bit, he sent the last strands of qi into the cauldron.

“Completed!”

He quickly opened up the cauldron and laughed, “Ye Zifeng, even though you surprised me with that Spirit Absorbing Pill, you’re still not my opponent! The winner shall be me!”

The dense qi that gathered inside the cauldron immediately shot up into the sky and created a large vortex of qi. When everyone saw this, they couldn’t help but feel astonished.

“It really is the Spirit Explosion Pill!” When Elder Zhao saw that Ye Zifeng was right, he couldn’t help but feel shocked. It was true that he helped Ye Zifeng but if it was anyone else that asked him, they would not have guessed what kind of pill Qi Zimo was making.

Elder Zhao sighed, “It seems like the Profound Sect will have to trouble this stinking brat for pills in the future...”

Besides Elder Zhao, all of the other elders stood up in shock. They all

started to praise Qi Zimo. Even if a normal person was present, they would be able to tell how powerful Qi Zimo's pill was from the vortex of qi energy.

"Spirit Explosion Pill. A Spirit Explosion Pill at the peak of Huang Tier.

It was not easy for someone to refine a pill at the peak of Huang Tier with a common tier cauldron. Also, this Spirit Explosion Pill was the Spirit Absorbing Pill's nemesis!

Qi Zimo was confident that no matter what pill Ye Zifeng refined, it will not be better than his Spirit Explosion Pill at the peak of Huang Tier.

This was a specially created to counter the Spirit Absorbing Pill. However, the pill itself was already a high level pill.

"Huh? Where that that Spirit Absorbing Pill go? Sword servant, did you see anything?" Qi Zimo looked over at his servant.

This was suppose to the time when his Spirit Explosion Pill shined. However, it didn't go as planned.

The sword servant shook his head, "Liu Bingqian was blocking my view. I couldn't see what was happening at all. Could they have hid the Spirit Absorbing Pill?"

Qi Zimo was not satisfied with this answer and looked over at Ye Zifeng.

.....

When Ye Zifeng looked at Qi Zimo's Spirit Explosion Pill, he let out a soft laugh. He looked back at his cauldron and saw that purple qi was forming.

"Big brother rough guy, I'm ready." Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng with an eye of anticipation.

She was so excited that her hand began to sweat. Ye Zifeng could feel it with his hand as well.

"I'm ready too." Ye Zifeng smiled.

The two's fingers intertwined as they looked at each other. They counted

to three and with their fastest speed, they simultaneously drew their qi out from the cauldron.

In the next moment, the cauldron shook and a green light appeared. The qi bursted through the cauldron and opened up the lid by itself. It blew past everything and pierced through the heavens.

At the same time, the Spirit Explosion Pill started to release its qi as if it had found its target. It started to fly towards Ye Zifeng's cauldron.

Qi Zimo's eyes lit up, "I won!"

Chapter 106: Destroying glory

“Won?” Ye Zifeng shook his head when he heard Qi Zimo’s declaration of victory. All he did was smile and didn’t make any comments.

The qi from the Spirit Explosion Pill disappeared into the Ye Zifeng’s cauldron where the Spirit Absorbing Pill lied.

The already shaking cauldron began to shake even more violently as streaks of qi overflowed from it. Due to this, the cauldron suddenly ascended into the air.

The cauldron started to buzz in mid air, attracting everyone’s attention.

“What kind of pill is he refining? How come it seems so scary?”

“Right? This is the first time I’ve seen a cauldron float in mid air. Say, Is Ye Zifeng using his qi to lift it up?”

“Who the hell has so much time and energy to lift a cauldron with their qi? Nonsense! From what I can see, this sight is created by the vortex of the Spirit Explosion Pill’s qi.”

At this moment, even Muyun Old Devil’s expression began to change. Normally, a battle between pills shouldn’t be this fierce....

She pondered while staring at the floating cauldron. Suddenly, a small crack appeared at the bottom of the cauldron.

A shocked expression appeared on her face as she yelled out, “Not good!”

The crack suddenly spread throughout the entire cauldron and with a crisp sound, the entire cauldron exploded like a melon being smashed open. The remains of the cauldron fell onto the floor below.

Everyone was shocked. Even Elder Zhao was worried for Ye Zifeng.

“.....I won. I won!”

Qi Zimo came back to his senses and laughed loudly, “Do you think that I, Qi Zimo, won’t be able to find a way to stop your Spirit Absorbing Pill? This Spirit Explosion Pill was created to teach you, Ye Zifeng, a lesson. It is

to let you know that no matter how hard you try, you will not surpass me!"

Qi Zimo was very prideful. When his Supreme True Yuan Dan was beaten by Ye Zifeng, he was feeling a bit depressed. However, after a while, he found himself again and started to refine the Spirit Explosion Pill to regain his glory.

Lost glory can always be rediscovered!

When Hua Shao saw that Ye Zifeng's cauldron had blown up, he felt a lot better. He knew that he couldn't beat so he tried his best to beat Ye Zifeng. Now, it seems like his victory was secured.

"Ye Zifeng, your Spirit Absorbing Pill is destroyed. Your cauldron blew up too. Let's see how you refine your third pill!" Hua Shao had a proud look in his eyes.

Ye Zifeng looked at them and smiled, "So what if the cauldron is destroyed? I don't need to refine anything else."

Hua Shao laughed loudly, "So you've finally given up? Knowing when to back off is a good quality too. For you to understand something like this, it seems like there's hope for the future of Leizhou City."

Ye Zifeng didn't want to talk nonsense with this guy anymore and moved towards the broken pieces of the cauldron on the floor. He used his hands to move the fragments of the cauldron around as if he was searching for something.

"Alright Ye Zifeng. Stop being so muddleheaded. The cauldron is broken already. Your pill probably turned into slag from the explosion. There's no need to check." Hua Shao laughed even louder.

"You sure that my pill turn turned into slag?" Ye Zifeng revealed a smile.

In the next moment, Hua Shao's laughter suddenly came to a halt as he looked at Ye Zifeng's hand. He was so shocked that he couldn't say another word.

Not only did Hua Shao's expression change, everyone else's, including Muyun Old Devil's expression changed!

Rays of bright light appeared from Ye Zifeng's hand while a hissing sound can be heard.. It was clear that even though the cauldron exploded, Ye Zifeng's pill was fully intact.

Spirt Absorbing Pill! No, there was something else there!

Two smaller pills appeared besides the Spirit Absorbing Pill while releasing a bright ray of light in all directions.

When Qi Zimo saw this, his expression turned very ugly. This meant that his Spirit Explosion Pill did not destroy the Spirit Absorbing Pill. This meant that he had failed. However, what he didn't understand was why the Spirit Explosion Pill failed to destroy the Spirit Absorbing Pill.

Hua Shao was so shocked that his jaws dropped. Ye Zifeng's Spirit Absorbing Pill was still intact. His chances of victory had instantly dropped back down to zero.

Muyun Old Devil was in shock as her voice shook, "Ye Zifeng.....Could this be..... The Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation?" She see a lot of things in her life and was well versed in the dao of alchemy. However, she couldn't believe her own two eyes at this moment.

When the judges heard the words 'Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation', none of them could sit still. They immediately stood up and stared at the three pills.

"What? Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation? How can that be? He can't even condense a common tier flame yet. How can he understand something like this?" Elder Shao shook his head.

"That's right. This is not possible. The Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation is one of the most exquisite formations in the dao of alchemy. How can someone from Leizhou City learn something like this?"

"This is indeed the Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation!"

Ye Zifeng's statement shattered all doubts the judges had.

Since Ye Zifeng had admitted it himself, all the judges couldn't help but be startled.

Yang Jing looked over at her master.

“Master Old Devil. What is this Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation? Judging from everyone’s reaction, it must be incredible right?”

Muyun Old Devil returned to her sense and nodded, “It is definitely incredible. When you told me that Ye Zifeng refined that Pure Yuan Dan in one try, I didn’t really believe you. However, now I can’t help but believe you!”

“You’ve seen how powerful the Spirit Absorbing Pill is already. It can absorbing the qi from nearby pills. However, this kind of pill has a lot of counters. Thus, if you want to stop the pill from being countered, you need to use some other pills and build a formation. What Ye Zifeng built was the Spirit Absorbing Pill formation that is used to aid the Spirit Absorbing Pill from being dominated by other pills.”

“Formation? Could it be that if you group different pills together, they will create a special effect?” Yang Jing was startled and shocked.

She had followed Muyun Old Devil for many years already but have never heard of something like this. She did not get it at all.

“That’s right. It’s exactly like this. A normal person won’t be able to do something like this at all. Who is this Ye Zifeng? Why is he so incredible? How come I didn’t hear about him from Bingqian before?”

When Muyun Old Devil first met Ye Zifeng, she thought that he was just a pretty boy strolling around. She felt that other than his slightly good looks, there was nothing much to him. But now, Ye Zifeng’s abilities had far surpassed his imaginations. If Liu Bingqian had invited Ye Zifeng in the past few years, her placements might have been reversed and she would have taken first every time!

Thinking about this, Muyun Old Devil couldn’t help but become interested in this Ye Zifeng.

“This Ye Zifeng is the young master of the Ye clan in Leizhou City. However, I heard that he was a trash before and have only started to show his abilities this year. His rise to prominence was very sudden.” Yang Jing

heard this from Liu Bingqian and told her master.

"Is that so?" Muyun Old Devil stroked her beard in a profound manner.

"Alright. Whatever. The results of this competition is very clear already. Let's wait until the end before I go up and ask him some questions." Muyun Old Devil decided this in her mind.

.....

The existence of this formation brought despair to the other two competitors.

"Lost.....I lost....." Hua Shao was on his knees as he looked up and sighed.

The one who couldn't accept this the most was Qi Zimo!

Ye Zifeng had forced him to destroy his own pill the first time around. This time, Ye Zifeng had completely dominated him. He couldn't beat Ye Zifeng even though he made a counter to his pill.

There was no chance for Qi Zimo to come back anymore.

The glory and honor that he had built up in so many years was shattered just like that. Some people who supported Qi Zimo before was now supporting Ye Zifeng.

"Why? Ye Zifeng. Why do you know how to build Pill Formations? How did you know that I was refining the Spirit Explosion Pill?!"

If Ye Zifeng didn't know what kind of pill Qi ZImo was refinine, then the effect of the Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation would significantly reduced. Qi Zimo would have had a chance to win.

Qi Zimo didn't lose because he was weak. He lost because Ye Zifeng was his opponent.

Qi Zimo looked up at Ye Zifeng and questioned exploded from his mouth. He started yelling at Ye Zifeng.

"Why? Why did you have to destroy my glory!?" When Qi Zimo said that, his voice had become very weak. This was the first time he had tasted

defeat. To a genius like Qi Zimo, this was very humiliating.

Chapter 107: I am not your opponent

Ye Zifeng saw that Qi Zimo was about to cry and finally replied to him, “It’s because you didn’t see me as an equal opponent in the beginning.”

“I didn’t treat you as an opponent?” Qi Zimo was startled. He felt his heart shook. He believed that compared to Hua Shao and the others, he treated Ye Zifeng with more respect.

However, Ye Zifeng actually said that he didn’t see him as an opponent.

“If you really did see me as an equal, then I wouldn’t have used the Spirit Absorbing Pill.”

Qi Zimo is a smart guy. After listening to what Ye Zifeng said, he realized something and nodded.

“So that’s how it is..... I lost huh..... Right now, I’m really not worthy to be your opponent yet.” Since the beginning, Qi Zimo looked at Ye Zifeng as if Ye Zifeng was his prey. He didn’t treat him equally at all.

His Spirit Explosion Pill can counter Ye Zifeng’s Spirit Absorption Pill but that didn’t mean that Ye Zifeng didn’t have more tricks up his sleeve.

The sword servant worriedly looked at Qi Zimo, “Master.... Are you alright?” This was the first time that Qi Zimo had admitted defeat in their life!

Qi Zimo bitterly laughed and didn’t answer his servant. All he did was walk towards his cauldron. He had admitted defeat.....

“Master..... Wait for me.....”

Qi Zimo admitted defeat! That arrogant Qi Zimo! He still has time to refine one more pill and yet he surrendered anyways.

No one in the audience thought at Qi Zimo would lose. They had never talked about what happens if he lose. They all believed that he wouldn’t lose a single round in the next ten years!

However, no one expected that a first time participant, Ye Zifeng, would come in like a clap of thunder. Not only did he disqualified two people

from competing next year, he also took the championship from Qi Zimo. He had become known as the best alchemist in Leizhou City.

During this tournament, not only did he bring himself glory, he also brought glory to the entire Leizhou City.

They can already imagine how the entire city would react when Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng brings this news back to Leizhou City. Maybe their names will even go down in the record books!

“Then... How about you? Hua Shao....Do you still want to go?” Ye Zifeng turned and stared at Hua Shao.

Even Qi Zimo had admitted defeat already. There was no point for Hua Shao to continue anymore either. When Ye Zifeng’s gaze landed on him, Hua Shao felt fear in his heart.

“I.... I concede.....I admit, that I am not your opponent.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and pointed towards Liu Bingqian, “It’s not only me who beat you. If you have the face to concede to a newcomer like me, why don’t you admit defeat to Liu Bingqian instead.

Hua Shao thought about it. If he was going to admit defeat, it’s better to concede to Liu Bingqian instead of this newcomer.

His expression turned green, “Alright. Liu Bingqian. I admit defeat. This time, you’re better than me.”

“But let me tell you this. Next year, don’t think about beating me!”

After saying that, he followed Qi Zimo and walked away from his cauldron. At the same time, he bowed towards Muyun Old Devil, signaling that he was going to concede. Even after admitting defeat, he still had his manners with him.

Just like this, the winner was decided even without the judges judging anything. Two out of three competitors have conceded.

That means that Liu Bingqian was the winner of the tournament!

After Liu Bingqian heard Hua Shao admit his defeat, she became so excited that tears rolled down her cheeks.

All this time, all the other people treated her like a loser and would slander her whenever they could. However, she was able to walk out in glory today.

“Big brother rough guy. How can I ever repay you? I really don’t know how to thank you!” Liu Bingqian grabbed both of Ye Zifeng’s hand with an excited look on her face.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “It wasn’t all me. If you weren’t here, I wouldn’t have been able to beat Qi Zimo.”

Ye Zifeng thought about using the duo refining technique in the spur of the moment. It was needed to create the Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation. Without Liu Bingqian, he would not have been able to create such a formation.

It was two against one so Qi Zimo was bound to lose.

“Big Brother Rough Guy. I know. If it was just me by myself, I won’t even get past the first round.”

In her heart, Liu Bingqian knew that she could not have won the entire tournament by herself. It was all due to Ye Zifeng’s help.

Ye Zifeng smiled and stared into Liu Bingqian’s eyes, “Alright. Don’t think too much. We should enjoy the praises from the audience. Oh yeah, what kind of prize are they going to give out?”

“Prize?” Liu Bingqian finally remembered about the prize for winning and a happy expression appeared on her face. However, she started to shake her head.

“Big brother rough guy, no matter what kind of prize we get, you should take it. If it wasn’t for you, how could I have gotten here at all.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Maybe there will be prizes for the both of us!”

“That would be great.”

……

At the same time, the audience erupted.

“Oh my god. Is this real life? The one’s who have always been in the first and second place actually lost to that forever last place Liu Bingqian?”

“Yeah. Qi Zimo and Hua Shao didn’t even concoct their last pill and yet they admitted defeat. They won without the judges even judging anything. This ..... This is simply outrageous!”

“Who is that Ye Zifeng? From what I can see, Liu Bingqian was able to win all because of that guy. I’ve never heard of him before..... How about you guys?”

Some people were asking others if they have heard of Ye Zifeng but no one knew. This was a dark horse that came out of nowhere.

“I heard that Leizhou family has a Ye clan. However, their young master is a retard. Could this Ye Zifeng be him?”

“If a retard can refine such an incredible pill, then what are we? If a clan has an alchemist, they would treat him like an ancestor within the clan.... It shouldn’t be him....”

People started to gather around Muyun Old Devil and started to congratulate her.

“Senior Muyun must have great teaching abilities to have raised such an incredible disciple. Miss Bingqian is exceptionally intelligent as well. Congratulations on placing first.

“That’s right. Senior Muyun. You should tell us how you are training your disciple. Maybe we can train our disciples the same way.

These flattering words continuously entered Muyun Old Devil’s ears. She smiled as a reply and didn’t say anything at all.

Yang Jing felt a bit unhappy and was pulled her master aside.

“Hmph. These people are too fake. In the past few years, they’ve all yelled at and slandered junior sister. Now that junior sister won first place, they all started to compliment her. These people are too hypocritical!”

Muyun Old Devil smiled and shook her head, “Jing-er, you can’t blame them. It’s not like you don’t know what the prize is for the alchemy

competition. They can't help but kiss up."

"The prize?"

After being reminded, she finally understood the intention of these people, "Oh? So master's meaning is that after junior sister and Ye Zifeng receives the Passage Medallion from the Profound Sect, they can freely enter and exit Tiandao City?"

Yang Jing had known what the prize is for a while now. She didn't tell Liu Bingqian what it was because she didn't think that Liu Bingqian would have a chance at first place at all.

Muyun Old Devil is one of the highly respected people in Tiandao City. She also has some connections with the people from the Profound Sect, so it wasn't extremely hard for her to obtain two Passage Medallions from the Profound Sect.

As an exchange, some of the Profound Sect's elders were allowed to enter her estate and buy some nice pills for themselves.

There were benefits to both sides. Muyun Old Devil will refine pills for the Profound Sect and the Profound Sect will help her do some favors.

Muyun Old Devil smiled and nodded, "The Profound Sect's Passage Medallion.... Not mention the people from the five cities, even the people in Tiandao City would have a hard time obtaining something like that. I had to refine a few hundred rounds of pills before the higher ups in the Profound Sect would give me one. I guess Bingqian got lucky this time."

This Passage Medallion is a very rare item. It is even rarer than a Spirit Tier treasure. If you don't have a medallion or if you're not a disciple of the Profound Sect, then you will immediately be seen as an enemy if you try to enter the sect.

"Actually, this Passage Medallion is not that useful to the winners. After winning the tournament, many elders from the Profound Sect will ask them to refine pills for them.

Muyun Old Devil smiled and looked over at the group of people in the crowd.....

Chapter 108: One more time!

The result of the tournament was out of everyone's expectations.

Those who had placed bets on Qi Zimo winning the whole thing lost all their money. Liang Nine was one of them. He felt pain in his heart. He hated himself for coming to this year's alchemy competition. He hated himself for being unlucky and meeting Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian were treated as the dark horse going into the second round. Not only did they become champions, they made a name for themselves. They won glory for their Leizhou City.

They have also received the Profound Sect's Passage Medallion. With this, they have opened up another road in their path of cultivation!

After the tournament ended, Hua Shao slipped away without anyone noticing after losing all of his face. He slipped away just like Liu Bingqian did in the past.

On the other hand, Liu Bingqian was basked in glory. She wasn't ridiculed by others like before. She was standing in the spotlight, receiving praises.

At the same time, Qi Zimo gritted his teeth and walked towards Ye Zifeng. He had a very dark expression and his hands were clenched.

Liu Bingqian was scared that Qi Zimo would try to fight Ye Zifeng and immediately walked in between them. She then coldly looked at Qi Zimo.

"Qi Zimo. What do you want? The alchemy competition is over. Why don't you go back to your Lingfeng City? Don't try to do anything that will dishonor your city."

She knows that Qi Zimo was at the peak of qi refining. If he really wanted to fight Ye Zifeng, then Ye Zifeng won't be able to do anything.

Even Qi Zimo's sword servant wanted to save some face and immediately walked forward, "Master. We should go. Let's not cause any trouble....."

Qi Zimo turned around and fiercely looked at his sword servant, signaling for him to shut up.

When Qi Zimo looked back, he didn't even look at Liu Bingqian and directly stared into Ye Zifeng's eyes, "After I turned twelve, I have never lost in alchemy to someone of the second generation. You are the first to defeat me."

Ye Zifeng smiled, showing that he didn't really care about it.

"There's always someone better than you. I can beat you today, but tomorrow maybe someone else will beat you."

Qi Zimo's mouth twitched. He couldn't say anything back...

"That's right. In the past, I thought that as long as I diligently study the dao of alchemy, I can continue to refine incredible pills and be the best. However, now I finally understand that there will always be someone better out there somewhere. As for that Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation, I have read every single book regarding alchemy in Lingfeng City and have never seen something like that before. You have opened my eyes."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Then, what do you want? It doesn't look like you want to be my friend and talk the dao of alchemy with me though."

"Making friends?" Qi ZImo shook his head, " I am very narrow-minded. I came here to make an appointment with you. In this half year, I will leave to study alchemy in another place. When I return, I want to have another match with you!"

"So you're saying you want to have an alchemy competition with me in half a year?" Ye Zifeng kept his smile on his face.

"That's right. Do you dare?" Qi Zimo's words had a hint of arrogance. When he lost to Ye Zifeng, he didn't feel like he lost because his skills were inefficient. He wanted to beat him and win back his pride.

When Liu Bingqian heard that Qi Zimo only wanted to have another alchemy match, she calmed down a bit and took a step back so the two of them can talk face to face.

Ye Zifeng laughed. He was at his weakest state right now and could not use any of his abilities. In the future, the distance between their skills will only grow. This competition was the one where Qi Zimo had the greatest chance of beating Ye Zifeng. However, Ye Zifeng still won in the end.

“No. I don’t want to have another match with you.” Ye Zifeng spoke without anything care.

Qi Zimo was startled, “Why? Do you think you’ll lose?”

If Ye Zifeng didn’t want to have another competition, then that means that this will be the last time they compete against each other. He won’t be able to win his pride back.

“I don’t care about winning or losing. Do you know why I entered this competition in the first place? It is to find ways to help me increase my cultivation. It’s all for myself. I don’t even know you and I won’t get anything out of competing with you. Why should I agree?” Ye Zifeng shook his head.

Qi Zimo’s eyes widened. He was one of the prominent figures of the younger generation that many people want to have connections with. However, Ye Zifeng just straight up rejected him.

“You..... You want some benefits?”

Qi Zimo’s jaws dropped. This was the first time hearing about wanting some benefits from someone challenging you.

The sword servant bitterly smiled, “Master....If he doesn’t want to, then we don’t need to.....”

Qi Zimo was very stubborn. How can this mere sword servant’s words change his mind? If Ye Zifeng doesn’t want to compete, then he will make him. He is someone who seeks perfection and will do anything to achieve that.

He looked fiercely at his sword servant again, telling him to shut up.

Ye Zifeng looked at Liu Bingqian and smiled, “Bingqian, let’s go.”

“Hold on, Ye Zifeng!”

Qi Zimo finally gave in. He had finally found a worthy opponent. He had to do everything in his ability to compete with him again.

Ye Zifeng looked back, “Do you need anything else?”

“Benefits..... What kind of benefits do you want?” Qi Zimo’s mouth began to twitch.

“Ingredients.... Yeah, Ingredients! You’re crazy about alchemy right? You must want a lot of ingredients. Come to my Lingfeng City and I will give you a lot of ingredients.”

Ye Zifeng indifferently looked at him, “It seems like you misunderstood me. Or maybe I didn’t explain it clear enough.....”

Before Ye Zifeng could finish talk, Qi Zimo immediately added, “You’re in the fifth stage of qi refining right now. You’ll have to breakthrough into the Martial Disciple realm sooner or later. I have the ingredients for a Supreme True Yuan Dan. If you want it, I can give them to you!”

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “I forgot to tell you. I am a man of principles. I won’t compete with you..... unless.....”

“Unless what?” Qi Zimo’s eyes lit up when he heard this.

Ye Zifeng took his Passage Medallion out and played around with it. He then sighed, “I wanted to gift this medallion to someone else, but then I won’t have one.”

Qi Zimo looked at him and understood what he meant, “Shit. Fine. I won a Passage Medallion a year or two ago too. If you agree to compete with me then I can give you this medallion!”

“Oh?” Ye Zifeng smiled.

The sword servant’s expression turned ashen, “Master, this medallion is very important to the clan. Don’t be rash.”

“Shut up. I won this myself. I can do whatever I want with it!”

Qi Zimp’s expression sank as he looked back at Ye Zifeng, “How about it? Do you agree?”

Qi Zimo had a very arrogant personality. He won't be able to sleep well with this loss in his mind. Thus, if Ye Zifeng doesn't accept this rematch, then he will go crazy. He will never be able to taste victory again. It will be very bad for his growth.

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, "Since I am a man with principles.... I'll agree to it then!"

"当真？"

"Really?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, "If I, Ye Zifeng says it, then I won't go back on my word. If you don't believe me, we can draw up a blood contract."

Qi Zimo felt refreshed after hearing that.

"There's no need for a blood contract. Half a year later, I will find you myself. Just don't forget about it."

"Of course."

Ye Zifeng smiled and extended his hand.

Qi Zimo was shook. Since he agreed already, he looked at his sword servant, "Give him the medallion."

"Yes, master." The sword servant shook his head while bitterly laughing. He took the medallion out and placed it on Ye Zifeng's hand.

Ye Zifeng received the medallion with a big smile on his face. Now, he had two medallions.

Compared to resources, this medallion was way more useful.

Ye Zifeng was going to help the Ye clan rise in power. With the medallions, he will spread his influence in the Profound Sect and bring the ye clan along with him.

"Ye Zifeng, I hope you will remember our promise today. After I come back, I will definitely beat you!"

Ye Zifeng lightly chuckled, "Alright. Then I'll wait for that day."

Chapter 109: The Uses of the Pill Formation Formula.

The winners of the alchemy competition could be said to be at the same level as the young geniuses in Tiandao City. They can be arrogant in their own ways.

Qi Zimo was one of the many people that looked for Ye Zifeng after the competition. After Qi Zimo left, many representatives from other clans tried to curry favors with Ye Zifeng, hoping that he would help them refine pills.

Of course, they were all rejected by Ye Zifeng for one reason or another. Many of them were dejected and angry.

With this, the alchemy competition officially ended.

Looking at how the guests were all gradually leaving, Muyun Old Devil let out a long sigh.

After a bit, Muyun Old Devil and Liu Bingqian both looked each other. They have worked hard today and finally laughed.

This time, Bingqian's victory helped Muyun Old Devil gain a lot of face. Now, people won't say that she sucks at teaching people anymore.

Muyun Old Devil pulled Bingqian to the side and laughed, "Bingqian, where did you find this Ye Zifeng? Where did this guy come from? It was getting late yesterday so I didn't have time to ask. Why don't we have a good chat now?"

Ye Zifeng was busy dealing with the people from other clans and sects. Muyun Old Devil took this chance to pull Bingqian aside and ask her a few questions.

Liu Bingqian giggled, "Master. Didn't you tell me that I would lose face if I brought someone like Ye Zifeng, who couldn't even condense a common tier flame, to the competition?"

"This....."

Muyun Old Devil glared at Bingqian, “You brat. You’re always forgetful when it comes to alchemy but you can remember something like this? Are you trying to make me mad?”

“Who said I’m forgetful when it comes to alchemy? Didn’t I help you gain some face?” Liu Bingqian laughed.

“Give me a break! Other people can see it, but I was the one that taught you everything that you know. Do you think I don’t know what your alchemy level is? Ancient Concoction Technique? Duo-Refining? Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation? If you know a single one of these techniques, you wouldn’t have been last place in all these years.” Muyun Old Devil yelled.

A crafty and sly expression appeared in Liu Bingqian’s eyes, “Master. If you want to know about him, then why don’t you ask him yourself?”

Muyun Old Devil was startled and pinched Liu Bingqian’s arm.

“You brat. How dare you not listen to your master.....”

Liu Bingqian puckered up and pointed towards Ye Zifeng, “Alright master. Look. He’s coming here right now.”

When Muyun Old Devil saw that Ye Zifeng was walking over, she put a serious look on her face.

“Ye Zifeng, how was the discussion? Did they invite you to refine pills for them?”

The biggest benefit of winning the competition was not the prize but the reputation that one will receive. They can use this reputation to make connections with some big shots in strong clans and sects.

If it wasn’t for this, then Hua Shao wouldn’t have done so much to show off his skills.

“A lot of people have invited me to refine pills for them. However, I rejected them.” Ye Zifeng calmly answered.

Muyun Old Devil nodded while smiling, “The main sect in Tiandao City is the Profound Sect. You don’t have to accept the offers from smaller

sects. I like your guts."

"The ones that I just rejected were people from the Profound Sect."

Muyun Old Devil was startled and her mouth started to twitch.

"You rejected the people from the Profound Sect? Did you somehow manage to get brain damage in this short amount of time? Do you know how many people would kill to enter the Profound Sect? And you still rejected them? What are you thinking? Even the arrogant Qi Zimo would comply and refine pills for them."

Muyun Old Devil was going crazy. She was not an exception either. Even she would respect the Profound Sect and refine pills for them. Ye Zifeng actually let such a good chance go by.

In Tiandao City, the Profound Sect is the number one power that no one wanted to offend.

"I rejected that person from the Profound Sect and not the Profound Sect itself." Ye Zifeng's mouth curved up into a smile.

"What do you mean?" Muyun Old Devil questioned.

Ye Zifeng calmly replied, "The Profound Sect is very big. There's also a lot of different people in there. When I reject them, they will definitely go back to the sect and tell everyone how haughty I am and how I am failed to appreciate this opportunity. This is the so called 'Good things won't be said, but bad things will spread.' This way, I can get more people from the Profound Sect to take the initiative and come to me."

"But what if they don't take the initiative?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Well I still have the Passage Medallion. I also know some people in there."

"So that's how it is. It seems like everything's going according to your plan."

Ye Zifeng looked like a youngster but when he spoke, he spoke with a mature personality.

Muyun Old Devil continuously praised Ye Zifeng in her heart. She slowly

became more and more fond of Ye Zifeng.

"Ye Zifeng. Have you ever thought about working in my Muyun Estate?" Muyun Old Devil couldn't help but ask.

Liu Bingqian was surprise, "Master, are you trying to take him in as a disciple? That's great. With this, I can be his senior sister! With the two of us, we will win first place in the alchemy competition everywhere!"

"Go Go Go. What are you blabbering about. Go play with your senior sister Jing." Muyun Old Devil showed a slight hint of anger.

Liu Bingqian giggled. She knew that her master wanted to talk with Ye Zifeng alone. She respected her master's wishes and walked out.

Ye Zifeng watched as Liu Bingqian left and then spoke,

"I thank senior Muyun for appreciating me, but....."

Muyun Old Devil laughed, "You want to reject my suggestion too?"

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "I want to stay in the Muyun Estate but, I have some problems...."

Hearing that Ye Zifeng was willing to stay in her estate, a happy expression appeared on Muyun Old Devil's face. Ye Zifeng had even rejected the Profound Sect but he was willing to stay with her.

This Ye Zifeng knows how to behave.

"What problems do you have? Tell me about it."

"I, Ye Zifeng is someone from Leizhou City. According to the rules, I can't stay in Tiandao City for over fifteen days. If I stay in the Muyun Estate..... Then I can only stay for a few days."

Muyun Old Devil laughed, "So this is what you're worried about..... Well, Tiandao City's rules are very strict. Even I can't help you immediately. However, as long as you work for me, I can guaranteed that you will be able to raise your cultivation easily!"

"Raise my cultivation?"

Ye Zifeng was startled. He looked at Muyun Old Devil with an interested

look, wanted to hear what she had to say.

Right now, he wanted to reach the Martial Disciple realm more than refining pills.

Muyun Old Devil smiled, “That’s simple. I am very interested in your Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation. Let me have the formula for it and you can choose whatever ingredients you want from my collection!”

After saying that, Muyun Old Devil felt that she went a bit too far and corrected herself, “Of course, it can’t be that much. I’ll limit you to ingredients for one type of pill in the qi refining stage.”

“.....This is what you call whatever I want?”

Muyun Old Devil embarrassingly chuckled, “This....If you want money, I can give it to you. However, my ingredients are like my children. I can’t help it.”

All alchemists loved their ingredients. Muyun Old Devil was not an exception. Ye Zifeng smiled. The formula was something that he could give away easily. Exchanging it for rare ingredients was very worth it!”

Ye Zifeng pondered for a bit. He had used a Profound Tier Golden Marrow Pill already. In the qi refining stage, he can use two more. It’s too wasteful if he uses his contribution points to exchange for the ingredients.

Thus, it’s better to take them from Muyun Old Devil.

“Alright. Get me a pen and paper. After I write down the formula, bring me straight to the storage room.”

Muyun Old Devil quickly got one of the servants to come over.

“Did you hear that? Bring a pen and paper.

.....

The servant brought the pen and paper to Ye Zifeng while shaking in fear.

“First, use.....” Ye Zifeng wrote down.

After a while, the formula was completely written down.

Muyun Old Devil read over the formula a few times and clapped her hands, “Good. So you really do know how to form the Spirit Absorbing Pill Formation. Where did you come from? Who is your master?”

She was very curious about Ye Zifeng. She was wondering why she didn’t know or hear about such an incredible person before.

Ye Zifen smiled, “I was Leizhou City’s number one trash. Ye Chongtian is my father. As for my master.....I don’t have one. Everything is self studied.

“Hold.....Hold on..... Did you... Did you say that Ye Chongtian is your father?” Muyun Old Devil furrowed her brows. Her mouth was wide open. A shocked expression appeared on her face.

Chapter 110: The heaven knows, the earth knows, you know, I know, nobody else will know.

"What happened? Could Senior Muyun know my father?"

A suspecting look appeared in Ye Zifeng's eyes.

Muyun Old Devil sighed, "Ye Zifeng... Ye Chongtian.... So that's how it is. My mind was muddled. How could I not have figured this out earlier?"

She lightly laughed and then explained, "Twenty years ago, Uncle Chongtian was already an expert of the Martial Spirit realm. At that time, I was a young girl and have heard about his prestige. Unfortunately, the once proud Ye clan of Leizhou City has sharply declined recently.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows, "Wait... So you're not that old? Could it be that you're not even thirty yet?"

Muyun Old Devil was shocked. An angry expression appeared on her face.

"You damn brat. Do you think that I'm very old?"

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "There's something called Anti-aging Pill....."

Muyun Old Devil sighed, " I didn't use that Appearance Halting Pill or whatever. I'm all natural."

Muyun Old Devil was a very beautiful woman. Even if she did use the Anti-aging Pill, that would mean that she was very beautiful when she was younger.

Hearing how her tone of voice was like Bingqian's, Ye Zifeng started to believe that she was actually pretty young.

However, to be able to be at the top of the alchemy food chain in Tiandao City at such a young age, she must've immersed herself in the Dao of Alchemy and put in a lot of work.

"Alright. Since Senior Muyun is someone close, then it'll be easier for me

too. I've already written down the ingredients for the pill I want. Can I get a bit more than one set of ingredient?" Ye Zifeng had a mysterious look in his eyes.

"Who's close to you? I just happen to know Uncle Chongtian. Don't play games with me boy. What ingredients? I told you that it has the ingredients to one type of pill at the Qi Refining Stage." When the ingredients were mentioned, Muyun Old Devil's expression changed immediately.

During the tournament, she can be a bit more generous and give out a large amount of ingredients. She had to keep her face and do so. Also, she was going to get money back for it anyways. She had to put on a facade in front of all these people. In front of Ye Zifeng, she will treat her ingredients like her own children!

Ye Zifeng weakly laughed, "Bah. Whatever. One set is fine then. I want the ingredients to the profound tier Golden Marrow Pill."

"Profound Tier Golden Marrow Pill?" Muyun Old Devil couldn't help but be shocked, "That isn't much..... But, you can only refine this pill with a profound tier cauldron.... It'll be useless if you only have the ingredients."

"This..... Don't worry about it....."

If Muyun Old Devil continued to probe Ye Zifeng, Ye ZIfeng will view her with disdain and thus she stopped asking him questions.

"Since that's the case, then let me bring you to the storehouse....."

"No need to trouble yourself. You can just ask one of your subordinates to bring me." Ye Zifeng had a calm expression on his face. However, on the inside, he was smiling sinisterly. No one knew what he was planning.

"Oh. You're right. Where's Yang Xin?"

When the guard heard this, he quickly ran over, "Master Muyun, what do you need?"

"This is the keeper of the storehouse." Muyun Old Devil introduced him.

"Now bring this little brother over the the storehouse and give him one

set of ingredients to the Profound Tier Golden Marrow Pill. Got it?" She glared at Yang Xin, warning him that he should not let Ye Zifeng get more than one set of ingredients.

"I got it. Don't worry Master Muyun."

"This way, young master Ye." Yesterday, Yang Xin was treating Ye Zifeng coldly, but now, after the competition, he was treating Ye Zifeng with the utmost warmth.

Ye Zifeng lightly laughed and sized Yang Xin up. He then followed him to the storage room.

.....

"Brother Yang, may I ask how long you've been in the Muyun Estate?"

Ye Zifeng chatted him up on the way. They talked about things in Tiandao City and then things in the Muyun Estate.

Ye Zifeng even called Yang Xin brother, making Yang Xin feel very satisfied. He was quite a bit older than Ye Zifeng and no one respected him as a mere keeper of the storage house. However, right now, the champion of the alchemy competition was calling him brother. He was feeling very happy.

When they entered the storage house, an extremely happy expression appeared on Ye Zifeng's face when he saw all these ingredients.

During the competition, all of the ingredients brought out was only a small portion of what was in this room. There were many types of ingredients in here. The amount of ingredients in this storage house was not less than the amount in the medicine cage in the Ashen Spirit Sect. Muyun Old Devil's fame isn't based on nothing after all.

"For senior Muyun to have such a storage house, it is a blessing." Ye Zifeng couldn't help but compliment this place.

"Little brother Ye, there's something that I don't understand. How can one person refine all these ingredients? If you keep it here too long, won't they rot?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “Brother Yang is correct. If you leave some ingredients out for too long, they will indeed rot. It is very serious. It might even affect other ingredients.

Ye Zifeng pretended to look at some ingredients. He casually picked up a Vermilion Lotus Fruit and inserted some of his own death qi into it.

In a while, the sparkling Vermilion Lotus Fruit started to turn black. Some of its skin started to peel off while some parts of it turned rotten yellow.

“Holy Shit. Brother Yang, look at this. Isn’t this thing rotting?”

Yang Xin’s heart thumped and quickly walked over. When he saw the fruit, a buzzing sound could be heard from his brain.

“No way..... This...This ingredient really does rot....”

The death qi was from a Martial Spirit. Even if Muyun Old Devil was present, she wouldn’t have been able to see that it was Ye Zifeng who did something to do. If she suspected that Ye Zifeng had to do with it, she would be laughed at. Afterall, how can a fifth qi refining stage kid have a martial spirit?

Ye Zifeng gave the fruit to Yang Xin to let him inspect it. While Yang Xin was looking at it, he ran around and repeated the process again.

“Brother Yang, come look. This Illusionary Dream Grass is rotting too. If you keep it here in the storage house, the other ingredients will start rotting too. Look at it.” After saying that, he threw the Illusionary Dream Grass over to Yang Xin.

Yang Xin was so shocked that he stood there blankly like a wooden doll.

“This.....What should I do? If Master Muyun finds out that I’ve been slacking off, I’m afraid that she’ll kick me out immediately.”

Yang Xin was startled. Suddenly, it seems as if he realized something and pulled Ye Zifeng over.

“Little brother Ye, it was a good thing that you found these today. You saw it first hand how much Master Muyun cares for her ingredients. If she

comes around one day and sees something like this, she will definitely explode in anger.

He swallowed and continued, “So…. Can you help me out and not tell Master Muyun about this?” Yang Xin was feeling very anxious.

Ye Zifeng sighed and pulled Yang Xin’s arm away.

“Brother Yang, it’s not that I don’t want to help you. This is a very big deal. If I don’t tell her about this, she won’t have a good opinion about me…..”

Ye Zifeng was calling Yang Xin brother and yet he wasn’t willing to help him out. This made Yang Xin feel more and more anxious.

“How about this…. Little brother Ye, didn’t you want to get some ingredients for a profound tier Golden Marrow Pill? It seems like master Muyun only wants to give you one set. I’ll let you take three sets. Is that better?”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up but still had a complicated expression on his face, “I…….”

One set or three sets, there was no different. It’ll only make Muyun Old Devil’s heart ache a little more. It’ll be better in a day or two. However, having the ingredients rot was a big deal. Who knows how many ingredients will be affected. Even if she killed Yang Xin, it won’t calm her down.

“Four sets! Little brother, you’re a sincere guy right? I won’t let you be at a disadvantage.” Yang Xin saw that Ye Zifeng was hesitating and added one more set of ingredients. He even called Ye Zifeng a sincere guy. If Ye Zifeng is a sincere guy, then everyone else in the world can be counted as sincere.

Ye Zifeng was still hesitating.

“Little brother Ye. There are six sets of ingredients here. You can take five sets. Leave one for me so Master Muyun won’t suspect anything when she comes around…..” Yang Xin looked as if she was going to cry.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Brother Yang, then we’ll do as you say. I’m a sincere person afterall. If I don’t help you, and you get kicked out Senior Muyun, then your whole family might go hungry. I don’t want to feel responsible for it.”

Yang Xin felt touched by Ye Zifeng’s words and thanked him profusely, “Little brother Ye, I, Yang Xin, will forever remember Little Brother Ye’s kindness today.” Without saying anything else, he packed up five sets of ingredients and gave it to Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled and put the ingredients into his interspatial ring.

“Oh yeah. Brother Yang. I’ll bring those rotten ingredients away too. I’m afraid someone else will see it and suspect something. “

“Right. Little brother Ye sure is considerate.” Yang Xin thought about it and immediately gave the “rotten” ingredients to Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled satisfyingly and looked at Yang Xin.

“You should know about the consequences if this leaks out. So……”

Yang Xin smiled and immediately replied, “The heaven knows, the earth knows, you know, I know……”

Chapter 111: Profound Sect

With this five sets of ingredients, not only can Ye Zifeng take care of himself, he can use the leftovers for someone else.

Ye Zifeng's actions wasn't too excessive either. He did everything according to what Muyun Old Devil said. He took the ingredients to one type of pill in the qi refining stage. He just took a little more than she wanted. It's nothing much. Even if she finds out, she'll probably be mad for a few days. It's probably not a big deal.

"You guys..... Why were you gone for so long?" A suspicious expression appeared on Muyun Old Devil's face.

Yang Xin and Ye Zifeng both looked at each other. In the end, it was Ye Zifeng who spoke.

"It's like this.....On the way there, I was admiring how elegantly refined and elaborate your home is. The pavilion in the air, the azure colored walls, and the engraved jade fences that you have are all so grand. I couldn't help but stop and admire these structures and wasted some time.

"Right..... That's right. It's exactly like that. That's why we were a bit slow." Yang Xin's old face was filled with smiles.

"So that's how it so. Alright Yang Xin, your work is done here. You can leave."

"Yes, Master Muyun." Yang Xin quickly nodded and replied. He gave Ye Zifeng a deep look before he left.

Muyun Old Devil lightly laughed. She pays a lot of attention to her house in order to make it so exquisite. Seeing how Ye Zifeng "appreciates" her home, she's starting to like this guy more and more.

One should know that a youngsters around twenty year old are all scatter brained. Those who know how to appreciate things are few in numbers.

At this time, Yang Jing and Liu Bingqian both returned. They were both laughing as they walked into the room. No one knows what they were

talking about that made them so happy.

“Bingqian, Jing-er, good timing.”

“What’s the matter Master Muyun?” Liu Bingqian giggled as she asked.

“I was going to ask you if you guys were going to go back to Leizhou City any time soon.”

Liu Bingqian wanted to say that she was going to stay a bit more but after thinking about it, she looked over to Ye Zifeng to have him decide.

“Big brother rough guy, what do you think?”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Tiandao City is filled with spiritual qi. Cultivating here is way better than cultivating in Leizhou City. I feel like we should use the remaining ten days to increase our cultivation here.”

An outsider can only stay in Tiandao City for fifteen days. After entering once, unless a special circumstance arises, they won’t be allowed in for two months afterwards.

This is one of the iron rules that not even Muyun Old Devil can break. If not, then why would she need Yang Jing to bring the custom documents to Liu Bingqian every time.

Liu Bingqian nodded.

“Master Old Devil, since big brother rough guy isn’t leaving, I’ll stay here. I’ll use this opportunity to accompany you some more.”

Muyun Old Devil rolled her eyes, “Don’t try to sugarcoat me and say that you want to accompany me. From what I can see, you probably want to accompany that Ye Zifeng kid alone for a few more days right?”

Liu Bingqian giggled and rubbed her chin, “Master, actually I think big brother rough guy is right. I want to try to cultivate and break through into the Martial Disciple realm.”

Muyun Old Devil shook her head, “Alright. Since you really want to cultivate, I can ask some people the bring you into the Profound Sect and take care of you guys. I’ll get them to open up the gravity multiplier rooms for you guys tomorrow.”

“The gravity multiplier rooms? Really? That’s great! Thanks Master!” Liu Bingqian was very happy after hearing this.

With the gravity multiplier room and the copious amount of spirit qi in Tiandao City, the training speed will increase many times compared to training in Leizhou City.

“Many thanks to Senior Muyun.”

Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and thanked Muyun Old Devil as well.

……

The Profound Sect is the official and number one sect in Tiandao City. To enter the Profound Sect, you must be a genius amongst geniuses. There is no exception. The disciples in the sect are all in the Martial Disciple realm or higher.

To the seniors in the Profound Sect, a qi refining stage newbie should not even have the qualifications to enter the sect at all.

This wasn’t discrimination but a threshold. People like Wang Lin shouldn’t even consider entering the Profound Sect just because they have power and money. They can’t even step through the gates.

……

The next day, Muyun Old Devil brought Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian to the Profound Sect. Yang Jing was feeling a bit tired so she was resting in the estate.

The Profound Sect is located in the southern side of Tiandao City. It is built on a grand mountain peak and stands there in an imposing manner.

“This, this is the Profound Sect?” Ye Zifeng looked up towards the mountain peek. He can see the stone tablet in front of the doors that gave off a feeling grand feeling.

Muyun Old Devil smiled, “Ye Zifeng, this is your first time coming to the Profound Sect right? It is very hard to maintain your mental state when you come here. When I brought Bingqian over last time, she was so shocked after seeing the stone tablet that she couldn’t speak for a half a

day."

Ye Zifeng smiled back. He was a Martial Lord in his past life. He had seen many large sects already. This Profound Sect was nothing in his eyes at all.

Liu Bingqian shot a glance at Ye Zifeng and an embarrassed look appeared on her face, "Who says? Master Muyun, please don't make things up and tarnish my reputation."

'I'm tarnishing your reputation? Whatever. I won't talk about those embarrassing things then."

Liu Bingqian pouted, "Should've done that from the beginning. Even though master is famous, you're not that much older than senior sister Jing and I. You shouldn't be doing this."

"Fine. Whatever you brat." Muyun Old Devil and pointed towards the Profound Sect.

It seems like there was already someone waiting for them at the door already.

"Profound Sect's inner court disciple, Jin Peng, greets Senior Muyun!"

The person who just spoke looked at Muyun Old Devil and immediately bowed.

He was wearing a dark blue robe with a black cloud patterned belt. WIth one glance, you can tell that this guy is probably a distinguished disciple of the Profound Sect.

"You know me?" Muyun Old Devil glared at the guy.

Ye Zifeng wanted to cry. In Tiandao City, what woman, other than yourself, would wear a beard when going out?

"We have met once before. Maybe Senior Muyun have forgotten. Oh right. The one behind senior must be Miss Bingqian right?" Jin Peng smiled and looked at Liu Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian nodded and smiled, "You remember me?"

“Of course. I, Jin Peng, remembers that time when Miss Bingqian visited very clearly.”

“Last time I visited? That was very long ago. You still remember?” Liu Bingqian couldn’t help but be surprised.

“ Of course I remember.....”

Muyun Old Devil didn’t want this to drag on and nodded, “Jin Peng, did your master Adept Baili send you?”

In the Profound Sect, Adept Baili would often ask Muyun Old Devil to refine pills for him. After many transactions, their relationship with each other have also improved. With Old Devil’s name and an elder from the Profound Sect, allowing Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian use the gravity multiplier room was an easy task to accomplishs.

“That’s right. Master has said that I, Jin Peng, will follow everything that Senior Muyun orders.”

Muyun Old Devil laughed loudly. This is just a polite thing to do. If she didn’t know that then she doesn’t know anything about worldly matters.

“Actually, it’s nothing much. My disciples wants to borrow the gravity multiplier rooms for a bit. I hope you can give them some pointers.

Muyun Old Devil called Ye Zifeng her disciple so Jin Peng will treat him better.

Jin Peng laughed and cupped his hands, “Don’t worry Senior Muyun. I know Miss Bingqian so we can say that we’re familiar with each other. I will bring them over according to your wishes.”

Muyun Old Devil turned around and looked at Ye Zifeng and Bingqian, “Alright. Just follow Brother Jin and do whatever he says. If you have any questions, you can ask him about it. You can come back whenever you’re tired. The Muyun Estate isn’t that far. Anyways, i’ll take my leave now.”

“Yes, Master.”

“Many thanks to Senior Muyun.”

Muyun Old Devil looked at them and then said her goodbyes to Jin Peng.

Jin Peng accompanied Muyun Old Devil out and returned to Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian, “May I ask if this is the first time that junior sister Bingqian have come to the Profound Sect’s gravity multiplier room?”

After Muyun Old Devil left, Jin Peng didn’t even spare Ye Zifeng a glance and went straight towards Liu Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian lightly nodded, “I’ve come to the Profound Sect before but this is the first time I’ll be entering the gravity multiplier room.”

She waited for a bit and then pointed at Ye Zifeng, “Don’t ask me anything. The on;y reason I came here this time is because of big brother rough guy. He wants to cultivate a bit so I tagged along. If you have anything to say, say it to him.”

“What? Big brother rough guy?” Hearing this, Jin Peng was startled. He turned around and viciously stared at Ye Zifeng.

“Then…. What kind of relationship do you guys have?”

Chapter 112: Faster than you

Liu Bingqian's face turned red as she shyly looked at Ye Zifefng.

"Our relationship....."

Ye Zifeng replied straightforwardly as Bingqian was hesitating, "We're friends."

"Friends?" Jin Peng looked deeply at Ye Zifeng. What kind of vague response was that? Do friends walk around calling the other big brother rough guy?"

He wanted to continue questioning them but felt that it was inappropriate so he stopped.

Liu Bingqian disappointingly looked at Ye Zifeng. A complicated expression appeared in her eyes.

In Jin Peng's mind, he feels that they aren't just friends at all.

"Alright. Follow me. The gravity multiplier room is a bit far from here so we need to pick up our pace. Why don't we use our qi to run there?"

Transferring your qi towards your legs does make you run faster in a short amount of time. However, to a qi refining disciple, it will deplete their qi very quickly.

Of course, Jin Peng had other thoughts when he suggested this.

Liu Bingqian was shocked at this suggestion, "It's not much of a problem to me, but big brother rough guy's cultivation is a bit low..... I'm afraid that his qi will run out quickly.

Jin Peng took advantage of the situation and asked, "Low cultivation? What realm is he in?"

"Fifth stage of qi refining." Ye Zifeng nonchalantly replied.

"Fifth stage of Qi Refining?" Jin Peng almost laughed out loud. However, he held it in and kept a calm look on his face. He thought that Ye Zifeng was a lot stronger since he was able to capture Liu Bingqian's heart.

However, Ye Zifeng was far weaker than Liu Bingqian.

In the Martial Spirit Continent, strength meant everything. If a guy couldn't even reach his spouse's cultivation, how would he be able to protect her? He would definitely not be approved by the elders of the girl's clan. When Jin Peng thought about this, he felt much better.

'So that's why. Your cultivation is a bit low so you want to cultivate in the gravity multiplier room. Alright. We're going to use our qi to get there quickly. You'll have to do it the hard way and walk there. Think of it as training."

Right after saying that, he poured his qi into his feet and disappeared into the distance.

Liu Bingqian wanted to stop Jin Peng but he was too fast. He glared at Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng, signaling for them to follow him.

Ye Zifeng couldn't help but sigh. He thought that the quality of these disciples in the Profound Sect would be better than the ones in Leizhou City. However, it seems like problematic people existed everywhere and cannot be avoided.

Only when he increase his cultivation and reach the peak will he be able to meet people

'Big brother rough guy. Let's go. If we don't get moving, we won't catch up to him." Liu Bingqian had already started to move

"Alright." Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He moved his qi towards his feet and followed up.

.....

The gravity multiplier room is located on the audience mountain. At the foot of the mountain, many disciples gathered around and jested with each other.

"Senior brother Jin Peng. Is it true? That beauty that you've been thinking about every day and night has finally come?"

"And here I thought you were joking around about her. I didn't think

that she'd really exist!"

Jin Peng laughed, "Quiet down. She's on her way here. Also, she has a guy with her. It might be someone that she likes. However, he's only at the fifth stage of qi refining."

"Fifth stage of qi refining?" All the disciples couldn't help but let out a laugh.

"Hahaha.... Senior brother Jin Peng, no wonder why you ask them to run with their qi. So he was someone in the fifth stage of qi refining."

"On top of that, senior brother Jin ran in such a loop. I bet you wanted to torture that kid."

Jin Peng chuckled, "Somethings are better left unsaid. This is a good opportunity for me to show Miss Bingqian the difference between me and that kid. Alright. They're here."

From the direction that Jin Peng pointed at, Bingqian's delicate looking figure appeared.

When she appeared, many of the disciples gasped in shock. Liu Bingqian is basically a beautiful painting!

"Senior brother Jin Peng, you have good tastes. So the person that you've been thinking about was such a beauty!"

"Shoo SHoo" Jin Peng smiled and then looked at Liu Bingqian.

Liu Binqian was still in the qi refining stage. She couldn't be compared to Jin Peng who was already in the Martial Disciple realm already. It look her quite a while to get here and she was panting.

When Jin Peng saw that Ye Zifeng wasn't with her, he felt very happy. He walked up to Bingqian and asked.

"Sister Bingqian, how come I don't see the person that was with you? Is it because he doesn't have enough qi to maintain his speed? Damn. It's my fault. His cultivation is low so I should've looked after him more.

Bingqian was confused and looked at Jin Peng with some doubt, "That's not right. Big brother rough guy was in front of me..... Did you guys not

see him?"

Jin Peng stared at Bingqian with a shocked expression.

"Sister Bingqian. What did you say? He was in front of you? This.... How is this possible?"

Liu Bingqian looked around and suddenly started waving her hands toward the other side of the mountain.

"Look. Big brother rough guy is here already."

Jin Peng was dumbfounded, "This.... What's happening here?"

Ye Zifeng was already halfway up the mountain already. He was even closer to the gravity multiplier room than he was. Could he have arrived before Jin Peng?

Ye Zifeng walked over slowly with a calm and collected expression on his face. No one could tell that he was actually panting on the inside. Jin Peng and all of the other disciples were shocked.

"Brother Jin, Bingqian, you're here."

Hearing this, Jin Peng's expression turned very ugly, "You.....How did you get here so quickly? That's not possible. You're only at the fifth stage of qi refining. How can you be faster than me?"

Ye Zifeng laughed as he replied, "From what I can see, Brother Jin probably took the long path to show us some sights. I thought about it and figured that I shouldn't bother you guys and take a shorter route since I don't have as much qi as you guys."

Seeing how calm Ye Zifeng was, Liu Bingqian was startled, "Big brother rough guy. You're incredible. This is your first time here in the Profound Sect but you can already get your way around. If it was me, I wouldn't have been able to do it."

"This....." Jin Peng looked at Ye Zifeng with shock. This guy's sense of direction was way too good....It was as if someone was guiding him....

Afterall, there were many hidden paths and traps in the Profound Sect. If one didn't know their way around, they could even die to these traps.

However, no matter how hard Jin Peng thinks about this, he would never guess that the one guiding Ye Zifeng around was Elder Zhao, someone who treated the Profound Sect as if it was his own backyard.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “What happened brother Jin. You’re not looking too good. Is it because you’re feeling a bit tired from taking the long way?”

“I……”

Liu Bingqian giggled and stared at Ye Zifeng, “Big brother rough guy is sure awesome. You’re only at the fifth stage of qi refining and yet you arrived way before us. You’re not even out of breath either!”

Jin Peng’s face turned green. This time, not only was he unable to embarrass Ye Zifeng, he had embarrassed himself instead!

“Alright Bingqian. Since we’re already here, we’ll take care of ourselves from now on. There’s no need to bother brother Jin anymore.” Ye Zifeng turned towards Bingqian.

Bingqian listened to whatever Ye Zifeng said and nodded, ‘Okay. Whatever you want. Let’s go.”

The two turned around, cupped their hands and slightly bowed, “Many thanks to brother Jin for escorting us.”

“Hold on.”

Jin Peng quickly returned to his senses. If he let them go like that, then he wouldn’t have any chance to get close to Liu Bingqian at all!

Ye Zifeng raised his brow, “Brother Jin, do you have some advice for us?”

Jin Peng’s mouth twitched, “That’s right. We’re in front of the gravity multiplier room right now. However, do you think that you can get inside so easily?

Liu Bingqian furrowed her brows and pointed towards a group of disciples, “But, aren’t they going in easily?”

“They’re formal disciples of the sect. Everyone here is given a ranking and were assigned to a certain room so that’s why they can freely enter and exit. However, you guys are outsiders. Before entering, you should be

tested first."

Jin Peng made up some random things and shot a few glances at his brothers.

"If you don't believe me, then you can ask other people. Say, Ah-Qiang, there's a rule like this right?"

Ah-Qiang was startled but immediately answered, "That's right. We have to test you first. Otherwise, if someone in the low qi refining stages enter a top room, wouldn't they be crushed to death?"

"That's right. Jin Peng is right. There' is something like this. All outsides must be tested before they enter the rooms."

Jin Peng believed that it was due to luck that Ye Zifeng was able to make it to the mountain before he did. This time, he was going to make use of the Testing Stele. It was almost impossible for them to cheat or get outside help."

Thus, this was the best opportunity to embarrass Ye Zifeng!

Liu Bingqian looked towards Ye Zifeng, "Big brother rough guy, what do you think?"

Ye Zifeng smiled back, "Brother Jin makes a lot of sense. Since this is the rule, then we just have to follow it....."

Chapter 113: Testing Potential

The highest multiplier in the gravity room was twenty times while the lowest was two times. Normally, a qi refining stage practitioner from the outside would start from two times and slowly advance.

However, Jin Peng suddenly suggested that there was a test before entering. This was breaking the rules of the Profound Sect.

Ye Zifeng didn't report him to Elder Zhao. He was too lazy to care about a small fry like Jin Peng. People like Jin Peng were like wet flour. When they stick on you, it is very hard to get rid of them.

Jin Peng brought Ye Zifeng around to a large Testing Stele.

"This is very simple. Just insert your qi into the stele and a color will appear based on the quality and thickness of your qi.

Ye Zifeng looked over at Jin Peng and asked, "So... What are you saying?"

Actually, Ye Zifeng had seen this kind of stele before. He had administered examinations using these in his past life.

Simply put, the gravity multiplier room will help bring out one's hidden potential. Thus, we will use this to test your potential."

Liu Bingqian was shocked, "It's that incredible? It can use colors to determine one's potential?"

Jin Peng laughed, "Of course. There's a reason why the sect's name is Profound Sect. There are many Profound treasures in the sect. This stele is an example of this. It is placed here for qi refining stage and martial disciple realm disciples to use."

"Really?" Liu Bingqian was curious about the treasure.

Jin Peng smiled back, "If you don't believe me, then watch."

Jin Peng closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He then inserted his qi into the testing stele.

Immediately, the other disciples around Jin Peng began to talk.

“The color on the stele is starting to change and is getting darker. This means that senior brother has good potential right? How far do you think senior brother can go in his life?”

“This..... I remember that when he tested himself the last time, he had reached the 1st rank of spirit tier, which is a light green color. I feel like it will at most be only a little bit darker.”

“That was a long time ago! I feel like he should be at the 2nd rank of spirit tier right now.”

Everyone watched in excitement. They all wanted to see what kind of potential their senior brother has. At the same time, they all tried to guess.

They all watched as Jin Peng’ qi entered the stele and circle around the sixteen holes.

After a while, the stele made a ‘peng’ sound and the colors started to stabilize.

Dark Green! It represented third rank of spirit tier!

“Congratulations senior brother Jin Peng. With your potential, it will only be a matter of time before you reach the 2nd rank of the Martial Disciple realm!”

“That’s right. Senior brother Jin Peng, when you become famous in the future, don’t forget about us brothers.”

It didn’t matter whether they were sincere or not, they all congratulated Jin Peng. They might as well do it. Saying a few words of praise won’t hurt them and they might get some benefits in the future.

The stele in front of the gravity multiplier room was different from a normal testing stele. After the results appear, it will also reveal the cultivation of the person who just inserted their qi.

This was the first time that Liu Bingqian had seen such thing. She was becoming more and more curious about it.

“So there’s actually something like this in the world huh? Alright. Let me try it too.”

Jin Peng smiled and took a half a step back, “Miss Bingqian is exceptionally intelligent and gifted. Your potential must be very high!”

Liu Bingqian furrowed her brows. She had heard these words before. These words were exactly the same as the words that noble guys would say when they chased after her. She hated it.

“I said I want to try it out.”

Jin Peng remained still, “Then come over here.”

‘Then why are you still standing there? Are you trying to take advantage of me while I go over?” Liu Bingqian had a cold expression in her eyes.

“You.....” Jin Peng’s expression changed. His intentions had been seen through by Liu Bingqian. Those words were basically slapping him in the face.

“Alright fine. I’ll move. Then you can come over.” Jin Peng snorted and walked towards the other disciples.

He had been slapped in the face by this woman’s words in front of everyone. His fellow brothers saw this and patted his back in sympathy.

Liu Bingqian smiled and walked towards the testing stele. She stood in front of the stele and then looked back at Ye Zifeng. After receiving a nod from him did she finally insert her qi into the stele.

She really wanted to see what kind of potential she had.

In an instant, a brilliant light bursted out from the stele. Three rays of light entered the hole and continuously rotated in there.

“This....This is.....” Jin Peng’s jaws dropped. He knew what was going on but he didn’t want to believe it.

“Red!” The other disciples called out and started to chatter.

“No way. How can it be red? Who is she? How does she have the potential at the peak of spirit tier?”

“Senior brother Jin Peng, did you forget to clear out your qi from the stele? If not, how can a qi refining stage disciple have such a high

potential rating? Could she be a super genius in the martial way?"

Liu Bingqian pouted, "Hey. Didn't you see? I'm at the peak of qi refining!"

"So what if you're at the peak of qi refining? Senior brother Jin Peng is already at the martial disciple realm and he was only rated at the 3rd rank of the Martial Disciple realm. How can your qi refining stage qi be rated higher than his qi? This... This doesn't make sense!"

Occasionally, people would be rated one or two ranks higher than their cultivation. It's not like they haven't seen people rated three or four ranks higher either. They would be shocked at that but would then recover quickly.

However, Liu Bingqian's results were beyond comprehension. Only a genius class cultivator could achieve something like this!

Jin Peng wanted to show off his potential in front of Liu Bingqian. However, Liu Bingqian's results had exceeded his own by many times. His efforts were basically for naught.

If Bingqian was stronger than himself, then wouldn't he be whipped in the future? Jin Peng was bitterly laughing in his heart. He suddenly looked over at Ye Zifeng.

He didn't have to be stronger than Bingqian. It's fine as long as he's stronger than the guy she likes.

After he thought about this, Jin Peng felt much better. He put his hopes on Ye Zifeng failing.

"You're Ye Zifeng right? Since Bingqian tested her potential already, it's your turn now."

One of Jin Peng's brothers heard this and muttered, "Ye Zifeng? This name sounds kinda familiar. Where have I heard about him?"

"What are you talking about? Didn't you hear senior brother Jin Peng before? They're not from our Profound Sect. They came here to cultivate in the gravity multiplier room with some inside help. How could you know

them?"

"But... I'm not lying. I'm very sure that I've heard this name before." The disciple scratched his head while thinking about where he had heard this name before.

"Alright. Stop thinking too much and watch his test. I feel like he doesn't have much potential since he's still at the fifth stage of qi refining at his age."

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked towards the stele. He wanted to insert his qi but suddenly retracted his hand. He turned around and looked at Jin peng.

"Brother Jin. Can I say something to you first? No matter what happens here, it has nothing to do with me. If something goes wrong, you'll bear responsibility and compensate for everything. I hope you can make an Inner Demons Oath for this."

Jin Peng was startled, "What are you saying? It's only inserting your qi. Why do you have to make it sound so serious?"

"If you don't do it, then I won't insert my qi. I'll go find senior Muyun....."

After hearing Muyun Old Devil's name, Jin Peng really got scared. He was a mere disciple of the younger generation. He can't afford to offend someone like Muyun Old Devil.

"Alright fine. I promise. I'll make a Inner Demons Oath stating that I will bear the consequences and compensate for anything that happens. Is that fine?" Jin Peng rolled his eyes at Ye Zifeng.

After the oath, Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He then began to insert his qi into the stele.

At first, everything looked normal.

However, all of a sudden, the stele began to shake. It looks as if it was being filled with darkness. Black lights appeared in the holes on the stele.

"This..... This....."

At the same time, a burnt smell emitted from the testing stele.

“Holy..... Heavens! What is happening? Ye Zifeng, stop!”

Jin Peng and the others were shocked at the strange scene and yelled at Ye Zifeng.

“Remember. You’re the one that told me to stop.” Ye Zifeng laughed and retracted his hand.

In a few moments, countless amount of black smoke appeared from the stele.....

Chapter 114: Cultivating by Force

The testing stele was designed to withstand a large amount of qi.

It was made so that Martial Disciple realm and Qi Refining stage disciples could not destroy it even if they wanted to.

Thus, when the black smoke appeared from the stele, everyone thought that it was weird.

“Ye Zifeng... You, What did you just do? Why did the testing stele turn like this?” Jin Peng yelled out at him.

Liu Bingqian’s eyes lit up and stared at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “You guys saw exactly what I did. I just followed your steps and inserted my qi into the stele. Didn’t everyone see this?”

Jin Peng furiously shook his head, “Impossible. I have never seen something like this happen before. How can the stele be broken like this!”

“If you’ve never seen something, it doesn’t mean that it doesn’t exist.”

Jin Peng wanted to continue asking Ye Zifeng’s questions but was pulled aside by one of the other disciples.

“Senior brother Jin, there’s something that I don’t know if I should say or not.”

Jin Peng furrowed his brows, “If you have something to say, then say it. Don’t beat around the bush.” He was feeling very angry right now and wasn’t in the mood to play any games.

That disciple muttered, “Senior brother Jin, this testing steele can only test the potential within the qi refining stage and the martial disciple realm. Is it possible that..... Ye Zifeng’s potential have already surpassed the limit of the stele?”

“Surpassed the limit of the stele?” WHen Jin Peng heard this, he glared at that disciple and stood there silently.

Jin Peng hesitated a bit but continued to talk, “You mean, this twenty year old fifth stage of qi refining person has a potential that cannot be

gauged?"

That disciple had worried look on his face but still nodded.

If it's not like this, then how someone at the fifth stage of qi refining destroy the testing stele with his qi?

"Let me calm myself down....." Jin Peng felt that his temples were stinging a bit.

How can Ye Zifeng let him calm down and think about it? He immediately opened his mouth, "Since Bingqian and I already have been tested, you should bring us to cultivate in the gravity multiplier room."

"Hold on." Jin Peng's expression changed.

"What else do you want? Do you want me to pay you for this testing stele?" Ye Zifeng saw that Jin Peng called for him again and felt impatient.

"Don't worry. I won't ask you to compensate for anything at all. However, I forgot to tell you that entering the gravity multiplier room has a time based fee."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned ugly, "I didn't think that a large sect like the Profound Sect would charge people money to use their facility. Let me ask you this then. Who's measuring the time? Who's collecting the fees?"

Jin Peng laughed and pointed at himself, "Naturally, it would be me, a disciple of the sect."

Liu Bingqian was angry, "Brother Jin, how come you didn't tell my master any of this?"

Jin Peng awkwardly smiled and tried to comfort her, "Bingqian, don't worry. I know that you're Senior Muyun's disciple and will not charge you. But, Ye Zifeng isn't. However, I will do things fairly and won't upset Senior Muyun.... Let's see. I'll take a hundred gold coins as entry fee."

Someone patted Jin Peng's shoulder all of a sudden, "Senior brother Jin. Stop talking. That Ye Zifeng isn't even paying attention to you. He left a while ago....."

"What?" Jin Peng looked up.

It was just as the disciple had said. Ye Zifeng left as if Jin Peng's words meant nothing. He ran very quickly towards the training room at a speed that exceeded everyone's expectation.

Very quickly, he had reached the doors to the multiplier rooms. Having Ye Zifeng test himself at the testing stele was nothing. However, making him pay a hundred gold coins was too excessive.

Ye Ziifeng didn't want to deal with these little things at all and went straight to the rooms.

Jin Peng yelled out again, "Ye Zifeng. Stop. This is the Profound Sect's territory. How can an outsider like yourself be able to do whatever they want"

"I didn't want to use this but you left me with no choice. Look at this."

A smile appeared on Ye ZIfeng's face as he retrieved a medallion from his sleeves.

"What? The Passage Medallion? He.... How did he have something like this?"

"How can a fifth stage of qi refining brat like Ye Zifeng obtain the Passage Medallion that was meant for the higher ups of Tiandao City?"

"Right. Is this medallion fake?"

At the same time, one of the disciple's eyes widened, "I remember now! Ye Zifeng is the person who beat Qi ZImo in the alchemy competition!"

"No way. He's the champion?"

Some of these people didn't pay attention to the alchemy competition at all. However, once they knew that Ye Zifeng was the champion, they were all shocked.

Jin Peng suddenly remembered something. He had a martial uncle that attended the competition and purchased a high quality pill. However, the fact that he spent one thousand eight hundred gold make him into a laughing stock.

Jin Peng remembered that the pill that his martial uncle bought was

refined by the champion of the competition. That meant that the pill was refined by Ye Zifeng!

An expert in the dao of alchemy who also has connections with Muyun Old Devil. Even though his cultivation is low, he can't be offended.

"Alright. Can I go in now?" Ye Zifeng smiled towards Jin Peng.

With the Passage Medallion, let's not mention this mere training facility, he can even go stroll in an Adept's garden.

If it wasn't for the fact that Muyun Old Devil wanted Jin Peng to lead the way, Ye Zifeng would've gone to the gravity multiplier room by himself.

"Of course. Of course. This is not a problem at all." Jin Peng's face was frozen in shock but still managed to force a smile.

"Are you still going to make me pay a fee?"

Jin Peng's heart shook and hurriedly replied, "No. Of course not!"

Ye Zifeng's expression was very cold, "Alright. Bingqian, let's go in."

"Okay!" Liu Bingqian laughed as she watch the scene unfold in front of her.

.....

The gravity multiplier room was designed and constructed using many different formations. Each level will have different kinds of formation imbued into the room. Since the multiplier goes from 2x to 20x, each respective room will be able to help cultivate disciples from the second stage of qi refining all the way to the 9th level of Martial Disciple realm.

"Big brother rough guy. Which room are you going into? Do you want me to come with you?" Liu Bingqian was looking forward to training with Ye Zifeng

"I'm going to the 20x multiplier room. Do you want to come?" Ye Zifeng smiled at her.

Liu Bingqian pouted, "You're doing this on purpose right? So you don't want to train with me?"

Ye Zifeng laughed and shook his head, “No, I just think that it’s better to train separately. Also, I don’t like people watching me train either.”

Liu Bingqian sighed, “Alright. Since I’m on the ninth stage of qi refining, I’ll go to the 9x multiplier room and try it out.”

She wanted to go to the 5x room with Ye Zifeng and cultivate together but since Ye Zifeng didn’t want it, all she could do was train by herself at the appropriate level.

After Liu Bingqian left, Ye Zifeng stood by himself in front of all the rooms.

He looked around as if he was looking for something. After a while, he smiled.

“Found it. The core of the formation is right here!”

He looked up at the room, “3x multipler room huh? Alright. It’ll be easier for me anyways.

He smiled, looked around and then walked into the room. When he entered, the gravity made Ye Zifeng to move a bit slower. After a while, he regained his normal speed. With his fifth stage of qi refining cultivation, this was nothing to him.

.....

“How is it? Did you see which rooms they entered?” Jin Peng hurriedly asked.

“Brother Jin, Miss Bingqian went to the 9x multiplier room and Ye Zifeneg went into.....”

Jin peng hurried him up and asked, “Where did he go? Tell me now!”

“The 3x multiplier room.” The person quickly answered.

“What? The 3x multiplier room?”

Jin Peng was doubting this, “No way. He was so overbearing before. Why did he suddenly go into the 3x multiplier room? Isn’t he just wasting his time there?”

“Senior brother Jin, that guy was so arrogant before. I know that you’re in a bad mood too. I say, we should just enter it too and teach him a lesson.”

Jin Peng frowned, “No. He has connections with Muyun Old Devil and is also the champion of the alchemy competition. If we directly deal with him, it’ll be bad for us.

“We can’t directly deal with him?” Jin Peng’s brothers caught the keywords in his reply.

“Wait. So how are we going to deal with him?”

Jin Peng grinned evilly, “Hehe. You guys don’t know this, but you can actually mess with the gravity multiplier rooms. I’ve been here for many years and found out a while ago.”

Chapter 115: You want to mess with me?

Ye Zifeng circled around the room slowly. The pressure from the gravity was exerted upon his body but he was able to handle it.

When he was outside of the room, he can tell that the core formation of the gravity room lied in this room. However, as for where its exact location is, he had to carefully look for it.

If a person didn't have enough experience in this expertise, they would not notice something like this at all.

"So the core formation of the gravity multiplier rooms is here huh....."

Ye Zifeng chuckled and have already walked to the deepest part of the room. He bent down and looked at the Blood Emperor drawing on the wall.

He gently placed his hand on the drawing and closed his eyes. Through his hand, he slowly sent his qi into the drawing.

At the same time, a mysterious energy was released from the frames of the drawing and slowly filled up the room. The thickness of the qi started to change within the room. It became much more concentrated.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "The setup of this room is similar to the ones in the Black Tortoise Continent. As long as I insert qi into the painting, I can change the multiplier in the room.

This means that he can change the multiplier in the room to anything that he wants. Even though he was in the 3x multiplier room, he can bring it to 10x or even higher if he wants.

Ye Zifeng looked towards the door. There was no movement at all.

"Since they're not here yet, I'll just cultivate a bit first then,"

Ye Zifeng wouldn't waste his precious cultivation time just to wait for Jin Peng to come.

He inserted his qi into the drawing again and increased the gravitty.

He pondered for a bit and finally decided, "Let's try 5x gravity first. I'll

warm myself up."

The gravity became stronger and stronger. Ye Zifeng's knees started to bend a bit from the pressure exerted by the gravity.

His mouth curved up into a smile, "Alright. Let's get used to this first."

Saying that, he started to run around in the room.

The invisible energy started to suppress Ye Zifeng. At the same time, his body shook every time he took a step. It stimulated his body and his nerves. It slowly started to change his body's physique.

"Alright. Let's try 6x gravity now....."

As he inserted his qi into the drawing, the invisible energy became stronger. Ye Zifeng's felt the pressure of the gravity through his entire body down to his bones. His face started to become red.

"Nice! Excellent!" Ye Zifeng laughed out loud. He can clearly feel the essence of energy entering his body as he slowly gets used to the pressure.

Tiandao City is a city filled with an abundance amount of qi. On top of that, the Profound Sect is built on top of the area with the most abundant qi energy. It is the best place for Ye Zifeng to cultivate at the moment.

Even if there was a fee to enter, Ye ZIfeng would definitely pay for it.

Right now, Ye Zifeng was still at the peak of the fifth stage of qi refining, and have not fully reached the sixth stage yet. Even if he has the ability to fight with people at a higher level, the gravity room tested the limits of his body. It would be difficult for Ye Zifeng to keep up as the multiplier gets higher and higher.

Under the pressure of 6x gravity, Ye ZIfeng's pace became slower and slower. It felt as if there was a giant on his back.

"The Profound Sect really does deserve its fame. It would be great if these gravity rooms were in the Ashen Spirit Sect, and I was able to visit it every day!"

Since he wasn't originally a person from Tiandao City, it is very hard for him to stay around. Also, the Profound Sect won't take outsiders as

disciples if they're below the martial disciple realm, so he can't really join the sect right now either.

Thus, he wants to continuously use this room to the full extent of his time. There was only around ten more days before he had to return home.

However, he knows that he'll return sooner or later.

Ye Zifeng snickered and his eyes lit up.

"Since I'm here, I might as well train harder. Let's move onto 7x gravity!"

The gravity become a level stronger. Ye Zifeng started to sweat. His veins started to bulge out. His face became redder and redder. All of his veins looked like they were about to explode.

It was clear that Ye Zifeng wasn't able to handle the sudden change in gravity.

He retracted some of his qi from the drawing and the pressure on the body started to weaken. It was not long before the gravity returned to 6x.

To be able to control the gravity with the Blood Emperor Drawing made Ye Zifeng's life a lot easier.

This was because if he couldn't handle the pressure from the next level, he can easily retract his qi and have it return to a more comfortable level.

Even though he had never entered a gravity multiplier room on the Black Tortoise Continent, he knows the theory behind the formation.

He would rather work from the bottom than skip levels and not be able to handle it. If he was cocky and jumped all the way to 20x gravity, his body would have exploded already.

He took a deep breath and prepared himself before he slowly changed the gravity to 7x.

The energy returned again and an immense pressure was exerted onto his entire body. It made his head very dizzy. He felt as if all the cells in his body was exploding. It was very uncomfortable.

Qi exploded out of all his pores and covered his entire body. This helped

him cope with the intense pressure from the 7x gravity.

He held onto his knees with his hand, not allowing himself to kneel down.

He gritted his teeth and finally stood up. This meant that he was able to withstand the pressure from the 7x gravity room.

“Alright. Let’s take it one step at a time.” Ye Zifeng was panting but he didn’t stop at all. He gritted his teeth again and continued to move. He couldn’t relax at all.

He doesn’t even have enough strength to stand up straight right now.

He slowly took a step forward and took a deep breath. A white mist appeared from his body with some lightning energy concealed within in.

One step... two steps... three steps.....

Every step took an enormous amount of energy. It slowly consumed his physical strength. When he couldn’t take it anymore, he would retract some of his qi from the drawing and rest for a bit. After a while, he would repeat the process and try again.

Eating high quality pills and learning techniques would only help him increase the quality and quantity of his qi. Right now, Ye Zifeng was refining his body.

The former would change one’s cultivation realm while the latter would determine one’s actual strength.

“This is a really good place to cultivate. If I can cultivate here for a few more days, then I can redevelop this entire trashy body. When the body gets stronger, it’ll be easier for me to cultivate!”

Right when Ye Zifeng was thinking that, the sound of people walking around can be heard from the door.

If it was anyone else, they wouldn’t think much of it. However, this is Ye Zifeng. He had been keeping his eyes on the door even though he was training very hard.

Ye Zifeng had guessed that it was about time that Jin Peng started to

make his move.

“So you’re finally going to make a move huh?” Ye ZIfeng smiled.

A small straw appeared from the door. From the straw, a colorless smoke entered the room.

At the same time, the gravity within the room started to change. Even though it was only a small change right now, it will soon add up to become something problematic. If Ye Zifeng wasn’t paying attention to it, it might be too late when he realizes the change.

“So this smoke can change the gravity in the room. That’s interesting. No wonder why this Jin Peng is a senior brother to everyone.”

Ye Zifeng laughed. He retracted the qi from the Blood Emperor Drawing.

The smoke can increase the gravity while retracting qi from the Blood Emperor drawing will decrease the gravity. With this, it came up to a net change of zero.

Outside the door, Jin Peng was showing off in front of his junior brothers with this smoke.

“Do you see how incredible this smoke is? Ye Zifeng probably didn’t notice it, but in a bit, he will probably be suppressed by the immense pressure of gravity!”

The junior brothers laughed and gave him a thumbs up, “Senior Brother Jin is sure worthy of being Adept Baili’s disciple! You have increased this junior brother’s knowledge!”

“That’s right. Senior brother Jin, do you still have some more of this smoke? Can you give me some so I can use this against anyone that offends me?”

“Senior brother, this method is sure cruel! However, I like it!”

Laughter sounded throughout the area. Ye Zifeng didn’t respect them so now they feel much better after doing this.

Ye Zifeng was also the champion of the alchemy competition. By doing this, it satisfied their vanity.

Jin Peng stopped laughing and pointed at someone, “Old Wu, go over to Miss Bingqian and call her over. Tell her to come watch the show.....”

Chapter 116: I'll mess with you instead!

After training for a while, Liu Bingqian was filled with sweat. It was clear that she achieved some results while training in the 9x gravity room.

"I wonder how big brother rough guy is doing. That stupid blockhead actually refused to train with me. Could it be that, I, Liu Bingqian, do not have the charms to attract him?"

Right when she was thinking about Ye Zifeng, a sound came from her door.

A happy expression appeared on Bingqian's face. She quickly ran towards the door to open it.

"Big brother rough guy, you....."

However, the person in front of her was not Ye Zifeng but a complete stranger. This stranger was a short statured man who continuously stared at her. It made Bingqian feel disgusted.

An awkward expression appeared on her face, "You, who are you?"

Old Wu snickered, "I'm Old Wu. You don't know me but you should know my senior brother Jin Peng right?"

Hearing that Jin Peng sent him, Liu Bingqian could somewhat tell what was going on.

"Mhm. Okay. So you're Jin Peng's junior brother?"

"That's right."

A cold expression then appeared on her face, "What does he want from me while i'm training here? Could it be that he wants me to pay a fee too?"

She thought about how Jin Peng wanted Ye Zifeng to pay a fee and got a little angry on the inside.

'What's miss Bingqian talking about? You're senior Muyun's disciple. How can we ask you to pay a fee? Brother Jin Peng told me to come because Ye Zifeng strained himself while training and wanted to tell you

about it."

"Big brother rough guy....."

Liu Bingqian was startled but then she remembered something.

"No way. You guys are lying. Before I entered this room, I looked at where big brother rough guy went. He went into the 3x gravity room. How could he have strained himself?"

"Miss Bingqian, I'm not lying to you."

She saw that Old Wu had a serious look on his face as if something really did happen and became flustered.

"Actually? No way. Quick. Bring me over!" Liu Bingqian became very anxious all of a sudden.

Jin Peng heard their movements and turned around. Coincidentally, he saw the anxious look at Bingqian had on her face.

When he saw that, his expression turned gloomy. When he thought about how Ye Zifeng would embarrass himself in front of Bingqian, he felt a lot better.

In his view, even if Liu Bingqian didn't care about himself, her impression on Ye Zifeng would decrease due to this. After all, he, Jin Peng, was a disciple of Adept Baili. To compare himself to Ye Zifeng was like comparing the light of a firefly to the light of the moon.

"Miss Bingqian, you're here." Jin Peng smiled.

"What happened to big brother rough guy? If he strained himself, then why aren't you helping him?" Liu Bingqian started to blame Jin Peng and his friends.

Jin Peng shrugged, "Help him? Did you see how he treated us? A mere cultivator at the fifth stage of qi refining should be respectful towards us. If we want him to pay a fee then he should. Instead, he threatened us with the Passage Medallion!"

"YOU.....!!!" Bingqian was very angry.

“Miss Bingqian, don’t stare at me like this. He strained himself in there. It has nothing to do with us.”

Jin peng laughed very loudly and then waved his hand towards his junior brothers.

“Since Miss Bingqian requested it, then what are you guys doing? Open the door and let her see how weak this Ye Zifeng is, to fall in the 3x gravity room!”

“Yes, Senior brother Jin.” Old Wu laughed and opened the door.

Jin Peng laughed and pointed insides the door, “Look!”

“Fellow brothers, do you guys have a lot of free time? Why are you guys all gathered up here in the 3x gravity room? Could it be that you guys want to train here too?” Ye Zifeng’s calm voice could be heard from inside the room.

Jin Peng stopped laughing and his mouth started to twitch. He looked inside the room.

Ye Zifeng was standing straight up in an imposing manner. He was looking very sharp and grandiose while standing there. It wasn’t how Jin Peng had imagined at all.

“You, You!” Jin Peng was overwhelmed with shock as if he was struck with lightning. He stared at Ye Zifeng and couldn’t evne finish his sentence.

The other disciples had the same expression on their face. They all watched as Jin Peng injected the smoke into the room.... How could the plan have failed?

Jin Peng slowly walked into the room and felt the pressure exerted on his body. There was only 3x gravity in the room.

“No way. Senior brother Jin, did you use too little smoke?” one of the disciples was surprised and couldn’t help but call out.

Jin Peng immediately glared at him.

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian became suspicious, “Smoke? What smoke?”

Jin Peng smiled and explained, “It’s nothing. We lit up some incense to measure the time that he was in the room. It’s to help the person inside. It lets them know how long they’ve been training for and lets them know their limits.”

Jin Peng was a natural con artist. Every time he opened his mouth, lies would come out of it.

Ye Zifeng smiled back at him, “So that’s how it is. So brother Jin brought some friends to watch out for me huh?”

“Really?” Liu Bingqian’s eyes widened, not believing what Jin Peng had said.

Jin Peng quickly replied, “Yeah. This is what we wanted to do.”

He didn’t understand why the smoke failed to increase the gravity in the room. However since Ye Zifeng went along with him, he’ll continue to play along too.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “So that’s how it is. Brother Jin, can I have the incense then?”

“This.....” Jin Peng stared at Ye Zifeng. He did have a spirit incense but that’s used to increase the gravity in these rooms. If he gave it to Ye Zifeng and Ye Zifeng checks it out, then he would find out about everything.

What he doesn’t know was that Ye Zifeng had figured his plan out since the beginning.

Ye Zifeng stuck his hand out, signal for Jin Peng to give him the incense, “What’s up brother Jin? I see some of the dust from the incense in your sleeves. Is it in your robe?”

“Where?.....” Jin Peng quickly pulled his sleeves down and patted his robe. Suddenly, he realized what was going on.

Ye Zifeng was playing with him!

To be played by a youngster like Ye Zifeng, Jin Peng was feeling angry.

He took a deep breath and finally reached into his robes. He took the spirit incense out and gave it to Ye Zifeng.

“It’s here.”

All of his junior brothers were eyeing the incenses with envy. All they could do was watch Ye Zifeng take them into his hands.

“Not bad. I’ll use these later. Oh yeah. Bingqian, why don’t I give you some of these and light one up in your room?”

Liu Bingqian smiled, “Okay. It’s pretty depressing training by myself. I’ll use this to keep track of time.”

If Jin Peng doesn’t understand what Ye Zifeng meant by his words then he is very stupid. He knew that he was in the palms of Ye Zifeng’s hands.

Jin Peng let out a bitter smile, “You don’t need to use this spirit incense. It will get very stuffy in the room. I have a spirit alarm. Why don’t you guys have it?”

“So you have something like that too? As expected from the disciple of Adept Baili. You sure have a lot of treasures. I, Zifeng, really admire you.”

“This is all because my master is loves me a lot.” Jin Peng forced a laugh and gave Ye Zifeng his spirit alarm.

Ye Zifeng looked over the alarm and then immediately put it into his interspatial ring along with the incense.

“Many thanks to brother Jin for your care.”

“Senior Muyun asked me to take care of you guys so I, Jin Peng, will do my best to.” Jin Peng bitterly smiled again.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “I, Zifeng, am from Leizhou City. There aren’t many chances for me to train in the Profound sect so I’ve decided to stay here for the next few days. If brother Jin wants to give more pointers, I, Zifeng, will always welcome it.”

“I…..” After Jin Peng experienced this loss, he didn’t dare come bother this demonic being anymore. All he could do was laugh it off.

Liu Bingqian giggled, “If big brother rough guy is going to stay, then I’m going to stay too.”

Ye Zifeng smiled at her, “Whatever you want.”

Seeing how Bingqian was completely focused on Ye Zifeng, Jin Peng clenched his fists. As he walked away he softly muttered, “Just you watch Ye Zifeng. After my master returns from secluded meditation, I will definitely ask him to take care of you!”

Chapter 117: Eight times gravity!

Jin Peng was gloomy to the extreme and was filled with anger.

After he left the mountain, he continuously cursed.

“Ye Zifeng that fucking brat! How dare he treat me like this. Not only did he swindle my spirit incense and alarm away, he also made me lose face in front of Miss Bingqian! This is too angering!”

His junior brothers knew that he wasn’t in a good mood and didn’t know if they should comfort him or not. They all stood there and sighed.

In the end it was Old Wu who spoke, “Brother Jin, just hold out for a bit. We can wait until Adept Baili returns to teach that Ye Zifeng a lesson!”

Jin Peng felt a bit better and nodded, “That’s right. I was just thinking about that. Master is fond of me and pampers me. He will not allow me to be humiliated like this. We’ll let Ye Zifeng off for now and wait until master returns!”

Old Wu laughed loudly, “Yeah. That’s the way. I’ll be the host today and invite you to dinner. It’ll help you feel better.”

“Yeah that’s right brother Jin. We’ll take care of him later. How dare he use miss Bingqian as a shield.

Jin Peng gritted his teeth and then cursed, “Fuck that Bingqian. Who cares if she’s pretty? She’s a bitch anyways. Let’s go. Let’s get some drinks tonight! I, Jin Peng, will drink my fill tonight!”

It was rare for Jin Peng to be like this and all the disciples followed along.

“Let’s go senior brother Jin. We’ll have fun until Adept Baili returns! We’ll take care of Ye Zifeng then!”

“Yeah brother Jin. It’s not too late to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson later. We’ll beat him up until he turns into a big. By that time, that girl will definitely belong to brother Jin!”

“That’s right. Brother Jin, you have all these cool things with you. Do you

happen to have some aphrodisiacs?" Old Wu had an expression that only men can understand.

Jin Peng smiled, "Heh. I won't be rough with miss Bingqian unless it is absolutely essential. You should know that I truly do like her! So remember this, don't go around saying things about her. If I find out, I won't let you go that easily.

On matters regarding Liu Bingqian, Jin Peng didn't dare to play around.

"ALright Alright. We don't have to be so serious.Tonight, we will all drink our fills. We will take care of Ye Zifeng in a few days!" Old Wu shouted.

.....

On the other hand, Ye Zifeng was wildly training in his room.

"They shouldn't be bothering me anytime soon. I'll just use this chance to cultivate then!"

It's not like Ye Zifeng doesn't want to play around, but right now, he needs to focus on increasing his cultivation in order to survive in the world.

He doesn't have an impressive background and can't directly enter the Profound Sect. Right now, he has less than twelve days to train here. He needs to make use of this time!

He calmed down a bit and inserted his qi into the blood emperor drawing. He quickly changed the gravity to 6x. After training for so long, his body had completely adapted to the 6x gravity.

Right now, he was warming up and preparing for 7x gravity.

"Oh yeah. By using the lightning qi, I can lower the pressure exerted on my body and it will also help with my cultivation. What will happen if I use the power of the martial spirit?"

After he thought about this, he started to smile.

'8x gravity. Let's try this!"

A horrifying energy appeared in the room and immediately pressured Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng groaned and used his qi to cover his body in order to keep himself up.

Slowly, blood seeped out from his mouth. Traces of blood appeared on his arms as his blood vessels started to burst. His entire body was becoming sore and was on the verge of breaking down. However, he gritted his teeth and tried to sustain himself.

“Not enough!”

Slowly, blood seeped out from his ears, nose and mouth.

If it was anyone else in Ye Zifeng’s position, they would be on the ground already, unable to lift their heads. After all, it was extremely hard for someone at the fifth stage of qi refining to sustain themselves in 8x gravity. If his resolution was any weaker, he would have collapsed and passed out already.

For Ye Zifeng to even reach this stage, this showed that there was no one that can fight him at the same level, even in Tiandao City.

After feeling his seven apertures bleed, Ye Zifeng didn’t want to force himself anymore and retracted his qi from the drawing, decreasing the gravity back down to 7x.

If he wasn’t able to control the gravity easily like this, then he would not dare to try 8x gravity.

“Now, let’s try using the martial spirit’s power.”

Very quickly, he gathered his qi from his dantian into the red blood vessels in his arms. The bright red vessels then started to glow.

Right now, he wasn’t attacking anyone and wasn’t trying to harm anyone. He wasn’t using the death qi but the life qi of his dual martial spirit!

Streams of qi filled with vitality flowed from his arms and covered his body. The blood vessels that exploded started to heal up. Other than some scabs, it was completely healed.

Wherever the qi goes, his injuries would heal very quickly. When it reached his head, Ye Zifeng could feel his entire body and his mind clear up as if he was bathing in high quality medicines. It was an indescribable feeling!

His seven apertures quickly returned to normal as if there was no blood in the first place.

“This martial spirit uses death and life qi. It can attack enemies and heal allies when he retreats. It can be considered as one of the best quality martial spirits there is! When I reach the martial disciple realm and truly awaken the martial spirit, then its power will be unimaginable!” Ye Zifeng looked at his body and exclaimed.

Ye Zifeng has confident that if he can handle this martial spirit, he will definitely stand at the top of this continent.

After he rested for a bit, he stood up again, “Alright. Time to continue training. With this martial spirit’s help, I can train much faster now!”

He covered his body in qi and increased the gravity to 8x again.

Bleeding a little is nothing to Ye Zifeng. As long as he can increase his cultivation, he was willing to make the sacrifice!

No pain, no gain. Sometimes, a cultivator can take medicines to increase their cultivation. However, there is a limit. The cultivator’s physique and strength depends on his own training. Having a refined physique is very important when fighting against another cultivator. Thus, this gravity room is the best place for Ye Zifeng to train right now.

Against people with the same cultivation or even someone a rank higher, body strength will determine the winner in the end.

.....

The day passed by very quickly. When Ye Zifeng returned to his senses, it was already late at night. He can feel his stomach rumbling with hunger.

He wanted to go find Liu Bingqian and get some dinner with her.

When he opened the door, Bingqian who was leaning by the door almost

fell in. It was a good thing that Ye Zifeng had fast reactions and caught her before she fell.

Ye Zifeng was shocked and asked, “Bingqian, what are you doing here? Have you been waiting outside all this time?”

Ye Zifeng was very sensitive to what was happening outside but he didn’t notice Bingqian outside at all.

This meant that she had been there for a long time and didn’t move at all.

Bingqian rubbed her eyes and smiled, “Big brother rough guy, you were too busy training so I didn’t want to bother you. I sat outside and waited for you instead.”

Ye Zifeng was moved by Liu Bingqian’s actions, “I was too into training and forgot about you. It’s my fault.”

Hearing that Ye Zifeng had admitted his mistakes, Liu Bingqian was filled with disbelief. In her heart, Ye Zifeng was a smart and stubborn person. He will make other people kneel and admit their mistakes while he himself won’t take the initiative and apologize.

Liu Bingqian giggled and felt moved. She extended her legs in a position that made Ye Zifeng froze.

“Since you admitted your wrongdoings, then help me rub my legs. I’ve been sitting here for so long that they’ve turned numb.”

Ye Zifeng stood there for a bit until he finally started to rub her leg.

Liu Bingqian suddenly cried in surprise and immediately stood up. She had a weird and shocked expression on her face, “I asked you to rub it and you really started to rub it?”

Ye Zifeng felt helpless, “You told me to do it..... When did I do anything wrong?”

Liu Bingqian looked at him and laughed, “Big brother rough guy, you’re pretty smart in other fields but you really don’t understand a woman’s heart don’t you.....”

Chapter 118: Sure. You can have it.

In the gravity multiplier room.

Ye Zifeng had locked himself in here for a few days now after having dinner with Bingqian. He continuously trained as if his life was on the line. It was a rare chance for him to train in the Profound Sect right now so he needs to make use of all the time that he has.

During this time, he had experienced thousands of falls and yet he got up again every single time. He was sweating so much that if someone saw him right now, they would think that he was just in a thunderstorm.

The powerful gravity made Ye Zieng's entire body bend over many times. It had suppressed his body as if he had tons of weight on his back. It made it very hard for him to breathe. Every time he got injured, he would use his martial spirit's ability to heal himself up by a bit.

After a long time, his body had finally gotten used the pressure from 7x gravity. His muscles have become stronger. The originally weak looking body was not so weak looking anymore after all this training.

However, he still needed to train more.

Ye Zifeng had been occupying the 3x gravity training room for quite a while now. He was lucky that this was a low level room and no one would use it. He can concentrate on training here without anyone bothering him. When it's meal time, Bingqian would bring some food over to eat together and then he would go right back to training. All he did was eat and train.

Some other people became aware of Ye Zifeng's crazy training schedule. His method of training was terrifying. A lot of willpower was needed for something like this.

"I have never seen someone train in there for so long. It seems like he's not sleeping at all. Say, do you think he's crazy?"

"Old Dong, this is call perseverance. If you have half of his diligence, you would have reached the 7th stage of qi refining long ago."

"Talk about yourself! Come to think of it, there's a beauty from the 9x

gravity room that goes and bring him food everyday!"

Talking about that girl, those people's eyes lit up.

"Damn.... It really is like sticking a fresh and beautiful flower on dog shit. What does that beauty see in this weak brat. Is it just because he's a little cute?"

"Yeah. If she's gonna pick someone like that, then might as well pick me. At least i'm in the 7th stage of qi refining!" Old Dong chuckled.

Old Dong came from a very prominent family. Even though he's not a disciple of the Profound Sect, he used his family's influences to let him train in the gravity rooms.

Hearing these words, Bingqian started to twitch and became angry. She coldly snorted and yelled at them.

"What are you saying? What fresh and beautiful flower on dog shit? Big brother rough guy is an incredible man! You guys can't even compare to him!"

"Oh? Did you guys hear that? She's calling him big brother rough guy. How close! What rough guy? In what places is he rough?" Old Dong started to laugh crazily.

Bingqian's expression didn't change. She was getting angrier and angrier.

"You guys....."

Old Dong smiled and looked at Bingqian's body. He couldn't help but sigh in admiration.

"Everyone listen up. Let's go into the 3x gravity room and meet that kid!"

"Old Dong, that's kinda going too far... We don't know anyone here. We're just borrowing these rooms for training. If something happens, we won't be able to do anything." One of Old Dong's companions tugged his sleeves.

Old Dong was getting annoyed, "Who said I was going to do anything? That kid's been in the 3x gravity room for quite a while now. He should let

us use it! It's only fair."

Liu Bingqian stepped in front of the door and blocked the way, "Bullshit. You guys just want to disrupt his training. If you want to go in, then you'll have to get through me first!"

Liu Bingqian saw how hardworking Ye Zifeng was for the past few days. If these clowns want to bother Ye Zifeng, then she will stop them.

Old Dong turned around and exchanged glares with a few others.

"Miss, have you ever heard of the saying that two hands cannot beat four? My brothers and I are all around the 7th stage of qi refining. We have the advantage in numbers. Do you really want to block our way?"

Liu Bingqian gathered her qi in her hands and stared at them, showing that she was not going to budge.

"Okay. You forced me." Old Dong and his brothers started to walk towards Bingqian with hostility.

Actually, Old Dong's real objective wasn't to get into the gravity room. He used that as an excuse because he saw that Liu Bingqian cared for the kid and would definitely block their way.

With the situation like this, he can try to take advantage of her and touch her a few times when they're fighting.

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng's voice sounded from the room.

"Bingqian, they're right. I've been using this room by myself for way too long. I should let them train too. You can let them in."

"But...." Hearing this, Liu Bingqian was confused. What was Ye Zifeng thinking about? This wasn't like him at all.

"Don't worry. Let them in."

Liu Bingqian nodded and moved out of the way.

"Then... Okay. Did you hear that? He said that he's going to let you in."

Old Dong and the others furrowed their brows. If they don't fight with Liu Bingqian, then they can't take advantage of her and touch her. They

were feeling a bit angry about this.

But Old Dong have already said that they wanted to go in. If he doesn't then he would be losing face.

"Go. Let's go in then. We'll drive the kid out!" Old Dong was going to let out his anger on Ye Zifeng.

A few others cursed as they walked into the room.

"You brat. Give us the room!"

Right when they stepped into the room, an enormous pressure was suddenly dropped onto them. Every inch of their skin, every part of their bone, every vein in their body felt as if they were suppressed.

After a while, Old Dong and the others couldn't take it anymore and dropped onto their knees. They used their hands as support so their faces won't fall onto the ground. Ye Zifeng smiled and send his qi out to slowly close the door.

"Holy shit. Isn't this the 3x gravity room? Why is the gravity so strong here? I'm at the 6th stage of qi refining and I can't even handle it!"

Old Dong's face was on the floor with his arms and legs sprawled out, "Look at me, I'm at the 7th stage of qi refining and I can't handle it either. How is this even at 3x gravity. This is at least 7x gravity!"

At the same time, their faces turned pale and their breathing became heavier.

On the other side, Ye Zifeng who was used to the gravity here smiled and looked at them.

"How come you're fine? That's not possible. Your cultivation shouldn't be higher than mine!" Old Dong's face was extremely ugly at the moment. He forced his head up and opened his mouth.

Ye Zifeng smiled and replied, "I'm at the fifth stage of qi refining...."

Old Dong was shocked when he heard this, "You're.... You're lying...."

It's fine that the room feels so scary but the person in front of them was

even scarier.

“Big brother rough guy, are you alright?” Liu Bingqian called out. She was worried. Even though these people don’t have any grudges against Ye Zifeng, she was still anxious about what was happening.

“No problem. Bingqian, I’m coming out soon. Since they took my training spot, I’ll come out and relax for a bit. We’ll take a walk around and go eat.” Ye Zifeng smiled and replied to her.

“Really? That’s great!” Liu Bingqian was bored of training already but didn’t want to disturb Ye Zifeng. Now that Ye Zifeng was willing to go eat with her, she was feeling very happy. On the inside, she thanked Old Dong and the others. If it weren’t for them, Ye Zifeng would not have left the training room.

“No way. You’re going to leave? At least help us and throw us out of the room or something.” Old Dong had an agonized look on his face.

“Since you guys said that you wanted this room, then you guys can stay here to train. It’s pretty easy to negotiate with me you know.”

Ye Zifeng had a cold smile on his face. It sent shivers down Old Dong’s spine.

How can Old Dong let him go. If Ye Zifeng leaves, then they won’t be able to get any help at all. Who would come save them?

“Boss, Boss. I’ve wronged. It’s my fault. Please forgive us and bring us out!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked to the center of the room. He took something out from his robe and placed it on a table.

“This... What is this?” Old Dong started to sweat. He had a bad feeling about this.

“Big brother rough guy. Are you done?”

Ye Zifeng replied immediately, “Coming. Coming!”

After saying that, he smiled towards Old Dong, “This? You’ll find out soon.”

With that, he turned around and left through the door.

Behind him, a small incense was burning on the table. The gravity in the room started to change slowly.....

Chapter 119: Strong backing!

Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian talked and laughed as they returned to the gravity rooms after eating.

“Big brother rough guy, the Profound Sect’s meals taste really good! The spirit tea that they have is also of high quality! Why don’t we both come join the Profound Sect after reaching the Martial Disciple realm.

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, “That’s good thinking. But before we can enter the Profound Sect, we have to become citizens of Tiandao City. Also, I’m still at the fifth stage of qi refining. If you want to come with me, then you’ll have to wait quite a while.”

Liu Bingqian giggled, “I’ll wait. When you are cultivating, I can use that time to train my alchemy skills. By the time you reach the Martial Disciple realm, my alchemy skills might catch up to yours too. I might even surpass you!”

Ye Zifeng showed a big smile but didn’t say anything else.

To catch up to him in the way of alchemy? Even your master Muyun Old Devil can’t, let alone you.

Liu Bingqian suddenly thought of something, “Oh yeah. What happened to those people in the 3x gravity room? Are they still there?”

“Hehe..... They were only there to mess with me. Since we left, they probably left too. There’s no reason for them to stay.”

“Really?” Liu Bingqian thought about it and then discard any thoughts about them.

“Alright. Now that I’m full, I’m going to continue training. You can go train too.”

Liu Bingqian had an unwilling look on her face. It was rare for Ye Zifeng to spend time with her, but now he wants to go back to train? He’ll probably be in there for days again.

“Alright then. Take care of yourself. Don’t overwork yourself.” Liu

Bingqian finally gave in.

When Liu Bingqian finally went into the 9x gravity training room, Ye Zifeng's expression changed immediately. The warm look on his face turned cold.

There were miserable screams coming from the 3x gravity room.

He smiled and opened the door and watched as Old Dong and the others barely lifting their heads to look at him.

"You.... You're finally back." Old Dong let out a smile. Blood was seeping out of his mouth. He was feeling very weak already.

"Brother Dong, what do you want to say? I'll say it for you."

Some of his brothers that were able to handle it a bit better crawled closer to try and help.

"Brother Dong said: Let us out right now. If this goes on, we'll die! Do you know who I am?" one of Old Dong's brother who was in a better situation than he is yelled out.

All Ye Zifeng did was smile and didn't enter the room. Instead, he squatted down and looked at them, "Who are you?"

That person relayed the message. After a while he coldly snorted, "Brother Dong said: Have you heard of Tiandao City's Dong clan? I am the Dong Clan's young msater Dong Tianrui."

When he said that, Dong Tianrui fiercely glared at him, "Do you know how to talk? Who's the Dong clan's young master here?"

Ye Zifeng pretended to think about it and laughed, "Never heard of it."

Dong Tianrui couldn't help but yell out this time, "You fucking brat. Don't ever let me see you again. Or else I will definitely find someone to beat you down!"

His voice was leaking and sounded very rough. It sounded very funny.

Ye Zifeng laughed out loud. He could care less about their threats. He's been hearing them ever since he crossed over. This was nothing at all.

“You.....What are you laughing at?”

“I’m laughing at you. You know that you have someone who can back you up but do you think that I don’t have anyone backing ME up? How else do you think I can come and train in the Profound Sect with my measly cultivation?”

Hearing this, Dong Tianrui was shook. Ye Zifeng was right. He doesn’t even know who his opponent was and yet he was trying to threaten him....

“Then who’s backing you up huh?” Dong Tianrui was curious.

Ye Zifeng pointed at the incense on the table, “Where do you think I got this from?”

Dong Tianrui’s eyes widened. After thinking about it he replied, “Only a disciple that have been in the Profound Sect for many years can obtain something like this.....Could it be an inner court disciple?”

It was obviously that he wouldn’t think that a prestigious Adept would back Ye Zifeng up. These spirit incense are used by disciples to play pranks on each other. If a senior used something like this, they would lose all their face.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Close. Keep guessing. Say, who’s the ones that watch over the gravity rooms?”

Dong Tianrui was so scared that his entire expression changed.

“No... No way. You have connections with the elder disciple of Adept Baili?”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “You said it. Not me. You’re the one who guessed it.” He didn’t lie to him. He really does have connections with Jin Peng. It’s just that it’s not a good one.

Even though Dong Tianrui is from a noble family, he was still afraid of people with prestige within the Profound Sect. Hearing how Ye Zifeng was talking, he got a bit nervous.

If Ye Zifeng directly told him that he had connections with Adept Baili, Dong Tianrui would definitely not believe him. However, Ye Zifeng made

him guess himself. This made Dong Tianrui feel scared.

"This.....I'm sorry. I, Tianrui have eyes but failed to recognize Mt. Tai. I hope that you can forgive me. I thank big brother for giving us this lesson today by leaving us in here."

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked towards him, "Didn't you just say that you'll get people to beat me if you see me again?"

Dong Tianrui shuddered and forced a smile, "I.....I'm just playing around. It's a prank. How can I dare beat up big bro. I just hope that big bro can give me some pointers in life later on.

Old Dong was forced by his clan to come train here. He was not in his Dong clan's estate right now so he had to lower himself and call Ye Zifeng big brother.

Suddenly, the people besides Old Dong were stupefied. If their big bro is calling this guy big bro, then what should they call him?

"Big bro, I'm wrong too. I won't dare to do anything like this again. Please let me go this time."

"That's right big bro. When you went out to get some food, we've suffered in here already. We've already gotten our punishment. Please cool down and think about it."

"That's right. How about we go give that beauty some compensation after we go out."

Ye Zifeng deeply glared at them, "Since you guys are sincere, I won't make things difficult for you since I'm a nice person. But... since you guys came to train in the gravity multiplier room, your clans must've given you guys some sort of treasure to help your training right?"

"You want treasures?" When Dong Tianrui heard this, he immediately understood what Ye Zifeng meant.

Ye Zifeng smiled and stood up.

"If you don't want to give them then it's fine. I'm not afraid to tell you guys that I have a tendency to go out and get some snacks for quite a

while." Ye Zifeng turned around and started to yell towards Bingqian's room.

"Bingqian, let's go get....."

"Hold. Hold. Hold up big bro." Dong Tianrui's face turned red. He was pampered and spoiled as the young master of his clan. He had never trained hard and if he keeps this up, then he will definitely die.

Ye Zifeng turned around and smiled, "What's wrong? Didn't your clan's elders want you guys to train? You can keep going. I'll go and get some snacks."

Dong Tianrui cursed inwards but still spoke with a respectful tone, "Big bro. Eating snacks can't be more important than training. When I left, I did get some treasures that can help with training. If you want....then I.....I can give some to you." It was very hard for him to say this.

Ye Zifeng felt extremely happy. Dong Tianrui looked very unwilling so that meant that the treasure is pretty valuable.

"Oh? What is it? I was just saying random things. I didn't think that you would have such a thing on you."

Dong Tianrui smiled, "That's right. I have a Qi Supplementing Pill with me."

"Qi Supplementing Pill?"

Ye Zifeng's smile turned bigger and bigger until he finally burst into laughter.

"Qi Supplementing Pill my ass. Don't lie to me. Do you think that I'm clueless in the way of alchemy? Alright I'm gonna go. After eating, I'll probably go sleep. See you guys tomorrow!"

Hearing this, Dong Tianrui and all his brothers all became scared.

"Old Dong, stop hiding it. Give it to him. It's useless to you anyways."

"Yeah. If he really waits until tomorrow, then we'll all be dead!"

Dong Tianrui gritted his teeth. He finally sighed and gave up, "Fine. This

time, I'll admit defeat."

Chapter 120: Spirit Amassing Pearl

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng slowly walked back into the room and squatted down next to Dong Tianrui.

“What kind of treasure is this? Is it worth it?”

Dong Tianrui hesitated for a bit and took his ring off. He inserted his qi into the ring and retrieved a pearl like object from it. He had an unwilling look on his face.

“Damn. Big bro. Here. Take this Spirit Amassing Pearl.”

“Spirit Amassing Pearl? What’s the use of this?” Ye Zifeng asked.

Dong Tianrui sighed, “Put your qi in there and you’ll see.”

Ye Zifeng was curious and took the pearl from Dong Tianrui.

A cold qi entered his hand into his heart. It continuously absorbed the qi in his body. After a while, when all his qi was absorbed from his body, everything returned to his body in one go, allowing his entire body to be filled with qi. It made his body feel warm and very comfortable.

“So that’s how it is. This thing is kind of like the Ocean Containing Bottle.” Ye Zifeng smiled and stored away the Spirit Amassing Pearl.

“Ocean Containing Bottle?” Dong Tianrui was startled and immediately spoke again.

“Big bro, this is a grade 4 spirit tier treasure! I’m taking a loss here!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and then comforted him, “What loss? You lost your treasure but you gained a big bro. I can give you tips to help you with your cultivation. When you get stronger, then wouldn’t the people in your clan respect you?

“Really? Do you have a way to help me train faster?”

Actually, by training in the gravity rooms, Old Dong can cultivate very quickly. However, he doesn’t have the perseverance for it. Every time something hard gets in the way, he would give up immediately. That’s why his cultivation had stopped growing.

“Of course. If not, how do you think I can freely walk in here with my low cultivation?”

“Oh. right.” Old Dong was startled and finally realized it.

If Ye Zifeng has this much potential at the fifth stage of qi refining, then in the future, he will definitely become an influential figure within Tiandao City sooner or later. From what Old Dong can see, Ye Zifen might have gotten some sort of special cultivation manual from Adept Baili to allow his cultivation to raise.

“Big bro, please accept my respect.”

Ye Zifeng didn’t want to have some little bro or anything. If he had to take on, he wouldn’t even consider this guy.

“No need. No need. But it’s too bad that I met you a little too late. I need to train myself too and can’t help you right now. This is because I have to return to my own city in a few days.”

A regretful expression appeared on Dong Tianrui’s face, “That’s too bad. I’ll have to wait until big bro comes next time.” An outsider can only stay within Tiandao City for fifteen days. Even Dong Tianrui knows of this rule.

Ye Zifeng sighed, “But, how about this. Since you gave me this Spirit Amassing Pearl, I can’t let you guys leave empty handed. I’ll teach you guys a breathing technique that will let you guys adapt to the pressure here.”

“Really?” Dong Tianrui’s eyes lit up immediately. His brothers were also getting excited. The hatred that they had for Ye Zifeng slowly dissipated.

“Alright. Listen up. The most important part of the Profound Sect’s breathing technique lies in the……”

As a Martial Lord in his past life, it was easy for him to randomly bullshit some fake technique with some very technical terms.

Dong Tianrui and the others closed their eyes and breathed according to Ye Zifeng’s instructions….

After a while, Ye Zifeng smiled, “So? How do you guys feel? Feeling any

better?"

While saying that, he retracted some qi from the Blood Emperor Drawing. The gravity went down to around 7.5x

"Wow. Incredible!"

Dong Tianrui couldn't help but smile and praised, "The Profound Sect's breathing technique is indeed marvelous. Big bro, you're incredible!"

"Stop trying to flatter me and continue. Don't relax." Ye Zifeng's expression tightened up. He purposely put on a stern look to scare them.

"Yes big bro! We'll continue!" Dong Tianrui continued to smile.

After another set, Dong Tianrui and the others slowly opened their eyes.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng had finished retracting some qi from the Blood Emperor drawing. The gravity in the room went down to 7x.

"How about now? Is it better than before?"

Dong Tianrui was super excited, "Yeah. This is too incredible! How long has it been after we started? The pressure felt like it was decreased by a whole stage!

Ye Zifeng couldn't help but laugh inside, "No shit. I decreased the gravity from 8x to 7x. What do you think?

"Damn big bro. I want to continue. Please continue giving us pointers. This technique is so incredible. Giving you my Spirit Amassing Pearl was worth it!"

Ye Zifeng laughed and looked deeply at them, "I happy for you guys too. But don't stop now. Let me tell you this. Don't be impatient for results, or else your cultivation speed will drop drastically. So, I suggest that you guys go home and practice this for a few days before coming back."

In most cases, what noble and spoiled children lack isn't physical strength but mental strength. Ye Zifeng is helping them build their confidence.

Dong Tianrui nodded, "Yes big bro. Thank you big bro!"

“Alright. Try and see if you can stand up now.” Ye Zifeng once again retracted some qi from the drawing.

The gravity in the room was now only at 6.5x

Old Dong gritted his teeth and forced himself up. The others who were already up saw that he was struggling and went over to help.

However, Dong Tianrui waved his hands, “Don’t.....Don’t help me...I can do it myself. Let me do it myself.”

All of his brother’s jaws dropped in surprise.

“Old Dong, when were you able to withstand so much pain?”

“Yeah. In the past, you would be screaming in pain already.”

Dong Tianrui rolled his eyes at him, “That’s the past. This is now. Didn’t you see that after big bro’s teachings, my perseverance grew as well?”

“This.....”

After receiving Ye Zifeng’s pointers, the others felt as if they were reborn as well. Just before, they were being pressured by the gravity to the point of death. It was Ye Zifeng’s teachings that allowed them to stand up and withstand the pressure.

Ye Zifeng smiled. He let them experience hell for a bit first and then slowly decreased the gravity. In addition, he added a few words of praise. Just like that, they had all changed their opinions of Ye Zifeng.

“I’m up! I’ve finally stood up! Big bro, little bro, I, have eyes but couldn’t see Mt. Tai. I hope you can forgive my past mistakes.” Dong Tianrui was very excited.

He was sent by his clan to train here. After seeing Ye Zifeng train all day and all night while he himself was not improving at all, he was feeling angry.

However, that anger had already turn into respect. He had forgotten about how Ye Zifeng left him to die before.

In the Martial Spirit Continent, the strong were respected. Even though

Ye Zifeng had made them suffer, he helped them improve as well. This was exactly what they needed.

Ye Zifeng had a calm look on his face, “Alright. If you go train later, you’ll probably feel that it is a lot easier.”

“Alright big bro.” Dong Tianrui then yelled out at his brothers, “Listen up everyone. After eating, we’re going to train! Is that clear?”

He turned back around to face Ye Zifeng, “Sorry big bro. We’ve hindered your training. If you need my Dong clan to do something, I’ll do my best to help.”

“Alright. You guys can go then.”

All this time, Ye Zifeng had forced all his enemies to make a blood oath or sign a blood contract to end their hatred towards him.

However, this time, Ye Zifeng was sincere with this group of people. Even though it took some time and energy, he helped them out a bit.

After Dong Tianrui and the others left, Ye Zifeng retrieved the Spirit Amassing Pearl and stared at it.

“Alright. I should start training too!”

Chapter 121: Training like a madman

It didn't mean much if someone in the qi refining stage who didn't belong in the Profound Sect trained in the gravity multiplier rooms. It just means that they have some connections with an elder or something and received permission to train.

However, to be able to lead a group of qi refining stage disciples to train here meant that Dong Tianrui didn't have a simple background.

Thus, Ye Zifeng was a bit softer when dealing with Dong Tianrui. Dong Tianrui didn't really have bad intentions in the first place anyways. Ye Zifeng was smart and didn't want to make some really strong enemy.

At least he didn't want to have enemies like this before he became stronger.

"Whatever. I'm not gonna think about it anymore. I have to concentrate on training." The most important thing to Ye Zifeng was his own training.

His eyes lit up and his expression became serious.

"8.5x Gravity!"

He slowly increased the gravity in the room as he circulated his qi throughout his entire body. As the gravity increased, the veins on his head started to bulge out. Blood started to seep out of his mouth.

However, he looked way better than the time that he experienced 8x gravity for the first time.

Also, after training so much for the past few days, he became more familiar with his mysterious martial spirit.

Everytime he got injured to a certain degree, he would use his martial spirit's power to heal himself.

"This is not my limit. 9x gravity!"

If others knew that someone at the fifth stage of qi refining was training his body using 9x gravity, they would definitely be extremely shocked. This was because the different was way too large. It was beyond common sense.

It had nothing to do with perseverance anymore. This was all due to Ye Zifeng's past experiences.

As a martial lord, Ye Zifeng understood the theory behind qi control. He was able to perfectly control his qi and use it to its maximum potential!

However, despite all this, when he felt the pressure of 9x gravity, he felt as if a large weight had slammed into him. His mind was buzzing and he started to feel very dizzy.

The seven apertures on his head started to bleed again. When that happened, he started to use his martial spirit's power to heal himself. However, the speed that he was recovering at was slower than the speed at which he is being injured. If this goes on, Ye Zifeng will definitely faint.

Thus, he decided to pull back a bit. He was going to retract the qi away from the Blood Emperor drawing.

He'll heal up and then try again.

When he turned to look at the drawing, a shocked expression appeared on his face.

He didn't that the qi on the drawing would have dried up so quickly.

If he can't retract his qi from the Blood Emperor drawing, then he can't lower the gravity in this room!

While in shock, Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows together. To him, this is something like a test. If he doesn't focus, then his life may be forfeited.

He calmed himself down and circulated all of his energy into the red veins on his arms, allowing his martial spirit to activate its maximum power.

Like this, he can guarantee that he won't faint due to the loss of blood.

However, this was only a temporary solution. If this goes on longer, then he won't have enough qi to hold on. The 9x gravity would crush him.

"Alright. Let's try the strength of this Spirit Amassing Pearl then."

He took a deep breath and got rid of any distracting thoughts in his

mind. He calmed himself down and concentrated.

Streams of qi entered the tiny pearl. However, it was different from before. This time, Ye Zifeng used half of his remaining qi and sent it into the pearl. He was going to take a gamble with everything that he got.

He can see a faint red light appear from the Spirit Amassing Pearl. His qi was continuously changing inside the pearl. The red light shows that there was a big change happening inside the pearl.

After a while, a cold stream of qi returned into Ye Zifeng's body. It was the qi that he sent into the pearl.

"I did it!"

After the changes in the pearl, Ye Zifeng can feel that his qi was of higher quality than before. He was very happy about this.

"It seems like the Dong clan is really extravagant. Even a random treasure of theirs have such a strong effect."

This random treasure is a grade 4 spirit rank treasure. It was a level higher than the Ocean Containing Bottle that was offered during the Heavenly Clan Gathering.

After this little surprise, he closed his eyes and calmed down again.

Even though this was a small success, he wants to continue using the Spirit Amassing Pearl and his martial spirit's power to attack this problem on hand from different angles.

With a higher quality qi in his body, Ye Zifeng can feel his resistance increase.

"With this Spirit Amassing Pearl, my training speed can go up by another level!"

The Spirit Amassing Pearl cleanses his qi and returns it back to him at a higher quality.

This was a simple process. However, there were still many questions. For example, how much qi can the pearl take at once? If there was too much, would the pearl explode or would the qi disappear?

But right now, after receiving a higher quality of qi back, Ye Zifeng felt a lot better.

“Oh yeah. What if I send this cleansed qi into the pearl again. Would it become even better?”

This idea randomly popped into Ye Zifeng’s head and he immediately tried it.

The streams of high quality qi that just returned to Ye Zifeng’s body was sent out into the pearl again. The faint red light from before turned darker and darker.

“Great! It seems like I’m right.”

Ye Zifeng was not greedy. He knows that no matter how awesome this thing is, it is only a spirit tier treasure. It cannot be compared to Heaven tier or even God tier treasures. If he overuses the pearl, then it might explode.

He took another deep breath and stopped. He waited for a bit before retrieving the qi from the pearl.

It was not good for Ye Zifeng if he retrieved the qi back by himself. However, Ye Zifeng had no choice as he was being pressured by the 9x gravity.

He needs to quickly retrieve the qi that he sent out. He needed to feed his martial spirit his qi in order to survive in the room.

“Alright. Let’s see.”

As expected, Ye Zifeng really was correct. If he forcefully retrieve the qi by himself, then the quality of the qi won’t change as much.

Only after a few rounds of cleansing did the martial spirit’s power increase. Only after an hour did the martial spirit’s recovery rate catch up to the rate that the pressure was injuring Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng let out a long breath. He used all his strength to try and get up from the floor.

“Get up!”

He resisted the pain and gather his energy in his arms to help get himself up.

“Almost there!”

He will receive benefits even if he just lie there and not move at all. However, the benefits will be limited. Only when he goes against the gravity can he increase his training speed.

Ye Zifeng felt his mind being distorted and couldn’t help but breath heavily.

Both of his eyes were filled with determination even though his entire body was in pain. If it was anyone else, they would have died due to the pain. However, how can Ye Zifeng give up? With his will power, as long as he has a single breath of life left in him, he won’t give up.

At home, he is unable to get much resources due to the decline of his clan. This chance of training in the gravity room was hard to come by. If he doesn’t train like a madman, then can he even return to the peak?

“Argh. I’m going all out!” Ye Zifeng gritted his teeth and used up all of his remaining qi. A white aura of qi surrounded his body. The pain on his body was relieved.

Taking this chance, he held onto his knees and forced himself up.

Qi continuously flowed out of his pores like a small geyser. The pressure from all directions tried to force him down again.

“Shit. I said I’m going all out!”

Ye Zifeng grunted and released all of his strength.

He can be composed when it is the time to be composed. However, this was not the time to be composed. He had to be hot blooded right now. He needs to be completely concentrated right now.

“Peng. Peng. Peng.” His skin began to rupture. To Ye Zifeng, this was nothing at all. His body started to crack slowly. However, this sound was just like any other sound to him.

In his mind, there was only training.

He had to train as if his life depends on it to get a good outcome. He needed to change. This pain was nothing to him, because if he succeeds, then the pain will only be the cost of success.

Rays of golden light appeared on his body. The red veins on his arms became redder and redder. Qi started to surround Ye Zifeng's body once again.

Ye Zifeng who had his eyes closed the entire time suddenly opened them.

"Yes! Finally. This time, I didn't need the help of pills! I trained and broke into the 6th stage of qi refining by myself!"

Chapter 122: Adept Baili

It took Ye Zifeng an entire day to break through the bottleneck to the 6th stage of qi refining.

By using his body to train to the 6th stage of qi refining, his body was now a lot stronger. He is now able to withstand the pressure from 8x gravity easily.

However, this doesn't mean that he's able to fight people at the 8th stage of qi refining. It just means that he is able to resist against their attacks for some amount of time.

.....

Outside, Bingqian who was used to eating three meals a day came back for the third time today, only to find that the food she left there was untouched. She sighed and shook her head, thinking about how Ye Zifeng might become sick from training too much.

"Miss Bingqian, you're here to bring him food again?"

Liu Bingqian didn't want to bother Ye Zifeng and was going to return to her room. However, she met Dong Tianrui on the way.

She remembers how these people were mean to Ye Zifeng and coldly looked at them.

"It's none of your business."

Dong Tianrui was startled and immediately replied with a smile.

"Miss Bingqian, don't misunderstand. After what happened last time, we knew that we were in the wrong. Big bro's teachings are forever engraved in my heart. I don't wish to offend Miss Bingqian."

Liu Bingqian furrowed her brows and looked at Dong Tianrui, "Who's your big bro?" She can tell that this guy was a good for nothing bastard who relies on his clan. Thus, she didn't have a good feeling about him.

"Of course it's the person in the 3x gravity room!" Dong Tianrui happily said.

Liu Bingqian yelped in surprised, “No way. Didn’t you guys try to find him for trouble? How long has it been and you guys are calling him big bro now?”

Dong Tianrui and the other’s smiled.

“Sister in law doesn’t know but that day, big bro taught us all a lesson that we will never forget. He allowed us lazy noble kids to be reborn and see the world in a new light!”

“Yeah that’s right sister in law. After big bro taught us the breathing technique, it felt a lot easier to train in the gravity rooms. We won’t get tired that easily anymore!”

Liu Bingqian’s body shivered. Her heart began to race. An embarrassed expression appeared on her face.

“What are you guys blabbering about. When did I become sister in law? Nothing ever happened between us yet.”

Dong Tianrui and his bros looked at each other and smiled.

“Sister in law, don’t joke around. If you don’t have a relationship with him, then why would you bring him food everyday?”

“I……” Liu Bingqian was at a loss for words. She wanted to explain but she couldn’t.

Dong Tianrui smiled and continued, “Also, I can see that you don’t really like training yourself and yet you stayed back to train with him. Do you dare say that you don’t have feelings for him?”

Liu Bingqian’s mind was in a mess and her heart was beating so fast that it was about to jump out of her chest.

“You guys! Stop speaking nonsense. It’s impossible for big brother rough guy and I to be together. He is engaged to my little sister.”

Dong Tianrui and the others were startled, “Wha? Big bro is engaged too?”

At that time, the door to the 3x gravity room flung open. Qi energy exploded out from inside.

Just when they wanted to go into the room, Ye Zifeng opened the doors and walked out gallantly.

“What are you guys talking about so energetically?

“We uhhh. We’re just chit-chatting.....” Dong Tianrui smiled and looked over at Liu Bingqian.

He saw how Bingqian was giving him the death glare as if she was going to kill him if he said anything unnecessary.

Dong Tianrui wasn’t stupid. If she was giving him this look, then he won’t talk about it anymore.

“Right big bro, you look pretty happy. Did you breakthrough or something?” He quickly changed the topic.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “That’s right. I’ve spent so many days and have finally broken through.. I’m at the 6th stage of qi refining right now!”

Even though his training speed increased after he got the Spirit Amassing Pearl, the cornerstone of his success is the hard work that he put into it.

Dong Tianrui was asking just to change the topic and didn’t expect an answer like this. He was shocked and surprised at Ye Zifeng’s answer.

“What? You’ve reached the sixth stage of qi refining in such a short amount of time?” Including Liu Bingqian, everyone was shocked.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “What do you mean such a short amount of time? I feel like this is very slow already. Oh yeah, to precisely put it, I’m at the middle 6th stage of qi refining.”

“Middle 6th stage? What happened to the low stage? Did you skip it completely?” They were shocked again.

“Big bro. As expected from my big bro. But can you let us commoners live too?” Dong Tianrui had a bitter look on his face.

Dong Tianrui used his clan’s connections and wealth to reach the 6th stage of qi refining. However that’s low 6th stage of qi refining. Now Ye Zifeng broke through straight into the middle 6th stage and completely

surpassed him so easily. This made him feel very jealous.

The gravity rooms here can help people who has one leg into the next stage breakthrough. But it doesn't mean that they can completely breakthrough into the next realm, let alone into the middle stages of the next realm.

"Big bro, I've decided. I, Dong Tianrui, will follow you from now on. I won't see anyone else as a big bro!"

Ye Zifeng was only at the 5th stage of qi refining yesterday and now, just in one night, he was higher than himself.

If he doesn't grab onto Ye Zifeng's leg now, he will definitely regret it in the future.

Liu Bingqian was especially happy for Ye Zifeng, "Big brother rough guy, you're incredible. You actually broke through into the 6th stage of qi refining. We should go out to eat and celebrate."

Ye Zifeng replied, "No way. You've sent me the meals for today already. If I go out and eat, then wouldn't I be wasting your kind intentions?

Liu Bingqian was moved, and felt embarrassed, "Big brother rough guy...."

"Also, if we go out to eat, we're going to waste a lot of time. If we have time to go and find a restaurant outside, we might as well stay here, eat and then go back to training. Maybe I can even breakthrough to the peak 6th stage of qi refining!"

Liu Bingqian's maiden heart was shattered by this one sentence. Of course she wouldn't want to disrupt Ye Zifeng training but this sentence..... Couldn't he have phrased it better?

'Bingqian, Bingqian, why are you going back so quick? When did you start to like training?"

Ye Zifeng's words made Liu Bingqian move faster and faster away.

.....

In a restricted area behind the back mountains of the Profound Sect.

“Congratulations Master Baili for completing your secluded meditation.”

“Congratulations Adept Baili!’

Everyone bowed and was respectful towards Adept Baili. They all had a little hint of fear on their face.

Adept Baili let out a cold chuckle and then looked at everyone. He was wearing an azure robe with a black sash. He looked like a snake man and his gaze caused everyone to freeze over.

When his gaze fell upon his beloved disciple Jin Peng, his brows furroed and asked,

“Jin Peng. What’s that scratch on your face?”

This scratch was caused by a woman when he went out drinking.

But when Jin Peng lifted his head, his solemn expression caused the people around him to hold in their laughter. Only when Jin Peng glared at them did they stop.

“Master, this injury was caused by an outsider called Ye Zifeng!”

“Oh?” Adept Baili had a cold expression on his face, “Ye Zifeng? That guy has the nerve to harm my disciple. Does he not put me in his eyes?”

“That’s exactly right.” Jin Peng added oil to the fire, “Master Baili, that Ye Zifeng is too abominable. Not only did he hurt me, he also insulted me. He insulted master as well!”

“Don’t exaggerate. It’s possible that he insulted you... but to insult me? Say.... what realm is that guy in?”

“5th stage of qi refining.”

When Adept Baili heard that Ye Zifeng’s cultivation was so low he felt a little relieved. No matter how weak they are, he will give them a beating.

“Ahhhh. Who told you to become my first disciple. Even though your cultivation is not the highest, you are still my first disciple. Since you and that Ye Zifeng have a feud, then I, Adept Baili, will help you gain your face back!”

Adept Baili loves his disciples too much. Sometimes, he knows that his disciples were in the wrong but will help them anyways.

Jin Peng was shaking in excitement.

“Master. You’re really willing to help me?”

“If I don’t help you, then who will?”

Jin Peng couldn’t help but laugh, “Thank you master.” The unhappy emotions in

“But master…. That guys is with Muyun Old Devil, I’m afraid…..”

Adept Baili was startled for a bit but then smiled, “So that’s how it is. He’s someone on Muyun Old Devil’s side huh? Okay. Then I’ll have to make an appearance myself. I’ll let Ye Zifeng know the difference between the heavens and the earth. Even if he has Muyun Old Devil behind him, I’ll make him pay the price no matter what.”

“With Adept making a personal appearance, this matter is already over.”

Chapter 123: Great Fame and Power!

Adept Baili is in the Martial Practitioner realm but compared to Elder Zhao and Elder Shen, he was still a level lower. However, it was still easy for him to take care of Ye Zifeng.

Along with Jin Peng, Adept Baili has around ten more experts who left the mountains with him. They all walked towards the gravity rooms, causing others to start gossiping.

"What day is today? How come even an Adept is here at the gravity rooms? There's nothing here that can help him with his training."

"Are you stupid? Look at how they're walking? They're probably here to teach someone a lesson. We're bystanders. We should leave quickly and not get drawn into this mess."

"You're too nervous. This is an adept. He wouldn't harm innocent bystanders for no reason."

However, when he said that, a frightening qi lifted his entire body into the air as if he was a puppet on a string. He was pulled all the way to Adept Baili.

When his companions saw this, they all got scared and ran away.

The one who was caught was extremely frightened, "Aaaa.....Adept....I don't have any animosity towards you guys. Please. Let me go."

Adept Baili coldly snorted, "If you had any animosity with me, that means that you're at least at my level..... If you want me to let you go then... hehe."

Adept Baili turned around and looked at the gravity rooms, "Where is Ye Zifeng. Tell me now."

That person quickly shook his head, "I don't know. I've never heard of that name."

Jin Peng laughed, "Master. I told you that Ye Zifeng is at the 3x gravity room."

Adept Baili shook his head disapprovingly at Jin Peng and sighed, “Ah... Do you not know how to get the mood going to get your face back? Do you not know how to be imposing?”

To start things off, they need to be imposing. He used his imposing manner as an adept to instill fear in others. If he nicely asked these people where Ye Zifeng was, then he would lose all of his respect.”

At that time, Dong Tianrui and the others ran out from the 6x gravity room.

“Who the hell is making so much noise down here in so early in the morning? Do you not see that we’re trying to train?”

Dong Tianrui was the leader of these people and yelled very loudly. He had dark circles on his eyes, showing that he’s been training the entire night without sleep.

“You guys.....” Adept Baili was extremely angry when he saw that these ‘retards’ yelled at him like they didn’t put him in their eyes.

Suddenly he noticed the ‘Dong’ jade pendant that Dong Tianrui was carrying and was startled. He was glad that he didn’t make a big fuss out of this and used his imposing manner.

“Oh so it’s the young master of one of the two strongest clans in Tiandao City. It’s just as people have said, you really are handsome and valorous!” Adept Baili added a few sweet compliments to get himself closer with these people. Even the Profound Sect can’t offend a strong clan like theirs.

“You... Could you be....” Dong Tianrui was feeling a bit drowsy and wasn’t fully awake.

Jin Peng couldn’t take it anymore and couldn’t help but yell you, “It’s Adept Baili!”

“What? You’re Adept Baili? The one who’s in charge of the gravity rooms? That Adept Baili?”

“That’s right!”

Dong Tianrui suddenly remembered the time when Ye Zifeng talked

about his backings. His heart skipped a beat and thought about if he had offended the adept in any way.

He turned around and looked at Jin Peng, “Then, you’re the disciple that has some relations with Ye Zifeng?”

By now, Dong Tianrui have already gotten Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian’s name so he was able to call out his name.

Jin Peng was startled. He had never seen this person before.

He hesitated for a bit and then asked, “Young master Dong, what kind of relations do you have with Ye Zifeng?”

Dong Tianrui laughed loudly. When Jin Peng mentioned Ye Zifeng, his expression became brighter.

“Ye Zifeng is my big bro. My only big bro. You guys are here to look for my big bro? What do you guys want?”

.....Silence.....

Complete silence.....

Jin Peng and Adept Baili looked at eachother with a shocked expression in their eyes.

When did Ye Zifeng make connections with someone like this? To make someone as arrogant and despotic as Dong Tianrui to call himself big bro, just what did he do? If they lay a hand on Ye Zifeng, then what will happen?

“We.... We actually came here to.....”

Before he could finish his sentence, Bingqian walked out too. When she saw Jin Peng, a cold expression appeared on her face.

“Jin Peng. Why are you here again? Did my big brother rough guy not teach you enough?”

“Miss Bingqian.... I.....”

When Jin Peng saw Liu Bingqian, his entire body withered. He didn’t think that Liu Bingqian would accompany Ye Zifeng for the entire ten day

of duration that he was gone.

“Miss Bingqian? Why is she here? Didn’t you say that she would definitely not like the training and go back to the Muyun Estate?” Adept Baili raised his brow at Jin Peng.

He did say that he would ignore Muyun Old Devil and teach Ye Zifeng a lesson. However, he can’t really do so in front of Bingqian.....He didn’t really want to offend Muyun Old Devil.

‘Master....” Jin Peng didn’t tell his master the relationship that Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian had and was momentarily at a loss of words.

“What’s going on? That big brother rough guy she’s talking about....is it Ye Zifeng? What kind of relationship do they have? She sounds like she’s very close to him!”

Adept Baili became more and more nervous. He kind of regretted that his decision to help Jin Peng. If he randomly offends the Dong clan and somehow offends Muyun Old Devil, then it will be disastrous. If Muyun Old Devil refuses to concoct pills for him, then that would be very bad.

“But master.... Didn’t you say that if you don’t help me, then no one will?” Jin Peng had a begging look on his face. If Adept Baili doesn’t help him, then he basically wasted the past few days waiting for nothing.”

Adept Baili sighed, “Alright. Who told you to be my eldest disciple. Since it’s like this, then we’ll look for Ye Zifeng ourselves!”

“Are you two look for me?” Ye Zifeng’s calm voice sounded from behind them.

“Big brother rough guy!”

“Ye Zifeng!”

Jin Peng was all smiles right now. In front of all these people, he can’t go into the room and drag Ye Zifeng out. However, Ye Zifeng came out by himself. He basically walked right into the trap.

“Big bro. You’re here!” Dong Tianrui wanted to go up and welcome his big bro but was blocked by Jin Peng and the others.

“What are you guys doing? Why are you blocking my way?”

Jin Peng was expressionless, “Young master Dong. This doesn’t have anything to do with you. We don’t want to offend the Dong clan so we hope that young master doesn’t interfere.”

When Liu Bingqian wanted to interfere, she was given the same treatment and was blocked.

“Miss Bingqian, sorry to offend you but please forgive us.” A few people formed a wall in front of Liu Bingqian

There was a martial disciple realm amongst them, thus she couldn’t break through.

“Don’t worry Bingqian, I’m fine.”

“But....” Liu Bingqian was worried.

Ye Zifeng turned back to look at the others, “Such a grand battle formation for a mere qi refining stage cultivator like myself. I’m honored.”

“Hehe.... Ye Zifeng, if you can’t handle it, then kneel down and kowtow to my master.”

Jin Peng walked in front of Ye Zifeng and laughed coldly.

He knew that with Liu Bingqian here, he can’t make a move on Ye Zifeng. All he can do is punish him. Muyun Old Devil probably won’t be bothered by this at all.

With this, he can get some of his face back.

However, Ye Zifeng acted as if he didn’t hear that. He cupped his hands and bowed, “Ye Zifeng greets Adept Baili.”

Adept Baili have seen many people who tried to curry favors with himself. However, Ye Zifeng was calm unlike others who showed fear. He started to become curious about Ye Zifeng.

However, he had a very cold expression on his face, “Ye Zifeng. You harmed my disciple’s face. You insulted my disciple’s personality. It seems like you have no regards for me and the Profound Sect. As the

administrator of the gravity rooms, I have the right to banish you!"

"That's right. Ye Zifeng. Don't blame us. This is our Profound Sect. A mere outsider like you shouldn't be acting like this."

"Really?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and his eyes lit up. Behind Adept Baili, around ten figures with white robes appeared before everyone's eyes.....

Chapter 124: To be the focal point

The white robed individuals were led by Elder Zhao. For so many people to appear at once, the already somewhat cramped space felt even more cramped.

Before Elder Baili even got here, Ye Zifeng have already contacted Elder Zhao. When something actually happens, they would come out.

“You……What are you guys doing?”

Adept Baili was given a fright by the sudden arrival of these elders. Never have so many elders appeared in the gravity training rooms.

“Adept Baili. This is what I should ask you. Could you have gotten the news too? If not, how did you get here so fast?”

“News? What news?” Adept Baili asked.

The other elders didn’t bother answering him. They all looked behind Adept Baili and their eyes lit up.

“Aiya. So the alchemy genius haven’t left yet. It really was worth my time to come over!”

“That’s right. Young master Ye, your performance during the competition was incredible. I, Liu Xing, will forever remember that scene. Oh yeah, why did you want to come to our sect and refine pills for us for free?”

“Right? Last time, we tried to invite you but you refused us all. This time, you personally came over. I don’t need it to be free. Your pills will be worth my money. Please refine some pills for me!’

These people looked at Ye Zifeng as if they were looking at a shiny piece of cold.

“So you guys are all here to ask him to refine pills?” Adept Baili pieced everything together and asked with a nervous tone.

“That’s right. Adept Baili, you didn’t know that? This Ye Zifeng is the champion of this year’s alchemy competition. We had a few people go and

ask him to refine pills for us but he declined us all. But now, he's here in our Profound Sect. How can we let this opportunity go?"

Adept Liu was staring at Ye Zifeng awaiting for his reply.

Adept Baili furrowed his brows and gritted his teeth. He gloomily looked over at Jin Peng.

"Jin Peng. Why didn't you tell me about this? At least tell me about his identity!"

"Master, I....." Jin Peng bitterly smiled. From what he saw, he didn't think that Ye Zifeng would have any kind of special identity. He's only a mere cultivator at the fifth stage of qi refining. A pretty boy who follows Liu Bingqian around. He's been too focused on getting revenge and didn't ask around about anything else. Who would've thought that there would be so many experts of the Profound Sect behind him?

This is too coincidental. How did Ye Zifeng gather all these people. How did they know that Ye Zifeng planned to refine pills for them for free?

All these questions appeared in Jin Peng's head, making him feel agonized.

Elder Zhao looked over at him, "Adept Baili, why did you come to find Ye Zifeng?"

Jin Peng didn't even think about it and showed a fierce expression, "Of course we're here to teach....."

"Shut it!" Adept Baili exploded and cut Jin Peng off.

There are so many people who are fond of Ye Zifeng. If he says that he was going to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson, what would they think of him?

Adept Baili laughed, "Who would've thought that the young genius alchemist would be here in our Profound Sect. Of course I'm here to ask for pills."

Hearing that Adept Baili was here for pills as well, the look on the other elder's faces became better.

Adept Liu smiled and nodded his head.

“Great minds think alike. However, Adept Baili didn’t go to the competition this year and yet you still know Ye Zifeng. It seems like his name is getting more and more widespread. I’m guessing that in two years, there won’t be anyone that doesn’t know him.”

Adept Liu’s words were quickly approved by the other elders.

“Adept Liu is saying.....”

Adept Bai forced a smile on his face. He wanted to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson but now that Elder Zhao and Adept Liu interfered, how can he do anything?

Adept Baili’s disciples saw that their master was afraid so they didn’t make any noise either. They carelessly allowed Liu Bingqian and Dong Tianrui escape.

“Big bro! You’re incredible. All these elders in the Profound Sect are trying to curry favors with you. I’ve decided. I, Dong Tianrui will follow big bro no matter what!” Dong Tianrui clenched his fist. His admiration of Ye Zifeng had reached the peak.

Liu Bingqian also had a glistening expression in her eyes, “Big brother rough guy, you’re growing up too quickly. I was your partner at the alchemy competition and they don’t even care about me. I believe that you’ll be even better than my master soon!”

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn’t reply.

If his goal was to become as strong as Muyun Old Devil, then he will definitely disappoint himself. It’s too low.

Other people finally noticed Liu Bingqian and looked over, “Aiya. Even Muyun Old Devil’s disciple, Miss Bingqian, is here as well. The champions are both here!”

Elder Zhao laughed louder and louder, “That’s right. These two youngsters will sooner or later become the pillar of support for Tiandao City’s alchemists. We did the right thing by coming here today!”

After hearing what Elder Zhao said, all the other Adepts started to speak

as well.

"Young master Ye, how about you come and refine pills for me first? I won't waste your efforts. During the competition, my junior brother, Yao Chong, spent one thousand and eight hundred gold coins for you pill. This time, I'll give you one thousand eight hundred gold coins as well!"

"Do you think money can move our young master Ye? Too vulgar! How can our young master Ye be someone who thinks of nothing but profit? How about I get a few of Profound Sect's beautiful female disciples and have them accompany you for a few nights....?"

When Liu Bingqian heard this, a cold murderous aura appeared from her. She coldly glared at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng bitterly laughed inside, thinking, 'Bingqian, why are you glaring at me. I didn't agree to it at all.'

He raised his head up and looked at all the elders with an imposing look.

"It's not a problem for me to refine pills for you guys. But, this Adept Baili got here first. According to the rules, I should refine pills for him. Also, I'm an outsider so I can't stay in Tiandao City past fifteen days. I have to return to Leizhou City soon and I'm afraid that I won't be able to refine pills for anyone else.

Someone was dissatisfied, "Why does he get priority? I have the seniority here!"

"That's right. My cultivation is higher than his too."

Everyone single one of them was throwing shade at Adept Baili. Some people offered gold while others offered treasure. If Adept Baili gets this opportunity just because he got here first, none of them will be satisfied.

Adept Baili didn't know whether he should cry or laugh, "Who said I want him to refine pills for me."

He didn't attend the alchemy competition so he doesn't know how skillful Ye Zifeng actually is. Thus, when everyone else heard his comment, ill feelings formed towards him.

“Would you look at that. Pretending to not care after receiving such an advantage.....”

“Right? After being in secluded meditation for so long, from what I can see, he probably trained so much that he became stupid.” They all said whatever they wanted without thinking at Adept Baili at all.

Seeing how everyone was making a fool out of him and trying to curry favors with Ye Zifeng, Adept Baili felt that he was thrown into a hole by Jin Peng.

When he saw that Jin Peng was still trying to beg him to help, he became even more angrier. He was thinking about how he should punish this disciple who doesn’t know how to discern certain situations.

He lightly coughed and looked towards Ye Zifeng, “Little brother. We have some misunderstandings earlier and I hope you don’t keep that in mind....”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Misunderstandings? What misunderstandings? Adept was probably deceived by some vile character.

Adept Baili was startled and then smiled. He was praising Ye Zifeng by the way he looked.

Adept Baili can accept these words from Ye Zifeng, but to Jin Peng, it was a completely different matter.

Jin Peng was furious, “Ye Zifeng, who are you calling a vile character!? Don’t force me!”

“Alright Jin Peng, shut up!”

Adept Baili coldly looked at Jin Peng. He saw that Ye Zifeng was giving him face so he won’t do anything to him. Even if he had to sacrifice Jin Peng, he can hold it in and do so.

From Ye Zifeng’s point a view, an enemy doesn’t have to be an enemy.

He can pull an enemy to his side. It might not create internal problems on the other side, but he accomplished his goal.

With Ye Zifeng’s strength right now, he’s not the Adept’s opponent and

thus, he had to think of a plan like this.

Afterall, if he offends a Martial Practitioner stage expert right now, when he comes to Tiandao City in the future, bad things will be awaiting him.

Sometimes, one cannot choose their enemies. However, Ye Zifeng was able to pick his own enemies and fight accordingly.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked towards Adept Baili, “Since everyone wants me to go refine pills for them, then Adept Baili, are you willing to give this chance to someone else?”

Adep Baili didn’t even want Ye Zifeng to refine pills for him anyways. Seeing how Ye Zifeng was giving him a chance to be a good guy, he grabbed onto it immediately. His views on Ye Zifeng had completely changed already.

“Of course I’m willing. I can give this chance to anyone!” Adept Baili have decided. In matters regarding Ye Zifeng, he won’t make a move anymore.

Elder zhao smiled and looked over at Ye Zifeng, “If you’re willing to give it to anyone, then why not give it to me?”

Chapter 125: [No Title]

THERE'S NO CHAPTER 125.

Chapter 126: Desperate Actions

Elder Zhao was the one with the highest cultivation amongst all these elders and also had the most prestige out of everyone here. Thus, since he suggested that he wanted the opportunity, the others have nothing to say. They could only feel pity.

As a person, Ye Zifeng knows how to behave with integrity. He arranged a time to refine pills for the other elders and made them very satisfied.

Adept Baili came in an imposing manner but left with his tail between his legs. If other people heard about this, they wouldn't even believe that it happened.

The most important thing was that Adept Baili had already decided to not bother Ye Zifeng anymore. First, Ye Zifeng gave him face and second, he knew that Ye Zifeng couldn't be trifled with.

Just like that, Jin Peng lost his master's support. From the beginning, he couldn't even finish a single sentence. His face was extremely red as he clenched his fists.

.....

Fifteen days past by and it was finally time for Ye Zifeng to return to Leizhou City. But before that, he walked over to Elder Zhao's residence.

He wasn't going there to refine pills for him. After all everything was set up by Ye Zifeng. He went over to reminisce for a bit.

The two sat in the Heart Nurturing Pavilion and drank wine. After a few cups, Elder Zhao sighed.

"You stinking brat. Do you know what I regret the most in my life?"

"Let me guess. Do you regret attending the Heavenly Clan gathering in Leizhou City? Do you regret meeting me?" Ye Zifeng smiled.

Holding onto two expert's soul spirits and have them do things for him....Who else can do something like this?!

Elder Zhao was startled and laughed, "You stinking brat. You're not a

bad kid but you're too self confident! I, Zhao Wuji have lived for many years, why would the thing I regret the most have to do with you?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Maybe.... You probably don't want to admit it."

"You!" Elder Zhao was startled. He then stared deeply at Ye Zifeng.

"You stinking brat. You're right. At first, I regretted that I was being controlled by a mere qi refining stage cultivator like you. I've wanted to kill you many times. It was a good thing that Elder Shen stopped me."

"How about now?" Ye Zifeng smiled back.

"Right now huh? You showed that you have a lot of potential. Truth to be told, I didn't think that you would win the alchemy competition at all."

Elder Zhao was truthfully admitting everything. He wasn't playing around at all.

Ye Zifeng lifted up his wine cup and drank.

"Elder Zhao, truthfully, I've already gotten used to you yelling at me. Having you compliment me all of a sudden kind of makes me feel uncomfortable."

At first, the relationship between the two of them were like fire and water. However, they slowly became friends in the end. This was the same with Elder Shen.

"You stinking brat, you really think I'm complimenting you? I asked you to come today because I wanted to warn you about something." Elder Zhao suddenly had a serious expression on his face.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "You think that Adept Baili will make a move on me?"

"No. From what I saw, Adept Baili kinda liked you. I'm afraid that his disciples might make a move on you. That Jin Peng.... I feel that he's up to no good. Remember, you have to stay on guard against his desperate actions."

Elder Zhao seriously looked at Ye Zifeng. He even put his hand on top of Ye Zifeng's to stop him from drinking.

“There were countless amount of people who tried to make a move against me. How do you think they ended up?” Ye Zifeng smiled. He didn’t think that Jin Peng was going to be a problem at all.

“But.....”

“Also, I’m going back tomorrow. No matter how much of a threat he is, he won’t chase me all the way to Leizhou City now will he?”

Thinking about it, he felt something in his mind. This was because he was thinking about how Wang Ruoxing chased him all the way from Leizhou City.

“Whatever. It’s your choice if you want to listen or not. I’m saying this because I’m afraid that you’ll die. I’ll be in trouble too. So you better watch out.”

Elder Zhao sighed. Seeing how confident Ye Zifeng was, he wasn’t going to stop him anymore.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “I got it. I know what to do.”

“Oh yeah. I forgot to ask you this. When are you coming to Tiandao City again?”

Ye Zifeng filled his wine cup up again and drank it, “When the time comes, I’ll be back.”

.....

Muyun Old Devil was busy refining pills and couldn’t leave so Yang Jing was the one who sent them out.

“Junior sister Bingqian, it’ll be several months before we see again. I really hope that when we meet again, your cultivation will have improved. If you breakthrough, then you will have to chance to enter the Profound Sect.”

“Breakthrough into the Martial Disciple realm huh? I wish. But breaking through the bottleneck is very hard. Also, if I come to Tiandao City alone, then that won’t be fun.....”

Liu Bingqian unconsciously looked towards Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng was looking all around right now. He wanted to see if anything was wrong with their surroundings. After being reminded by Elder Zhao, he was much more on guard.

"Big brother rough guy.....what are you looking at? We won't see Senior sister Jing again for a few months from now. Come say goodbye to her." Liu Bingqian looked over.

Yang Jing didn't have relatives or many friends in Tiandao City. Other than her master Muyun, she barely talked to anyone else.

Ye Zifeng looked back and smiled, "Miss Jing, Zifeng is a bit slow....please forgive me."

Yang Jing shook her head and lightly smiled. Her pale face looked very sickly.

"No need. You sound like we just met. Since you're Bingqian's....."

Liu Bingqian cleared her throat loudly and shot a glance towards Yang Jing. Even though she didn't say anything, anyone can tell what she meant to convey with that murderous look on her face.

Yang Jing smiled, "Alright. I'll stop joking around right now. You guys should leave now so you can get back before dawn."

After saying their goodbyes to Yang Jing, Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian both climbed into the carriage from before.

When there were three people in the carriage, it was very crowded but very lively.

However, when it was only Ye Zifeng and Bingqian, the carriage was filled with an awkward atmosphere.

Liu Bingqian was desperately trying to find something to talk about, but when she saw that Ye Zifeng was thinking about something with his eyes closed, she stopped trying.

"Since no one is following us, there shouldn't be a problem." Ye Zifeng had just finished communicating with Elder Zhao. After confirming that no one was following them, he calmed down and opened his eyes.

“It’s not like I’ll be attacked all the time right?”

Ye Zifeng sighed. He did try to limit the number of enemies that he has. It’s just that he can’t avoid making some enemies….

……

“Senior brother Jin Peng, I don’t think it’s a good idea to ambush Ye Zifeng behind master’s back….”

“Yeah. Attacking Ye Zifeng is not a small matter. Even master himself can’t deal with him. I say we should just leave it.”

“Senior brother Jin, how about we go back? If master finds out, he’ll punish us.”

Jin Peng had a very fierce look in his eyes. He coldly looked at his comrades, “Useless things. Why are you afraid of a mere fifth stage of qi refining cultivator? It’s true that master made an appearance himself, but he didn’t even make a single move. Even if we do fight, they can’t possibly beat us. Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian are both in the qi refining stage while we’re all in the Martial Disciple stage and have awakened our Martial Spirit.”

He waited for a bit, “Also, we’re out of Tiandao City’s territory already. No matter what we do, no one will find out.”

Actually, Jin Peng is exaggerating. The people from the Spirit Martial School are experts in this field. They will be able to find even the tiniest trace of evidence.

“Then senior brother Jin, if we capture Liu Bingqian, then what should we do?” When someone asked this, Jin Peng couldn’t help but be startled.

Jin Peng took a deep breath. After thinking about it, a cold expression appeared in his eyes.

“It’s not only once or twice. Bingqian, don’t blame me.”

Chapter 127: To see through your schemes!

His brothers were surprised when they heard that Jin Peng wanted to make a move on Liu Bingqian as well. They wanted to leave even more now.

'Senior brother Jin, I'm not doing it anymore. I'm going back. I will not do something that's going to offend Muyun Old Devil."

"Yeah. Senior brother Jin. Didn't you really like Miss Bingqian? Why are you making a move against her now?"

Jin Peng had a stern expression on, "You guys.... During normal times, you call me senior brother and try to kiss up to me. Now that I need your help, you guys are all going to back off?"

All his brothers looked down and didn't know how to answer him.

Jin Peng furrowed his brows and waved his hand, "Alright then. If you stay here with me, you'll be my brother for life. If not, then don't ever come looking for me again if you need anything!"

Everyone looked at each other.

"Alright. Alright. Let's not get on this sinking ship then. Let's leave."

If it was the low level disciples of the Ashen Spirit Sect, as long as the head commands it, his brothers will be there no matter what.

However, in Tiandao City's Profound Sect, the people are different. They need to consider their own well beings. They need to take the consequences into consideration.

Thus, the group of people slowly left. Only one person stayed in the end.

Jin Peng was surprised when he looked at the last remaining person, "Chu Hongbao. We're not that close with each other. I didn't think that you would stay behind for me."

"I'm staying because I'm intrigued by your fierce words. I'm interested."

Chu Hongbao was hidden in the shadows where others could not see him. He's usually very gloomy and didn't like to associate himself with

people so no one bothered with him. No one knows what he's thinking at all.

Jin Peng was startled, "Which words?"

"You said that you were going to make a move on Liu Bingqian right?" Chu Hongbao's had a bad look on his face.

Those words by Jin Peng was to show that he was determined to get revenge. However, he didn't know that it would scare away his brothers.

"Actually. We don't need to do anything to Bingqian. My main target is Ye Zifeng." Jin Peng tried to change to plans.

"No, No. Don't get me wrong. I want to say that if you're really going to make a move on Liu Bingqian, add me in."

Jin Peng shockingly stared at him, "What? What do you want to do to Miss Bingqian?"

Chu Hongbao's smiled sinisterly, "Hehe. Senior brother Jin, we're both guys, do you really not know what I'm thinking about?"

Jin Peng just wanted to knock Liu Bingqian out and leave her there. Then he would ruthlessly deal with Ye Zifeng. However, it seems like Chu Hongbao's true target was Liu Bingqian.

Jin Peng wanted to say something but Chu Hongbao interrupted, "Senior brother Jin. I know how you feel about Liu Bingqian. But, all she sees is Ye ZIfeng right now. I'm afraid that getting her will be harder than ascending to the heavens. Since it's like this, why would you sit there and watch her go away. Why not enjoy her for a bit?"

"This....." After hearing Chu Hongbao's suggestion, all of Jin Peng's suppressed emotions overcame him.

In his mind, the beautiful figure of Bingqian appeared.

"Yeah. If I can't get her, then Ye Zifeng can't either!"

Jin Peng tightly clenched his fists and was determined.

.....

At the same time, on the carriage.

Ye Zifeng gently opened his eyes and looked around.

“Bingqian, how long has it been since we left Tiandao City?”

“This..... Around two hours or so? What’s up big brother rough guy? You’ve asked me many questions regarding time already. Is there something wrong?” Liu Bingqian was curious as to what Ye Zifeng was thinking about.

Ye Zifeng didn’t say anything. He opened the the window of the carriage and smiled.

“Nothing. Maybe I’m just a little homesick. I want to see my father and my sister. Also, I don’t know how the situation is at home either.”

“Homesick? It’s only been fifteen days and you’re already homesick? Is it because you feel bored with me?”

Liu Bingqian quietly muttered and stared at Ye Zifeng who was staring into space.

They were the only ones in the carriage. If it was anyone else in Ye Zifeng’s position, they probably won’t be able to sit still. Afterall, Bingqian can be considered a peerless beauty. However, Ye Zifeng was calm and collected throughout the entire journey, as if he treated Liu Bingqian as a luggage. He didn’t even spare her an extra look or two.

Another half an hour passed by.

Ye Zifeng didn’t ask Liu Bingqian anymore questions. When he opened the windows to look out again, his brows furrowed.

He looked at Bingqian and whispered, “Bingqian, do you remember if there were any giant statues on the way to Tiandao City?”

Liui Bingqian shook her head, “Giant statue? This.....I don’t really remember.”

It was normal for people to forget about these things after fifteen days.

However, Ye Zifeng was different. He still remembers.

Fifteen days ago, on the way to Tiandao City, he would look out every once in awhile to look for landmarks. However, he doesn't remember seeing a giant rock statue at all.

Also, he had never seen this road before. It was completely different from the road that they were on before.

They weren't going to Leizhou City at all!

"Bingqian, listen up. There's a problem with this drive. He's bringing us away from Leizhou City. When I count to three, let's jump out from the back and use to qi to run as far as possible!"

Liu Bingqian was startled and surprised, "No way. Are you bring too sensitive? Maybe you remembered wrong?"

They had hired the driver at random. There wasn't any animosity between them. There was no reason for him to cause trouble to them.

Ye Zifeng turned very serious, "Bingqian, I'm only going to say this once. We're being targeted. Please believe me."

Seeing how serious Ye Zifeng was, Liu Bingqian became nervous too. She nodded in agreement, "Okay. I'll listen to you.

"Three....."

He looked at the driver and whispered to Bingqian.

'Two....."

Ye Zifeng grabbed Liu Bingqian's hand, "Follow me. Don't leave my side."

"Okay." Bingqian whispered back.

"One!"

Ye Zifeng quickly jumped out of the carriage like a dragon flying about. Right before he landed, he moved his qi to his feet to stabilize himself after landing.

Liu Bingqian did the same. After stabilizing herself, she followed right behind Ye Zifeng.

After the two left the carriage, they looked around.

They were in a completely secluded area. However, they weren't lost. They were only three hours away from Tiandao City. They can still feel the qi of Tiandao City.

"Bingqian, follow me and don't look back. Okay?" Ye Zifeng looked at her and started to run.

.....

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao were standing in an secluded area. When they saw the carriage approach them, they started to smile.

"Senior brother Jin, I didn't think that you would be so meticulous. You've even hired a carriage driver to lead them here. You actually had the driver go on the road and then turn around to come here. Normal people won't be able to notice any change at all!" Chu Hongbao was laughing loudly.

Jin Peng coldly smiled, "I told those other junior brothers of mine before. When you do things, you have to conceal yourself. You can't have anyone notice you.

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both put on a mask. They believe that even if Ye Zifeng sees them, he won't know who they are.

"It's better that they left. It's hard to work with a lot of people. Also, if we're doing something bad, the less people that knows of it, the better."Chu Hongbao smirked. He didn't ask anyone to stay because he had everything planned out already.

The two guys smiled at each other with an expression that only men can understand.

However, when they looked closely, the notice that there was two shadows behind the carriage, running away from their direction.

"No way. Did Ye Zifeng actually notice us?" Jin Peng was surprised. He was played by Ye Zifeng once already so he was extra careful this time. He didn't think that Ye Zifeng would find out in the end.

Chu Hongbao's expression changed immediately, "What are you waiting for? Chase them!"

Jin Peng came back to his senses. Right. They're both in the Martial Disciple realm. They can easily catch up to them.

"Alright. Let's go!"

Chapter 128: To lure them over.

The two of them ran for a long time before they stopped at a forest to take a rest. Ye Zifeng stopped running as if his life was on the line and started to pick up some herbs.

“Shhh....keep your breathing down.” Ye Zifeng looked seriously at Liu Bingqian.

.....A few moments later, Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao who were wearing masks reached the entrance of the forest.

“This Ye Zifeng is sure slippery. He knows that we’ll catch up so he chose to hide inside the forest.”

Jin Peng looked up at the forest and coldly snorted.

Once they entered the forest, it’ll be very hard to find them.

“What are you afraid of. They’re both only in the qi refining stage. They can’t be far.” Chu Hongbao looked down and looked at the fresh footprints on the ground.

“Then let’s keep going.”

.....

Ye Zifeng and Bingqian hid themselves well and saw Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao enter.

“It seems like I was right.... There really is someone who wants to deal with us.”

If he wasn’t warned before hand and slept on the carriage, he probably would’ve died without knowing what happened.

Bingqian’s heart shook. An angry expression appeared on her face.

“Who dares to do something like this. Are they not afraid of my Liu clan and Muyun Old Devil?”

Ye Zifeng calmly laughed, “It’s either Wang Ruoxing, Hua Shao, or Jin Peng. If I were to guess, it’s probably Jin Peng!”

When Ye Zifeng thought about it, he realized that he had a lot of enemies. He hasn't even lived in the continent for that long and he's already made so much enemies..... He felt a bit helpless on the inside.

"Jin Peng? No way. His master Adept Baili was very polite towards you. A mere disciple like him..... How dare he make a move against us!" Liu Bingqian was in disbelief.

"That's the reason why he's acting against us. His master was polite to me and no one was backing him up. It forced him to do it himself. He's doing it in desperation."

Ye Zifeng laughed.

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian pouted, "Big brother rough guy. Why are you acting like it's nothing. If it really is Jin Peng, then that'll be bad. We're only in the qi refining stage. How can we fight him? How about we run away right now?"

Ye Zifeng laughed lightly, "Hehe.....I didn't plan to fight them head on anyways. How about we hide for a bit first. If they're careful, they would have set up some traps at the entrance already."

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao looked like they were in a hurry but they have actually left traces of their qi around. If Ye Zifeng or Liu Bingqian accidentally touches it, then they will know their whereabouts.

"But....." Bingqian wanted to discuss about the long terms. If they did leave their spirit imprints behind, then they'll find them sooner or later anyways.

"Okay. Don't think too much....."

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and retrieved a large bag of gold coins from his interspatial ring.

It was the one thousand eight hundred gold coins that he got from the alchemy competition.

Liu Bingqian was startled by the sight of so much gold coins.

"Big brother rough guy. What are you doing? There's nothing to buy

here. Why are you taking money out?"

Ye Zifeng smiled but didn't say anything. He then took out the Vermillion Lotus and Illusionary Dream Grass out. These were the things that he "stole" from Muyun Old Devil.

"These ingredients are super precious. Where did you get them from? No. I should ask you what you're doing with them?!" Liu Bingqian didn't understand Ye Zifeng's movements at all.

"Big brother rough guy, tell me....."

Ye Zifeng took out many things from his interspatial ring and finally started to talk.

"The gold coins have an abundance of qi infused in it. The Vermillion Lotus Fruit and Illusionary Dream Grass are good material for setting up a formation. Since we don't have anyone to help us, we have to deal with them ourselves."

"Setting up a formation? Big brother rough guy, are you trying to fight them with a formation? But how do you know how to set up a formation?" Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, "How else do you think I set up the Spirit Absorbing Pill formation back then?"

Even though Ye Zifeng wasn't a formation expert, he had studied it while learning the dao of alchemy since they can compliment each other. Because of this, he's able to set up some small formations.

"Oh. Right."

Liu Bingqian nodded. She had a curious look on her face, "Then, what kind of formation are you setting down?"

"This....." Ye Zifeng looked at her in the eyes, "You'll see in a bit."

Normally, if a person is being chased down, they would be scared. However, Ye Zifeng wasn't scared. He thought of this as a test for himself.

.....

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao circled around the entire forest and didn't even see Ye Zifeng's shadow. They stopped and used their qi to probe around.

They have left some spirit imprints on the way. If Ye Zifeng or Liu Bingqian touches it, they will notice immediately.

"This Ye Zifeng is sure hard to handle. We set up some many traps on the way and they didn't even touch a single one? He only in the qi refining stage and is from Leizhou City, a countryside city.... How does he know so much. Don't tell me that he has experience with these traps..." Jin Peng cursed as none of the traps activated.

Chu Hongbao felt that it was strange too but didn't pay too much attention to it.

Afterall, Ye Zifeng was able to become the champion of the alchemy competition and was able to force their master to be polite to him. This was nothing out of his expectations.

"Don't be impatient brother Jin. We've also set up traps at the entrance. If they want to leave, they will definitely trigger the traps." Chu Hongbao laughed coldly.

Jin Peng laughed loudly as well. His impression of Chu Hongbao was getting better and better.

Junior brother, you're usually silent and emotionless. It seems like you actually very sly."

""Haha. Senior brother flattered me...." Chu Hongbao smiled. If he didn't lust after Liu Bingqian, then why would he even be here? He's just using Jin Peng to do what he wants.

The two laughed and chatted as they walked around.

Chu Hongbao suddenly stopped and closed his eyes, "Senior brother Jin, do you hear that?"

"Hear what?"

Jin Peng's eyes suddenly lit up. He can hear something moving from a bit

far away.

“What sound? Look. The person is in front of us!”

The origin of the sound wasn’t Ye Zifeng. It was Liu Bingqian!

“God damn. We finally found her!” Jin Peng yelled out and wanted to rush towards her. He was very confident in his speed.

“Hold on Jin Peng. There’s something wrong. Why would Ye Zifeng not hide and show themselves? This is something that he would do!”

Chu Hongbao felt that something was not right. He felt uneasy. As for where this feeling came from, he didn’t know himself either.

“Maybe they want to leave the forest?”

Chu Hongbao shook his head, “Probably not. If they wanted to leave, they would’ve done so earlier. Why would they wait until now?”

“Chu Hongbao, don’t tell me that you’re scared of the two of them who’s in the qi refining stage!”

Jin Peng let out a loud laugh and rushed towards Bingqian like a tiger.

From what Jin Peng can see, if he’s afraid of two qi refining stage cultivators then he wasted his entire life training to the Martial Disciple realm.

Chu Hongbao furrowed his brows, “That dumbass..... Why does he have to be so impulsive. He’ll pay bitterly in the end....”

However, Chu Hongbao thought about it himself. He couldn’t think of the reason why Ye Zifeng wasn’t afraid of them.

“Whatever. I’m probably thinking too much.”

He shook his head and followed behind Jin Peng....

.....

“Big brother rough guy! They’re coming!” Liu Bingqian heart was beating faster and faster. She was getting more and more afraid.

Ye Zifeng told her to not be afraid but how could she not be. Their

opponents were in the Martial Disciple realm. There was two of them too!

Ye Zifeng watched as the two approached them. A cold expression appeared on his face.

“Since you’ve come, then it’s time to clean up……”

Chapter 129: Reeling in the fish.

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both rushed forward very quickly, thinking that Ye Zifeng would try to escape.

When they got closer, a peerless beauty appeared in front of them. From the looks of it, she was trying to run with all her might.

Jin Peng started to laugh loudly, “Bingqian? Hahaha, good thing Chu Hongbao is behind me. This is first come first serve!”

Chu Hongbao sighed and yelled out, “Do you see Ye Zifeng anywhere? There’s no way that Liu Bingqian would be by herself.”

Even an outsider like Chu Hongbao can see the relationship between Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian. There is something amiss here.

“This isn’t hard to explain. Have you heard of the words ‘everyone for themselves’? Under this kind of situation, Ye zifeng must have ran away like a coward. Let him be. I’ll replace him and show Miss Bingqian some love!”

Jin Peng’s eyes were filled with lust. It looked as if Bingqian was already in his arms.

“Miss Bingqian, don’t run. You won’t be able to run away!” In this desolate forest, Jin Peng finally showed his true colors.

Suddenly, a sharp sound penetrated his ears. It felt as if his ears were being pierced by a needle. His heart sank like a ship filled with water. He felt as if his entire body was in another space. He didn’t know how to react at all.

At the same time, Liu Bingqian also stopped running.

Ye Zifeng told her to be the bait and draw Jin Peng out. Using a beauty to lure a wolf… that was very effective. If Ye Zifeng used himself as bait, Jin Peng would have definitely thought about it before approaching.

“This…. What is going on?” Jin Peng’s expression change. He could barely string a sentence together. Even Bingqian turned pale from the

scene and yelled out.

“The sixteenth heavenly formation. Calm on the inside, dangerous on the outside. A formation resembling the heavens. Ruler of formations. The vanguard of the army.” A calm ancient tone could be heard by Jin Peng.

“The symbol of mountain of the eight trigrams represents the gate of life! Tis lies on the northwest. Tis the birther of all living things! With gold coins as energy, tis the eye of the formation!”

(TL: fml. This guy citing some ancient poem from Zhuge Liang of the three kingdoms. http://s9.sinaimg.cn/mw690/0032yq2Ngy6Vt7SxkZa58&690 This is about some battle formation used during the three kingdom era.)

When these words were said, Jin Peng saw the gold coins around him fly around. The abundance of qi energy seeped out and continuously flowed out. It continuously supplied the formation with qi energy.

“The symbol of wood of the eight trigrams represents the closed gates! Located on the southwest, block thy movements. Close the door of life on thee! Qi congeal. Thunder Spirit Tempering Formation!”

Jin Peng wanted to get out of this place but the illusionary qi doors were closed on him. He was unable to break out. He used all his strength but every time he tried to break through, he felt as if he was being blocked by a wall. There were also thunder qi everywhere.

“Ye Zifeng. Get out here! I know that this has something to do with you!”

Ye Zifeng coldly chuckled. No shit. Other than Bingqian, he was the only other person there. Of course it was him.

Ye Zifeng’s eyes flashed and continued to chant.

“The symbol of thunder of the eight trigrams represents the gate of harm! Located directly in the west, bring disaster upon thy body! Vermillion Lotus, Illusionary Dream..... Harm!”

When the word ‘harm’ came out of Ye Zifeng’s mouth, the vermillion lotus fruit and illusionary dream grass inside of the core of the formation

continuously supplied the gate of harm with qi.

At first, Jin Peng didn't feel anything but in a bit, an immense pressure appeared from the gate of harm and suppressed Jin Peng to the floor.

The sound of Jin Peng's bones cracking sounded like bamboos shattering.

He dropped onto his knees. It felt as if someone was stepping on him. He slowly dropped down as blood seeped out of his mouth.

"This……This is…..?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Don't you think that this feels similar to the gravity multiplier rooms?"

"What?"

"It's too bad that I don't have enough materials for my formation. I can't materialize something to attack you so I'll have to use the gravity room's formless energy instead."

Jin Peng spat out a mouthful of blood. He wanted to force himself up.

Seeing that, Ye Zifeng smiled, "You don't have to waste your energy. This is 12x gravity. For a 1st rank Martial Disciple like yourself, this is the utmost limit already.'

If Ye Zifeng had enough materials and opened the gate of death, Jin Peng would've been half dead by now. He was lucky that he's only suppressed like this.

"Ye Zifeng, you…How do you know how to set up formations?" Jin Peng's face was almost on the floor.

"The things I know far surpass your imagination."

Jin Peng was startled and looked at Ye Zifeng. There was fear in his eyes.

Ye Zifeng continued to smile, "Are you regretting that you made me your enemy?

Of course Jin Peng was feeling regret. If Ye Zifeng can suppress him like this in the qi refining stage….

Then when he grows up, he'll be much stronger. What if he wants to get revenge? Jin Peng had offended someone unbelievable. If Ye Zifeng didn't die, then he would be the one dying.

However, it's not like he doesn't have the chance to kill him. He put all his hopes of Chu Hongbao. He didn't enter the formation yet so he won't lose.

"Are you waiting for your partner?" Ye Zifeng smiled.

In the next moment, Chu Hongbao jumped down from a tall tree, and stood around seven feet away from Jin Peng. He looked at Jin Peng who was kneeling in front of Ye Zifeng and didn't know how to react.

Ye Zifeng looked at Chu Hongbao. He saw that he was standing a bit far away, staring at the scene in shock.

In Chu Hongbao's entire life, he had never seen a martial disciple realm cultivator punished like this by a qi refining stage cultivator. This wasn't because he haven't experienced many things in life yet but because Ye Zifeng was too strong.

"You want to come at me too? Then come in." Ye Zifeng invited him to come over.

"Ye....Ye Zifeng." Chu Hongbao swallowed. Jin Peng was already kneeling in front of Ye Zifeng. How can he win against him?

If other people heard that a martial disciple realm cultivator was standing in front of a qi refining stage cultivator thinking about whether he can win in a fight, no one would believe it. But right now, this was happening.

"Chu Hongbao. What are you afraid of? Come in and help me. I can't handle this anymore!"

Chu Hongbao cursed inwardly and called Jin Peng a retard. It was a good thing that he was careful and didn't rush to his own death like Jin Peng. He was a lot better off compared to Jin Peng right now.

"What? You don't want to save your companion?" Ye Zifeng smiled. He

was trying to pick a fight.

Ye Zifeng knows how to pick his opponents. He knows what he is capable of and what he's not.

Since they want to fight, then he'll fight.

"What companion? I'm just passing by. I'm not with him at all. You can deal with him however you want. That's your problem." Chu Hongbao spoke coldly without any emotions.

"Chu Hongbao, you fucking bastard! Do you believe that I will waste you the next time I see you?" Jin Peng's face was already on the floor as he yelled out.

Chu Hongbao's expression was still very cold, "Tell me that next time. Do you think that young master Ye would let you go after you tried to kill him and harm miss Bingqian?"

He saw that the situation was not good and immediately severed his connection with Jin Peng.

"Chu Hongbao, you two faced bastard! Weren't you saying that you were going to take advantage of Bingqian?"

"Hehe....anyone can say empty words. I, Chu Hongbao admit that I wanted to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson for humiliating my master, as for Miss Bingqian, I didn't want to harm her at all." Chu Hongbao sneered.

"Chu Hongbao. I'm gonna kill you!"

Chu Hongbao was mixing truth with lies. It was hard to tell what the truth and the lie was. He was very sly. He admitted to the less serious things and avoided the more serious problems.

However, these words didn't matter to Ye Zifeng. He can easily discern the lies from the truth.

Liu Bingqian walked back next to Ye Zifeng. She suddenly remembered the humiliating words that Jin Peng said and became extremely angry.

"Right. Big brother rough guy. You heard what Jin Peng said too right? If we fall into his hands, we won't have a good outcome. We can't let them

go like this!”

Ye Zifeng’s eyes stared right into Jin Peng’s soul.

“Bingqian, say, how do you want to deal with them?”

“I.....”Liu Bingqian only said that because she was angry. She doesn’t have any experience in punishing people so she was at a loss for words.

“Well... since you caught them, you decide.”

Chu Hongbao noticed Ye Zifeng’s words and asked frantically, “What do you mean by “them”? I’m outside of the formation.”

“Do you really think that you didn’t enter the formation?” Ye Zifeng let out a cold snicker.

“What?” Before Chu Hongbao could be surprised, his entire body was nailed onto the floor.

With Ye Zifeng’s personality, he wouldn’t reel in before the fish takes the bait.

Chapter 130: Undying!

“The Twelfth Earthly formation. Thy form a square. The clouds rule thee four corners. Return formation!” Ye Zifeng coldly chanted and slammed his palm onto the ground. A current of qi fluctuated under the ground.

Chu Hongbao’s expression changed immediately. He wanted to retreated but he was a step too late.

An immense pressure surged towards him and pushed him towards Jin Peng, into the field of 12x gravity.

A moment later, he was in the same situation as Jing Peng. His face was glued onto the floor.

“Hehe. Chu Hongbao. This is your retribution. I didn’t think that it would come so quickly!” Jin Peng laughed coldly while blood seeped out from his mouth. It was not a sightly scene.

Chu Hongbao whispered, “Listen up. If you want to live, then we have to work together.”

“Peh. Shut the hell up.” Jin Peng yelled out, “If I die here today, I’ll bring you down with me.”

“You!” Chu Hongbao stared at him. He hated himself for following someone like this. However, he didn’t think that Ye Zifeng would be so horrifying.

To have a formation on top of another formation. To place a smaller formation outside of a bigger one isn’t something hard to how. However, in reality, not many people would think of something like this.

Especially when Ye Zifeng had a limited amount of time to set these formations up.

Chu Hongbao deserved to be in this situation.

Ye Zifeng laughed and smiled towards them, “What do you guys think I’ll do to you?” While saying that, he took out Wang Lin’s dagger from his interspatial ring and waved it around.

Jin Peng snorted, “Since we’re in your hands already, do whatever you want. Kill if you want. Don’t beat around the bush!

“To lay down this formation, I wasted one thousand eight hundred gold coins, a vermillion lotus fruit, illusionary dream grass and other precious ingredients. I also gave up a jin (half a kilogram) of fresh blood. Do you think I’ll let you die so easily? Do you think I’ll be happy?”

Saying that, he pointed the dagger towards Chu Hongbao. Chu Hongbao was scared shitless and couldn’t say anything. He almost couldn’t breathe anymore. Ye Zifeng decided to help him out a bit.

Chu Hongbao quickly replied, “I have some treasures on me. If you like it, you can take it all.”

‘I’ll give you the time that it takes half an incense to burn to take out everything in your interspatial ring!” Ye Zifeng was showing no mercy at all.

“Okay. Okay!” Chu Hongbao bitterly laughed. He used the last little bit of his energy and sent his qi to his ring. Then he threw the ring aside.

“I can’t move with this gravity on me. I can’t take the things out. You do it yourself. It’s all yours.” Chu Hongbao was a bit reluctant and showed an exhausted expression.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brow. When he bent down to pick up the ring, he saw a cold smile on Chu Hongbao’s face and was startled.

He was careless!

“Shit!” Ye Zifeng immediately stood up and turned around.

However, Chu Hongbao have already gathered quite a bit of qi in his body. How can he let Ye Zifeng escape like this. A formless qi exploded out of his body as an invisible palm strike struck Ye Zifeng.

“Martial Spirit attack?” Jin Peng yelled out in surprise, “Chu Hongbao, when did you awaken your martial spirit? How come I don’t know about this?”

When people reach the martial disciple realm, it doesn’t mean that their

martial spirit will be awakened. Chu Hongbao is a gloomy and sinister person. He hid this card up his sleeve and didn't tell anyone. It made things easier for him when he wanted to do something bad.

At that time, the explosion knocked Ye Zifeng backward. It sent him flying into a tree. He broke around 5 thick branches until he plummeted to the ground.

After this, Chu Hongbao's entire face paled. He had used a lot of energy in this one attack.

"Big brother rough guy!" Liu Bingqian yelled out in fear. She quickly ran towards Ye Zifeng and placed his head on her thighs.

"Nothing.....It's nothing...."

It felt as if his lungs had been pierced and his heart was teared apart. He had almost fainted. If he didn't faint from the initial blast, then he can endure the pain.

He then spat out a mouthful of blood. It seems like he was still conscious.

"What do you it's nothing. Look at you. You're coughing up blood like this...." Liu Bingqian was about to cry. She frantically sent her qi into Ye Zifeng's body without knowing if it will help or not.

"What? He didn't die after my attack?" The one most shocked was Chu Hongbao. Even though that attack wasn't his full strength, Ye Zifeng was at a point blank blast radius.

He was sure that this wasn't something that someone at the fifth stage of qi refining can handle. They have to be in the ninth stage of qi refining to barely survive the attack.

What Chu Hongbao didn't know was that Ye Zifeng had already reached the sixth stage of qi refining. Also, after training for so many days, he can handle the 9x gravity room now. This meant that his body was as strong if not stronger than someone at the ninth stage of qi refining.

"Quick, Bingqian, Don't worry about me. Control the formation!" Ye

Zifeng wiped the blood from his mouth.

Even though the attack didn't kill Ye Zifeng, it knocked him out of the formation.

Without qi force driving the formation, its strength will weaken. Jin Peng might even be able to escape.

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao noticed this and started to get up. They didn't care if their bones were starting to crack.

"But you....." Liu Bingqian saw that Ye Zifeng's face was deathly pale and was about to faint.

Ye Zifeng yelled out, "Quickly!" as he spat out a mouthful of blood again. If he wasn't this injured, he would've personally gone to maintain the formation himself.

"Okay. I got it!"

Liu Bingqian quickly ran towards the area that Ye Zifeng pointed towards.

"Big brother rough guy, what do I do now?"

"Do you see that line filled with qi on the floor? Insert your qi into it. All of it!" Ye Zifeng panted as he instructed Bingqian.

Liu Bingqian quickly nodded and followed his instruction. She knows that if Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao recovered, then she and Ye Zifeng will be finished.

"Okay. i did it. Now what....."

Ye Zifeng spat out another mouthful of blood and used his qi to stabilize himself.

"Now do you see the gold coins in the four corners? Spread your qi towards them!'

"Got it!"

Liu Bingqian was very serious and did everything diligently. She separated her qi into fours and sent it to each corner. The dimming light

started to shine brightly again.

“Now move your qi upwards. It will reset the formation!”

“Okay!”

Liu Bingqian directed the golden light towards the top of the formation. With this, countless amount of light appeared. The formation was repaired!

When Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao finally stood up, Bingqian had already repaired the formation.

With that, an immense pressure struck down on Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao again.

Liu Bingqian’s qi was a lot stronger than Ye Zifeng’s and was able to strengthen the formation even more. The gravity was at around 13x right now.

“Stop. Stop... Miss Bingqian, don’t be too forceful. My bones will all break!” Jin Peng cried out miserably.

Since Chu Hongbao used his martial spirit attack, he looked as if he was half dead.

“Miss Bingqian, I beg you. I will die if you keep this up.”

Liu Bingqian only increased the strength because she didn’t know how to control it. She didn’t actually mean it.

After she familiarized herself with the formation, she started to play around with them.

“Who told you to sneak attack big brother rough guy. To injure him like this.... I think I should increase the strength some more.”

Hearing that Liu Bingqian wanted to increase the strength of the formation, their faces ashened.

“Miss Bingqian, you can’t. My brain is about to fry already. If this keeps up, I will die!”

“That’s right. Miss Bingqian, you’re so beautiful and kind. Please let us

go. We were in the wrong.

Liu Bingqian smiled and looked over at Ye Zifeng.

“No use in begging me. Big brother rough guy, what do you.....”

Halfway through her sentence, the expression on her face changed dramatically.

Chapter 131: Swallowing Martial Spirit

Ye Zifeng had fainted.

In such a key moment, he actually fainted.

“Big brother rough guy, you……”

Liu Bingqian became frantic. How can she fight against Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao by herself?

If she goes over to help Ye Zifeng, Jin Peng will definitely escape. If she doesn’t go over, she’ll be worried about Ye Zifeng.

On the other hand, Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both started to smile. They can see that Ye Zifeng was the mastermind behind everything and that Liu Bingqian was useless without him.

If Ye Zifeng goes down, then it’ll be hard for Liu Bingqian to do anything. How can she fight against Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao by herself?

“The chance is here.” Jin Peng’s eye lit up. Even though he was ready to die, if he got the chance to escape, he will definitely take it.

Chu Hongbao laughed coldly, “Let’s stop fighting among ourselves and try to break out .”

Both of them started to gather the qi in their body and planned to breakthrough the suppressing effect of the gravity. At the same time, they were being careful so Liu Bingqian doesn’t notice.

“Big brother rough guy, wake up!” Liu Bingqian knew that they were in a bad situation right now. If this keeps up, the formation will collapse. When that happens, they’re finished.

When the two were planning their escape, something suddenly happened.

Even though Ye Zifeng had fainted, a cold, gloomy, sinister and desolate aura appeared from his body. The aura was materializing into something and it gave off a very scary feeling.

“This....” Liu Bingqian recognized this. That night when Ye Zifeng was fighting against Wang Ruoxing, he used this move..... Even though she was curious about it, she didn’t ask him about it at all.

And now, this scary attack had appeared again.

Strands of qi converged together and turned into a big bloody monster. It was behind Ye Zifeng with its mouth wide opened as if it was going to swallow everything here.

“Oh my god..... What is that? Could it be.....” Jin Peng jaws dropped.

“It’s a martial spirit!” Chu Hongbao couldn’t help but call out.

As someone who had awakened his martial spirit, he could tell that this qi monster is a martial spirit.

“Martial spirit? No way?” Liu Bingqian was in disbelief.

How can someone at the qi refining stage awaken their martial spirit? This was unbelievable.

However, the reality was in front of them.

The qi monster appeared behind Ye Zifeng looked like it found its target and rushed towards Chu Hongbao.

Chu Hongbao cried out. He was super scared. He used the qi that he had gathered so far and sent out a palm strike using his martial spirit towards the monster.

When the qi palm strike reached the monster, the monster opened up its mouth and swallowed the strike.

“No! My martial spirit!” Chu Hongbao was shocked. He felt sorrow in his heart.

After swallowing Chu Hongbao’s martial spirit, it made a frightening sound. It sounded as if it was sucking the blood out of something.

“Stop! Stop it!” Chu Hongbao stared at the scene in front of his. Because he was being suppressed by gravity, he couldn’t do anything at all.

“No. Don’t eat my martial spirit!”

It wasn't easy for someone to awaken their martial spirit. Chu Hongbao used a large amount of effort to do so. After all the effort he put into awakening his martial spirit, he couldn't do anything as he watched the monster swallow his martial spirit.

After eating swallowing Chu Hongbao's martial spirit, it fused with its qi and grew a little bigger

After that, it moved towards Jin Peng's direction.

Jin Peng could help but gasp.

"Don't come over. Don't come over!"

If the two of them could move, they wouldn't be afraid of the monster. But since they are being suppressed, they can't fight back against the monster.

Liu Bingqian became a little calmer. If Ye Zifeng's martial spirit can deal with Jin Peng, then it'll make things easier for her.

She calmed her mind down and followed Ye Zifeng's instructions from before. She concentrated on maintaining the formation to pressure Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao.

When the monster approached Jin Peng, it saw that he didn't resist at all and swallowed him whole.

This qi monster is fucking demonic. If it doesn't find a martial spirit to swallow, it'll swallow the person instead! This wasn't the first time that Liu Bingqian saw this but she was still frightened.

As the victim, Jin peng screamed loudly. His miserable cry sounded throughout the entire forest. It felt as if his entire body was being torn apart.

"This....." When Chu Hongbao saw what was happening to Jin Peng, he let out a sigh of relief. His felt happy on the inside. It was a good thing that the monster swallowed his martial spirit and not himself.

After it finished with Jin Peng, the qi monster slowly dissipated into the air as if it was never there in the first place.

Jin peng collapsed and started twitching on the floor.

“Senior brother Jin, your.....your hand. Your feet.....what happened?”

Chu Hongbao stared at Jin Peng’s body and turned pale from the sight.

“What do you mean?”

Jin Peng heard him and looked down while in pain.

“Ah!” He saw that his hand was starting to rot. The speed was so fast that he could see the rotting process. A foul odor could be smelled from his feet as it started to rot as well.

His life essence was leaving his body!

If Ye Zifeng had unconsciously activated the power of his martial spirit, then what kind of martial spirit is this? How can it have such an overpowered ability.

However, Jin Peng didn’t care about this at all. He was worried about his own life at the moment. Even if Ye Zifeng doesn’t kill him, he’s turned into an old man already. With his personality, he can’t accept this at all. Ye Zifeng might as well kill him immediately.

“Help! Help me!” Jin Peng was horrified. He continuously fought against the pressure of the gravity. If he doesn’t escape and find help, he’ll be finished once that martial spirit’s power spread throughout his body.

The more he struggled against the gravity, the more qi that he’ll waste. By doing this, he was unable to protect himself from the martial spirit’s power. It only increased the rate of corroding.

The strange thing was that all the life essence coming out from Jin Peng’s body suddenly formed into a ball and slowly moved towards Ye Zifeng. It slowly healed up his energy.

Chu Hongbao was shocked, “This.... What kind of martial spirit is this?” He had never seen such a demonic martial spirit before let alone even hearing about it. How can such a demonic martial spirit belong to Ye Zifeng who’s in the qi refining stage?

Ye Zifeng suddenly coughed. After receiving the life essence from Jin

Peng, he started to recover.

Ye Zifeng felt as if entire body was being washed by a warm tide.

Jin Peng was continuously aging while Ye Zifeng was recovering very quickly.

Ye Zifeng slowly opened his eyes. The first thing he saw was Bingqian's worried expression

"Bingqian, what happened just now? Did I faint because I was unable to endure the pain?"

"Yeah. Big brother rough guy, you fainted so suddenly. You scared me to death.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows. He shouldn't have fainted like that. He knew that he wouldn't have fainted from that level of pain. He was guided by some sort of light before losing all consciousness. It was very hard to describe what happened.

"Also, big brother rough guy, tell me the truth. That move did you just use.... Do you already have the power to control your martial spirit?" A strange look appeared on Liu Bingqian's face.

"Martial spirit's power? I used it before?"

Ye Zifeng was startled. So that means that the martial spirit caused him to faint. Everything that happened afterwards was done by the martial spirit?

"You brat. If I didn't help you before, you've could've died from losing too much blood."

A voice suddenly appeared in Ye Zifeng's mind.

Chapter 132: Two birds with one stone.

Ye Zifeng thought that this was a chance to enter the martial spirit's world but when he closed his eyes, nothing happened.

He was surprised and opened up his eyes again. The scene in front of him did not change at all.

"You brat. Do you think my place is your backward? Do you think that you can come whenever you want?" The voice sounded in Ye Zifeng's mind again.

Ye Zifeng smiled and softly replied.

"So you're that shadow ghost?"

"Of course. Other than me, who else can communicate with you like this." The shadow ghost's voice was filled with disdain.

"This...." Ye Zifeng thought about it. There was Elder Shen and Elder Zhao.... But, in this situation, he didn't want to argue with the shadow ghost.

"Then, you're the one who saved me? It seems like you sucked dried his life force."

Ye Zifeng fainted so he didn't know what actually happened. But when he woke up, he saw the scene in front of him and was able to deduce the events that transpired.

"Hehe.... Only after sucking his life force dry can I help you recover... But it would've been better if I sucked the essence of a dead person. A dead person won't be able to resist at all. But this guy was not moving so it was a lot easier."

Ye Zifeng raised his brow, "Sucking someone's qi to heal others.... What kind of martial spirit are you?"

The shadow ghost didn't answer Ye Zifeng. He continued on talking, "Let me tell you this, you were only a half a step away from dying. Don't try to blame me for anything. I want to live too. So listen up and be careful next

time. Don't get me killed too!"

If Ye Zifeng really died, then the shadow ghost will die as well. This was the reason why the shadow ghost comes out when Ye Zifeng is experiencing a life or death situation.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Don't worry. I'm not a pedantic person. I won't let anyone that tries to kill me go off that well."

"Good." The shadow ghost answered, "This time, I've talked to you for too long. I've wasted a lot of my precious energy. I won't be coming out for a while. I'll come out when you give me some pills to nourish me."

The shadow ghost knows that Ye Zifeng can refine pill. Thus, he will do whatever he can to get some pills from Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "So, you're just going to leave these two to me now?"

The shadow ghost laughed coldly, "One of them has their martial spirit waste and the other one had their life force sucked out. Even if you let them go and walk out, they won't dare to chase after you."

Ye Zifeng smiled and wanted to reply.

However, the voice in his head disappeared. It seems like the shadow ghost had returned to its own world.

It will only return when Ye Zifeng brings some pill for it.

.....

"Big brother rough guy. Big brother rough guy. Are you alright?" While controlling the formation, she turned around and looked at Ye Zifeng with a worrisome look.

Ye Zifeng smiled back at her, "I'm fine."

Liu Bingqian let out a sigh of relief, "Your eyes looked hazy. I thought you were going to faint again. If you do, then I won't know what to do anymore."

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao were scared of Ye Zifeng fainting again. If he does faint again and that monsters appears again, they'll be toast!

Ye Zifeng had already recovered and stood up. He then walked towards Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao.

Jin Peng had been taught a lesson by the martial spirit already. When he saw Ye Zifeng approaching him, he became frightened.

He doesn't care about dying as long as he drags Chu Hongbao down with him. Now that Ye Zifeng played the 'stronger when unconscious' card, this was the first time that Jin Peng felt that he was utterly defeated.

"Bingqian, you've been straining yourself for a while. You should be a bit tired. Bring it down a notch to 12x gravity. I want to talk with them for a bit."

"Okay. Got it!" Bingqian giggled. Ye Zifeng was right. She was feeling a bit tired. Not just physically but mentally as well.

When she heard Ye Zifeng's instructions, she felt that he was caring for me. It made her feel happy.

When the gravity was lessened, Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao could finally start breathing normally again. They started to cough after the pressure was released.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at the two of them.

"Are you done coughing? Do you two have anything to say?"

"Young master Ye, I was wrong. I don't dare anymore."

Jin Peng started to beg for forgiveness. He pointed at Chu Hongbao, "He was the one who injured you. Young master Ye, I'm a straightforward person. I know I was wrong but I didn't have a lot of malicious thoughts in the beginning. Can you give my master Adept Baili face and let me go?"

"Let you go?" Ye Zifeng laughed, "Then why didn't you give Bingqian's master Muyun Old Devil face and let us go?"

Jin Peng said that he didn't have malicious intentions... If he didn't have any malicious intentions, then why would he be hiding outside of the city. Why would he make the carriage driver bring them far away? It was obviously all premeditated.

Jin Peng was at a loss for words. He didn't really want to do this. It was only after Chu Hongbao had incited him that he started to think of such malicious thoughts and do such stupid things.

Chu Hongbao is a smart person so he started to explain as well, "Young master Ye, that Jin Peng is very sly. When it attacked you, it was all his command! Now that I think about it, I regret everything that I have done."

While saying that, he had a guilty look on his face. He really knows how to act.

"So that's how it is. It seems like I won't be sympathizing with you guys...."

Ye Zifeng continuously smiled and walked back towards Bingqian. He then put his pal on the formation.

"You.....What are you doing? Ye Zifeng?" Jin Peng panicked and called out his name.

They had both suffered enough from this formation, and now it seems like Ye Zifeng wants to personally control it again. They hearts began to beat faster.....They were afraid.

"Don't be afraid....." Ye Zifeng looked over, "Since you guys are speaking the truth, then I'll tell you what i'm thinking too."

"What are you thinking?" Chu Hongbao forced a ugly smile on his face.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "I've been trying to find a solution to a problem. I've been wondering how I should handle people that continuously try to provoke me. What should I do?"

Jin Peng forced a smile and nodded, "Right. What should you do? I would like to hear about it. Let me, Jin Peng, learn something from you."

"In the beginning, I thought about using a blood oath to solve the problem. But, actually, it didn't work that well. It can be cheated through. Later on, I thought of using a blood contract. This gave a pretty good result...."

Ye Zifeng stopped for a bit before continuing, "However, it can only be

done when both sides have calmed down. There is also a limit to the conditions. If I give you guys a blood contract to sign, I might be attacked by your martial spirit again..” When he said these words, he looked deeply looked at the two of them. It seems like he was not over what had happened before.

Chu Hongbao wanted to cry but there were no tears. In his mind, he thought, ‘My martial spirit was swallowed by you already. Even if I want to, I can’t.’ Ye Zifeng had taken his ring away already too. He had nothing else.

Jin Peng smiled as he listened, “Young master Ye, continue, I want to listen.”

Ye Zifeng suddenly showed a bright smile, “So I thought of a method that can kill two birds with one stone. It can limit and restrain you guys while I can get some benefits too.....

“Get benefits and restrain us?”

Jin Peng’s mouth started to twitch. In his mind, he wanted to skin Ye Zifeng alive. However, he showed a smile on his face.

“That’s great! What kind of method is this? I, Jin Peng, will be the first to agree to it!”

Chu Hongbao suddenly had a bad feeling about this.

Ye Zifieng looked deeply at them and smiled, “Actually, it’s simple.....”

Chapter 133: To instill fear

"That's to instill fear." A cold smile appeared on Ye Zifeng's face. It made Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao shiver.

"Wait.... What did you say?" Jin Peng somewhat didn't understand Ye Zifeng's meaning and his face twitched.

On the other side, Chu Hongbao understood what Ye Zifeng meant. He gasped as his face turned pale.

"You'll know very quickly."

Ye Zifeng put his palm on the formation and slowly sent his qi into it.

"The wind coils like a snake, formed by the might of the heavens."

The silent yet deadly pressure from the gravity suddenly changed after Ye Zifeng added his qi.

A sandstorm appeared within the formation. Under the immense pressure of the gravity, all of the flying debris and earth pressed down against Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao. It felt as if they were being hit by a hailstorm.

This was not all. This was worse than a hailstorm. The sand and debris wrapped around Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao's bodies. It slowly entered their nose and mouth, choking them until they started to tear up.

"Ke. Ke..... Don't, don't....."

When Jin Peng was going against Liu Bingqian, he still had the energy to talk. But now that Ye Zifeng had taken over, he could do anything at all. Once he opened his mouth, the sand will enter his throat and block anything from coming out.

Ye Zifeng acted like a demon king and looked at him, "What was that? I couldn't hear you."

The resources to maintain the formation was limited. Even though this was a small formation, it still used up the resources very quickly. If he didn't intimidate his opponents enough and let them escape, then Ye

Zifeng will be the one in danger.

Thus, Ye Zifeng had no choice but to do this. He was exerting his dominance. He was letting his opponents experience fear.

“Don’t……Don’t……” Jin Peng tried again but couldn’t say anything in the end.

“Don’t what?” Ye Zifeng snickered.

When he saw that Jin Peng had finally adapted to the environment and was ready to finally talk, he added even more qi into the formation.

In an instant, the sandstorm became even more wild. The sandstorm hid the sky and covered the earth. If someone was standing outside, they would not be able to see anything at all.

Jin Peng had just opened his mouth and it was immediately filled with sand and debris. He had a dumb expression on his face as he tried to talk.

Chu Hongbao called Jin Peng a retard in his mind. Why is he even opening his mouth in this situation? He’s just inviting trouble. Since they were both in the same situation, he couldn’t open his mouth to tell Jin Peng anything.

“Bingqian, when I’m like this…. Am i scary?” Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Liu Bingqian.

“Big brother rough guy……”

This was the first time that she had seen Ye Zifeng act so cold hearted.

These people are Adept Baili’s disciple. If he really kills them, then he will make a big enemy. But if they just rob them and let them go, it won’t feel good.

“Big brother rough guy. You’re doing the right thing! These people are resentful. They will remember this and get revenge. We have to instill fear into their hearts and make them walk the other way when they see us!” Liu Bingqian’s eyes lit up as she smiled at Ye Zifeng.

From what Liu Bingqian can see, when Chu Hongbao struck Ye Zifeng with the martial spirit attack, Ye Zifeng almost lost his life. There was no

reason for him to let them go so easily!

Ye Zifeng nodded and showed Bingqian a warm smile. Then he turned towards Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao with a cold expression on his face.

With this one glare, Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao's souls left their bodies. It was a frightening glare. Even without experiencing the pain, they knew that there was pain coming.

"Clouds of the earth. Changes from its formless beginning and materialize into a soaring bird." Ye Zifeng chanted.

Mist formed around Ye Zifeng's body and entered the formation.

The sandstorm formation was just a way to shut them up. What Ye Zifeng is using now is the real attack.

On the ground, white mist curled around like snakes and slowly curled itself onto Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao. The mist had an corrosion effect so when it touched their skins, a sizzling sound could be heard alongside their miserable cries.

"Ah! Ah!" Jin Peng couldn't help but cry out.

The aging effect on his body didn't stop yet and his arms continued to rot.

With the white mist, it brought Jin Peng even more pain.

Jin Peng wasn't afraid of one type of pain. But if there were multiple attacks hurting him at once, it might even take his life.

Chu Hongbao didn't have it as bad as Jin Peng but he acted as if he was far worse.

If Jin Peng can't handle it himself, he can share some of the pain with his martial spirit. However Chu Hongbao's martial spirit was swallowed so he had nothing to rely on.

Jin Peng physically feared Ye Zifeng while Chu Hongbao mentally feared Ye Zifeng. Very quickly, Chu Hongbao felt the pain that Jin Peng was feeling and cried out even louder.

The mist won't cause harm to people in the martial disciple realm but it will bring them pain.

The fear on their faces was becoming more and more vivid. Bingqian was astonished at the scene. They're only in the qi refining stage but they were able to suppress people in the martial disciple realm.

“”Big brother rough guy, when did you learn something like this? It's so magical!” Liu Bingqian couldn't help but praise.

What she doesn't is that even if normal people knew this formation, they won't be as extensive as Ye Zifeng. To directly use one thousand eight hundred gold coins and many precious materials? He's basically spending money like it's dirt.

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn't say anything.

Ye Zifeng didn't learn this here at all. He had spent years researching pill formations and he coincidentally came across this while learning about formations.

The formation that he set up looks formidable but it's actually a paper tiger. The range of the formation is very limited and it cannot be used on more than three people. If there was a fourth person, the formation would scatter immediately.

Actually, the resources for the formation is almost used up already. He had to move quick.

Ye Zifeng's expression became serious and he looked at Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao, “I know that you guys can't talk right now but I don't want to hear you guys anyways.” His made sure that the two of them could hear his voice.

After a while, he continued, “So, you have to immediately reply to my next words. If not, then you will be punished...Do you understand?”

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao were both startled. It took a lot of energy just to process Ye Zifeng's words in their minds. They didn't even have the chance to reply.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows, “Your reaction is too slow. Punishment!”

An electric current entered the formation and burned their skin. It seems like Ye Zifeng wants to burn them to crisps.

The two of them were sweating profusely. They were being pressured by the gravity, stuck in the middle of a sandstorm, being corroded by mist and now they were being burnt by electricity. This small area that they were in felt like hell. If someone were to look at their bodies carefully, they would notice that their bodies didn’t have a single undamaged part.

The most important thing was that Ye Zifeng didn’t even start asking questions yet! Fear was pouring out of their eyes. They can’t believe how such an inexperienced kid can have this kind of personality.

“Do you know that you’re in the wrong?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and took the sandstorm away, allowing them to talk.

“Big brother. Big brother! This little brother knows his mistakes. I will never try to do anything like this again. I was wrong before. Please give me another chance after teaching me this lesson.” Jin Peng was crying as if his parents had died. His entire body was injured and he felt excruciating pain.

Chu Hongbao was better off than Jin Peng by a bit.

“Big bro, I’ll give you all of my treasures. When I see you, I’ll walk the other way. Please. Please stop torturing me!”

How can Ye Zifeng not know what they were like. Ye Zifeng knew exactly what they were thinking about.

Ye Zifeng had a bitter expression, “You want to buy me out with treasures? Do you think that I, Ye Zifeng, am someone who is greedy for treasures?”

“Not greedy. Not greedy at all.” The two of them apologetically smiled.

Ye Zifeng looked at them deeply and then smiled, “But I am someone who’s greedy for treasures.”

“Then..... Greedy, you’re greedy!” The two of them frantically answered.

They were afraid of any punishment that would come.

The two of them were completely frightened by now. They felt as if an invisible hand was grabbing their heart.

Some time passed.

The two of them were randomly answering questions the entire time. When they came back to their senses, they realized that they can't offend Ye Zifeng at all.

Whatever Ye Zifeng says, they will unconditionally answer with a "yes."

The pain was ingrained into their bodies. Fear was instilled into their minds. They can never get rid of this.

Chapter 134: To return home with honor

Being kind to your opponent meant that you're being cruel to yourself.

This saying is well known but people rarely follow it.

Normally, Ye Zifeng wouldn't do something like this scary but it doesn't mean that he won't do it. Against someone who tried to take his life, he won't let them off easily.

Actually, brainwashing his opponent is way better than making them sign a blood contract.

"I won't dare anymore.... I won't dare anymore....." Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both looked at Ye Zifeng and repeated those words. They don't know what they won't dare to do anymore but they're repeating these words.

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked next to them. He punctured their fingers and signed a blood contract.

The two of them watched as Ye Zifeng did everything. They didn't resist at all. They were truly afraid of Ye Zifeng right now.

Ye Zifeng made them sign a blood contract just to be safe.

"Alright. You guys can leave." Ye Zifeng smiled. It was almost time. The formation will break any second now.

"We can go now?" Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both looked retardedly at Ye Zifeng. They didn't believe his words. They were tortured by Ye Zifeng and now he's letting them leave?

Ye Zifeng smiled at them, "What. Unless you guys still want to go against me."

"No way!"

The both of them yelled out at the same time.

"Scram before big brother rough guy changes his mind." Liu Bingqian fiercely glared towards the two.

“Let’s.....Let’s leave quickly!”

Jin Peng and Chu Hongbao both limped away like beggars while holding onto each other. Even though they had some enmities between each other before, they forgot all about it due to Ye Zifeng’s torture.

Looking at the two people limp away, Liu Bingqian felt really good on the inside.

“Big brother rough guy. You’re so incredible. You can even beat people in the martial disciple realm! You even made them submit to you! No one in Leizhou City can do it!”

On the way back to Leizhou City, Liu Bingqian brought up many topics related to Leizhou City.

“Big brother rough guy.....?” Liu Bingqian saw that Ye Zifeng didn’t reply at all and turned to look at him.

She saw Ye Zifeng groan while the painful feeling that he had been suppressing was all released. His entire body felt as if it was being stabbed.

“Big brother rough guy, what’s wrong?” Ye Zifeng was looking very majestic and cool just a moment ago. But she didn’t know that he was overdrafting his life in order to maintain the formation. If not, then how can the formation have such an effect.

“I probably used too much energy maintaining the formation. This is probably the aftereffect.

Actually, when Jin Peng was still here, he was feeling the pain already. However, he had to act strong and didn’t show any weakness.

Other normal people have to cultivate to the 9th rank of the martial disciple realm to completely set up a formation. Ye Zifeng forced himself to set it up and now he’s feeling the repercussions.

Liu Bingqian didn’t know any of this at all. This was her first time seeing a formation like this.

“Big brother rough guy. What should I do? How about I send you some qi? Will that be better?” Liu Bingqian was worried.

“It’s no use.” Ye Zifeng shook his head. He wanted to say something else but he grabbed his chest in pain and almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

He waited for a bit before finally talking again, “We have to get back to Leizhou City. I need some Qi Nurturing Pills. It’s not good staying in the forest for so long

“Okay. let’s go back then. We’ll go straight to my place. I have a lot of Qi Nurturing pills.”

Ye Zifeng had used his qi for way too long. He needed to slowly use the Qi Nurturing Pill to recover. If he takes a lot of qi nurturing pills at once, he might explode.

“To your house? That.... Isn’t too good.” Ye Zifeng furrowed his brow.

Before the alchemy competition, Ye Zifeng was following Liu Bingqian to be a helper. And now he wants to use the Liu clan’s Qi Nurturing pills? That’s.....

“What’s not too good? I, Liu Bingqian have decided to let you use them, so you can use them!” Liu Bingqian knew that Ye Zifeng was not in the condition to refine pills. Where else would he go to get someone to refine pills? She was the only one that can do it in Leizhou City.

So, she had to help him.

.....

Leizhou City, Ye clan.

A slim and tender young maiden dressed in white was continuously pulling Tang Feng’s sleeves.

That young maiden is Ye Xueyi!

“Mother. It’s been fifteen days already. Brother Zifeng’s time in Tiandao City should be up. Why isn’t he back yet?”

Tang Feng’s face sank and looked at her daughter, “Brother Zifeng, Brother Zifeng. Are those the only words you know? Even if you’re not tired of it, I’m tired of hearing it.”

“So you should let me go out and see what’s going on. Maybe brother Zifeng’s already at the gate. If I leave, then you won’t be bothered.” Ye Xueyi calculated the time and Ye Zifeng should be arriving any moment now.

Tang Feng stared deeply at her daughter, “Go Go Go. Do whatever you want. But let me warn you. You and Ye Zifeng share the same father. You guys are siblings. Some things I can close my eyes and let it go but don’t go too far! Do you understand?”

她到底是叶雪仪的亲生母亲，对自家女儿的心理清楚得很。

After all, Tang Feng is Xueyi’s birthmother. She knows what her daughter is thinking about.

Ye Xueyi was startled and became angry, “Mother what are you saying. Brother Zifeng and I are only siblings!”

Tang Feng flicked Xueyi’s forehead and smiled, “It’s better if you know. I’m just warning you. You should go find a rich family and settle down.”

After thinking about it, she pulled Ye Xueyi to the side and laughed, “Right. Do you know Hong clan’s Shaofeng? He looks pretty similar to your brother Zifeng. Even their name is similar.

“What the heck do you mean similar? They’re nothing alike. Also, I told you this many times already. What year do you think it is? I can take care of my own wedding.”

Ye Xueyi was angry at her mother for always mentioning marriage.

“It looks like I’ll have to talk to Chongtian for a bit. You’re getting out of hand lately.” Tang Feng sighed and shook her head.

“Alright. Alright. I’m gonna stop chitchatting. I’m going to receive my brother Zifeng at the gate.”

“你……！”

“You!”

Ye Xueyi didn’t feel like wasting her saliva talking with her mother and ran straight out the door towards the city gates.

She already know that Ye Zifeng would definitely return at this gate.

However, when she reached western gate, there were many people gathered there already.

She heard them talking about Liu Bingqian and Ye Zifeng's results at the alchemy competition and joined in.

Thus, she smiled and patted someone's shoulder.

"Uncle, you guys sound so excited. Are you guys talking about the alchemy competition?

The news that Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian received first place at the competition spread like wildfire in Leizhou City.

"You are....."

The uncle turned around and saw the beautiful girl in front of him. He couldn't help but snicker.

When he wanted to flirt with her, someone smacked his head.

"You retarded. Don't try to hit on every girl out there. Look who she is."

"She didn't say anything. How would I know who she is?" That uncle yelled back.

"Let me tell you. This is Ye Zifeng's sister! The sister of the champion of the alchemy competition and the heavenly clan gathering. Do you understand now?

"What? No way. The one that the clan master asked us to have a good relationship with, the sister of the expert alchemist, that's her?" The uncle's eye widened and stared at Ye Xueyi as if she was a celebrity.

Ye Zifeng had made a name for himself due to the heavenly clan gathering. And now, he was the champion of the alchemy competition. An expert in the way of alchemy and cultivation, he is a true genius.

"They're here. Ye Zifeng is back!" Someone at the gate called out.

Chapter 135: When a girl is of age, she should be married off

In front of everyone, a beautiful maiden appeared.

However, this maiden had her brows furrowed and looked very worried. When she reached the entrance, she quickly walked in.

She was holding Ye Zifeng on her side.

When the two of the returned back on the road, they blocked and hired a merchant carriage. This was the reason that they were able to get back so early.

When they appeared, everyone started to talk about the scene in front of them.

“Oh my god....This.... What happened to Ye Zifeng? How come he’s like this. He looks like he;s heavily injured?

“Yeah. It looks serious too. It shouldn’t affect his life right?”

“From what I can see, he probably can’t hold out much longer.”

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi was shocked.

“What injury? What’s affecting his life. Move. Let me go over!”

If something really did happen to Ye Zifeng then she won’t be at peace for the rest of her life.

She forced her way out of the group of people and walked towards Liu Bingqian.

“Hold on! Sister Bingqian, I’m Xueyi! How’s brother Zifeng doing?”

Liu Bingqian heard her but didn’t bother turning around, “We can’t wait any longer. If this goes on, then your brother Zifeng will be in trouble!” When everyone saw Bingqian approaching, they made way for her.

“What do you mean by in trouble?” Xueyi was startled and worried.

Liu Bingqian was the only one who knew what happened to ye Zifeng.

She didn't bother stopping and continued to move forward.

"I'm bringing him over to my place. If you need anything, come over to the Liu clan!"

.....

In the Liu clan manor.

Liu Mu was drinking tea and laughing with the person besides him, talking about his own daughter's wedding.

"Qian-er should be returning from Tiandao city today. If she comes back, then I'll schedule a meeting for the two of them to meet. What do you think?"

"I agree wholeheartedly with the Liu clanmaster." The person replying is a merchant. From the looks of it, it seems like he's from Tiandao City.

In order to extend the Liu clan's influences into Tiandao City, Liu Mu sacrificed his daughter's happiness.

At the same time, a servant ran into the room at full speed. It was a very important matter so he didn't care about any formalities.

Liu Mu coughed and looked at him, "Do things properly. Why are you in such a hurry.... Do you not see that I have a esteemed guest here? Whatever. What do you want?"

"Clan leader, Miss Bingqian has returned!"

"What?!" Not only did Liu Mu stand up, the merchant next to him stood up as well.

The two looked at each other and smiled.

"Oh? Where is she?"

"Miss Bingqian is at the front gate, but....." The servant wanted to say something but Liu Mu's laughter cut him off.

"Hahahahaha....." Bingqian returned at the perfect time. Now the esteemed guest from Tiandao City can take a look at her. If it's suitable, then this marriage will definitely be set in place. If the Liu clan can

become relatives with people from Tiandao City, then it'll be easier for the Liu clan to continue rising.

"I heard that the young miss became the champion of the alchemy competition. I must congratulate her! If our families become relatives then I hope Miss Bingqian can help us refine some pills."

"You flatter us. She was just lucky. From what I can see, the young master is much more outstanding. He's cultured and refined, a dragon amongst men." Even though Liu Mu has never seen the other person's son, he continuously praised him.

"Okay. Come on brother Ling. You first."

"No no no. Brother Liu is too polite. You should go first."

"Ai...Since it's like this, let's go together then."

The servant was nervously standing there. He wanted to finish talking but he couldn't find a chance to intervene. All he could do was stand there and watch as they leave.

Liu Mu walked out with the Ling clan's clanmaster towards the gates.

"Ai.... My daughter is too immersed in alchemy. She's quiet and reserved and rarely interact with other people. She has never been in contact with guys around her age. I hope brother Ling isn't bothered by that.

"What are you saying? Men love this kind of girl. I know my son very well. She's exactly his type!"

Halfway to the gates, they saw Liu Bingqian walking towards them. She was carrying a man around her arms at her chest.....

"This.... This is.....?" Ling clan's patriarch stared blankly at this scene. He was super shocked. His eyes widened and couldn't say anything.

Wasn't she quiet and reserved? Doesn't she rarely interact with others and not close to men around her age? Was Liu Mu's words all nonsense?

Liu Mu on the other hand immediately recognized the person his daughter was holding. It was Ye Zifeng!

Ye Zifeng can go and flirt with his daughter outside all he wants. He can pretend to not know about it at all. But now, he's played with her so much that he even came home with her? On top of that, the Ling clan's patriarch was here! This is simply infuriating!

"Qian-er, look at what you're doing? Why did you from someone from the Ye clan over? You guys should've gone your separate ways after returning from the competition!" Liu Mu was so angry. He wanted to throw Ye Zifeng out immediately.

"Father, big brother rough guy is severely injured. We have to give him some Qi Nurturing Pills, so I brought him over to stay for a few days. We'll talk about it when he recovers.

"What?!" Liu Mu was getting angrier and angrier. He was so shocked that he couldn't even think straight now. Liu Bingqian was not giving him any face at all.

Ling clan's patriarch heard this and furrowed his brows, "What big brother rough guy? Live here for a few days? Liu Mu, this is the doesn't have any interactions with men around the same age you were talking about? I respect you in that you want your clan to grow and have a future. But you have to choose your words wisely!"

He paused for a bit and then snorted, "I won't be accompanying you anymore. I'll take my leave right now."

"Hold on. Brother Ling, don't misunderstand. This guy has no relations with Qian-er at all!"

Seeing this, Liu Mu frantically yelled out. However, the other person ignored him and walked right out the gates.

"Brother Ling, brother Ling.....!"

Liu Mu walked back in and stared at Liu Bingqian.

"Look what you did! We had a guest and you didn't even greet him and also talked about Ye Zifeng. Do you not know how to be polite?"

Liu Bingqian didn't pay attention and order some servants to bring some

nourishing pills over. Ye Zifeng was panting like crazy. He had used too much qi and now he was experiencing the after effects.

“Hey. Do you hear me? I’m talking to you!” Liu Mu saw that Liu Bingqian was not paying attention to himself at all as if he was yelling into air. This added oil to the fire.

“Big brother rough guy, here, take this Qi Nurturing Pill.” Liu Bingqian only had one person in her mind right now. That’s Ye Zifeng. Every time he coughed up blood, she would feel very anxious. She will filter out everything around her unless it has to do with Ye Zifeng.

“Now take this Spirit Nurturing Pill.....”

Liu Mu watched as she fed him a pill for martial disciples and became shocked.

“Qi Nurturing Pills are fine.... Why are you giving him a pill that nourishes the martial spirit? Are you not afraid of blowing him up? Ai....so girls really do leave their parents when they’re of age.... ” Seeing how his own daughter was ignoring him, he finally said something Ye Zifeng related.

Liu Bingqian thought that her father was mad because of the pills, “Who cares if I use them? I’ll just make more. I mean, all the pills in the clan are made by me anyways. We’re only losing out on the ingredients.”

After saying that, she helped Ye Zifeng up and helped him get rid of the dregs in the pills. She used her qi to filter the dregs out to make sure that Ye Zifeng had the purest pills.

“Here, big brother rough guy, open up. Take another Qi Nurturing Pill.” Liu Bingqian worriedly looked at Ye Zifeng with a warm look.

Ye Zifeng wasn’t conscious and heard everything. He didn’t say anything because he wanted to use all of his energy to nurturing himself and recover quickly. After absorbing the qi from the pills, he felt much better.

He coughed a bit and then lifted his head right into Bingqian.....

Chapter 136: Live here...!

When Liu Mu met Ye Zifeng's gaze, his face turned pale and his expression stiffened. He was feeling very complicated.

"You....Are you doing well? Liu Mu stared at Ye Zifeng for a while and then realized that he had asked a dumb question.

Actually, he was super shocked by the news of Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian becoming alchemy champions. Add that onto the fact that Ye Zifeng is the winner of the heavenly clan gathering as well as the fact Ye Zifeng had beaten himself in a bet, Liu Mu didn't think too badly of Ye Zifeng anymore.

However, the bond between the two families were not so good anymore. Liu Mu was worried for her daughter after seeing how much she cared for him.

Ye Zifeng stared at Liu Mu blankly and then smiled, "Thank you uncle Liu for caring. After taking these pills, I'm feeling a lot better.

"How did you get injured? Why is it so severe? Liu Mu squinted and asked while sizing up his injury. He thought about something but didn't think that it was possible.

Ye Zifeng laughed softly, "It's no big deal."

Seeing that Ye Zifeng wasn't willing to tell, Liu Mu didn't even bother asking any further. He was giving Ye Zifeng face by asking him about it in the first place.

"Alright. Since you're feeling a bit better, why don't you try to see if you can walk?"

If anyone wants to win Liu Mu's respect, they need to have the ability to. Ye Zifeng was able to do so, thus, the clan master of one of the three great clans in Leizhou City was polite towards him.

What Liui Mu wanted to say was, "Since you're feeling better, then it should be time that you scram." However, he kept his thoughts on the inside.

However, Liu Bingqian saw through her father's true intentions and firmly decided on something.

"Father, I've decided to let big brother rough guy live here!"

When Liu Bingqian said that, Liu Ningzi and Liu Yige was coincidentally walking by.

Three people were shocked. Their bodies froze and their hearts sank like a sinking ship.

Liu Ningzi had a complicated expression on her face. She looked at Ye Zifeng then bit her lips and didn't say anything.

"Sister Bingqian. What are you thinking? Why are you letting someone with a different surname live in our home? How will others look at us?" Liu Yige furrowed his brows and immediately opened up.

Flames could be seen in his eyes. When he heard that Ye Zifeng was in their home, he came over with Liu Ningzi to see what was going on. Who would've thought that Liu Bingqian would have him stay."

"I don't agree. We can't let someone with a different surname live here. There's no discussion here!"

"The things that I, Bingqian, do, needs your agreement?"

Liu Bingqian coldly looked at Liu Yige, "Also, speaking of outsiders, aren't you one too? If you want to kick big brother rough guy out, then why don't you scram first?"

"You!" Liu Yige's face turned red. He couldn't yell at the eldest sister in front of her father.

Normally, Liu Bingqian would give Liu Yige some face because of her father. But now, he dragged Ye Zifeng into everything so she didn't hold back a bit. She said whatever she wanted to.

"Alright. Enough. The guest is still here so stop arguing for no reason. You're making fun of yourselves in front of nephew Zifeng."

"Alright." Liu Yige snorted and walked back besides Liu Ningzi.

“Nephew Zifeng, I feel like.....”

Ye Zifeng smiled and stood up, “I know what uncle Liu is thinking. Thus, I will return to the Ye clan. However, I might need a few Qi Nurturing Pills. I hope uncle Liu won’t mind.”

“No problem. Take whatever you want.”

It was merely a few Qi Nurturing PIlls. Liu Mu didn’t worry at all. Seeing how straightforward Ye Zifeng was, Liu Mu was feeling good towards him for the first time ever.

The title of champion, anyone with the ability can get it. However, the way that one behaves is learned. Ye Zifeng knows how to behave. He knows when to back off. It seems like Ye Zifeng will have a bright future ahead of him.

Thus, Liu Mu was happy to ally themselves with the Ye clan. But, not as far as becoming relatives.

After all, his younger daughter had cancelled an engagement on them. If he let his elder daughter marry Ye Zifeng, then he will lose face. People will definitely talk behind his back.

“Well then, Ye Zifeng will leave now.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and forcefully bowed.

Suddenly, he stumbled and spat out a mouthful of blood onto the floor. It made people feel worried.

“Big brother rough guy! You still want to leave?” Liu Bingqian hurried over and rubbed his back. She was extremely worried for him.

When Liu NIngzi saw this, her heart thumped. She wanted to make a move but when she saw Bingqian act, she stayed in her place. She stood there quietly while watching Ye Zifeng with a complicated look.

“Father, Sis, look at how severe his injury is. If you want him to leave now, you might as well ask him to go die.”

Ye Zifeng actually did want to return to the Ye clan. He didn’t leave because he couldn’t. This made things difficult for Liu Mu.

If Ye Zifeng gets into some sort of accident on his way home, then Ye Chongtian will definitely come and make a fuss about it. Wiping the Liu clan out is not possible but he'll make the Liu clan suffer quite a bit.

This was a decision between 'face' and 'benefits'. Liu Mu is a smart person so he would obviously benefits.

He let out a long sigh and calmly said, "Nephew Zifeng, don't get me wrong. Don't think that uncle Liu is trying to kick you out. Bingqian is right. Your injuries are severe. I say, you should stay here for the night."

He didn't say what he would do later on. He was only talking about tonight. This phrase was very well thought out.

"Father....." Liu Yige saw that Ye Zifeng was allowed to stay for the night and felt a bit angry.

"Yeah. Big brother rough guy. Don't force yourself. Even if you safely return to the Ye clan, it will only make things worse." Liu Bingqian seriously looked at him.

"Then....many thanks to uncle Liu." Ye Zifeng force a smile.

Actually, after taking a few Qi Nurturing Pills, he was feeling better. If he really wanted to return to the Ye clan, it won't be a problem.

However, Ye Zifeng returned as the champion. And if the first thing he does is stay over at the Liu clan, then it will attract many people's attention. It'll make them wonder the relationship between the two families.

This is exactly what Ye Zifeng wanted.

If before, people thought that the alliance was nothing but a facade, then now, after Ye Zifeng stays for the night, people might think about it.

Thus, Ye Zifeng happily stayed over for the night.

The unstable power struggle in Leizhou City was slowly changing due to Ye Zifeng.

.....

.....

At the same time, in the Wang clan.

"Big bro, did you hear that Ye Zifeng had returned?" Wang Lin shook as he looked happily at his elder brother.

"So what is he back? What are you so happy about? Could it be that you and second brother can't wait to be punished again?"

After mentioning about Tiandao City, Wang Lin looked downwards and didn't say anything.

Wang Tianzhi saw this and raised his brow.

"You don't need to say anything. I know what you want. Also, I heard that he's injured and went straight to the Liu clan...."

"What? What's he doing at the Liu clan? Shouldn't he be going back home?" Wang Lin was startled.

"This means that the Ye clan and Liu doesn't doesn't have a simple relationship. It has surpassed our imaginations already. It's probably not as simple as a normal alliance."

Wang Tianzhi became serious. Last time, he was beaten by Ye Zifeng. When he wanted to get revenge for his brothers, he was stopped by Elder Shen. He had been thinking of ways to deal with him.

Wang Mengxi calmly replied, "Big brother. I think that it's because the Ye clan doesn't have any high level medicine so he went to the Liu clan."

"Maybe. But what kind of injury did he suffer? When did he receive it? He was able to return from Tiandao City without any problems..... I don't think his injury is that severe. If I'm right, then this Ye Zifeng is very scary....."

Wang Tianzhi furrowed his brows and thought about things.

Wang Lin looked at Wang Tianzhi weirdly, "Big bro, what do you mean by that? Why is he very scary?"

"Because if he can use his own injuries as a benefit, then his personality

is very scary...Maybe I'm just thinking too much....."

Chapter 137: Natural Adversaries

The news that Ye Zifeng was staying in the Liu clan quickly spread throughout Leizhou City.

The important characters in Leizhou City didn't care about the affairs of the young generation. However, Ye Zifeng was different.

This was because last time, Ye Zifeng showed great leadership capabilities in the way of business. Then he made a name for Leizhou City during the alchemy competition. He revealed his strong abilities as an alchemist.

An alchemist is an existence that the elders of many clans would like to curry favors with. Now that Ye Zifeng had made a name for himself, it had attracted many people's attention.

As a result, people flooded the Liu clan manor to see Ye Zifeng.

In the morning, the line outside of the Liu clan's manor was very long. When they opened the doors, the group of people rushed in. Under the guidance of the servants, they entered the guest hall.

"Young master Ye, look, I personally brought this Great Mending Pill from Lingfeng City. it will help you a lot with your injury. Do you want to try it?"

"GoGoGo. What Great Mending Pill? Do you not see that the young master is almost healed up? What does he need it for? My Tong clan's secret qi technique is much more useful!"

Liu Mu furrowed his brows, and waved his hands, "Alright. If you want to say anything, wait for young master Ye to return to the Ye clan. You can go to him then.....For now, you should leave."

"What? Leave? You should know that I've waited the whole morning outside!" The person from the Tong clan yelled out.

The people next to him pulled his sleeves and bitterly laughed, "Let it go. Think about it. When we came in, there was still a long line behind us. I'm afraid that those people won't even get to see him."

The person from the Tong clan felt depressed. However, he knew what the situation was like outside and left the gift there. Afterwards, he was escorted out by the servants. As he walked out, he turned back and yelled, “Young master Ye, when you refine pills in the future, don’t forget about me! I’m from the Tong clan!”

Throughout this entire event, Ye Zifeng didn’t say a single word, let alone make a sound.

“Big brother rough guy, that’s weird. I went to the alchemy competition with you but they’re treating you like you’re their ancestor while only praising me.

Liu Bingqian giggled. She wasn’t jealous of Ye Zifeng at all. It was just that she was curious.

“That’s simple.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “They all know what level you are at. One month wouldn’t make that much of a difference. This time, you won the competition so the cost of hiring you would only be more than it is now. But I’m different. I came out of nowhere. They’re thinking that they can ask me to refine high grade pills for a low cost.”

“Then…Since everyone knows about your alchemy skills, won’t you be bothered a lot?”

Liu Bingqian remembered that the first time they met, Ye Zifeng told her to not tell anyone about his alchemy abilities. But now, every single person in Leizhou City knows about it.

“I am afraid. This is an opportunity but it can also be troublesome. I need to quickly increase my cultivation. When my injury heals, we can go refine some profound tier pills together. Before the next sect missions start, I need to increase my strength.

“The next sect missions? Hmm….Let me see. It should be soon!”

Liu Bingqian counted with her fingers and was shocked that it was so close already.

“That’s right. It’s almost time for the missions. This time, I should use my contribution points on something else.”

Ye Zifeng smiled.

The two of them were laughing and whispering with each other. When others saw this, they thought about something else.

Liu Mu saw this and was not feeling good about it. He lightly coughed, wanting to remind Ye Zifeng that he should behave.

On the other side, Liu Yige as Ye Zifeng was being well regarded and felt very unhappy.

“Clanmaster, we should control this guy. The Liu clan has been noisy since early morning. They’re all here for Ye Zifeng. Is this still the Liu clan, or is this the new Ye clan?”

Liu Yige was at his limit. It was fine if it was for one night. But for so many people to line up in front of their home to see him the second day, Ye Zifeng has an excuse to not go home anymore.

However, Liu Mu calmly laughed, “Yige, think about it. We can borrow Ye Zifeng’s name to get some connections with some of these people. To the Liu clan, there is only benefits and no harm.”

Ye Zifeng used this opportunity to show others that the two clans were close. However, the sly fox Liu Mu also used this opportunity to get himself close to some other families.

They were both using each other. No one could see through that at all. It was perfect.

“But.....”

Liu Yige hatred for Ye Zifeng cannot be easily cleared.

All these days, he had been thinking about how he can deal with Ye Zifeng.

“Just leave it. Let’s not care about this guy. Just pretend that he doesn’t exist.”

Liu Ningzi sighed.

“Junior sister. What are you saying? I remember that when you cancelled your engagement, you were telling me to teach him a lesson.” Liu Yige was shocked at her words. His expression became uglier and uglier.

“The past is the past. Now is now. If you keep thinking about teaching him a lesson, then when are you going to mature?” Liu Ningzi looked at Ye Zifeng for a bit before replying.

Liu Yige was startled, “You’re calling me immature?”

“No. I don’t mean that.....”

Liu Ningzi was distracted by Ye Zifeng and unconsciously said these words. Now that she thought about it, she regretted saying these.

“Okay. Good. I finally understand now. Both clan master and sister Bingqian both treat me like an outsider....I’m fine with that. But now, even junior sister you are treating me like one....”

Liu Yige’s voice was shaky when he said that.

“Senior brother, when did I treat you like an outsider? We grew up together. Even though you’re not from the clan, I have never thought of you as an outsider.” Liu Ningzi looked at Yige and frantically tried to explain.

“Enough. Don’t lie to me with these comforting words!”

Liu Yige snorted, “You guys are so polite to Ye Zifeng all the time. It seems like I can’t rely on you guys. About Ye Zifeng, I’ll deal with it myself!”

A frantic expression appeared on Liu Ningzi’s face as she quickly moved, “Senior brother. Don’t do anything stupid. If father finds out, he won’t forgive you!”

“Who cares. The most that he’ll do is kick me out. I’ve been the bastard son here for too many years anyways!”

“Senior brother!”

Liu Yige didn't care anymore and coldly snorted. He walked out of the guest hall immediately.

.....

The entire guest hall was filled with people. It was normal for people to come in and out. No one noticed anything wrong with Liu Yige. They all continued to praise Ye Zifeng and tried to curry favors with Ye Zifeng. They all want him to refine pills for them.

Maybe, after the alchemy competition, the title of the the number one alchemist in Leizhou City has already transferred to Ye Zifeng.

After Ye Zifeng sent a group of elders away, another group came in. Suddenly, he felt a poke on his face and raised his brow.

"Liu Ningzi?"

Ye Zifeng casually looked at her. His originally calm tone became much more colder.

"What do you want?"'

He doesn't remember the last time he had a normal conversation with her. Maybe they never had one. It seems like they were natural adversaries.

"This is for you." Liu Ningzi's face was pale. It was normal. It took a lot out of her just talking to Ye Zifeng.

After saying that, she stuffed a small piece of paper into his hands.

"A small paper?" Ye Zifeng was confused.

Afterwards, she didn't even look at Ye Zifeng and ran off.

Liu Bingqian had been staring at Ye Zifeng the entire time so this scene did not escape her eyes. A complicated look appeared on her face.

"Big brother rough guy, that paper that my sister gave you.... What did it say?" While saying that, she looked at the paper, trying to peek at what it says.

Chapter 138: The dream of entering the Profound Sect

Ye Zifeng smiled at her and put the paper away without even looking at it.

After failing to peek at the paper, she complained, “Big brother rough guy, let me see it, you won’t lose anything.”

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “Then, why don’t you let me see your diary? I mean, you won’t lose anything.”

Liu Bingqian was shocked, “How do you that I have a diary?”

“Oh? You said it yourself. I was just randomly saying things.” Ye Zifeng laughed loudly.

“Big brother rough guy!” Liu Bingqian put on an angry look.

“Whatever. I don’t need to see it anyways. It’s probably some personal matter. It’s better if I don’t know anyways.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and then let out a long sigh. He walked to a corner and then opened up the slip of paper.

On the paper it said, “Senior brother wants to make a move against you. Be careful.”

‘Oh? She’s trying to warn me?”

Ye Zifeng let out a cold smile. He didn’t believe that Liu Ningzi was truly caring for him. She probably cared for Liu Yige in that she doesn’t want him thrown out after he doesn some stupid thing.

Actually, when Liu Yige walked out, Ye Zifeng had noticed it. He knew that Liu Yige was angry at him.

A lump of qi suddenly lit up on Ye Zifeng’s finger and the slip of paper turned into ashes.

“Alright, next group.” Ye Zifeng called out.

Ye Zifeng didn’t care about Liu Yige at all. He didn’t think that Liu Yige

posed a threat to himself at all.

If he wasn't a threat before, then he probably isn't a threat now. Ye Zifeng was able to beat him when he was at the 3rd stage of qi refining. Now that he's also in the 6th stage of qi refining, he didn't have any reason to be scared of Liu Yige.

"Brother Zifeng! Yu're still in the mood to stay here and drink tea? Come back to the Ye clan with me. I've already the best doctors over!"

Ye Xueyi hurriedly walked into the hall. There were a few servants following behind her but none of the could catch up to her.

"Miss Ye. Slow down. Without the master's permission, I can't let you come in.

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi felt displeased, "What do you mean? You want me to wait in that long line just to see my brother?"

"It's not actually that long. You'll get in by tonight." one of the more stupid servants opened up his mouth. The head servant stared at him but didn't say anything.

Liu Bingqian smiled and waved her hand, "Alright. Don't make trouble for her. I told her to come whenever she wants."

"Since the miss has agreed, then there shouldn't be any problems." The servants looked at each other and then left.

"Many thanks to sister Bingqian." Seeing how Liu Bingqian was helping her, she felt much better.

"It's nothing much. No need to mention it."

Liu Bingqian smiled warmly at her.

Ye Xueyi was worried about Ye Zifeng the entire time. However, when she heard that people were praising and admiring Ye Zifeng outside the Liu clan manor, she felt much better.

When she got here, she noticed that Ye Zifeng didn't look injured at all. He was sitting there and receiving gifts. There was a pile of gifts on the side already. He's probably using this opportunity to get benefits from

everyone!

“Brother Zifeng. It looks like you don’t want to go back anymore.”

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “No way. No matter how good this place is, it isn’t my home. I’m thinking about staying for a few more days. I’ll go back after I finish the sect missions.”

“What? After the sect missions? There’s still three more days. Could it be that you want to keep living here? I think uncle Liu might say something about it.” Ye Xueyi was startled and shockingly looked at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng was able to stay over because he had the ability to. He was able to live there for another day because the Liu clan was surrounded by other people. This showed how incredible he is.

However, if Ye Zifeng wants to live for a few more days, then it might be hard. If the master of the house doesn’t agree, it’ll make Ye Zifeng seem like he’s just slothing there.

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked towards Liu Mu, “Uncle Liu, I can’t bring back all these gifts. How about I leave some here?”

What does he mean by leave it here? He obviously meant that he was giving it to Liu Mu.

Most of these things didn’t have anything to do with alchemy so Ye Zifeng could care less about it. However, these things had value to Liu Mu.

Liu Mu laughed loudly, “If you can’t bring it all back, then stay a few more days and slowly organize everything. I think that there will be more people coming in the next few days so you can wait until then to move everything back. Actually it’s fine if you leave it here too.”

He wasn’t greedy for money but it doesn’t mean that he didn’t want money. Who doesn’t like getting things for free?

Ye Zifeng was like a treasure bowl right now. Even if Ye Zifeng didn’t say anything, Liu Mu would’ve tried to make him stay anyways.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He then looked towards the

shocked Ye Xueyi.

"Xueyi, when you go back, tell them that I'm fine. I'm just going to stay over for a bit and go back when I'm done with the missions."

Ye Xueyi pouted, "Fine. I got it."

Actually, she was worried about Ye Zifeng's injury. Now that she sees that Ye Zifeng was fine, she felt a lot better. She didn't care about the other things at all.

"Sister Bingqian, since it's like this, then I'll have to trouble you with my brother....." Ye Xueyi looked deeply at Liu Bingqian with a complicated look.

"Don't worry." Liu Bingqian giggled, "Nothing's going to happen to him here.

The two talked for a bit and then realized that they got along pretty well. They regret that they didn't meet sooner.

Ye Zifeng smiled. Before Ye Xueyi left, he pulled her aside.

"Brother Zifeng, what else do you need? If you need anything, you can ask sister Bingqian."

"This time, I got a present for you from Tiandao City. In other people's eyes, this is a great opportunity.."

"What kind of mysterious gift is this? You didn't even bring much money to Tiandao City. You can just say that you got me a pretty gift. But to say that it is a great opportunity, you're going too far."

"This is the Profound Sect's Passage Medallion. What do you think?" While saying that, he took out a bronze medallion and handed it over to Ye Xueyi.

This was the medallion that Qi Zimo gave him. If it was anyone else, they would not have given it away. Only Qi Zimo would do something like that.

"Profound Sect's Passage Medallion? No way! That Profound Sect in Tiandao City?" Ye Xueyi's eyes lit up and looked at the medallion with

disbelief.

Even Liu Mu was shocked. He had seen many things in his life and knew that the passage medallion was worth a lot. Ye Zifeng actually gave it away as a gift? Why don't he leave it from himself?

Liu Bingqian saw her father's expression and whispered to him.

"Father, big brother rough guy and I both have another one."

"What? You have one too?" Liu Mu was shocked. His body started to feel numb, "No way. When did the Profound Sect's Passage Medallion become so common? Can anyone get one?"

Ye Xueyi continuously stared at the medallion and played around with it.

"Do you like it?"

"Of course I like it! It's exactly as big brother said, this medallion brings a great opportunity! As long as I reach the Martial Disciple realm, then it will be easy for me to pass the test into the Profound Sect!"

After saying that, Ye Xueyi sighed, "Ahh.... It's too bad. I'm still at the peak eight stage of qi refining. I'm still far away from the Martial Disciple realm. It seems like my dreams of entering the Profound Sect is still far away."

For Ye Zifeng to give her something as precious as this, she was moved.

"Brother Zifeng, thank you so much. I don't even know how to repay you!"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "We're family so this is what I should do anyways. With this, your dreams of entering the profound sect won't be far."

His eyes lit up and looked at Xueyi, "Maybe, I can help you out!"

Chapter 139: Daring.

When all the people waiting outside the Liu clan finally left, it was already night time.

Ye Zifeng let out a long sigh. He laid down on his bed and quietly looked at the bloody veins on his arm.

The first sect mission, the heavenly clan gathering, the alchemy competition and training in the gravity rooms.... He was training nonstop in order to raise his cultivation.

It's been a long time since he was able to relax and check up on himself.

Three days later will be the second time he attend the sect missions. Before that, he has increase his strength again.

"Man.... I really want to breakthrough to the martial disciple realm already. I want to see what this stupid martial spirit really is." Ye Zifeng sighed.

At this time.

"Big brother rough guy, what are you thinking? Why are you sighing so much? This isn't like you." A voice sounded from behind Ye Zifeng.

Liu Bingqian giggled and slowly closed the doors behind her.

"Bingqian?" Ye Zifeng was startled. He immediately put his hands down, "It's so late already. What are you doing here?"

Liu Bingqian was standing there with her delicate looking face and snow white skin while staring at Ye Zifeng with her beautiful eyes. Combined with the light soft dress that she was wearing, it gave off a special type of feeling. It was a very pure feeling. There was nothing more beautiful than that.

"What? Do you not welcome me? You should that that you're in the Liu clan right now. Hmmm.... Are you scared?" Liu Bingqian laughed lightly.

Ye Zifeng slowly calmed down, "If you're not afraid of someone spreading rumors, then why would I be? When you snuck in, no one saw

you right?"

If Liu Mu found out about how his daughter snuck into Ye Zifeng's room, he would be super angry and might even punish her with family laws!

"Big brother rough guy, stop exposing me..... I'm here to see how you're doing....."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "You've been with me the whole day today. You saw how I was doing all day long. Can you still not tell how my injuries are?"

"I....." Liu Bingqian looked down.

Of course she can tell how Ye Zifeng's doing after being next to him for the entire day. Like how can an actually sick person be bombarded by so many visitors?

It's fine if a few people came to visit but with so many people visiting, it's very tiring. Ye Zifeng had been receiving guests the whole day and he was still fine.

The two were silent for a bit.....

"Big brother rough guy, you know, the fifteen days that we were in Tiandao City, those were the happiest days of my life." Liu Bingqian finally broke the silence. She had been wanting to say this but was too embarrassed to.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "To be able to overcome your past and become the champion. This is indeed something worthy to be happy about."

"It's not only that....."

Ye Zifeng looked at her, "Then what else is there?"

"You....." Liu Bingqian felt her brains frying. She had mustered all her courage to say all this already..... Is Ye Zifeng's brain made of wood? How does he not understand?

Liu Bingqian's entire face became red, "Big brother rough guy, are you going to come back to my Liu clan after finishing the sect missions?"

She had been around Ye Zifeng for quite a while now. She was able to see Ye Zifeng in the morning every day. She was feeling great.

But now, those days have passed already. Their days of being together is almost done. These were the last few days left. Afterwards, they'll probably only see each other in the sect. Ye Zifeng is a busy person. He definitely won't be visiting the medicine cage for no reason....

"Of course not!" As expected, Ye Zifeng shook his head.

It wasn't because of Liu Ningzi. Ye Zifeng didn't want to stay either. Since he's already made the illusion that the two clans were in an alliance, the Liu clan didn't have any use to him as of right now.

Liu Bingqian had a bitter look on her face and muttered, "why don't you know how to read the mood. At least lie and make me feel better."

She was very confident in her looks but after being together with Ye Zifeng and feeling his coldness, she felt defeated.

"Oh yeah, Bingqian, I have something that I kind of need your help with." Ye Zifeng suddenly had a serious face on and said.

Liu Bingqian was very grateful for Ye Zifeng's help so she would definitely listen to what he needed.

Liu Bingqian smiled, "What's wrong? As long as I can help, I'll do my best to."

"It's simple. The profound tier cauldron is still in the deserted area. It's not convenient for me to leave so I want you to help me bring it over."

"You want to refine pills?"

"Yeah....." Ye Zifeng nodded.

Ye Zifeng couldn't go out and bring the cauldron back himself. It wouldn't be good if anyone saw him. So under this situation, he can only ask Liu Bingqian to do it.

"I can....."

Liu Bingqian was startled, "But, can you refine pills in this situation? I

mean, wouldn't it be too tiring?"

When he was first injured, he looked as if he was going to die. To recover be able to recover in such a short amount of time is already a miracle. Now he wants to refine pills?

What she didn't know was that the essence from Jin Peng that his martial spirit took wasn't all absorbed. Ye Zifeng had been slowly absorbing it these past two days."

"My second sect mission is in three days. I have to refine pills to increase my cultivation as soon as possible. It'll only get harder from here."

Ye Zifeng was very determined.

"Then.... Fine..... But when you refine pills, I'll be helping you." Liu Bingqian sighed and agreed to help.

"Thanks so much Bingqian...."

Ye Zifeng was moved by her. After crossing over, asides from his family, the person closest to him was Liu Bingqian. He felt very happy to have a friend like this.

He wasn't almighty after all. Even now, both his alchemy ability and his cultivation are at a very low level. He can't do everything by himself. Returning to the peak is actually a very hard thing. But with a friend's help, he will be able to rise faster. Even if he doesn't become very strong, he won't be lonely like he was in his past life.

"Don't mention it. You promised me that you won't let me come in last during the alchemy competition and you surpassed my imaginations by becoming champions. This kind of thing, even my father is grateful to you for it."

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, "To be recognized by that old man, I am overwhelmed."

'Give me a break." Liu Bingqian laughed, "Every time I hear you talk about my dad, I can't help but laugh."

She was Ye Zifeng's friend and Liu Mu's daughter. She had seen the two

of them argue and despise each other in front of others. But then, when she was alone with them, they would praise the other.

"Alright. Let's not talk about it. Good back to rest. If you're seen by someone, then you reputation will be ruined immediately." Ye Zifeng laughed.

Talking about reputation, Bingqian's expression changed.

"What's up?..... Did you actually come straight in without thinking about anything?" Ye Zifeng's expression froze as his mouth twitched.

"I....."

Liu Bingqian originally wanted to come and talk with Ye Zifeng a bit more to advance their relationship and didn't think about anything else. Now that she's calmed down and thought about it, she was afraid to go out.

It was long into the night alright. For a guy and a girl to be in the same room..... If someone saw that Liu Bingqian was coming out of Ye Zifeng's room, what would they think?

"What should i do? Big brother rough guy, I can't go out right now. I feel like there are people all over the place."

Ye Zifeng laughed, "You were so daring when you came in. Where did that all go?"

Liu Bingqian looked at him with watery eyes, "In order to not let anyone find me, there's only one solution. I'll sleep here tonight!"

Before Ye Zifeng could react, hurried steps could be heard from right outside the door.

Liu Bingqian's heart shattered.

However, she returned to her sense very quickly.

It's over. She's about to be seen alone with Ye Zifeng!

Chapter 140: Don’t fret!

Hearing these hurried footsteps, Ye Zifeng felt that something was wrong.

It’s so late at night. Who would come to his room? Also, there’s multiple footsteps.

Thinking about it, only one person came into mind.

Liu Yige! It seems like Liu Yige brought his brothers to try and teach him a lesson.

If it was any other time, Ye Zifeng wouldn’t care at all.

However, the important thing is that Liu Bingqian is still here. If they saw her, then it would be a big problem.

Rumors and gossip aren’t something that a blood contract can stop. If Liu Yige accidentally lets something slip out, Liu Bingqian’s future will really be destroyed, “This..... It seems like it’ll be a bit troublesome.” Ye Zifeng sighed.

“Bingqian, go hide in the closet!”

“Okay! Going in now.” Liu Bingqian nodded. Other than the closet, nothing else could hold her.

Fortunately, her body was pretty slim. The closet was not too big and she could barely squeeze herself in.

At the same time, Liu Yige’s reached the doors. Behind him stood quite a few people with weapons.

“Quick. Quickly! Don’t let anyone find out.”

Looking at their formation, it seems like they don’t want to just teach Ye Zifeng a lesson. They want to see blood.

Liu Yige took a deep breath. It seems like whether or not he can finish this task, he can’t stay in the Liu clan anymore. To fight against Ye Zifeng, he was forced to take desperate measures. This was his last stand.

“Since you’re here, then don’t be polite and come in. “

From inside the room, Ye Zifeng’s voice called out.

Liu Yige and his brothers looked at each other with a strange look. They immediately forced the door open and went straight in.

The door bursted open. Ye Zifeng was sitting in his grand chair with a cool and collected expression. It looked as if he had been expecting Liu Yige.

Liu Yige frowned and ordered someone to close the doors.

“Ye Zifeng, you’re pretty calm for someone who’s about to die. How can you be sit there so leisurely in front of a great enemy.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “A great enemy is an overstatement. But how can you, Liu Yige, be so stupid to walk right into a great enemy of yours?”

“Ye Zifeng. You’re too arrogant!” Liu Yige clenched his fists and looked at Ye Zifeng. It looked as if he was about to blow up at any moment.

“I’m just saying the truth.” A cold expression appeared on Ye Zifeng’s face.

“You.....,:

He wasn’t being arrogant. He was on the same level as liu Yige and was 100% sure that he would be able to beat them all. The strongest one there was only at the seventh stage of qi refining. This was nothing for Ye Zifeng.

Liu Yige let out a cold snort, “Good. Good. Good. I know that you have a lot of tricks up your sleeves and is very careful. I won’t let you have time to prepare. I won’t fall for your traps. This time, I chose to attack while you’re in the Liu manor. I bet you didn’t expect that right?”

Ye Zifeng stared at them and then nodded while smiling, “I really didn’t expect it. I didn’t do any preparations at all.”

Liu Yige stared at him too, “I’ve said so much already. Don’t you feel any fear?”

“Nope.”

Ye Zifeng coldly replied to Liu Yige. Liu Yige wanted to see Ye Zifeng in fear but Ye Zifeng actually acted like nothing was happening.

“Ridiculous! Tie him up!” Liu Yige yelled out

The group of people heard Liu Yige’s command and circled around Ye Zifeng.

Including Liu Yige, there were give people.

Liu Bingqian was watching everything from a small hole that she made in the closet. Seeing how Ye Zifeng was being surrounded, she was being worried.

To defeat the people in the Martial Disciple realm, Ye Zifeng relied on formations and his opponent’s carelessness. Now that he was surrounded in a small room, he had to use his own abilities. Also, Ye Zifeng still isn’t fully healed, this will make it harder for him.

She would rather save Ye Zifeng than keep her reputation.

She wanted to come in to save Ye Zifeng.

When she wanted to come out and save Ye Zifeng, she noticed that Ye Zifeng looked at her with a calm expression. He was shaking his head, telling her to not worry about it.

“Big brother rough guy……”

Seeing that Ye Zifeng was tell her to stop, she stayed inside the closet.

Someone noticed something and patted Liu Yige’s shoulder, “Boss, why do I hear something else in the room?”

Liu Yige was very concentrated and was in peak condition. After being suddenly disrupted he felt annoyed.

“You probably heard it wrong right? The clan master put Ye Zifeng in such a remote place, who would come…….”

“But I’ve definitely heard a woman’s voice.” That person looked around and couldn’t find anything.

Liu Yige fiercely stared at him, “What woman’s voice? You’re probably thinking about women so much that you turned crazy. Next time we go out, you can go have fun all you want.....”

“I.....No way..... Was I hallucinating?” The other listened intensely again but couldn’t hear anything anymore.

Liu Yige kicked him to make him focus.

“Everyone, let’s go! I don’t believe that he can stop us by himself in this small room!’

After saying that, everyone’s faces turned serious and stared coldly at them.

“Everyone move out!”

Following Liu Yige’s command, the four of them gathered their qi and struck towards Ye Zifeng.

“Ye Zifeng! Die!”

Ye Zifeng laughed and emitted a golden aura from his body. Qi swirled around him and blocked the four’s incoming attacks.

Bang.

The four people’s qi were blocked by the golden qi.

“This.....What kind of demonic technique is this? How can it be like this?” Liu Yige gasped. He was extremely shocked.

Someone took notice of something and yelled out, “Shit. We didn’t notice this before but he’s wearing a Spirit Tier armor! It’s the Violet Gravel Armor!”

“What?!” Liu Yige and the others were shocked.

Ye Zifeng praised the person who noticed the armor, “Your eyes are not bad. That’s right. This is a Grade 1 Spirit Tier armor, Violet Gravel Armor.”

He laughed and then continued to talk, “Also, you guys have probably guessed it already. This was given to the Wang clan’s second young master as a reward.”

“This.....” Liu Yige stood there in shock. Nothing came out of his mouth.

From what he can see, Ye clan and Wang clan are enemies. Wang Lin and Ye Zifeng are enemies. Ye Zifeng probably wouldn’t have a good relationship with the second brother.

Thus, there was only one way for Ye Zifeng to obtain the armor.

He forcefully took it! He forcefully took it from someone at the eighth stage of qi refining.

Even if Liu Yige didn’t want to believe this, he had to.

Then what are they trying to do? The strongest person in their group is only at the seventh stage. If they want to fight Ye Zifeng, aren’t they looking to die? With this armor, Ye Zifeng can withstand any of their attacks.

Ye Zifeng smiled as he walked towards Liu Yige. With every step that he took, Liu Yige took a step back. In just a few moments, Liu Yige was already out the door.

“You have nowhere to run now.”

“I.....” Liu Yige was startled.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Don’t be scared.....Look, I haven’t even made a move yet.”

These words were used to remind Liu Yige of something. If his opponent didn’t make a move and he was so scared already, then what would happen if Ye Zifeng actually made a move?

The mysterious energy on Ye Zifeng’s body made Liu Yige weary.

However, if he ran away in front of his brothers then where would his face go?

“Ye Zifeng, don’t think that I’m afraid of you. I planned on leaving after today anyways. One of us has to die today!”

Liu Yige gulped and looked fiercely at Ye Zifeng.

Against these people who gave everything up already, blood contracts,

blood oaths and these kind of things won't work anymore. They were ready to die so they were ready to do whatever that was needed.

"Ahh. It makes me feel some kind of regret...." Ye Zifeng shook his head and looked at Liu Yige.

"What do you mean?" Liu Yige looked at Ye Zifeng weirdly.

Chapter 141: Retreat in shock

“What do I mean?” Ye Zifeng smiled

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng’s expression changed and without saying anything, he ruthlessly punched Liu Yige with the power of lightning.

“You! Weren’t you going to say something?” Liu Yige thought that Ye Zifeng walked towards him because he wanted to say something. Who would’ve thought that Ye Zifeng would strike so ruthlessly!

If it wasn’t for the fact that he was able to react fast enough, his teeth would’ve been knocked out.

Ye Zifeng laughed loudly, “Alright. Then let me talk with you for a bit. In the Liu clan, do you not belong anymore? Is there no one that cares for you anymore?”

Liu Yige frowned and gritted his teeth, “Yes!”

“You said it yourself.”

Ye Zifeng’s expression turned stern again. He moved towards Liu Yige and kicked his stomach so hard that Liu Yige dropped to his knees in pain.

“What the hell. If you wanna talk, then talk. Why are you hitting me too.” Liu Yige had a bitter look on his face as he held onto his stomach.

He’s seen people who are vulgar and fight all the time. He has also seen people who were civilized and can reason with others. However, he has never seen someone like Ye Zifeng who is both civilized and vulgar!

When Bingqian saw how Liu Yige was suffering, she had to hold herself back from laughing, thus she closed her eyes. However, even hearing Liu Yige suffer started to make her laugh.

“Boss, I really do hear something....”

At the same time, Ye Zifeng yelled out to cover up Liu Bingqian’s laughter.

“Against some people, talking to them is enough. To others, not only do I have to talk, I have to teach them a lesson with my fist as well. You, are

part of the latter group."

Liu Yige spat out some blood.

"What? I'll find someone to beat you to death!" He angrily looked at Ye Zifeng.

"That's fine. Bring them here."

"I....." Liu Yige didn't know what to say.

However, he looked around and then calmed down to think about it. He's already went and looked for people to beat ye Zifeng up. But instead of beating him up, he was the one beat up instead.....

Liu Yige's voice softened, "Then what are you trying to talk about? As long as you don't hit me, I'll listen."

Ye Zifeng raised his fist.

"Please..... Please don't hit my face....."

"Brothers, what are you guys doing? Come help me out." Liu Yige was losing himself to fear and yelled out. They were both in the sixth stage of qi refining. How is he so weak compared to Ye Zifeng?

"Whoever dares to help will be the next one to get beat up." After Ye Zifeng threatened them, the others' will to battle quickly disappeared.

It looked as if Ye Zifeng was the one who came to teach them a lesson.

Even they had the numbers advantage, none of them were able to fight against Ye Zifeng.

"Don't hit me....." Liu Yige was getting punched repeatedly as he cried out miserably.

Ye Zifeng smiled and raised his fists again, "You said that no one cares for you, then how about Liu Ningzi?"

Liu Yige was startled, "Originally, I thought she was someone who understands but who would've thought that even she looked down on me. That look she has on her face when she looks at you, I feel disgusted by looking at it.

Liu bingqian was listening carefully. If she wasn't stuck in the closet, she would've scolded Liu Yige.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "But, you don't know that before you came here, she told me about what you were going to do. She was afraid that you were going to do something stupid and get kicked out of the Liu clan. You tell me. If she doesn't care for you, then why would she do something like this?"

"She did?" Liu Bingqian was startled. Actually, Ye Zifeng wanted to use this chance to explain himself to Bingqian as well.

Hearing this, Liu Yige shook, "No way. Did she really? Impossible. Ye Zifeng, you're lying. You're making things up! You're making fun of me aren't you!?"

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng's expression turned cold. A mysterious qi appeared from on his fist. Before Liu Yige could react, he ruthlessly punched him.

Liu Yige's face started to swell up as blood ran down from the corner of his mouth, "You!"

"Making fun of you? Hehe..... I'm making fun of you by beating you up. If I want to make fun of you, then why am I wasting my time talking with you?"

Even though Liu Yige's face was swollen, he still smiled.

"Really? Junior sister Ningzi still cares for me?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Did she directly tell you that she looked down on you?"

"This....Not really...." After thinking about it, Liu Yige shook his head.

"Boss, are we here to fight him or listen to him talk....."

"Right. We have nothing to do with your affairs with Miss Ningzi....."

Liu Yige turned and looked at those guys, "You guys still have the nerves to say something like that? When I needed your help, where were you guys? You guys were just standing there!"

“This….We……” The four of their faces turned red from embarrassment.

They had heard about Ye Zifeng from Liu Bingqian. Even though he was tough to deal with, he was still only in the sixth stage of qi refining. They were enough to deal with him.

Who would’ve thought that Ye Zifeng would have a self protecting treasure. Even though he was in the 6th stage of qi refining, his strength is around the 8th stage of qi refining already. They didn’t dare to make a move against him at all.

Ye Zifeng looked over at the four of them, “If you’re not gonna fight, then leave. I’m guessing that you don’t want the Liu clan’s master to know of your existence right? You can leave one by one. You first.”

He pointed at one of them, signaling for him to leave.

“What? You’re willing to let us go?” That person show a joyful expression. He was about to go all out against Ye Zifeng if he had to stay. But since Ye Zifeng let him leave, he will gladly take the chance to.

“What. You want to stay and fight with me?” Ye Zifeng glared at him with killing intent.

“Of course not. You have a spirit tier treasure. Why would I fight you?”

“Then what are you still doing here? Leave.”

“Okay. okay.” That person was afraid that Ye Zifeng would change his mind and ran out immediately.

“Next!” Ye Zifeng looked at them and pointed at another person.

“Alright. Alright. I’m leaving!” That person quickly walked out without even looking back.

“You guys accepted my gold coins already. How can you leave.” Liu Yige was shouting and wanted to block the exit. However, Ye Zifeng stopped him from doing so.

“Next. Both of you leave together.” Ye Zifeng stared at the two remaining members.

“I’m sorry young master Ye!” The two of them bowed and quickly left without even looking at Liu Yige.

“You! Don’t let me see you guys agian.” Liu Yige was extremely angry and wanted to beat the four of them up.

If Ye Zifeng tells Liu Mu about this, then Liu Mu will definitely kick him out of the clan. Then he will become like a stray dog.

“Now, theres only two of us left.....” Ye Zifeng saw that everyone else had left and slowly closed the door.

“You.... What do you want? Let me tell you. I’ve lost everything already. I’m not afraid of you!” Liu Yige’s voice was shaking as he slowly crawled backwards.

Chapter 142: Consider a dog's master before beating it

"It seems like I wasted my energy beating you up just now. Didn't I tell you that your junior sister hasn't given you up? She still cares for you ....."

Ye Zifeng looked deeply at Liu Yige.

"I....."

When a person's soft spot is hit, they will become weaker. Ye Zifeng didn't care much about Liu Yige and Liu Ningzi's relationship.

In the end, all this talk is part of a grand plan. It's used to make someone self-destruct.

He can instill fear into people's hearts and also hit their soft spots. No one can escape these two things.

How would Liu Yige know what Ye Zifeng was thinking about. He thought that Ye Zifeng was trying to make him good by beating him up. He had overlooked the beating that Ye Zifeng gave him already.

"Then what should I do now? If the clan master finds out, I will definitely be expelled."

Liu Yige wanted to take Ye Zifeng down with him but now that he had calmed down, he was starting to become afraid.

From what Ye Zifeng can see, if he plays with a mad dog, the results won't be good even if he wins. Also, this is the Liu clan's territory. He has to consider the dog's master before beating it down. He doesn't want to bring disaster upon himself for no reason.

"Maybe." Ye Zifeng smiled, "If neither of us talks about it and your friends keep quiet..... then isn't this pretty much over?"

Liu Yige stared at Ye Zifeng with a look of disbelief.

"No way! You'll help me cover this up?" he didn't believe that Ye Zifeng would be so kind hearted. However, he heard it from the man himself.

Just like this, all of the evil thoughts that he had towards Ye Zifeng completely dissipated. He regreted all of his actions.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Of course. But if you want me to help you cover it up, you have to pay the price....”

When liu Yige heard about paying a price, his heart dropped. He has to beg Ye Zifeng in order to live in the Liu clan now. He didn’t care about anything else.

“But.... I’m not like those people in the Wang clan..... I don’t have money nor do I have any treasures.....”

Ye Zifeng laughed and nodded, “If you have some strong treasures, then you would’ve used it already. Don’t worry. The things I want from you, you’ll definitely be able to give it.”

Liu Yige saw that Ye Zifeng wasn’t making things difficult for himself and calmed down, “Then what do you want?”

“Three days later, the sect missions will start again. I heard that there’s a team competition to this time.” Ye Zifeng looked at Liu Yige with a calm expression.

“I heard that too.....” Liu Yige nodded. He knew a thing or two about the sect missions but he didn’t understand what Ye Zifeng meant by that.

Ye Zifeng nodded as his gaze suddenly pierced Liu Yige’s eyes.

‘Good. Then, I want you to sign up in the spot that is opposite from me.

“This.....”

Liu Yige was startled at the request. He thought about it and turned pale with fright, “I understand now. You’re asking me to be a mole and spy on the other team for you! No way. If the sect’s elders find out, then I will definitely be kicked out of the sect!”

“What’s better. Getting kicked out of the Liu clan immediately or getting kicked out of the sect only if someone finds out about this. What would you choose?” Ye Zifeng let out a cold smile.

“I.....”

Ye Zifeng's true intentions were finally revealed. He wasn't wasting his time lecturing Liu Yige so he can become a better person.

Everything that he did was to force Liu Yige to go this route. Even a stupid person knows which option they should choose after everything.

"How about it? It seems like I need to go have a talk with uncle Liu for a bit."

"……Okay. Okay. I'll listen to you. When I register for the missions, I will join the team that's across from you." Liu Yige sighed.

If Ye Zifeng suggested a mission that was impossible to accomplish, Liu Yige would've done his best to bring Ye Zifeng down with him.

Ye Zifeng retrieved a few spirit papers from his sleeves and handed them over to Liu Yige, "When the time comes, write everything down on these and burn it. That way, I'll be able to read it."

"You even have spirit papers?" Liu Yige was surprised. It seems like Ye Zifeng had prepared this a long time ago. Could he have planned this from the very beginning?

"Oh yeah, since you're already calmed down, then sign a blood contract with me. I won't say anything and in exchange, you help me with the next sect mission. What do you think?"

"Fine. let's do it." Liu Yige thought about it and accepted Ye Zifeng's proposal.

Ye Zifeng smiled and retrieved a few blood contracts from his ring and threw it in front of Liu Yige. He then quickly drew blood from his fingers and flung it onto the contract.

His movements were very precise as if he had done it many times already.

Liu Yige was stupefied, "No way. You carry these around with you? Why do you jhave so many?"

"For self-defense. It's not worth that much anyways so I might as well carry a few more." Ye Zifeng talked as if this was normal.

“Self defense?” Liu Yige’s mouth twitched. If he didn’t know how scary Ye Zifeng was before, then he knows now.

“What? Is there a problem?”

Other people would put treasures, weapons and defensive items in their interspatial ring. But Ye Zifeng has a large stack of blood contracts.... He’s obviously trying to toy around with people!

It was a hundred years too early for Liu Yige to fight with Ye Zifeng.

Liu Yige knew that he was trapped the moment that he saw the smile on Ye Zifeng’s face. It looked warm and horrifying at the same time. However, he couldn’t do anything but go along with everything.

He earnestly followed Ye Zifeng’s instructions and sighed the blood contract.

“Alright. Is that fine? As long as you don’t say anything, i’ll do anything.”

“This is fine.”

Ye Zifeng retrieved the blood contracts with smiling.

When he was about to kick Liu Yige out, suddenly.....

A gentle laugh came out of the closet. It wasn’t very loud but in the silent room, the laugh was piercing.

Ye Zifeng raised his brows. He was almost done with Liu Yige, why did Bingqian not hold on for a little big longer?”

At that moment, Bingqian immediately regretted. She quickly held her breath and shut her mouth.

“That sound.....” Liu Yige’s eyes widened. He looked around and then his gaze landed on the closet.

Liu Yige let out a chuckled, “.....It came from the closet.”

Ye Zifeng’s expression suddenly turned cold and quickly reacted, “What. Are you interested in the girls from the Jufeng Pavilion too?”

Even though Bingqian knew what was going on, after hearing Ye Zifeng say that he called a woman over from the Jufeng Pavilion, she felt a bit

mad. Why couldn't he make a better excuse.

"Jufeng Pavilion? I didn't think that you would go there too. Tell me who it is. I might even know her."

Ye Zifeng stared at him, "And what if I tell you? Are you trying to join us?"

Hearing this, Liu Bingqian frowned immediately. She gritted her teeth and clenched her fist. It looked as if she was going to blow up any time now.

She's the eldest daughter of the Liu clan and was the number one alchemist in Leizhou City. How did she get degraded like this……

"I……" Liu Yige was startled and laughed, "My bad. My bad….. I won't ask anymore about this."

He then gave Ye Zifeng a meaningful look, "Well then. Since there's nothing more to talk about, I'll be leaving first."

"Hold on….." Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped him.

Liu Yige's face turned bitter, "Do you need anything else?"

Ye Zifeng snickered, "I'm still injured and I greeted so many people today…. I'm feeling very tired. Looks like I can't play with the woman in the closet tonight. I want you to bring her out!"

Chapter 143: I've been waiting

Ye Zifeng's intention were not unclear. If a woman walks out of his room in the middle of the night and gets found out by someone, then it would be very bad. But if she walked out with someone else, then there wouldn't be many questions.

"What?!"

Both Liu Yige and Liu Bingqian yelled out at the same time.

Liu Bingqian was feeling a mix of emotions. She felt regret coming here without thinking about it.

"Huh? That voice... it sounds familiar. Where have I heard it before?" Liu Yige was startled. He stared at the closet and thought about it.

Ye Zifeng smiled embarrassingly, "That's normal. You probably know quite a few girls in the Jufeng Pavilion, this is someone that you've seen there....."

"Really? It doesn't feel like it...." Liu Yige scratched his head in confusion.

There were numerous girls in the Jufeng Pavilion. It really was possible that the girl in the closet was from there.

Ye Zifeng moved in front of him to block his sight, "Alright. I might as well tell you this. I have a very bad habit. After I play around with someone, I would toss them away and never interact with them again. Thus, I don't want anyone to see this girl's face. Do you get it?"

Liu Yige rubbed his nose and smiled, "This I understand. Some things are better kept hidden. How about this, you can have her wear a mask and a cloak to conceal herself. How about it?"

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Good. I was also thinking about something like that. How about this. You wait at the door and when she finishes, I'll let her out. Wait until there's no one around and move your own separate ways."

"Okay!" Liu Yige nodded and walked right out.

After Ye Zifeng watched Liu Yige leave, he walked towards the closet and opened it up.

Inside, Liu Binqgian was groaning, and her entire lovely body was drenched in sweat. It was normal considering that she was in such a small closet.

When Liu Bingqian saw Ye Zifeng, she pouted, “Big brother rough guy, you actually said that I was from the Jufeng Pavilion. Couldn’t you say something better?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “In this situation, what should I have said then?”

“Say that……” Liu Bingqian thought about it and couldn’t say anything.

If he said that she was a maidservant, Liu Yige would definitely be curious and ask about it. What if he said that she was the doctor? But then, why would the doctor need to hide in the closet?

Thus, the only thing that Ye Zifeng could say was that she was someone from a brothel. That way, Liu Yige wouldn’t suspect anything. It was all thought out already.

“Whatever, let’s not talk about this. Do you have a mask? Let me borrow one. I don’t want others to recognize me. If they do, then my reputation and purity will be destroyed.

Liu Bingqian was somewhat conservative. She wasn’t afraid of losing her purity to Ye Zifeng. However, she felt that this wasn’t the right time yet. At least, she didn’t get Ye Zifeng’s approval yet.

Ye Zifeng smiled and retrieved a black devious looking mask for Liu Bingqian.

“Here. I’ll gift this to you.”

Liu Bingqian stared at the mask in shock, “I was just randomly asking. But you really did have a mask…..”

“We’re in a martial world. This is for self preservation…..”

‘Self preservation?” Liu Bingqian looked at him awkwardly.

It's fine if Ye Zifeng throws a bunch of blood contracts in his interspatial ring. But now, he even has masks too? He obviously wants to do something bad.

"If you don't want it, how are you going to go out?" Ye Zifeng smiled and was about to put the mask back.

"Don't....." Liu Bingqian quickly reached out and grabbed the mask from him.

"Who said that I didn't want it. Even though this is a bit broken, this is the first thing that you gifted me. How can I not want it?"

"Also, let me remind you, I still need you to get the profound tier cauldron. Thanks."

"I got it. I'll do my best for you!" Liu Bingqian giggled. She had just received her first gift from Ye Zifeng. She was feeling very happy.

At the same time, Liu Yige called out, "Hey. It's been so long. Are you done yet?"

"Wait a bit more. She'll come out soon." Ye Zifeng replied

As Ye Zifeng replied to Liu Yige, Liu Bingqian retrieved large overcoat for distinguished guests from the closet.

Even though Ye Zifeng was living in a remote area, it was an area that only distinguished guests of the Liu clan and live in. This was why there were nice clothes in the closet.

Liu Bingqian tightly covered the clothes that she was wearing before and put on the mask. Even if Liu Mu was here, he wouldn't be able to recognize her.

Ye Zifeng nodded in satisfaction and walked out with her.

"Ready? We can leave now??" Liu Yige turned around and looked at Bingqian. All he saw was the mask and the large overcoat. He couldn't see her face or her figure at all.

He quickly looked back and Ye Zifeng and didn't think much of it anymore.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Alright. You can leave. Be careful. Also, remember our contract.”

“How can I forget. Three days later, I’ll join the team that’s against you. I remember very clearly.

“Good!” Ye Zifeng smiled and pointed at the door, “When you guys leave, walk towards the trees. That way, it’ll make it harder for you guys to be noticed.”

“Alright. Got it!” Liu Yige nodded. He didn’t want anyone to find out either and have suspicions towards him.

After the two bid their farewells, they looked around and left through the door....

The next day, there was another long line of people waiting for Ye Zifeng. However, in order to “heal up”, he didn’t receive any gifts and simply talked with the people. Liu Mu held onto the gifts in his stead.

Liu Yige looked at the small mountain of gifts and couldn’t help but praise Ye Zifeng.

“Damn, this guy is good. To be able to make all these seniors try to curry favors with him, I’m afraid that I won’t ever be able to do something like this.”

Liu Ningzi was shocked and gasped, “Senior brother, what happened? Why did you suddenly start praising Ye Zifeng? Didn’t you want to beat him up and were looking for people to teach him a lesson?”

Talking about this made Liu Yige’s face turn red from embarrassment. He didn’t want to think about what happened the night before.

“Oh yeah. Senior brother, what happened to your face? Why is it blue and purple? Did you go fight last night?”

Liu Ningzi stared at his face in shock.

“This..... I fell when I was sleeping last night.

“It wouldn’t be like this if you simply fell. Let me go get some medicine for you. Put it on your face and don’t come out today. Use this time to rest

and recover....." Liu Ningzi had a worried look on her face.

Hearing this, Liu Yige couldn't take it anymore and smiled brightly, "Junior sister, I didn't think that you really do care for me. I misunderstood."

Liu Ningzi smiled, "Of course. We grew up together. If I don't care for you, then who will?"

"Junior sister is right. With this, I, Liu Yige, won't go and find another other woman!" Liu Yige was so lost in his trance that he blurted these words out.

Liu Ningzi was startled, "Senior brother. Are you misunderstanding something....." While saying that, she looked towards Ye Zifeng.

"Misunderstand what?" Liu Yige's expression change.

"Nothing.... I don't really know what. We'll talk about this later." A complicated look appeared on Liu Ningzi's face.

At this time.

"Big brother rough guy.... I got the thing that you wanted." At noon, Bingqian's voice echoed as she ran towards Ye Zifeng with a small bag in his hands.

The profound tier cauldron is extremely large so she had to use a high class spatial treasure to hold it.

Ye Zifeng felt that his body was feeling a lot better and became serious again.

"Finally. I've been waiting!"

Chapter 144: Be careful!

Ye Zifeng had everything ready except for the most crucial item.

He still haven't used the five sets of ingredients for the profound tier golden marrow pill yet. Now that he's back, he can use the profound tier cauldron to refine them.

But right now, Bingqian had returned with the cauldron. After following Ye Zifeng for so long, she knew that she had to be low key with her actions so they don't attract unwanted attention.

Thus, when she spoke before, she leaned towards Ye Zifeng and whispered in his ears. Everyone present saw this intimate action and had some thoughts about it.

Liu Mu coughed and a bitter look appeared on her face. He was thinking about why his daughter was being so unreserved in front of everyone.

"Qian-er. Go get some more tea for these elders. The qi in here is almost gone."

Liu Bingqian looked up, "What are you talking about. This pot of tea is still fresh. There's no need to change it."

Seeing how his daughter was disobeying him, his expression looked gloomy.

"Qian-er, what are you saying. Show some courtesy.

Ye Zifeng suddenly stood up and bowed towards Liu Mu, "Uncle Liu, Zifeng has a request."

Liu Mu smiled and nodded, "Nephew Zifeng, there's no need to be polite with me. Just tell me whatever you need." After receiving so much benefits from Ye Zifeng, he had to give Ye Zifeng some face. Even though they disliked each other, they still had to put on an act in front of the guests.

Ye Zifeng coughed, "When I woke up today, my body felt different. I think that my injuries are acting up again. I'm sorry but I have to excuse myself for today. If uncle Liu could receive the guests for me, that'd be

great. I'll be able to return and rest in my room."

Liu Mu rolled his eyes. Helping Ye Zifeng meant that he would be taking all the gifts. From the looks of it, it seems like Ye Zifeng wants to pull the Liu clan in. Liu Mu didn't see anything wrong with this and agreed immediately.

"Nephew Zifeng, you don't have to be so polite. If you're tired, then you can go back..... Lemme get someone to bring you back."

He looked at Liu Ningzi but she turned around immediately. As for Liu Yige, it's not like Liu Mu doesn't know that their feud..... Finally, he looked at

"Qian-er.....Look at how you're treating the guests.....You don't have to change the tea anymore. Bring young master Ye back to his room so he can rest. You'll do that right?"

Liu Bingqian was feeling very happy, "Father.....Do you think I'll mess up? Don't worry about it.

Liu Mu nodded, "Okay then. I won't say anymore. You guys can leave first. Leave everything to me here."

"Thank you uncle Liu." Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian looked at each other and smiled.

These guests' gifts were not that special to Ye Zifeng. There might be one or two good things but Ye Zifeng didn't mind Liu Mu taking them.

Seeing this opportunity, Liu Mu looked the other way and let Ye Zifeng do whatever he wanted.

It was a win win situation for both sides.

As they walked back to the room, Ye Zifeng felt a bit worried.

Last night, Liu Bingqian had sneaked into his room. But now, they were both walking into his room through the front door.

"There's no one outside right?" Ye Zifeng asked again.

"Don't worry big brother rough guy. I gave orders to the servants

already. Without my permission, they can't come in here. No one will disturb us."

"That's good."

When Ye Zifeng looked at the profound tier cauldron, his heart started to race. He was feeling very excited.

This kind of feeling..... He didn't feel like this in a long time.

In Tiandao City, he had to use a common tier cauldron to refine pills. For someone like Ye Zifeng, a common tier cauldron is only used by newbies.

However, it is very strenuous for people in the qi refining stages to refine pills using a profound tier cauldron. He remember that the last time they did it, they both had to expend a lot of energy to make a profound tier pill.

However, Ye Zifeng loved challenges. It excites him.

But before he starts refining, he has something else that he had to do.

He put on a serious expression, "Bingqian, when I, Ye Zifeng refine pills, the results must be better than the previous time."

Liu Bingqian smiled, "Then what do you want to do?"

"Since I'm in the 6th stage of qi refining now, I want to try to form my common tier flame."

Liu Bingqian's face became twisted. She was shocked by Ye Zifeng's suggestion.

"Common tier flame? No way! If you want to form a common tier flame, you need to have enough resources to do so. Also you need a high level alchemist with you to make sure that you don't get hit with any repercussions of condensing a flame."

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, "It's only a mere common tier flame. If I need someone to watch over me now, then what will happen when I try to breakthrough and form a spirit tier, immortal tier and god tier flames?"

Liu Bingqian was startled and gulped, “That kind of level..... It’s not something that people like us can achieve.....”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Realms exist for people to breakthrough. Don’t underestimate yourself. When we enter the Profound Sect or even higher level sects in the future, your view of the world will broaden.

Hearing how Ye Zifeng was filled with confidence, Liu Bingqian felt a heartening feeling. However when she thought about it, she still didn’t approve of Ye Zifeng doing this by himself.

Even she herself was only able to form a common tier flame under her master’s careful watch and guidance.

It’s too dangerous for someone of the younger generation to try and form a common tier flame without anyone’s guidance.

“It’s not like I’m doing this alone. You’re here with me aren’t you?”

Liu Bingqian was surprised, “Me? I can only help a little but. If you lose control of yourself, then i can’t bring you back.”

“Don;t worry. I, Ye Zifeng, am not that weak to the point that I would lose control while condensing a common tier flame.....”

Liu Bingqian looked deeply at Ye Zifeng. Where did he get all this confidence from? It looked as if he had done this before. However, after the alchemy competition, Liu Bingqian started to look at Ye Zifeng at a better light. This time, she would trust him.

“Okay. Use your flames to warm the cauldron up. I plan to start!”

“Okay!” Liu Bingqian calmed down and lit up the cauldron with her flames.

The quickest way to form a common tier flame is to absorb it from the cauldron. Someone else lights up an empty cauldron while the receiver absorbs the flames from the cauldron.

This is called kindling. It kindles a person’s fire essence and allows the common tier to form.

“Big brother rough guy, we have a profound tier cauldron, not a common

tier one. Is there going to be a different effect?

When she had formed her flames, she used a common tier cauldron as the base. She didn't know if there was any difference if he used a higher level cauldron.

"Of course it's going to be different. Using the profound tier cauldron as a medium, the flames that I absorb will be purer."

"Really?" Liu Bingqian was happy. If it was something good for Ye Zifeng, she would feel happy too.

Her happiness was short lived as Ye Zifeng continued, "But.... The purer it is, the more dangerous.

"..... Big brother rough guy. You're too impatient. This is your first time condensing a flame..... Why do you have to use a profound tier cauldron as a medium?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Condensing a flame isn't the same as refining pills. There is only one chance in a lifetime. The first time will determine your future as an alchemist. So even if it's dangerous, I have to do it."

His views of the world and experience far surpasses Liu Bingqian and her imagination.

Sometimes, walking down a dangerous path and forging new roads is the best choice. Otherwise, if you continuously walk the easy road, your ability will be limited.

"Then.... Okay. I'll listen to you. But promise me this. If you feel that something is wrong, don't continue and stop immediately. Okay?"

Liu Bingqian gave Ye Zifeng a serious look. Anxiousness and uneasiness filled her eyes. She respected Ye Zifeng's decision but wants him to be safe.

"Don't worry. I know what I'm doing." Ye Zifeng calmly replied

"Okay then. I'll start right now. You have to be careful....."

Chapter 145: Forming a flame!

Liu Bingqian bit her lips and composed herself. She concentrated all of her attention and devoted herself to lighting up the cauldron.

A small blaze slowly appeared on the tip of her finger.

“Go!”

Liu Bingqian continuously sent the fire qi into the cauldron. In an instant, the entire bottom of the cauldron lit up.

Due to the fact that there was nothing in the cauldron, a burnt smoke started to form in the room. If they just left it like that, then even a profound tier cauldron won’t be able to handle it and break apart.

Thus, at this time, the person receiving the flames must make a move.

“Big brother rough guy, your turn.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Don’t worry. I know what I’m doing.”

“You……”

Liu Bingqian really thought that this was his first time and wanted to instruct him. When she was forming her flame, she was only able to do so under Muyun Old Devil’s guidance.

Even that Song Shiyun had to spent a lot of money to hire an alchemist from Tiandao City to watch over him and guide him.

How would she know that Ye Zifeng was a peak heaven tier alchemist in his pat life. He can repeat the process of something as insignificant as forming a common tier flame backwards if he wants to.

Ye Zifeng calmed down. He slowly watched as the blaze formed.

When the flames reached its highest point, his expression changed immediately.

Streams of fire qi energy followed his veins into the tips of his fingers. Steam appeared from his fingertips and moved towards the profound tier cauldron.

When his fire qi touched Liu Bingqian's flames, threads of flames slowly flowed towards Ye Zifeng's body.

Kindling. This was a shortcut to forming a flame. It can't be treated as a joke.

Luring the flame onto your body was the first step. If an inexperienced newbie did this, they might light themselves up on fire.

Sparks jumped around Ye Zifeng's skin. A sizzling sound could be heard as his skin started to burn.

"Big brother rough guy....." Liu Bingqian was worried. If anything happened to Ye Zifeng, she would stop immediately and help him recuperate.

"I'm fine."

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and closed his eyes. The essence energy in his hands continuously rotated faster and faster. A layer of qi energy started to cover up the meridians on his body to protect them from the sparks.

However, this was only on the outside.

Even though the sparks were not able to enter Ye Zifeng's body, it was hard for the qi energy to protect him from the heat extruded by the sparks.

"Ah...." Ye Zifeng groaned.

This feeling.... It felt as if he was in a steamer.... Droplets of sweat rolled down Ye Zifeng's face. Ye Zifeng could not afford to lose concentrating right now.

"Big brother rough guy, how about I hold back a bit?"

Liu Bingqian was super worried about him right now.

However, Ye Zifeng smiled, "Hold back? What? We're just starting. Bingqian, increase the intensity by a bit more. Bring the flames up to another level!"

"But....." Liu Bingqian stared at him. Ye Zifeng's clothes were drenched

in sweat. He looked as if he was in extreme heat.

"Continue it. Add some more strength!" Ye Zifeng called out. He looked like he was dying from the heat but his words told a different story.

Liu Bingqian hesitated and then sighed, "Okay. I don't care anymore....."

She became focus again and increased the output of flame.

She was in the 9th stage of qi refining right now. Using so much qi to output her flame would immediately burn any ingredient in the cauldron if there were any. Yet, Ye Zifeng was trying to absorb this flame to form his own flame.

At the same time, the flames under the cauldron became even stronger. It started to burn wildly!

Ye Zifeng saw this and immediately use his thunder qi to try and suppress the effects of the wild flames. He wanted to push this energy away from himself.

If Liu Bingqian was in the 8th stage of qi refining, he would've been able to handle it. But Liu Bingqian was in the 9th stage. Even with his thunder qi, he was unable to defend against the attack of the flames.

"Since it's like this, I'll just have to use the martial spirit's power."

After the events that happened last time, Ye Zifeng was a bit afraid of using the martial spirit's power. He was afraid that the martial spirit might harm Liu Bingqian if he draws its power out.

Also, the shadow ghost told him that before Ye Zifeng fed it pills, it would not appear again in such a short amount of time.

"Bingqian, move farther away from me."

Just to be safe, Ye Zifeng ordered Liu Bingqian to move back a few steps. He started to move some qi into the red lines on his arms. After the qi went into his arms, the red lines lit up.

The flames that met with his thunder qi started to disappear slowly. Some of it even entered Ye Zifeng's body after leaving a burn scar.

Of course, because Ye Zifeng was using the power of the martial spirit, those butn scars disappeared very quickly.

“Oh my god.... Big brother rough guy, are you using the power of a martial spirit like before?”

Liu Bingqian was unfamiliar with it at first, but after experiencing the power of the martial spirit, she became more familiar with it. She finally asked the question that she had been saving for so long.

“That’s correct.”

“No way. It’s actually true? I didn’t think that you would be able to use your martial spirit’s power.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “You’re the only one that knows that. So, please keep this a secret.”

“Of course!” Liu Bingqian immediately replied. To be able to know one of Ye Zifeng’s secrets, she was feeling happy.

“Okay Bingqian, the time is near. I’ll start to absorb the flames inside of the cauldron.”

When someone tries to form a flame, they must first lure the flame essence onto their body.

As for the second step, he must completely infuse the flame into his body. This was the key to forming a flame.

Liu Bingqian stared at Ye Zifeng. She was even more nervous than Ye Zifeng. She believed that she understood more about this than Ye Zifeng. Even if Ye Zifeng has a lot of knowledge, when it comes to practicality, he shouldn’t be that experienced.

Unless Ye Zifeng is actually a once in a thousand year genius that’s born for alchemy.... Thinking like this, she stared blankly at Ye Zifeng.

“Bingqian, what are you thinking about.....”

Liu Bingqian returned to her senses and her cheeks burned from embarrassment, “Nothing.... Okay, let me help you extract the flames. If you can’t handle it, then stop.”

“Okay. Start it up.”

She only has experience in extracting the flames out of a common tier cauldron. Now that she’s extracting the flames from a profound tier cauldron, she was feeling a bit nervous. After all, this was pretty dangerous.

Liu Bingqian took a deep breath and calmed her heart down. Qi energy appeared besides her as she guide it towards the cauldron.

When the qi entered the cauldron, the flames on the bottom slowly formed into small lumps. The small lumps then fused together to grow. The ball of flame continued to grow inside of the room.

“No way. How can this flame be so fierce?” Liu Bingqian was mentally prepared for everything but was still extremely shocked when she looked at the ball of flame. She looked over at Ye Zifeng and her heart started to beat faster.

She hesitated for a bit but finally forced the ball for flame down.

She used all of her qi to control the flame and calm it down by a bit so the entire room didn’t blow up.

Even though she was successful, using all of her qi to control this fire was extremely hard.

“Big brother rough guy, this is all I can do. This flame is extremely powerful. I’m afraid that you won’t be able to handle it and might burn alive. How about we just leave it and switch to a common tier cauldron?”

She still had some hope before but when she saw this fiery flame, she was in despair.

When Ye Zifeng saw this, a worried look appeared as well. However, he wasn’t going to give up.

“Bingqian, listen to me. Don’t give up. I’ll be fine. Slowly control the fire and move it towards me.”

“But, I’m afraid that you’ll die!”

“Bingqian!” Ye Zifeng yelled out, “Trust me!”

If the person that was helping him gives up, then that would be disastrous.

“O...Okay.” Bingqian trusted Ye Zifeng.

She pursed her lips and became serious again. This was the final step!

The flame in front of her gradually formed into a dragon and flew straight towards Ye Zifeng’s head.....

Chapter 146: Success?

The giant flaming dragon moved slowly towards Ye Zifeng's head. At the same time, the strength of the flames suddenly doubled in power.

"It's over..... It's over. How can this flame be so strong. Big brother rough guy can't handle it.

Liu Bingqian watched as the dragon above Ye Zifeng's head became bigger and bigger.... She started to fret.

At this time, she felt like she didn't have any other choice but to hold the flames up and not let it fall.

If it falls, a disaster will happen. The results will be unimaginable.

"Big brother rough guy. Run away. It's fine if the house burns down. Your life is more important!"

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and became much more serious. He didn't feel a single ounce of fear at all. Instead, he started to smile.

"Extreme quality.... Hahaha. This is an extreme quality flame. The best quality flame! As expected of a flame created by a profound tier cauldron."

Normally, Ye Zifeng would be calm no matter what. However, when it came to anything related to alchemy, he would become extremely excited.

This was the remains of his past life. This was the meaning of his life. It's not something that can be easily changed.

"It looks like that if I want to absorb this flame, I have to use some more effort."

He lifted his head to look at flaming dragon and took out the Spirit Amassing Pearl.

"Big brother rough guy.... This is....." Liu Bingqian looked in confusion.

"This is a spirit tier grade four treasure. That Dong Tianrui gifted it to me."

Liu Bingqian was shocked. She had seen how Ye Zifeng treated other

people. There was no way that Dong Tianrui gifted it to him. He must have extorted it from him.

But right now, she didn't have time to argue with him.

Ye Zifeng inserted half of his qi into the Spirit Amassing Pearl to temporarily allow his qi to to level up.

There were steps in forming a flame. One must follow the rules. Only experts were able to increase their own qi level to assimilate the flames with their own body and form a common tier flame.

"Almost there!"

Ye Zifeng's expression gathered all of his qi and made a move towards the flame dragon! The abundant amount of qi that Ye Zifeng released turned into white smoke and looked as if it was sealing the flame dragon.

However, the flame dragon had been waiting there for too long already. Once it touched Ye Zifeng's qi, it looked as if it found the source of its food and flew towards Ye Zifeng.

"Watch out big brother rough guy!" Liu Bingqian had experienced this before. However, the flame dragon was extremely powerful and can't be handled lightly. When she thought about it, the flame dragon that she had encountered was like an earthworm compared to Ye Zifeng's.

Ye Zifeng reached his hands out to defend himself against the flame dragon. It felt like he was trying to hold onto a boiling rock. His entire arm had been burnt black.

If it was a beginner in his place, they would have retracted their hand immediately. This was normal human reflexes.

But Ye Zifeng was different. He used his qi to protect his hands and fought against the dragon. Even if it hurt a lot, he didn't fall back.

He gritted his teeth and withstood the pain. If he was not careful, there was a chance that he might faint.

Liu Bingqian was felt both shock and admiration toward Ye Zifeng's methods.

“Bingqian, I’ve already established a connection between the flame and myself. Don’t just stand there! Use your qi to help me lift this flame up a bit.....”

“O.....Okay. Got it!” Liu Bingqian was ashamed. She had been standing watching and forgot her responsibility. In the end, Ye Zifeng had to remind her.

She worked her qi and moved it towards the flame dragon. She lifted it up by a bit to give Ye Zifeng some breathing room.

Like this, the pressure on Ye Zifeng had decreased by a lot. Now he can concentrate on absorbing the flames.

Ye Zifeng quickly sat down in a crossed leg position with both hands on his knees. All he needed to do now was absorb the flames into his dantian and form his own flames.

Streams of flame towered over Ye Zifeng’s body and struck down onto him. It didn’t look like a kindling process at all. Instead it looked like he was being burned alive.

After all, this wasn’t a flame created by a common tier cauldron. This was created by a profound tier cauldron. It wasn’t that easy to subdue!

This bone piercing heat.... If it was any normal person, they would have fainted from the pain. After a while, there was not a single patch of flesh on Ye Zifeng’s body that was fine.

Liu Bingqian watched in pain. She thought about stopping many times but every time she was about to stop, she thought about how determined Ye Zifeng was and stopped herself. She continued to trust him. She trusted that he would be okay.

“Big brother rough guy.....”

“I’m fine. I can still handle it.” Ye Zifeng continued to absorb the flames and forced a smile. He felt blood coming out of his mouth and immediately started to use the power of the martial spirit. In a split second, the injuries that he had sustained slowly healed up.

If he didn't have this power or this Spirit Amassing Pearl, Ye Zifeng wouldn't dare to do something so dangerous.

He wasn't a heaven tier alchemist anymore. It doesn't matter even if he has the experience. He needs to do this realistically.

In the next moment, flames became even more wild. It had lost control of itself and formed a cage around Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng knew that this was the real test.

He gritted his teeth and forced himself to persist.

The flames surrounded him in a cage as if it was cooking him alive.

Liu Bingqian had never seen anything like this in her life and was completely shocked.

This was when she noticed how dangerous it really was when absorbing a flame created by a profound tier cauldron. After all, a profound tier cauldron was two level highers than a common tier cauldron. If she knew that this was going to happen, she would have stopped Ye Zifeng at the beginning.

Ye Zifeng was still sitting there with his eyes closed, not moving at all. He didn't care if sparks were flying all around his body, burning his skin.

The cage started to tighten up and move closer towards Ye Zifeng's body.

Liu Bingqian couldn't bear watching anymore. Ye Zifeng wasn't moving at all so she thought that he had fainted.

Right when she wanted to make a move, he moved!

Liu Bingqian was ready to stop everything but she paused and watched.

In the next moment, Ye Zifeng's acupuncture points opened up and continuously sucked the flames into his body like a black hole.

Ye Zifeng's head tilted backwards and spat out a mouthful of blood. He groaned curled up into a ball. His entire body smelt like it had been burned.

“Big brother rough guy! Hold on! I’m coming!””

Ye Zifeng gritted his teeth, “Don’t. Don’t come over. Stay like that. I’m good. I’m assimilating the flames into my body.”

Liu Bingqian was shook. She listened and didn’t try to bother him.

After a bit, Ye Zifeng opened his eyes. Steam scattered from his body as he finished absorbing the flames.

“This power.....!” He looked down at his hands.

If it wasn’t for Bingqian suppressing the flames, then the house would’ve burned down already.

“Big brother rough guy, how do you feel?”

A smile appeared on Ye Zifeng’s pale white face.

“I....I’m fine.....I did it! I’ve finally formed my common tier flame. Look!”

After he straightened himself up, a flame appeared on his finger. It was incomparably red.

Ye Zifeng had done it. He really formed his own common tier flame!

Chapter 147: Strike the iron while it's hot

"You did it?" Liu Bingqian show an expression of disbelief.

If Ye Zifeng told her that he did it without doing anything, she would've thought that Ye Zifeng was playing around. It was a miracle that he was able to live already, much less form a flame.

It was basically an impossible task.

However, Ye Zifeng showed her the red common tier flame on his finger. It was the real deal!

"Big brother rough guy, you're incredible! You can even absorb the flames from a profound tier cauldron. You really did form your flame!"

Ye Zifeng smiled and deeply looked at Liu Bingqian, "It's all thanks to you. If I was by myself, the success rate would've gone down by fifty percent! Thanks Bingqian."

Ye Zifeng was very candid. He did have an abundance of experience but when the time comes, he still needed his friends help. If he worked by himself all the time, he will die very easily.

Liu Bingqian showed a happy smile. She was happy that Ye Zifeng had thanked her.

"Big brother rough guy, let me see that common tier flame. I feel like there's something different compared to mine." Liu Bingqian giggled.

"Of course it's different. It's from a profound tier cauldron. I spent a lot of energy to absorb it!"

Ye Zifeng explained and then extended his hand towards Liu Bingqian. The flame on his finger still contained some of the wild energy before but it calmed down since then.

Liu Bingqian grabbed onto Ye Zifeng's hands and continuously stared at the blood red flames, "I remember now. Common tier flames have three levels: high, middle, and low. To determine the level, you have to look at how red the flame is."

Once she said that, she looked at the flame again, “The entire flame is blood red. Isn’t this an extremely high level flame?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Bingqian, it seems like you do know some things. Not bad.”

Liu Bingqian pursed her lips and held her head up high, “Big brother rough guy, before you came along, I was the number alchemist in Leizhou City. I’m not lacking THAT much.”

For someone like Ye Zifeng who was improve so much after starting out as a trash, even if you look through the entire history of Leizhou City, or even the Martial Spirit Continent, there won’t be many people like him. Ye Zifeng can be considered a monster in this regard.

People like Liu Bingqian would no doubt be taken over by Ye Zifeng. Even her master Muyun Old Devil would lose to Ye Zifeng sooner or later.

“Alright. Let’s not be idle. Since I’ve formed my flame, then we should strike while the iron is hot and start refining some profound tier Golden Marrow Pills.” Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at the cauldron.

The process of forming his flame had made him suffer so much. It is time for him to test out this flame that he formed and refine some pills.

“What? You want to refine pills already? Shouldn’t you be resting?”

Liu Bingqian can’t help but admire Ye Zifeng’s valiant determination. She just watched Ye Zifeng go through all that suffering and now he wants to use more energy to refine pills. If she was in his place, she would definitely take a rest before doing anything.

Of course, Ye Zifeng had used his martial spirit’s power to recover around seventy percent of his strength.

Ye Zifeng lightly smiled, “There’s only two more days before the sect missions. If I relax now, I’ll regret it later.

Liu Bingqian sighed, “Okay. But I’ve used too much qi today. It’ll be hard for me to recover. If you want to refine pills, I can only help a little. You still have to do most of it yourself.”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Of course. This time, I’ll show you the strength of this newly formed flame.”

“No way. You’re actually going to do it?” Liu Bingqian shouted. She thought that if she backed out, Ye Zifeng would back out as well and rest for a bit. However, it actually excited him even more.

“Yes!”

Ye Zifeng was determined to refine this pill. He immediately took out a set of ingredients to refine a profound tier golden marrow pill and threw it into the cauldron.

As he threw the ingredients into the cauldron, he lit up the diagram of thirty two stars on the cauldron and filled it with qi.

Ye Zifeng chose the perfect time to refine his pill. The cauldron was still warm and Bingqian’s qi was still inside.

He smiled as he grasped the Spirit Amassing Pearl. He used the pearl to cleanse the qi inside the cauldron. Normal people would use it for cultivation but by using it to refine pills, Ye Zifeng brought out 120% of its value.

After the cauldron received a higher quality qi, it started to stabilize itself.

This was when the common tier flame would come into play.

Ye Zifeng took a deep breath and wiped away the sweat on his head. He calmed down and formed the common tier flame on his finger tips. It grew bigger and bigger until it was like a miniature version of the dragon from before.

He sent the flame towards the cauldron.

The flame lit the cauldron up and scattered throughout all thirty two points of the star diagram.

“This.... This is.....” Liu Bingqian’s expression changed.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “As expected. A flame formed by using a profound tier cauldron will have a deep connection with profound tier cauldrons.

With the harmonization between the flame and the cauldron, the quality of the pill will definitely be extraordinary.

The cauldron turned completely red due to the heat. It was twice as red compared to the time that Liu Bingqian used it.

“Big brother rough guy. The fire is too strong. I’m afraid that the ingredients will melt.” Liu Bingqian stared at it and reminded Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “That’s not a problem. Bingqian, help me put another set of ingredients in!”

“Okay. okay.” Liu Bingqian was shocked by Ye Zifeng’s daring idea. However, she had seen him refine two pills at once during the tournament so she wasn’t that worried.

As soon as the second set of ingredients entered the cauldron, a burnt smell appeared and enveloped everything.

Ye Zifeng investigated the situation inside the cauldron with his qi and rubbed his chin. Afterwards, he pointed at Liu Bingqian.

“Bingqian, this is not enough, put another set of ingredient in.”

“What? You want to put another set in? It’s too much. We’re refining a profound tier golden marrow pill!”

Liu Bingqian was worried. She remembered that when she refined the profound tier golden marrow pill, she had wasted a lot of energy. And yet, Ye Zifeng wants to refine three sets of it at once!

However, she complied with him. She couldn’t retort at all since all of these things belonged to Ye Zifeng.

“Okay. I’m adding another set in.” Liu Bingqian threw the third set of ingredient in and stared deeply at Ye Zifeng. She realized how weak she was compared to him.....

She couldn’t help but think if the difference between them was really that wide.

After the third set of ingredients entered the cauldron, Ye Zifeng nodded as if he was thinking about something.

“It seems like this common tier flame’s strength is better than I had expected. Bingqian, threw everything in here. I’m going to refine five sets at once.”

“Five..... Five sets of profound tier golden marrow pills?”

Liu Bingqian was bewildered when she heard his declaration. She froze in place.

“Bingqian, what’s wrong. Do you hear me?” Ye Zifeng called out.

“Big brother rough guy, I’ve never seen someone as wasteful as you are. No. I can’t watch while you become crazy.” Liu Bingqian was againsts this. She wanted Ye Zifeng to stop at once.

These ingredients are very precious. As an alchemist, she couldn’t bear to watch it all get destroyed.

“Bingqian....”

“No. Definitely not. Three is the max. You can’t be so greedy and not think about the consequences. If you turn everything into slag, don’t blame me for not stopping you!”

Chapter 148: Super miracle maker man.

“Bingqian, do you not trust my skills?”

Liu Bingqian batted her eyes and shook her head, “No, I’ve seen your skills during the alchemy tournament. Of course I trust your skills. But last time, we both used all our strength to refine just one profound tier golden marrow pill. Now, you want to make five at once? What are you getting at?”

She hesitated for a bit and then continued, “I feel like you’re too excited just because you’ve formed your common tier flame….”

Her voice became very soft as she didn’t want to sound too mean towards Ye Zifeng.

But this time, she felt that Ye Zifeng is really going crazy.

Ye Zifeng stared at her and smiled.

“So that’s how it is. Bingqian, how about we make a bet? Let’s bet and see if I can completely refine the five pills. If I lose, I’ll do one thing for you. Whatever you want. Okay?”

“Anything?” Liu Bingqian was startled. Thousands of thoughts flashed across her mind. Her face slowly turned red as she started to think about other things.

“Really? Anything?” A hopeful look appeared on her face.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded, “That’s right!”

“No take backs?”

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Of course.”

“Alright then. I’ll bet with you! Here are the other two set of ingredients.” Liu Bingqian smiled brightly as she handed the ingredients to Ye Zifeng.

With this bet going on, Liu Bingqian really wanted Ye Zifeng to fail. She didn’t care about wasting ingredients anymore.

Women are emotional creatures. Even though Ye Zifeng didn't know how to deal with women, he's slowly starting to understand Liu Bingqian after spending so much time with her.

Ye Zifeng smiled as he received the last two set of ingredients. He then immediately threw the ingredients into the cauldron.

"But if you lose, then i want to to always trust me no matter what. Can you do that?" Ye Zifeng's laughed.

This way, he doesn't have to do this anymore in the future.

Liu Bingqian smiled back, "That's fine. It's not much to me. I'll accept. But..... from the sound of it, it seems like you really can refine all five profound tier golden marrow pills...."

"Just watch and see...."

Last time, when Ye Zifeng allowed Liu Bingqian to refine pills with him, it was to fulfill her wish to refining pills using a profound tier cauldron. Her real role was to supply 9th stage of qi refining qi to help him out.

She was ordered around by Ye Zifeng and was somewhat confused so it was a lot harder to refine the pills. This time, Ye Zifeng was making a move himself..... It won't be that hard for him.

.....

After dumping the last set of ingredients into the cauldron, a sharp and crisp noise sounded from the cauldron. Afterwards, it started to shake continuously.

"This is.....this is caused by the overflow of ingredients.....Is this what they call a violent qi leak?" Liu Bingqian wanted to help out by when she thought about the bet, she stopped her hands.

Of course, Ye Zifeng knew that this was going to happen. He just stood there and watched as everything happened while in deep thoughts.

"Five profound tier golden marrow pills..... the position of the thirty two stars..... The first position should be....."

A radiant glare suddenly shot out of his eyes, "The fourteenth star!"

While saying that, he moved and inserted his qi into the fourteenth star in the diagram.

It was subdued! The violent energy created by the five sets of ingredient was subdued. Ye Zifeng didn't waste much energy at all. He used the profound tier cauldron's diagram to stop the overflow of energy.

Liu Bingqian stood there like a rock. She was so shock that she forgot how to move.

"No way. Refining five pills at once..... The situation in the cauldron should be very chaotic and complicated. How can he calculate the change within the stars on the diagram?"

The star diagram on the profound tier cauldron would shift every time a new set of ingredient was inserted. It is a very complicated process. All Ye Zifeng did was stare at the diagram for a bit and yet he was able to discern the changes that occurred within the cauldron. That's simply outrageous!

Either he's super familiar with this pill and prepared a lot for this moment, or he's a super expert level alchemist with bountiful experience.

However, Ye Zifeng had just finished recovering from his injury, so he had no time to prepare at all. This was obviously an impulsive decision. But if one were to call him a super expert level alchemist, then that would be nonsense. He just turned twenty.....at most, he's a young genius.

After subduing the overflowing qi, he didn't relax at all. Instead, he started the fire.

"Flame on!"

A small red flame appeared on his finger.The raging flame throbbed and turned brighter and brighter.

At the same time, a dim golden light appeared from the cauldron. The thirty two stars all lit up at once. It looked much more incredible than before.

"In.....Incredible!" Liu Bingqian stared in shock.

What a perfect and complete flame. This is the common tier flame that

Ye Zifeng had formed.

Normally, refining pills using a profound tier cauldron is hard enough already. Ye Zifeng had just formed his flame and yet he is working with perfect motion as if he had gotten used to everything already.

Ye Zifeng started to “play” with fire many years ago. This was completely normal. However, his greatest strength lied in his calculation abilities. To be able to read the star diagram so precisely is something that even great masters can’t do.

If it wasn’t for the fact that his flame can harmonize with the cauldron, and that he had become stronger than before, Ye Zifeng would not have made the bet.

The tempering stage is completed. Now he had to refine the stars on the star diagram.

“The seventeenth position.”

“Twenty third position.”

“Back to the seventeenth position?”

Ye Zifeng stared at the change inside the cauldron and blinked a few times. However, he didn’t hesitate and continued to move.

He’s experienced. He knows that he can’t be wrong.

After the time it takes a stick of incense to burn passed by.....

Ye Zifeng and Liu Bingqian were both super focused. When Ye Zifeng pondered about things, Liu Bingqian followed him and started to ponder about things as well. When she came back to her senses, she realized that she had gained quite a bit of knowledge in the dao of alchemy by following Ye Zifeng.

“Last one. The sixteenth position!”

Ye Zifeng had infused his qi into the sixteenth position and a bright light appeared from the center of the cauldron.

At the same time, a violent violet qi surrounded the entire cauldron. It

looked as if a mushroom cloud had appeared in the room. The smoky qi lingered around the room, making people feel like they were in a dream land.

The violet qi of one golden marrow pill is strong already, but now, there were five!

Liu Bingqian was shocked the the extreme. She rubbed her eyes and looked closely again. She knew that if there was violet qi, then that means that the pills have already taken shape.

“Big brother rough guy.....”

Ye Zifeng looked over, “Why don’t you open up the cauldron.”

“Something’s not right. I remember that the golden marrow pill appeared with the light last time. How come we have to open the cauldron this time?”

Liu Bingqian felt like she still had hope.

“It’s different from last time so maybe he failed? Or maybe he burned one or two set of ingredients.” She really wanted to win and make Ye Zifeng listen to her commands so she started to think about all these scenarios of failure.

She walked towards the cauldron and smelled the aroma.

She placed her hands on the lip and opened it immediately.

The abundant amount of qi flew out from the cauldron into the ground like shooting stars. It even flew towards Liu Bingqian. If she was a little bit slower, she would’ve gotten hit.

“For the qi to be so wild in the cauldron, it seems like the control wasn’t good enough. The pills must be broken.

Liu Bingqian started to laugh to herself.

Of course, when she lifted her head, her expression changed completely.

All five profound tier golden marrow pills were completed.

Each one of them were sparkling and translucent like an unrefined piece

of jade. It gave off a radiant feeling. Also, there are small hints of red qi around the pill.

“No way.... There’s even a red qi border? Could it be that not only were you able to completely refine the pills, you also made them all high quality pills?”

Liu Bingqian gasped. She couldn’t calm herself down.

From what she can tell, Ye Zifeng should’ve only been able to refine two or three pills at once max. However, he was able to refine five pills at once and made them all high quality pills. It put her in shock.

The thing that made her sad was the fact that she lost the bet. Now she can’t have Ye Zifeng do something for him.

“Bingqian, I won. From now on, no matter what I say, you have to trust me. Okay?” Ye Zifeng revealed a triumphant look.

Chapter 149: Big news!

Liu Bingqian resentfully nodded, “Fine. I lost. I won’t question your decisions anymore.”

“Good.” Ye Zifeng gave her a satisfied smile.

Liu Bingqian’s hair flipped as she turned around to look at the five profound tier golden marrow pills that were shining brightly. Even though some time had passed already, she was still feeling shocked.

“Big brother rough guy. Making five high grade profound tier golden marrow pills in one go, this is an eye opener!”

Ye Zifeng smiled. In his mind, he was thinking that this was nothing special.

This was the difference between a common tier cauldron and a profound tier cauldron.

As long as one understands the refinement rules of a profound tier cauldron, it’ll be easy to refine five pills at once. The only thing that one would need to worry about is the star diagram.

Liu Bingqian lacked knowledge regarding these matters so that’s why she was surprised.

“Big brother rough guy. I helped you bring the cauldron here and also helped you form your common tier flame. You have five pills there....can you give one to me?”

Liu Bingqian’s eyes were lit up as she asked.

Ye Zifeng wasn’t a petty person. If a friend asked then he would comply.

“Pick whichever one you like. But, you’re at the ninth stage of qi refining already. I don’t think that this will be able to help you at all.”

Liu Bingqian looked at the pills and then picked the one in the middle.

“I know that this isn’t much of a help to me. However, my sister Ningzi needs something like this.”

Hearing that Liu Bingqian was taking this for her sister, Ye Zifeng's expression changed and immediately grabbed the pill from her hand.

"Big brother rough guy, you....."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned cold, "Bingqian, if you want to use the pill, that's fine. It's fine if your friends want to use it too. But, as for Ningzi.....I won't allow that."

"Why not? Is it because she cancelled your engagement?"

Liu Bingqian looked at Ye Zifeng and then continued, "Big brother rough guy, I can see that Ningzi have already reflected on what she had done. Why don't you turn a blind eye...."

Ye Zifeng's expression was still cold, "I won't hate her and won't look for her for revenge or anything like that. However, I will not give her a pill that i refined. This is an issue of pride...."

Ye Zifeng is usually a calm person. However, whenever Liu Ningzi is mentioned, he would turn into a completely different person. His tone would become stern.

A helpless look appeared in Liu Bingqian's eyes, "Alright. Fine. I understand. We'll leave it be then."

However, for some reason, when she saw that Ye Zifeng disliked Ningzi, she felt a little happy. Wouldn't this mean that he can get closer to Ye Zifeng without any problems?

The two of them were silent for a bit. The topic about Liu Ningzi made everything awkward.

In the end, it was Ye Zifeng who opened his mouth first, "Bingqian, do you have any other news regarding the sect missions?"

Ye Zifeng wasn't stupid. If he can get intelligence about something, he will do whatever he can to get his hands on it.

This time, the sect mission is a team competition. The goal is to kill as many high level beasts as possible. Any disciple in the qi refining stage can join so there will be a lot of people.

Liu Bingqian thought about it, “Hold on. Didn’t I tell you about the details already?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I can tell that you’re still hiding something....” Ye Zifeng had seen many different types of people in his life already. Liu Bingqian can’t hide anything from him at all.

“W...What....No way....” Liu Bingqian blinked a few times. Liu Mu had ordered her to not tell anyone else about it no matter what. But if it’s Ye Zifeng..... Liu Bingqian started to hesitate.

“Bingqian.” Ye Zifeng’s expression became serious.

Liu Bingqian felt awkward, “.....fine. Fine! I really can’t hide anything from you. There’s one more rule, each team will have a fixed number of people in the fourth stage to the ninth stage of qi refining, totaling to around twenty people.”

“A fixed amount of people on each team huh? This is an important piece of information. It seems like I can’t raise my cultivation right now.” Ye Zifeng pondered for a bit and then put the five profound tier golden marrow pills into his interspatial ring.

“Why? Big brother rough guy, didn’t you say that you need to increase your cultivation before the mission starts?”

Ye Zifeng laughed and replied, “It’s easy. Since they’re making it fair and fixing the amount of people in each stage, if I increase my cultivation, I will be taking the place of someone stronger. This way, we’ll lower our team’s overall strength. Thus, I won’t be using these pills just yet.”

Originally, Ye Zifeng wanted to use these last two days to increase his cultivation but now, after receiving this piece of key information, he’ll adapt to the situation and wait.

“So that’s why.” After hearing this Liu Bingqian finally understood.

“Bingqian, do you have anymore news? You don’t have to worry about your father. If we’re on the same team, it’ll benefit the both of us.”

“I.....”

Liu Bingqian gulped and looked around. She then whispered, “Okay big brother rough guy. There’s one more thing. You have to absolutely keep this a secret……It seems like of the winners this time, the sect will pick someone who performed well and send them to Tiandao City’s Profound Sect as an exchange-disciple!

“Exchange disciple in the Profound Sect?” Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up and smiled, “Wow. No wonder why you father asked you to be quiet.”

There weren’t many opportunities to enter the profound sect. Liu Mu probably told Bingqian this to increase her fighting spirit. He wants her to keep it a secret so there won’t be as much competition.

“Big brother rough guy, you have to keep it a secret!” Liu Bingqian pouted. She was fine letting Ye Zifeng know about it but she didn’t want anyone else to know.

“Even if you didn’t say anything, I wouldn’t tell anyone about it either.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Thanks Bingqian. You’ve helped me so much and I was being picky about a mere golden marrow pill before….”

“Not at all. Big brother rough guy, I’m helping you because I want to.”

Liu Bingqian then stopped as if she remembered something, “Oh yeah. Since you you don’t need to prepare for anything, will you leave my home?”

She was afraid that Ye Zifeng was going to go back to the Ye clan manor and felt nervous.

Ye Zifeng thought about it, “I probably won’t. The Liu clan has arranged such a nice place for me already. I can comfortably refine pills here. I will have to disturb you guys for the next two days. Bingqian, you won’t make me leave now will you?”

“If you want to stay then stay. Why would I kick you out?”

Liu Bingqian was feeling very happy.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Also, I might need some ingredients like…. Silver leaf grass, God pacifying flower, Earthen root grass and some other things….

Can you get them for me?”

“That..... Okay.” Liu Bingqian nodded.

Ye Zifeng’s expression turned serious, “Then.... I need some Demonic emperor grass, Dieda grass, Shinan grass, Swift grass, Blood emperor grass, Yegang flower, Bramble grass and some other things.... Let me borrow them for a bit...”

Liu Bingqian’s expression ashened. She forced a smiled, “If you don’t need a lot.... Then.... I can consider it.”

To make Ye Zifeng stay for two more days, she had to give up a lot of things....

“What?” Ye Zifeng was surprised. He was just casually saying these things but Bingqian actually agreed. He was feeling shocked.

However, he was feeling very excited as well.

He couldn’t help but grab onto Bingqian’s hand, “Then Bingqian, can you tell your servants to not come over for the next two days? I want to quietly refine pills by myself.”

“Then.... Even I can’t come?” Liu Bingqian’s face turned red after having her hands held by Ye Zifeng and shyly asked.

“Of course. I’m quietly refining pills alone. How can I have anyone disturb me?” Ye Zifeng quickly answered.

Liu Bingqian suddenly looked straight into Ye Zifeng’s eyes. She was feeling very angry.

“Okay. I think you should go back to the Ye clan!”

Chapter 150: Kicked back home.

“Damn..... These women flip faster than I can flip pages in a book. I just want to quietly refine pills by myself. What’s wrong with that?”

Ye Zifeng scratched his head while standing outside the Liu clan manor’s doors. He was just staring blankly at the road in front of him. It seems like he hasn’t recovered from what had just happened.

He didn’t even get to pack his things before he got kicked out by Liu Bingqian. This was too sudden. Even Liu Mu didn’t know about it.

“Whatever. I guess I’ll have to go home. At least I accomplished my goals here this time. Staying over is something extra.” Ye Zifeng sighed and walked towards his own house.

.....

In the Ye clan manor.

“Aiya..... This Zifeng’s wings are forming now. He’s doing whatever he wants. If he wants to go to the Liu clan, that’s fine. At least come see us and give us a heads up. He just left without saying anything!”

Ye Chongtian furrowed his brows. He was feeling a bit angry,

“Honey, I know that you’re caring for Zifeng. Afterall, he is the hope of our Ye clan right now.” Tang Feng laughed as she spoke.

“Who said I’m worried about him?” Ye Chongtian’s old face turned hot. Even if he dies, he won’t admit it, “If you’re talking about caring, then that brat Xueyi cares the most about him.”

Talking about Xueyi, Tang Feng’s expression changed and sighed.

“Ai... Why does that girl care about her brother Zifeng so much? I don’t even know what she’s thinking about half the time. I feel like they’ve already broken through the barrier of being siblings....”

“But.. You know that Xueyi actually isn’t.....” Ye Chongtian remembered something and sighed.

Tang Feng’s expression turned cold and ruthlessly punched Ye

Chongtian's arm, "Didn't I tell you to not talk about this anymore? She will always be Ye Zifeng's little sister. They'll be siblings with the same father but different mothers!"

Ye Chongtian bitterly laughed, "Right. My bad. I shouldn't have mentioned it."

After a bit.

"Father, mother, good news! Brother Zifeng came back!" Ye Xueyi happily skipped over to her parents.

"What? That kid knows how to come back home?"

After hearing this, Ye Chongtian put his serious face on.

Ye Zifeng then walked through the front doors into the hall.

Ye Xueyi giggled, "Brother Zifeng, you haven't been home in so long. I've missed you."

She was different from Liu Bingqian. She was his little sister so even if she say these things, people would think that it's a joke because of their sibling relationship.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "What do you mean? Didn't you just see me two days ago?"

Ye Xueyi was a little restricted in the Liu clan's territory, but now that she's at home, she can be the little princess that she is.

She smiled and without saying anything she ran over towards him.

"Brother Zifeng, didn't you say that you'll come back after the sect mission? How come you're back so quickly? Does sister Bingqian know about this?"

Ye Xueyi had a good impression of Liu Bingqian so she asked about her.

"This....."

"What's up brother Zifeng? Is it that hard to answer?" Ye Xueyi felt that something was up.

Ye Zifeng had an awkward look on his face. How can he tell her that he

got kicked out by Liu Bingqian?

Tang Feng walked up and smiled, “Unless, something happened in the Liu clan?”

“Madam Tang, that..... Let’s not talk about it for now. I’ve been cultivating for the past few days. I’m feeling a bit tired. Allow me to sleep for a bit before I come back and talk with you guys.”

Ye Zifeng looked very tired. He was training recklessly in Tiandao City and was attacked by Jin Peng right after. After returning, he didn’t stop to rest either. He formed his common tier flame and then refined five profound tier golden marrow pills.

Even if he was made of iron, he still needed some rest.

Tang Feng was a little suspicious of the reason why Ye Zifeng returned home so quickly. She wanted to ask what’s up but was stopped by Xueyi.

“Alright. Brother Zifeng, go rest. I’ll see you later.....” Ye Xueyi nodded and sent Ye Zifeng out.

“Ahem.....” Ye Chongtian coughed a few times to get Ye Zifeng’s attention. He was feeling a bit left out after being ignored by his own son.

However, Ye Zifeng walked past him without say anything, treating Ye Chongtian like an invisible man.

“Hold.... Hold it right there.” Ye Chongtian finally yelled out.

Ye Zifeng stopped and turned around, “Oh. Father. You’re here too?”

He didn’t pretend to not notice him, but he really didn’t notice him.

“You brat!” He didn’t use Ye Zifeng’s name and used ‘brat’ immediately.

Ye Chongtian is a martial soul realm expert. His standings in Leizhou City can be considered very high. However, his own son was ignoring him right now.

His expression sank and looked right at Ye Zifeng.

“Zifeng ahhh.... Your method of pulling the Liu clan in is not bad. However, tell us about it in the future so we don’t have to worry.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Okay father. I understand. I’ll tell you guys next time.”

His answer was very straightforward.Ye Chongtian couldn’t believe his ears.

Seeing how his son was so straightforward with him and didn’t argue with him, he smiled and felt a lot better.

“Alright. Go rest then. When you wake up, call for someone to get you your dinner.”

“Then... Thanks father....” Ye Zifeng was a bit moved.

In this world, the only ones who will unconditionally care for you are your family members. When Ye Zifeng returns to the peak, he won’t forget the ones who had care for him when he was weak.

Ye Zifeng smiled and nodded. He then returned to his own room after giving Ye Xueyi a look.

After a while, Ye Xueyi slowly opened the doors to Ye Zifeng’s room.

“Brother Zifeng, what do you need from me?” She was a bit shocked and confused. She scratched her head, not knowing why her brother had called for her.

Could Ye Zifeng be lying about being tired? Was he obedient to Ye Chongtian just because he wanted to get back earlier?

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Xueyi, can you really not guess why I called for you?”

Ye Xueyi thought about it and then shook her head, “Brother Zifeng, stop beating around the bush, if you have anything to say, say it.”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Do you remember about the Profound Sect’s Passage Medallion that I gave you?”

“Of course! It’s something that will help me a lot when I enter the Profound Sect! Thank you brother Zifeng!” Ye Xueyi was getting excited. The other day, she was in the Liu clan so she had to be respectful and not fool around. Now that she’s at home, she can finally thank Ye Zifeng sincerely.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “I’m not asking you to thank me. I’m telling you this because your dreams of entering the Profound Sect is getting even closer now.”

“Even closer now?” Ye Xueyi had a look of disbelief on her face. It’s only been two days. What can Ye Zifeng do in these two days to bring her closer to the Profound Sect? That’s impossible.

“Look at this.” Ye Zifeng smiled and retrieved a profound tier golden marrow pill from his interspatial ring.

Ye Xueyi was startled. She stared at the pill in his hands.

“This..... It looks that that Huang tier golden marrow pill that you made about a month ago. But.... It doesn’t look like it either..... What is this?”

“Of course it doesn’t look like it. This is a profound tier golden marrow pill!”

“What? A profound tier golden marrow pill?” Ye Xueyi held the pill in her small hands and began to shake.

She thought that Ye Zifeng was joking around with her but when she saw Ye Zifeng’s serious expression, she felt that he wasn’t playing around at all.

One should know that even Liu Bingqian, the number one alchemist in Leizhou City can only refine a huang tier pill. However, Ye Zifeng had actually refined a profound tier pill. Doesn’t that mean that he’s better than Liu Bingqian?

It seems like the rumors from Tiandao City weren’t as baseless as she thought it was. To be able to be crowned champion already shows his abilities.

“Brother Zifeng, even if you can refine this, the ingredients must be very precious. I can’t accept such a precious gift. Brother Zifeng, use it for yourself.”

Ye Xueyi shook her head and gave the pill back to Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng laughed at her actions, “Xueyi, don’t worry about it. Look, I

have four more.....” While saying that, he retrieved the other four pills and placed it in front of Ye Xueyi.

Chapter 151: Already selected

“So….So many profound tier golden marrow pills! Brother Zifeng, did you by any chance robbed some high level alchemist?”

Ye Xueyi jaws fell. She was shocked.

Having one profound tier golden marrow pill was acceptable. After all, he might have gotten it from the alchemy competition. But five profound tier golden marrow pills? To a small family, this was a huge fortune!

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Honestly, I want to go and rob some high level alchemist too. But I don’t have the chance to.”

Of course, the things that he did in Muyun Old Devil’s storage didn’t count as robbing. After all, Muyun Old Devil allowed him to the ingredients to make profound tier golden marrow pills. She never actually specified the number of sets that she was willing to give.

“This is a profound tier pill! We should sell it if you’re not giving it to me.”

Ye Zifeng then handed the pill over to Ye Xueyi once again.

“What do you mean sell it. This thing is priceless in Leizhou City’s market. Xueyi, don’t decline me. Just take it. Use it wisely and breakthrough into the 9th qi refining stage. When the time comes, I’ll get you a supreme true yuan dan as well.

“Supreme true yuan dan?” Ye Xueyi had a humble look on her face, “Brother Zifeng, you mean that pill that the sect gave to Wang Tianzhi? It’s such a precious pill. How can you get it so easily?”

“Do you think that these profound tier golden marrow pills are easy to come by too?” Ye Zifeng smiled.

“This……”

She knew how precious and expensive this profound tier golden marrow pill is. If she can slowly absorb the energy from the pill, then she can easily breakthrough into the 9th stage of qi refining.

From the looks of it, it seems like Ye Zifeng will get her a supreme true yuan dan sooner or later.

“Bbrother Zifeng, you’re so nice to me……”

“Why of course. Who told you to become my little sister?”

Ye Zifeng smiled as he messed with her hair. In his past life, he didn’t have any family members. He’s always felt as if he’s missing something. But now, in the Ye clan, he finally felt the connection of blood relations. It made him feel very warm on the inside.

At that time.

“Then cousin Zifeng, aren’t I your only little cousin? How come you didn’t get me a gift from Tiandao City?”

Ye Huichi smiled and walked into Ye Zifeng’s room without his permission.

Ye Xueyi looked at how sloppy Ye Huichi looked and sighed, “Go go go. Go play outside. Do you not remember how you treated brother Zifeng before? And you still want a gift from him? There’s no way that brother zifeng would get you a gift!”

Ye Xueyi is someone who likes to hold a grudge. She’ll remember the people who were mean towards Ye Zifeng and never forget it.

Ye Huichi laughed, “Xueyi, the past is in the past. We’re in the present. During the heavenly clan gathering, cousin Zifeng has enlightened me. He’s allowed me to look at life in a new light. I admire cousin Zifeng. I came to personally invite cousin Zifeng to a dinner!”

What Ye Huichi saying wasn’t false. He wasn’t a bad person. He just gets mad easily. Right now, even his father holds Ye Zifeng in high regards, so how can he not? He’s treating Ye Zifeng like his idol.

Ye Zifeng smiled back, “Oh? Then shouldn’t you have prepared a gift for me to welcome me back too?”

Ye Huichi looked at Ye Zifeng embarrassingly, “Cousin Zifeng…..I’ll be straightforward with you. This time, the sect mission is about to start. But

I've spent my money on some other places. I came here to borrow some money...."

"What? You want to attend in the missions this time too?" Ye Zifeng furrowed his brow.

"It's not only Huichi, I'll be joining too." Ye Xueyi suddenly replied.

Ye Zifeng looked at them, "No way. Isn't there a limit for the amount of people attending the missions each time? Last time, I joined because I had some connections. But this time, why do I feel like anyone can join?"

Ye Huichi laughed, "That's exactly it. This time, all the qi refining stage disciples are able to join. They just need to sign up for it.

"So that's how it is....."

Ye Zifeng finally understood what was going on.

No wonder why there was an opportunity to join up with the Profound Sect. So they're picking out the best qi refining stage disciples..

"Not bad Huichi. How much money do you need?"

Ye Xueyi was shocked, "Brother Zifeng, you're actually giving him money?"

Ye Huichi immediately turned to stare at Ye Xueyi.

"Cousin Zifeng, it's not much. I just need around fifty gold coins."

"Fifty gold coins is not much?" Ye Xueyi was completely shocked by Ye Zifeng's words.

"I'll give you a hundred. Do something for me." Ye Zifeng retrieved a small bag and threw it towards Ye Huichi.

To get more than what he had asked for, Ye Huichi was extremely happy.

"Great Job!"

Ye Huichi nodded, "Cousin Zifeng, I admire you so much. I'll do whatever you want!"

“Then.... Bring your ears over here.” Ye Zifeng lips curved into a smile.

.....

After Ye Xueyi and Huichi left, only Yr Zifeng was left in the room.

He was lying on his bed and slowly resting. He was feeling a bit rough and dizzy.

If anyone can join the sect mission, then there will be a massive amount of people.

The more people there are, the more suspicious people there will be playing tricks.

Ye Zifeng had quite a bit of enemies. If every single one of them wants to strike against Ye Zifeng, then some preparations are needed.

“Whatever. I’ll just go ask around about this later on.

He closed his eyes and started to think again. In a split second, a peerless cold qi slowly flew out of his brains and moved towards the Spirit Ashen Sect.

In the sect, a ripple appeared in space. A white robed elder suddenly shook and bitterly laughed.

“Elder Shen, what’s up? Do you still want to go at it?”

“Not feeling so food. Count it as my loss.”

Elder Shen cried on the inside and then shook his head. He followed the source of energy closely and walked towards it.

The other person’s expression immediately changed. Elder Shen is very stubborn. How can he forfeit a match? Simply preposterous.

A while later, Elder Shen settled down.

“Brat. You’ve finally come to talk to me after being gone for so many days.” He started calling Ye Zifeng ‘brat’ because of Elder Zhao. If it wasn’t for Elder Zhao, Elder Shen would have nicely addressed Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I was heavily injured two days ago. Had to stay in the Liu clan to recuperate. I couldn’t get back to talk with Elder Shen. Zifeng is

filled with regrets…."

"Bullshit…." Shen Li snorted, "I asked the people who went to the Liu clan already. You were completely fine!"

Ye Zifeng's life was very important to Elder Shen. If Ye Zifeng accidentally dies, then it will harm him too. If he went back to the martial disciple realm for no reason, that wouldn't be very good.

Thus, he sent someone to go check up on Ye Zifeng. Only when he found out that Ye Zifeng was fine did he calm down and went to play some chess.

"I still have to thank Elder Shen for caring about me…." Ye Zifeng was respectfully thanking him.

"For you to come look for me, I'm guessing that you want to ask about the sect mission that's about to start.'

Ye Zifeng's eyes lit up, "Talking with a smart person like Elder Shen is sure easy."

"I heard that the sect will pick someone people from the winning team to join Tiandao City's profound sect as exchange disciples right?" Ye Zifeng asked.

"You get your information pretty quickly. Eighty percent that you heard it from someone in the Liu clan."

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn't say anything. He didn't want to explain too much. It'll affect relationships.

"That's right. There is such a thing. But don't think about it too much, because the ones who will go are already selected. You don't have a chance!"

Chapter 152: Conspiracy?

During the heavenly clan gathering, one can see the relationship between the Ashen Spirit Sect and the Profound Sect.

It's not weird for them to have selected the exchange disciples already.

"Selected already?" Ye Zifeng smiled, "Elder Shen, can you tell me who the chosen ones are?"

Shen Li sighed, "Brat. Don't try to pry into this too much. It involves various families. I can't reveal anything to you."

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Oh? Let me guess. The chosen ones are probably..... the Liu clan's Liu Bingqian, and possibly..... Wang clan's Wang Tianzhi...."

Hearing the words Wang Tianzhi, Shen Li let out a small sound. Even though he didn't say anything, Ye Zifeng was able to confirm this.

Some things, you need to hear it from the other person, while other things, you can tell just by observing the other person.

A sly fox like Shen Li immediately noticed what Ye Zifeng was doing and cursed, "Brat. You said that just to see how I would react?"

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Elder Shen is thinking too much. Even if I know who's chosen, what can I do? This time, the sect mission is a group mission. I definitely can't do anything by myself."

He didn't beat around the bush and was spitting straight facts at Elde Shen. He was telling him that he won't be able to do anything so Shen Li won't think about anything.

Hearing this, Shen Li thought that it was right and didn't think much about it.

"You're right. You probably can't do anything by yourself. I don't ask much from you, but if someone wants to take your life, tell me immediately. Otherwise, just do whatever you want."

He didn't think that Ye Zifeng was capable of making any big moves. He only wants him to Ye Zifeng to act normally and not make a mess.

“Then, let me ask about the fierce beasts that we are suppose to kill during the mission.....”

Shen Li knew that he was going to ask this and smiled, “Heh. I knew you were going to ask this. But even I’m not sure about this. Even if I knew, I won’t tell you anyways. There are only five people chosen to go to the Profound Sect. Also, accidents can happen so don’t blame me if I don’t help.”

He can protect Ye Zifeng’s life but won’t do any more than that.

Ye Zifeng revealed a sly smile and laughed, “Don’t worry Elder Shen. Zifeng will abide by the rules like always.”

“Uh.... Then.. Okay...” An ugly smile appeared on Shen Li’s face. He felt that something was wrong, but he can’t pinpoint on what it was.

After cutting off his connection with Ye Zifeng, he suddenly realized something.

That brat Ye Zifeng, when did he ever play by the rules? Ye Zifeng even dared to ask him about the drawing orders during the heavenly clan gathering. Is there anything that he didn’t’ dare to do?

Thinking about this, Shen Li started to fret.

.....

At the same time, Ye Zifeng opened his eyes and looked around.

“There’s only five people chosen huh? It seems like this is going to be hard. I need to prepare a bit.” Ye Zifeng smiled and decided to use the last two days to the best of his ability.

When he opened the door and was about to walk out, a mindless maidservant didn’t notice him and almost crashed into him. The food in her hands fell onto the group.

Ye Zifeng looked at her and then at the food that was scattered all over the floor, “Did my father ask you to send me some food?”

“Yes....That’s right young master Ye. I’m sorry. I didn’t think that you would open your doors so suddenly. I couldn’t react in time. Sorry.”

The maidservant was nervous as she looked up at Ye Zifeng. She was super scared and started to shake.

She's a new maidservant called Xiao Ya. She only came after the heavenly gathering so she doesn't know much about the things around.

Ye Zifeng thought about something and smiled coldly towards the maidservant, "Xiao Ya right? You're so clumsy. Why can't you even do something like this? Do you not want to work here anymore?"

Xia Ya was shocked. The words that she was worried about came out of Ye Zifeng's mouth. Her face turned pale from shock.

"I'm sorry. Young master Ye. I'm sorry. It wasn't on purpose!"

Seeing the cold look on Ye Zifeng's face, she almost wanted to cry, "Young master Ye, I beg you. My whole family depends on me. If you kick me out, my entire family will starve.....I....I'm already eighteen years old..... you can do those kind of things with me..... Just don't kick me out please!"

Hearing these words, Ye Zifeng felt a little bad for her. She was really trying to sell herself in order to remain in the Ye clan.

"Alright. Fine. You can stay. I'm a soft-hearted person....."

Xiao Ya felt joy. She continuously nodded her head, "Thank you young master Ye. Thank you!"

"However....."

Xiao Ya was startled, "However, what?"

"Xiao Ya, if you want to stay, you have to do something for me....."

Ye Zifeng gave her a serious look, "I need to leave for two days. When I go out, guard the door for me. Don't allow anyone to go into my room. Even if Xueyi comes, tell her that I'm treating my injuries and don't want anyone bothering me. Do you understand?"

"That..... That's not too good." Xiao Ya knew that if she did this, it would be the same as deceiving her masters. She was feeling a bit nervous.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "Then I guess I'll have to go talk with my father. You

don't have to come tomorrow."

Xiao Ya's expression turned pale, "Young master Ye, I'll do it. I'll do it! I'll do whatever you want."

"But young master Ye, why are you doing this?"

Ye Zifeng was startled, "You're new and yet you're asking me what I'm doing?"

"Ah.... Sorry. I shouldn't have asked. Don't worry young master Ye. I'll do exactly as you say."

Rather than being curious, it was better to keep her job.

"You must keep it a secret."

Ye Zifeng didn't explain anymore and walked out the back door.

Suddenly, he turned around and threw something towards Xiao Ya.

Xiao Ya thought that he threw a rock over and didn't bother. However, the sound of it landing on the ground sounded weird. She turned around and looked.

On the floor, there was a shiny gold coin!

A look of disbelief appeared on her face. She's a new maidservant so her month salary was only three gold coins. But now, Ye Zifeng was giving her ten days worth of salary!

"Thank you young master Ye! Thank you!" She looked at Ye Zifeng and continuously repeated these words.

Ye Zifeng put his fingers on her lips, telling her to hush.

Xiao Ya noticed and immediately shut her mouth while nodding.

Ye Zifeng then turned around and ran out, disappearing from Xiao Ya's sight.

After leaving his own house, he looked around. When there was no one around, he retrieved a black demon mask from his interspatial ring and put it on his face.

Chapter 153: Who's finished?

While walking outside with the black devil mask on, many people stared and pointed at him with suspicion. However, no one recognized who he was.

Most people believed that he was still in the Liu clan. A small portion of people knew that he was in the Ye clan. However, only Xiao Ya knew that he had left the house already.

He casually walked into the busy street, keeping a low profile.

When he finally stopped, he was in front of a large manor and was stopped by two guards.

"Stop! Who are you? Why are you wearing a mask? Don't you know that this is the Wang clan's territory!?"

"What are you doing here?"

The guards stared at Ye Zifeng with fierce expressions.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "I'm your second young master and third young master's friend. I heard that they weren't at home a few days ago. I want to ask if they're home now?"

"Friend? Do you know how many people come by everyday saying that they're friends with people of the Wang clan?"

The fat guard casted a sidelong glance at Ye Zifeng, "It's true that they had just returned. However, what does this have to do with you? There's no harm in telling you this. It's fine if you say that you're friends with third young master but you're saying that you're friends with the second young master? Hehe.... You're definitely lying!"

For someone as sinister as Wang Ruoxing, he definitely won't have friends that would try to walk into the Wang clan from the front door. That's why these guards didn't believe him.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I don't care if you guys believe me or not. Go notify them. You guys should have this rule right?"

It's not only the Wang clan that have this rule. Many large clans have this rule as well. These guards can't really kick Ye Zifeng out without reporting anything. If they do that, they would be breaking the rule.

The two guards looked at each other and laughed. The skinnier guard then replied, "Alright. We'll report this to him. Do you have anything that shows your identity? You can just give it to us."

Ye Zifeng smiled and retrieved a jade pendant from his sleeves, "Here. Give this to your second young master and have him personally come."

The guard almost couldn't hold in his laugh, "Da Dou, did you hear that? He wants the second young master to come personally. Is he trying to play with us?"

Da Dou, the fat guard laughed out loud, "Ah Xu, it seems like this guy is crazy. Does he think that a mere jade pendant can move our second young master?"

Wang Ruoxing is a very sinister man. In their eyes, this guy in front of them was basically looking for death.

"Da Dou, i feel like we should tell second young master anyways. We'll let him have some fun and teach this guy a lesson."

"Yeah. We should!"

The two of them had been guarding the doors all year round and were extremely bored of it. Now that some arrogant mask wearing man came out of nowhere, they wanted to see a show.

Ye Zifeng stood there and shook his head. So even the dogs of the Wang clan is like this.

.....

After Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin returned from Tiandao City, they suffered from the trauma that Ye Zifeng had caused them. It was only yesterday that they had finally escaped from Ye Zifeng's shadow. After recovering, they decided to live a new life.

"Second brother. I've decided. From now on, I won't let anything distract

me anymore. My heart is set on cultivating. I will get stronger."

Wang Ruoxing gave him an approving look, "Brother Lin, if what you're saying is true, then I believe that Big bro will be very happy too."

"But.... It looks like Big bro has become like us. It seems like he wants to make a move against Ye Zifeng." Wang Lin was a little worried.

"Actually, I feel this way too. I told him to hold himself back and wait until the sect mission to make a move."

The two of them bitterly laughed and shook their heads. They didn't want to think about Ye Zifeng anymore.

At that time, Ah Xu hurried into the room.

"Second young master, third young master, someone outside says that he's both of your friend. This lowly guard has come to report."

Wang Ruoxing furrowed his brow, "What friend? Kick him out. How many times do you want to report these little things?"

He wasn't feeling that good while talking about Ye Zifeng so he directed his anger towards this guard.

"Yes.... Yes... This little one will kick him out. Actually, if he didn't bring something to show his identity, I wouldn't have come either." Ah Xu bitterly laughed and explained. He then tried to leave.

"Hold on." Wang Lin was a bit interested and called Ah Xu over again, "What did he bring? Let me see it."

Ah Xu quickly nodded and then took the jade pendant out.

He didn't really want to check to it out. Instead, he wanted to take it for himself.

"Ah..... How can a mere jade pendant show his identity?"

Wang Lin laughed. While saying that, he looked closely at the pendant. At first, he was mocking the pendant. But when he took a closer look, his heart shook.

'This.... This pendant. Why does it look so similar to the one that second

bro had before?"

"What did you say?"

These words caught Wang Ruoxing's attention. After looking at it, he felt as if thunder had struck him, "This doesn't just look like the one that I had. This IS my pendant!"

The two of them looked at each other. Ah Xu could see the shock in their expressions.

"Then.... The person waiting for us.... Could it be him....."

That night, in Tiandao City, Wang Ruoxing was robbed cleaned by the person who gave them their nightmares....

Now, this person in their nightmares have come looking for them. They were truly frightened now.

Wang Ruoxing looked over at Ah Xu, "Fuck. Ah Xu, why didn't you bring this out earlier? We almost missed an esteemed guest!"

"Est.....Esteemed guest?" Ah Xu felt like he was in a mess right now. He couldn't see how Ye Zifeng could be an esteemed guest.

"Damn. I don't have time to talk with you. Where is he? Bring me to him immediately!" Wang Ruoxing became very anxious, thinking that Ye Zifeng would beat him up for being too slow.

"He's waiting at the front door. He said that he wants you to greet him personally. I saw that you were in a bad mood so I didn't say anything....." Ah Xu was scared that he was going to get yelled at so he didn't say anything about it.

"Shit. Do you think that I won't trash you?" If it wasn't for the fact that Wang Ruoxing didn't want to be slow, he would've wasted Ah Xu already.

"Brother Lin, what are you standing there for? Come out with me!"

Wang Lin nodded heavily and followed his second brother out.

Inside the room, Ah Xu stood there in a daze. He didn't know that he had offended such a big shot and was feeling afraid.

.....

Outside, Da Dou was standing next to Ye Zifeng, looking at Ye Zifeng with disdain. He was waiting for Wang Ruoxing to come teach this guy a lesson.

As expected, Wang Ruoxing came running right out. His expression looked very ugly. Wang Lin who was behind him had an even uglier expression on his face.

“Second young master is here. Just you wait. You’re finished!”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Who’s finished?”

“Rubbish. Is there anyone else here besides you?”

Da Dou turned around and smiled, “Second young master, this guy has eyes but doesn’t recognize Mt. Tai. He wanted you to come personally too!”

Wang Ruoxing was cursing nonstop, but they couldn’t hear him at all.

“Second young master!”

When Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin both reached the front gates, Wang Ruoxing immediately slapped Da Dou, causing his entire body to turn and fall.

“Second.... Second young master..... What did I do wrong?” Da Dou felt that he was wronged and asked.

“Motherfucker. You don’t even know what you did wrong? Listen up. Don’t come back to my Wang clan anymore!”

“What?” Da Dou felt as if he was struck by lightning.

Wang Ruoxing then apologetically smiled and looked towards Ye Zifeng. When he saw the mask, he felt that something was wrong, but when he saw Ye Zifeng’s skinny body, he realized that it was him immediately.

“Big bro, what kind of wind blew you here today? My Wang clan feels delighted as your presence brings light to this humble dwelling of mine!”

Chapter 154: Booked!

Of course, Ye Zifeng wasn't going to stand at the front doors and chat with them. It would make people feel suspicious when they walk by.

He smiled and pointed outside, "It's inconvenient to talk here. Let's go out."

Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin both looked at each other. This voice. There was no doubt that it was Ye Zifeng. Why was he here? What was he trying to do?

The two brothers pretended to be calm, "Big bro. We'll go wherever you want us to go. Let us walk out."

Behind them, Da Dou was holding onto his face. He still didn't understand what had just happened. Who was this guy? Why were the two young masters afraid of him?

.....

In one of Jufeng Pavilion's rooms.

After Ye Zifeng kicked out all of the girls sent to their room, he slowly closed the door. He then walked over to the table where the two brothers were sitting. He lit up some incense and smiled at them.

"You guy's don't mind the incense being lit right?

"No..... Not at all!"

Wang Lin looked around and awkwardly smiled, "Big..... Big bro. I didn't think that you would choose to come to the Jufeng Pavilion."

The Jufeng Pavilion was a place that domineering and ignorant second generations visit frequently. The Wang brothers knew this place very well.

Wang Ruoxing awkwardly smiled as well, "Big bro. Did you bring us here to talk or to have fun?"

If anyone else brought them here, they would definitely go and have fun. However, this was Ye Zifeng. They had to be cautious of what's happening.

“Play around? DO you think I’m that bored?” Ye Zifeng replied.

The two of them quickly apologized, “Right. Right. Right. Big bro is right. But why are we here?”

Normally, they would definitely flip if someone talked to them with this kind of tone.

Ye Zifeng saw that they were suspicious and explained, “You guys are frequent visitors. If I walked in with you guys, no one would suspect anything. They wouldn’t find a masked man to weird since you two brothers are into some exotic things....”

“This....” The two of them were startled.

He used them to cover up his tracks!

Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin were the young masters of the number one clan in Leizhou City. They easily attracted the attention of others. If they walked into a random restaurant with a masked man, then people would think that something is going on. They might even think that they were being kidnapped!

Thus, Ye Zifeng brought them to the Jufeng Pavilion.

Who in the world would kidnap someone and then bring them to a brothel? But that’s exactly what Ye Zifeng did.

After making sure that no one was around, Ye Zifeng finally took off his mask.

Ye Zifeng looked like he was filled with spirit. He didn’t look injured at all. It was completely different from the rumors outside.

Seeing that Ye Zifeng was filled with energy, Wang Ruoxing’s heart shook. Even the smallest thought of running away disappeared his mind. As someone in the 8th stage of qi refining, he can easily suppress Ye Zifeng. However, Wang Ruoxing was scared of the mysterious power from last time.

“I want to talk about something with you guys.”

Wang Ruoxing gulped, “Big bro. You’re being too polite. If you need

anything, you can just tell us. We'll do our best to get you what you want."

"Good. Then, when the sect mission starts...."

"Big bro, I'm sorry but the two of us have decided to not to participate this time!" He was afraid that Ye Zifeng was going to give an unreasonable request so he opened his mouth immediately.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng raised his brows, "Why? This is a good chance to improve yourselves. Do you guys not want to improve?"

"That's right. We don't want to improve. We want to stay as degenerates. Please don't mind us."

Wang Ruoxing forced a smile. If he didn't meet Ye Zifeng, he would have definitely participated. However, he decided not to this time.

If Ye Zifeng is participating, then he won't.

Ye Zifeng on the other hand planned to use the two brothers during the mission. Who would've thought that they won't be participating? He furrowed his brows.

Not everything can go his way after all. Now he has to change his plans.

"Whatever. If you guys aren't participating, then so be it. I won't force you."

"Thank you big bro for understanding." The two of them let out a sigh of relief in their hearts.

"But....."

"But what?" This word made the hair on their bodies stand up.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's fine if you guys don't participate but your eldest brother is definitely participating right? Do you know what he's doing to prepare for it?"

Wang Ruoxing's body couldn't help but shake.

If he told Ye Zifeng that his eldest brother Wang Tianzhi was planning to deal with him, then wouldn't this give Ye Zifeng a reason to beat him?

Also, Wang Tianzhi saw this his brothers were lacking ambition so he

didn't tell them anything. Even if Ye Zifeng wants to know, he won't be able to find out from them.

"We really don't know. Big brother Tianzhi didn't tell us his plans this time..." In the end, Wang Lin couldn't help but blurt it out.

"Plan?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at Wang Lin.

"Brother Lin. What are you saying?" Wang Ruoxing felt that he was being burdened by his little brother and couldn't help but bitterly smile.

"Your big brother Tianzhi was selected to go to the Profound Sect already and yet he still wants to use this chance to deal with me? Is he not afraid of me retaliating?"

Ye Zifeng coldly smile at the two brothers.

"This....."

Wang Ruoxing knew that his brother was strong but when he saw the expression that Ye Zifeng had on his face, he couldn't help but take a big gulp.

"Big bro. With your abilities, nothing's going to go wrong during the sect mission. It won't be life threatening at all." Wang Lin smiled as he spoke. However, right after these words came out, his face paled. He knew that he just fucked up.

Why did he just spew bullshit from mouth again!

Ye Zifeng looked at the the incense that he lit up and smiled.

How would Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin know that the incense that Ye Zifeng had lit up was the gravity increasing incense from Jin Peng? It slowly weakened their mental state. They were already scared of Ye Zifeng so they were slowly breaking down right now. It was extremely easy for things to slip out of their mouth.

Wang Ruoxing is at the 8th stage of qi refining so this didn't have much of an effect on him. However, Wang Lin is a lot weaker and didn't have any experience in life either. With this, his mind is distracted and he's

starting to become delusional.

"Oh? So this mission has a life threatening factor too?"

Ye Zifeng thought about it. It seems like he has to be a bit cautious this time around.

"No. No. It's not like that. What I meant is that there may be some dangerous fierce beasts around...." Wang Lin quickly explained himself.

Ye Zifeng thought about it. With Wang Tianzhi's temper, he must be really angry after enduring for so long. However, he didn't think that Wang Tianzhi would want to try and kill him!

It seems like this sect mission will be a challenge.

"Okay. I won't ask about your big brother anymore. Let's talk about something simple. Like..... What kind of fierce beasts will be there? What are their abilities? You can tell me about this right?"

With the relationship between the Wang Clan and the Spirit Ashen Sect, the people of the Wang clan must have gotten some tips regarding the mission.

Even if Elder Shen doesn't want to tell him about it, he can get it from the people of the Wang clan.

"This is something simple?" Wang Ruoxing's entire body froze.

This was a highly classified secret!

If it was anyone else, they wouldn't dare use the Wang clan to obtain this piece of information. Who else besides Ye Zifeng would dare try to do something like this?

"I....I....." Wang Lin couldn't help but start opening his mouth.

"From the looks of it, it seems like you know about it."

Ye Zifeng smiled and then poured himself a cup of tea, "But don't worry about it. You can slowly explain it to me. I've booked the room for two days already. You guys can slowly tell me everything in these two days....."

Chapter 155: The beginning!

After two whole days, Ye Zifeng walked out of the Jufeng Pavilion with a pleased look/

Behind him, Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin both look like they were both super tired.

When others saw, they couldn't help but think about what happened inside the room for two days.

"Thank you guys for your trouble for these two days." Ye Zifeng smiled and thanked the two of them.

".....Big bro, you're being too polite. This is the least that we can do for you." Wang Ruoxing's face was extremely stiff but he still forced a smile. He then patted Wang Lin's shoulder, "Brother Lin, did you not hear us?"

Wang Lin who had no energy left in his body was brought back to his senses after having his shoulder patted by his brother, "Oh... right. Second bro is right. This is the least that we can do....."

With this, they now have two big bros. One is their actually blood related big brother, Wang Tianzhi. The other is the man who instilled fear into their hearts, Ye Zifeng.

In these two days, Ye Zifeng used the spirit incense, and different types of hypnosis techniques to completely force the information out of the two brothers.

Ye Zifeng doesn't only know how to take treasures from others, he'll take anything no matter what form or shape as long as it helps him.

"Also, regarding the matter of these two days....." Ye Zifeng looked deeply at the two.

Wang Ruoxing became startled and quickly replied, "Did we meet for the past two days?"

Ye Zifeng doesn't want others to know his trails and want to act in the shadows.

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng smiled, “Good. As long as you don’t say anything, then from now on, we will walk our own paths and won’t interfere with each other!”

“That’s great!” Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin both yelled out loudly. It was so loud that the other people looked at them weirdly.

Only when they can break free from Ye Zifeng’s grasp can they continue to live normally. If not, they would forever live in his shadow, instilled with fear.

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, “Alright. I’m going. If I have the chance, I’ll invite you guys to the Jufeng Pavilion again to thank you guys.”

Hearing this, the two brothers paled, “This..... Big bro. There’s no need.”

They were truly afraid of Ye Zifeng!

.....

When Ye Zifeng returned to the Ye clan, he walked in through the back door. He took his mask off and walked towards his room.

As long as he doesn’t get found out, then this outing would be considered a success.

However, when he was about to turn the corner, he heard Xueyi’s anxious voice.

“Xiao Ya, how’s brother Zifeng? You’ve been telling me that he’s been recuperating since yesterday. The sect mission is tomorrow. How about I go in and tell him to give it up? His health is much more important.”

Xiao Ya’s expression changed and quickly blocked Ye Xueyi.

“No. Miss Ye, the young master specifically told me to not let you in no matter what.”

Ye Xueyi’s expression changed dramatically after hearing this, “Really? He specifically told you to? It sounds like he thinks that I’ll disturb him..... But..... I’m just worried for him.....”

She looked down and started twirl her hair.

Actually, it was Xiao Ya being stupid. Under the pressure, she distorted Ye Zifeng's words

Suddenly, a loud sound sounded behind the two of them. They unconsciously turned around to see what had happened.

After seeing that there was nothing wrong, Ye Xueyi looked straight into Xiao Ya's eyes.

"I don't care..... I want to go in and see how brother Zifeng is. If not, I won't be at peace."

Xiao Ya was startled. She wanted to cry. She knew that there was no one in the room. If Ye Xueyi finds out that she was lying, then she will definitely be kicked out!

"Miss Ye, don't....."

"Why not? Unless you're lying to me..... Is brother Zifeng even in the room?"

Ye Xueyi looked angrily at her. She pushed Xiao Ya away and opened the door, "Brother Zifeng!"

How can a normal person Xiao Ya stop a cultivator at the 8th stage of qi refining like Ye Xueyi?

Xiao Ya shut her eyes and couldn't bear to look into the room at all. She was waiting for Ye Xueyi to come out and punish her.

However, this didn't happen.

Inside the room, Ye Zifeng sat there wearing a golden robe. He had a deep look in his eyes. He looked up and then smiled at Ye Xueyi.

"Xueyi, you're here."

"You!" Ye Xueyi revealed a happy expression after seeing that Ye Zifeng was fine.

"Brother Zifeng, so you're actually fine! I was afraid that something happened to you and thought that you won't be able to make it to the sect mission tomorrow."

When Xiao Ya heard Ye Zifeng's voice from the room, she quickly walked in with her jaws dropped.

She had been guarding the doors for the past two days. No one came by at all. How did Ye Zifeng get in without her noticing?

When she thought about it, she realized that Ye Zifeng probably ran into the room when she was distracted by the strange sound.

.....

Ye Zifeng smiled, "I've been preparing for the mission, why would I not participate?"

"Pu...." Ye Xueyi couldn't hold her laughter in anymore, "Brother Zifeng, you just got back from Tiandao City and have been recovering. When did you get time to prepare?"

Ye Xueyi didn't even get time to prepare, how did Ye Zifeng get time?

Also, this is a team mission. No matter how incredible Ye Zifeng is, he is only one person. He can't change the tide of anything by himself.

"Do you not trust me?" Ye Zifeng smiled. It's not abnormal if she didn't believe him.

"I believe. Of course I believe you! I estimate that you'll get 3-400 contribution points. Then you'll exchange it for some precious ingredients right?" Ye Xueyi believed in her brother when no one else did. Of course she would believe in him now.

Since Ye Zifeng isn't a trash anymore, she believes him even more.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, "Actually, you do have a point. Since there are many people participating this time, getting 3-400 contribution point is not bad. However, getting more points won't make you the winner. Getting less points won't make you a loser either."

"Brother Zifeng... you...." Xueyi stared at him. She didn't really understand what he meant.

"Alright don't think too much. We're gonna get up early tomorrow and go over to the sect. Also, this mission might provide a good turning point

in our lives." Ye Zifeng smiled.

"Turning point?" Ye Xueyi confusingly looked over at her brother.

What she didn't know was that there was a chance for her to enter the profound sect during the mission. Thus, she didn't know what he was talking about. Ye Zifeng kept this from her because he didn't want to give her any extra pressure.....

.....

The Ashen Spirit Sect issued different missions of different ranks to its disciples once a month. However, this month, the missions weren't separated by ranks. Everyone had the same mission of killing the same fierce beasts.

The next morning, the sect was filled with people. It was something expected by everyone. In the sect, other than people like Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing who opted to not participate, all the qi refining stage disciples were there!

Whether it was a talented youth from a big clan or a young master from a smaller clan, everyone was participating.

"He's here. Look. Wang clan's young master, Wang Tianzhi is here!"

Wang Tianzhi was the overlord amongst qi refining stage disciples for quite a while now. In addition to that, he's also the young master of the number one clan in Leizhou City. His entrance was filled with claps and praises.

However, he gave a cold stare into the crowd, as if he was looking for someone.

"Why are you guys looking at him? Look over here. That's the Ye clan's ex-trash young master, Ye Zifeng. Now he is considered a genius alchemist!"

Chapter 156: Dog eat dog.

Hearing Ye Zifeng's name, many disciples all shivered. They all stood on their tiptoes, wanting to see how he looked like.

Everyone has heard about him after the heavenly clan gathering but many people have never seen him. Now that he's also become the champion of the alchemy competition, everyone wants to see him.

"This Ye Zifeng here is the pride of our Leizhou City. Along with Miss Bingqian, they beat the alchemist experts in the other cities. He's help give a name to our Leizhou City.

Some people also gossiped, "But.... Does anyone know about the relationship between him and Miss Bingqian?

"From what I can see, a talented man and a beautiful woman makes the ideal couple. They didn't merely enter the alchemy competition together. Instead of going back to his own house after getting injured, he went straight to the Liu clan's manor to sleep over. What do you think about their relationship?"

Hearing all the gossip around him, Wang Tianzhi turned towards the approaching Ye Zifeng.

He glared at Ye Zifeng with a sinister gaze.

His patience is very strong. Other than the cold glare, no one can tell that he was being unhappy about something.

Ye Zifeng noticed Wang Tianzhi's expression and smiled.

The two of them stared at each other as Ye Zifeng walked over.

When they stood shoulder by shoulder, Wang Tianzhi let out a cold chuckle, "Ye Zifeng, I'd advise you to be tactful and withdraw from this mission!"

"What if I don't?" Ye Zifeng stopped and stared back.

"Hehe.....Then, you'll know the results really soon." Wang Tianzhi's expression was as cold as ice. It was an expression that made people

tremble in fear.

"Okay. Then I, Ye Zifeng will wait to see the results."

When the two stood next to each other, an air of hostility surrounded them. It felt as if they were in a life or death battle against each other.

The two of them walked away from each other and the tension around them eased up.

"God. What's wrong with the two of them? Are they trying to fight before the mission starts?"

"Why would they fight? Isn't the mission hunting fierce beasts?"

Only when someone said this did a few people's expressions become better. They were weaklings who were here just to participate. If they did something to offend one of them, then they will not live a good life afterwards.

At the same time, a cry sounded from behind them.

"Look. The two flowers from the Liu clan is here....."

The two girl's appearances immediately attracted other's attention.

Liu Bingqian and Liu Ningzi were both like beautiful jades. All the guys dropped what they were doing and turned to stare at them.

Liu Yige, who was behind them, was seen as a servant.

Liu Bingqian looked all over the place with a worried expression.

"Sis..... Ye Zifeng is over there....." Liu Ningzi sighed and tugged her sister's sleeves. She then pointed over to the other side.

In the past two days, Liu Bingqian locked herself in her room because she was feeling down after she kicked Ye Zifeng out. She regretted it. She wanted to personally go over to the Ye clan but couldn't find a chance to do so.

Liu Ningzi knew what was happening to her sister.

After hearing that Liu Bingqian's eyes lit up. But she turned towards her sister instead, "Ningzi, what are you talking about? Who said I was looking

for Ye Zifeng? I was looking for Xueyi. We had a pretty good chat last time."

Liu Ningzi bitterly laughed and shook her head. Her sister had only met Xueyi once. No matter how much they talked for, she won't be looking all over for her like that. She was definitely looking for Ye Zifeng. After thinking about this, a weird feeling appeared in her heart.

If she didn't go and cancel the engagement, then what would the situation be like right now? Would it be different? At least, Ye Zifeng won't hate her.

She then shook her head and took a deep breath. What was she thinking about.....

.....

"Everyone..... Everyone please quiet down."

Ye Zifeng heard a familiar voice and looked up. An old elder slowly walked towards everyone with a stern look on his face.

It's Elder Qin! Ye Zifeng smiled. No wonder why this guy's voice sounded familiar. Elder Qin took care of him and gave him his contribution points during the first sect mission.

Ye Zifeng liked Elder Qin. He gave Ye Zifeng a pretty good impression.

Elder Qin continued, "The mission will start soon. But before that, everyone should get into a group. There will be twenty people in a group and you will be hunting high level fierce beasts!"

"Elder Qin, I have a question. Can we freely decide on our groups?" Someone asked.

"That's a good question. But the answer is no. We've already made groups for you taking the levels of your strength into account. To make everything fair, the strength of all the teams will be around the same."

Hearing this, Ye Zifeng smiled. Whenever someone wants to do something bad in secret, they would first announce it to make it seem fair. It seems like the sect is doing exactly this.

“Everyone look.....” Elder Qin revealed a spirit paper and made it hover in mid air with his qi/

Words began to form on the paper. Everyone’s names were written down and were ordered into groups.

Everyone’s heart shook as they all looked at the paper, trying to find their names.

“There are a hundred people so everyone will be split into five groups. After looking over the list, I will bring you guys to the mission site if there aren’t any complaints.

The heavenly clan gathering also had a hundred people. This meant that there were only around a hundred something qi refining stage disciples in the Spirit Ashen Sect.

“Tha.....Thank god! I’m in the same group as young master Wang! It seems like I’ll be on the winning team!”

“My luck isn’t too bad either. To be grouped with the two beauties from the Liu clan, it’ll be fine even if I lose.”

“.....That’s better than me. I’m in the same group as Ye Zifeng. Even if his alchemy skills are not bad, his fighting capabilities are probably not that great. How can someone in the 6th stage of qi refining compare to those in the 9th stage?”

Shi Chen bitterly laughed. Last time, he had to take his sibling’s place in the heavenly clan gathering due to the age restriction. Now, he was in the weakest group. His luck must be really bad.

The strongest person in the group was Ye Xueyi who was only in the 8th stage of qi refining.

Ye Zifeng shook his head while listening to Shi Chen speak and muttered, “Why don’t you look at your cultivation before talking about mine.”

“Are there any questions or complaints?” Elder Qin spoke up.

“None at all. Elder Qin, let’s start. I’ve been waiting for way too long!”

“That’s right. Tell us where you’re going to bring us. What kind of fierce beasts are we hunting?”

At this time.

“Hold on.” Shi Chen raised his hand, “Elder Qin, we don’t have anyone in the 9th stage of qi refining in our group. What are we going to do about this?”

He didn’t want to lose for no reason so he had to complain.

Elder Qin bitterly smiled, “There’s only a few people in the 9th stage of qi refining in our sect. Shi Chen, look at your group. No one else is saying anything..... How about we give you guys some more contribution points for your efforts then?”

When Shi Chen heard about getting more points, a smile appeared on his face, “Then... fine!”

Ye Zifeng’s smiled as well. As expected from the Wang clan who has a tight relationship with the higher ups of the sect. Before the mission even started, they had put him at a disadvantage already.

Adding some contribution points? That’s nothing compared to being able to go to Tiandao City and cultivate in the Profound Sect.

Besides, even if the group was missing someone in the 9th stage of qi refining, the sect could’ve assigned more people in the 8th stage of qi refining to the group to make up for it. However, the sect didn’t do anything about it. They were clearly favoring the Wang clan and the Liu clan.

But, Ye Zifeng was still smiling calmly.

Okay. If the Wang clan wants to cheat, then let’s see who can cheat more!

He looked up towards Wang Tianzhi. The two of them smiled at each other with immense killing intent in their eyes.

Chapter 157: Doomed to fail

The Scarlet Blood Valley. A battlefield left behind by ancient clans.

As time passed, the area slowly turned into a wasteland. The abundant amount of qi energy from the past dissipated as well, causing the high level fierce beasts to leave the valley. The valley now consisted of mostly common rank beasts with a few spirit rank beasts here and there, thus becoming one of the sect's training grounds.

Even though the Cloud Peak Valley is also a training ground of the sect, it is nothing compared to the Scarlet Blood Valley.

In the Scarlet Blood Valley, there are many large fierce beasts. If one isn't careful, they will be endangering their lives.

When the qi refining stage disciples first come here, they would be scared shitless after looking around.

Because of Elder Qin's status, he was only responsible for dividing and leading the groups. The higher ups of the sect all stood there and watched.

Ye Zifeng didn't waste his energy to look around the Valley. He kept an eye on those higher ups and the strangers besides them.

"It seems like they're from the Profound Sect....." Ye Zifeng smiled.

These strangers were standing behind the higher ups of the Ashen Spirit Sect as if they were in the shadows and watched the disciples without saying anything. No one knew what they were thinking.

Elder Lin, the one who was in charge of the heavenly clan gathering was also responsible for leading this mission.

"Everyone listen up. There's no need to be afraid. Even though the Scarlet Blood Valley is nothing like the Cloud Peak Valley and there might be some dangers, we have prepared something for all of you. The elders have all decided to give you all a medallion. If you guys run into any sort of life threatening danger, insert your qi into the medallion and you will be teleported back here. Do you understand?"

Hearing this, the disciples who were about to give up felt a lot better.

“Great. With this, we can be more daring. If we can’t handle something, we can escape!”

“Right. We still don’t know how powerful these fierce beasts are. We can test the waters in there before forfeiting.”

Elder Lin furrowed his brows. He felt disappointed after seeing all these ambitionless people, “However, there is a price for using the medallion. These were hard to make so if you really do use it, it’ll cost you two hundred contribution points!”

“What? It costs two hundred contribution points? How many points can we even get from here?”

Those who wanted to be more daring suddenly changed their minds.

All the discsiples received a medallion from the officials of the sect. At the same time, the disciples all moved into their designated groups.

Ye Zifeng smiled. He had to admit it. The sect played this move beautifully. With a life saving medallion, it’ll stop people with lower cultivation from quitting. At the same time, it restricted the participants from doing anything crazy. They were able to kill two birds with one stone.

“Next, we’ll hand out the missions. Each group will send a representative to come and retrieve a mission. You have to remember. You must keep the details of your mission a secret....” Elder Lin stared at everyone.

When the people from each group received their mission, they returned to their groups and started to discuss.

“Okay. If there’s nothing else, then I’ll officially announce the start of the mission! I wish everyone good luck. Also, there might be a surprise at the end....”

Hearing about the surprise, Ye Zifeng let out a small chuckle.

Maybe he should give these elders that are supporting the Wang clan a “surprise” as well.....

.....

There were two sheets of paper in total. One was a map of the Scarlet Blood Valley with their mission area marked. The other is the mission description.

The two pieces of paper was laid out in front of Ye Zifeng, Shi Chen and the others.

“This.....How can it be like this? The first mission is asking us to kill a Common tier 9th stage beast? We don’t even have someone in the 9th stage of qi refining!”

“Shit. We’re finished. We can’t even finish the first mission....” Shi Chen cried out with a helpless look on his face.

“Damn. I really don’t know what the higher ups are thinking. What the heck is this.....” A weak looking girl in the 6th stage of qi refining commented.

Because of this, Ye Zifeng’s group stood there and stared blankly at each other. They looked around at the other groups and found out that they had started to leave already.

Wang Tianzhi stood there and was watching since the beginning with a cold smile on his face. It looked like he was going to watch a good show.

Ye Zifeng saw his expression and raised his brows.

Could it be..... Could Wang Tianzhi have made a move already?

Ye Xueyi was the one with the highest cultivation in the group and became angry because the group was feeling dejected before they even moved out.

“This isn’t a solo mission. We have twenty people! We haven’t even seen the fierce beast yet and yet you’re being so dejected?”

“Hehe.....Your cultivation is high. If you see the fierce beast later, you can protect yourself. How about us?”

‘Right. How can I be so unlucky and get paired up with the Ye clan’s group. If I was with the Xiao clan, or even the Rong clan, it would be a lot better!”

“Shit. We’re finished. I say. We shouldn’t risk our lives for the Ye clan. Even if there were benefits, they would be the first to get it.”

Ye Xueyi was super angry now, “Brother Zifeng, look at them. How can we work together? Brother Zifeng, say something.....”

“Hold on..... Something’s wrong.”

No matter how weak they are, they shouldn’t be so dejected before the mission even started. It feels as if they deliberate acting like this!

Hearing these people complain, Ye Zifeng had a bad feeling in his heart.

Since Wang Tianzhi can’t make a move against himself, he’ll try to bend the rules and attack Ye Zifeng another way....

“Shit. Not good.” Ye Zifeng’s eyes widened. His eyes were filled with shock.

He had realized this too late!

At the same time, a few people raised their hands together and looked towards Elder Lin.

There were at least ten people.

“This mission doesn’t have any meaning to us anymore. We’ve decided to withdraw!”

“What did you guys say?”

Other than Wang Tianzhi and his people, everyone else was shock. Even Elder Lin felt a little shocked.

However, Elder Lin regained his composure very quickly.

“Did you guys think over this? If you leave now, it will affect your evaluations in the sect. Also, some contribution points will be deducted!”

“We’ve decided! We’ll take the loss....” The leader smiled and looked towards Wang Tianzhi.

It’s one thing if Wang Tianzhi bribed the higher ups of the sect... but now, he’s bribed the disciples as well! He was simply acting too domineering!

Ye Zifeng was missing someone in the 9th stage of qi refining already. Now, he's missing half of his team!

Ye Zifeng suddenly remembered Wang Tianzhi's warning from before. He finally understood what it meant.

In a group without someone in the ninth stage of qi refining and half the group, anyone would want to withdraw. Wang Tianzhi wanted to embarrass Ye Zifeng while also telling him that the Wang clan makes the rule around here.

"Elder Lin, they are withdrawing with malicious intentions. Don't be lenient on them! You can't allow them to withdraw just like that!" Ye Xueyi's expression changed immediately.

Elder Lin furrowed his brow, "Of course I can't be lenient on them! I've decided to deduct twice the amount of contribution points to punish them!

Ye Xueyi's face paled. Words couldn't come out of her mouth!

What kind of punishment is that? If the Wang clan gave them a lot of benefits, then this would be nothing at all!

"No. I don't agree. You can't have them withdraw. They must participate!" Ye Xueyi returned to her senses and continuously shook her head.

Ye Zifeng's expression calmed down a bit, "Leave it Xueyi. If they want to withdraw then let them do so....."

"But, brother Zifeng...." Ye Xueyi bit her lips.

"They're obviously here to stir up trouble. Even if they do participate, what will they do?"

Ye Zifeng smiled. His expression turned cold as he looked towards Elder Lin.

"Elder Lin. I want to ask something. If we finish a mission for twenty with only ten people, how much more contribution points will we get?"

Chapter 158: Leading the way

Compared to other people losing their contribution points, Ye Zifeng cared about his own points more.

Wang Tianzhi's face started to twitch when he heard this. He wanted to see the expression of Ye Zifeng withdrawing since the beginning.

However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would recover from the shock so quickly! It was very disappointing.

Elder Lin was startled, "This....."

He thought that Ye Zifeng was going to retreat to avoid a defeat and withdraw but instead, Ye Zifeng used this chance to increase his own rewards....

"Probably around three times....."

Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head, "three times the original value of the rewards?"

Elder Lin didn't think about it and nodded quickly, "Yes."

"You won't regret it?"

Elder Lin furrowed his brows, "Laughable! Each of my words are worth a thousand gold. I will not say anything false!" He thought about it to see if there was anything wrong, but he wanted to save face and replied quickly.

Ye Zifeng turned to the ten remaining people before Elder Lin could react.

"Did you guys hear that? If it is three times the original reward, which is for twenty people, then if that's split amongst the ten of us, we will get SIX times the reward each!"

"Six....Six times the reward!" The remaining people looked at each other and gulped.

With this, be brought back their fighting spirits.

If one has a chance to obtain 120% of the profit, they will liven up. When

they can get 150%, they will be willing to take a risk. If they can get 200%, then they will do whatever they can do get it. From 200% to 300%, people will be willing to risk their lives.

But now, Ye Zifeng was suggesting a possible 600% profit! This caused everyone to go crazy. If they meet with any danger, they can also use the medallion to escape. Nothing else mattered to them now.

Elder Lin finally understood what Ye Zifeng meant, "Ye Zifeng, you tricked me! Confusing me with your words....."

Ye Zifeng talked quickly and Elder Lin didn't have a chance to think much about it.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "What? I thought Elder Lin's words were worth a thousand gold. I thought that his words were never false."

"You!" Elder Lin's eyes widened and stood there. It's been a long time since someone dared to speak to him like this. Other than Ye Zifeng, who would do so? They would usually try to be respectful and kiss his ass.

"Okay. Even if it's possible to obtain six times the reward, so what? You're talking like you can finish the mission....." Elder Lin's expression turned cold and smiled at Ye Zifeng.

"Five days. What can you guys do?"

Ye Zifeng did indeed increase the reward amount. However, can he finish the mission?

Without someone in the 9th stage of qi refining, Ye Zifeng's ten man group was weaker than weak. If they want to finish like others, then it will be very hard.

"About that..... Elder Lin doesn't have to worry about it."

After saying that, Ye Zifeng turned around with a stern look on his face.

"We're leaving!"

.....

When Ye Zifeng and Wang Tianzhi's group entered the Scarlet Blood

Valley, only the elders from the Ashen Spirit Sect and Profound Sect remained.

Elder Lin continuously cursed, “Who the hell does he think he is? How dare he talk to me like this? He deserved everything that happened to his group! Elder Shen, am I right?”

Shen Li was startled and forced a smile, “This.... Elder Lin is right.”

His relationship with Ye Zifeng was kept a secret. If possible, he didn’t want anyone else to find out about it.

On the other side, one of the higher ups from the Profound Sect smiled and exchanged glances with the person besides him.

“This Ye Zifeng is pretty interesting. Last time, when Adept Baili went to ask for pills, I thought he was just a crazed alchemist who knows nothing but alchemy. It seems like he’s has a fine personality as well.”

“Oh? Senior brother Liu, could it be that you want him to come to our Profound Sect?”

(TL: This is a different Liu from the Liu clan in Leizhou City.)

Adept Liu smiled, “It’s not hard to ask him to refine pills. This time, we’ve already decided on who’s coming to the sect. It won’t be good if we switch someone out...”

“But.... If he has good results, then we can also add him to the list.”

As long as the higher ups say something, adding one or two more people to the list won’t be that hard.

.....

Ye Zifeng led people towards the mission site. While walking, he didn’t waste anything and had everyone introduce themselves.

“One by one. Tell me about your cultivation level and who you are.”

Ye Zifeng’s actions from before and his fame during the heavenly clan gathering and alchemist competition were noted by these people. They’re already decided to make him their captain.

Other than Xueyi, there were only eight people left. There were five guys and three girls. The one with the highest cultivation is at the 8th stage of qi refining while the lowest one is at the 5th stage of qi refining. That person was actually Shi Chen.

Other than Shi Chen, two of them were in the 7th stage of qi refining while the other two were in the eighth stage of qi refining.

Shi Chen sighed and faced Ye Zifeng, “Brother, when I met you during the first sect mission, you should know that I’m kind of a wimp.... I can only fight against fierce beasts on my level. If it’s one at a higher level, I can’t win at all....”

His words were to tell Ye Zifeng that when they face the common tier 9th stage beast, he will be standing a bit far away.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “No problem. I’ll allow you to stand as far away as possible.”

“Really?” Shi Chen looked at Ye Zifeng. He was trying to joke around but didn’t think that Ye Zifeng would actually allow it.

“Big brother. I’m kind of weak and don’t want to face the fierce beasts head on. Can I stand a bit further away?” One of the girls at the 7th stage of qi refining weakly said.

Ye Zifeng nodded, “Since you look so gentle, you’re definitely not the type to fight against the fierce beasts. Okay. You can stand far away too.”

Seeing that Ye Zifeng was so nice, two more people started to talk as well.

“Big brother. Actually, this brother and I have a hidden illness. It might break out at random times. I’m afraid that it’ll act up in front of the fierce beast and drag you guys down!”

“Yeah. Yeah. We want to stand far away too. Of course, we won’t be the furthest ones away.

They all want to get the rewards without doing anything. This way, if they meet with any danger, they can run first.

Ye Xueyi furrowed her brows and looked at Ye Zifeng, “Brother Zifeng. How can you let them do this? These people aren’t bought out by the Wang clan, they have some abilities.

Ye Zifeng smiled and didn’t answer Xueyi. Instead, he clapped his hands to get everyone attention.

“Since this is everyone’s first time here, then I have to say something to everyone. The topography here.....”

“Topography? Bro, don’t try to deceive us. You’re talking like you’ve been here before. Didn’t you just get the map as well?”

Shi Chen smiled and wanted to pat Ye Zifeng’s shoulders. However, when he heard the words come out of Ye Zifeng’s mouth, his hand stopped in mid air.

Ye Zifeng continuously talked without a hint of stopping.

“No.....No way. Is the Scarlet Blood Valley your backyard? How can you be so familiar with it? Shi Chen was shocked!

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Hehe.... Don’t worry about it. Just trust me a little.” For the past two days, Ye Zifeng had listened to Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing talk about the valley. He basically recited everything back to Shi Chen and the others.

Everyone was surprised, “Of course. If big bro needs anything, just tell us!”

If they have someone who is familiar with the area leading them, they would feel a lot better. This was because if they meet up with some danger, they can escape quickly and efficiently. They won’t have to use the medallion from the sect and lose contribution points.

“Good. Then everyone, follow me in!”

Ye Xueyi looked strangely at Ye Zifeng. When did Ye Zifeng become so easy to talk to? This was very strange.

She walked closer to her brother and asked, “Brother Zifeng, tell me truthfully. Are you planning something bad again?”

Chapter 159: Fighting with your back against a wall.

Ye Zifeng looked around to make sure that none of them were close to them.

Then, he smiled and whispered, “I forgot to tell them that the fierce beast that we’re hunting this time has powerful long range attacks. So….. If you want to be far away from the beast, then they’ll be the ones suffering….”

“No way. Brother Zifeng…. You…. How can you be so cruel. Did you not tell them about it intentionally?” Ye Xueyi was shocked.

She grew up with this brother of hers so she knows what he’s like. However, in the last month or so, she had this weird feeling in her heart. After being beat up by Wang Lin, it seems like Ye Zifeng changed.

“….Hey big bro, aren’t you suppose to be leading? How come you’re behind us all of a sudden? Are you really up to the task?” Shi Chen’s jokingly called out.

“I’m thinking about the plans to deal with the fierce beast.” Ye Zifeng made up an excuse for lagging behind.

“Plan? What kind of plan do we need in a small cave like this? The people in the front will block while the people in the back will attack. Come on brother Ye, get over here!”

Not only did Shi Chen laugh, the other people started laughing as well. They didn’t see the point of planning at all.

“Coming. Coming. Don’t rush. The fierce beast isn’t too far from here. He won’t be running either.”

Ye Zifeng smiled and turned towards Ye Xueyi, “Alright. Let’s move forward.”

……

Violet Lightning Thunder Tiger, Common Rank 9th Stage. It is a beast

that excels in close range combat. However, it's strongest attack is the long range Violet Lightning Bolt attack. It's not fun and games if you're struck with it.

It's just like what it unleashed just now.

"Holy shit. What kind of damned tiger is this. How can its violet lightning bolt attack be so strong! Why would it insist on using long range attacks!" Shi Chen's was scared shitless. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry anymore. His eyes were filled with fright.

"Lord. Save me!" The weak looking girl watched as the attack moved towards hers and started to scream for help.

If they were able to choose again, they would definitely not choose to be in the back lines again even if you beat them.

Other than these two, the others who were trying to hide in the back line all suffered.

As for Ye Zifeng, Ye Xueyi and the others who were in the front, they couldn't move back even if they want to. All they could do was stand there and watch the others were being baptised by the lightning. Shi Chen who had the lowest cultivation of them all almost fainted from the sheer power of the lightning.

It was a good thing that Ye Zifeng had planned an escape route beforehand. Under his command, the ten of them quickly ran out of the cave.

The last one out was Ye Xueyi who had the highest cultivation of them all. She helped fend off some attacks and buy time for the others escape.

.....

Shi Chen was breathing heavily as he had just ran for his life.

"Big brother. We were wrong. We shouldn't have tried to be in the back lines....."

"Right. This damn tiger is too strong. If we don't have a plan, we can't fight against it. We're basically looking to die!

Ye Zifeng smiled and look at them, “Now you guys want to use a plan? When I brought it up before, did anyone want to listen? Who was the one that said we didn’t need a plan?”

“Before.....Did something like that happen before?”

Shi Chen smiled and rubbed his head. He then turned to the person next to him, “Did you say something about it before?”

“Ha. How can I disagree with big brother Ye. Weren’t you the one who said that we didn’t need a plan?” The other person saw that Shi Chen wanted to put the blame on him so he pushed it back at him.

“I.....” Shi Chen knew that he was in the wrong...

Ye Zifeng’s expression turned cold and serious, “Alright. Enough. I won’t talk about what happened before. I’m going to ask everyone something right now. If I give a command, will you guys follow it through no matter what?”

Shi Chen laughed loudly and raised his hand, “I, Shi Chen, will be the first to agree! Big brother Ye, I will do whatever you want.”

“I agree too! As long as its big brother Ye’s word, I, Old Zhu will definitely agree to it!”

“Big brother Ye, show us the skills that you used to win the heavenly clan gathering and the alchemy competition. Bring us to victory with those skills!”

“Right. You look like you know a lot about this mission. We were only able to escape before due to your commands. If we don’t believe you, then who else can we believe?”

At times like this, a leader is not chosen based on their strength. They are chosen due to their abilities and cohesiveness. A leader should be able to lead a group and bring out everyone’s abilities to work together. Instead of rely on the strength of one person, they have to work together. A leader, will lead them all to victory.

Ye Xueyi didn’t disagree either. She was feeling happy because her

brother was being praised by everyone.

"Brother Zifeng.... Everyone is waiting for your command!"

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "Since everyone trusts me, then I want everyone to give me their life saving medallion."

Hearing this, everyone's expression changed. They all stared at Ye Zifeng.

"For what reason should we give you our life saving medallion?" Someone couldn't help but ask.

To them, the life saving medallion is their insurance. This was their life insurance. Even if you don't use it, they'll feel better if they have it with them.

"Didn't you guys just say that as long as I say something, you will agree to it and follow along?" Ye Zifeng looked at Old Zhu.

Old Zhu was startled and bitter smiled, "But..... But....."

"But what? Unless you guys were just lying in front of my face? Or.....Are you guys like those other guys who withdrew from the mission? Do you guys not have any backbone at all?"

Hearing Ye Zifeng talk about the people who withdrew from the mission, all of them had an ugly look on their faces.

"Don't put us in the same category as those people. They're dogs and will be punished by the heavens sooner or later."

Ye Zifeng smiled, "What's your name and your cultivation?"

"I'm Qin Lang, 7th stage of qi refining!"

"Merely in the 7th stage of qi refining. Only people without strength and heart will hope that others be punished by the heavens!"

"I....." Qin Lang was a young guy. This was the first time he's heard about something like this and was completely shocked by Ye Zifeng's words.

Ye Zifeng looked at all of them, "This time, we were conspired against by

others. We were plotted against by others. What are you going to do with it? Are you going to run away before you even finish the first mission? Do you not feel embarrassed? I feel embarrassed for all of you!"

"This...."

After being lectured by Ye Zifeng, all of them were in awe. That's right. It's fine if the other groups use the medallion to run away. But, they can't. They have to finish the mission and prove themselves! If they run, they would just embarrass themselves!

"This.....Big brother Ye, what should we do?!"

Ye Zifeng smiled and glared at the group, "I, Ye Zifeng, am a rough person. I don't really know that many things. However, I do know that if someone wants to plot against me, then I will show them that even if they plot against me, I can still accomplish the mission. I will take that grand reward that Elder Lin promised us! Thus, we have to cut off all means of retreat and fight with our backs against the wall! Only then will we prevail!"

Ye Zifeng reminded them of the hatred against the people who withdrew and also brought up the grand reward promised by Elder Lin. This changed everyone's minds immediately.

"......Okay! I don't care if we succeed or not. I, Qin Lang, will recognize big brother Ye. I will follow you for this whole mission. No, I will follow you from now one!"

Qin Lang is a young and vigorous person. He loves being challenged. Ye Zifeng's speech riled him up and made his blood boil.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Then... the medallion?"

Qin Lang quickly dropped the medallion into Ye Zifeng's hands, breaking off all routes of retreat.

Ye Zifeng nodded. His eyes were filled with praise.

"Qin Lang, are you crazy? You actually gave it to him?"

"Brother Zifeng, I'll give it to you too!" At the same time, Ye Xueyi smiled

and gave Ye Zifeng her medallion too.

"Okay." Ye Zifeng walked towards her and took her medallion as well. If he wanted other people to listen, then the person closest to you should make the first move and lead the others.

Shi Chen sighed and shook his head, "Alright. I give up. Add me in too." Even though Shi Chen values his life, he still thinks of Ye Zifeng as a friend and trusts him.

With three people leading, the others looked at each other and slowly agreed as well. They all handed their medallions to Ye Zifeng.

With their backs against the wall, all they can do is fight their way out now.

"Alright. Now, let's talk about our plan....."

Chapter 160: I am the bait.

Settling them down was the biggest task at hand. Now, Ye Zifeng can finally talk about the tactics.

He had to instill fighting spirit into these people and by taking away their life saving medallions, he had done so. This was to make sure that their formation won't collapse in the middle of the fight. It'll make them fight together as if their lives were on the line.

With their backs against the wall, they will follow all of Ye Zifeng's commands. They wouldn't think about anything else because they want to survive. Because they want to succeed. They will listen and follow Ye Zifeng's commands seriously.

No one would play around with their own life.

"You're in the 8th stage of qi refining right? What's your name?" Ye Zifeng looked over at one of the weaker looking guys.

He was dressed in all black with a blue and golden sash around his waist. Just with a single look, anyone can tell that he had never done anything rough in his life. He's probably been fed with a golden spoon since he was young and level up with his clan's resources.

"I...I'm Han Xiuming...."

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Okay. You'll form a group with Shi Chen and Xueyi. Listen to my commands and do whatever I say. Are you clear?"

"Yes." Han Xiuming knew about Ye Zifeng a long time ago. Even if his cultivation is higher than Ye Zifeng's, he didn't dare to make a move against him. In this situation, he'll just follow what Ye Zifeng says.

"What? Big brother Ye. Thank you for looking out for me, sending two experts to protect me!" Shi Chen was filled with joy.

"Why do you think I did this?"

Ye Zifeng smiled and then looked at everyone else, "The stronger people will be grouped with weaker people so the groups stay balanced. That way,

I won't have to worry about someone getting KO'd instantly by the Violet Lightning Flying Tiger."

Shi Chen's heart shook and then agrily said, "Ye Zifeng, are you calling me weak!?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Since you don't think you're weak, I'll respect you and put you in another group. How about it?"

"This....." Shi Chen became quiet.

The other started to point out, "Look at him. He got the best deal out of us and still tried to talk back."

"Right? If he doesn't want to be in their group, let me join them!"

Shi Chen bitterly laughed, "Big brother Ye, you're right. I am weak....If I don't have the two experts protecting me, I'll definitely be finished.

Ye Zifeng said all this to clear up everyone's mind and not to try and bite off more than they can chew. If people like Shi Chen acts too arrogant, and do something stupid, then it would be really bad.

Also, they can't just pile the stronger people up with each other. If the fierce beast aims at the weaker ones, then the formation will break and everyone will be done for.

This is the most ideal move that Ye Zifeng can make.

With three people to a group, the ten people was split into three groups.

"Brother Zifeng, we have three people to a group already. What about you?" Ye Xueyi had a confuse look on her face. Why didn't Ye Zifeng include himself in the groups?

"Yeah. Don't tell me that you want to slack off and lead us without doing anything." The weak looking girl frowned and looked at Ye Zifeng.

Next to her, a guy stood out, "I won't let you do that. Why should we fight with our lives on the line while you sit back and watch?" This guy's tone was filled with arrogance and was not convinced by Ye Zifeng at all.

They can listen to Ye Zifeng's commands and do whatever he wants. But

if Ye Zifeng doesn't do anything, then why should they do anything either.

If the king does not act, then why should his soldiers follow?

Ye Zifeng laughed and glared coldly at everyone, "Who said that I won't be doing anything? I'll be the bait and lure the beast out from the cave.... The three groups will wait outside the cave. When I come out, immediately attack according to my plans! Do you understand?"

He didn't wait and continued, "You three, stand in that position.....Also, you three, stand over there. Lastly, Xueyi and Han Xiuming, you guys are the most powerful ones so stand right here. Don't forget to use all your strength later."

The whole place became quiet.

Common rank beasts do not have high intelligence. It can easily be angered by people.

The job of being a bait is the most dangerous one. If one wasn't careful, they could lose their life!

Thus, when the girl and the guy heard that, they immediately shut their mouths.

Ye Xueyi started to become worry, "Ye Zifeng, this is dangerous. You're only at the 6th stage of qi refining, how can you do it? Let me go at it."

Ye Zifeng smiled and looked at her with confidence, "No need. I'll use this chance to show my abilities to those who are still not convinced."

Saying that, he looked at the pair. They immediately snorted and looked away.

"If you can do it, then we'll trust you."

"Great. Then when the time comes, I hope you remember what you said."

Ye Zifeng laughed and went right into the cave.

"Ai....."

Shi Chen watched as Ye Zifeng's back disappeared into the cave and

bitterly smiled. Last time, his cultivation was higher than Ye Zifeng's by a whole stage. Now, it was the other way around!

Also, Ye Zifeng had become the number one genius of Leizhou City. Now, he even dared to use himself as a bait to lure out a 9th stage common rank beast! This rate of improvement... it made people speechless.

Shi Chen sighed and looked down.

"Brother Zifeng....."

At the same time, he looked over at Ye Xueyi. She was also staring at Ye Zifeng's back as he disappeared into the cave.

.....

In the cave, Ye Zifeng continuously walked.

"Violet Lightning Flying Tiger.... 9th stage common rank, with the ability to strike far away with lightning...It might be hard for others to deal with you, but it's too bad. I'm not afraid of your lightning at all....'

After the last mission, Ye ZIfeng had greatly increased his resistance to lightning.

Also, when they entered the cave before, he allowed himself to be struck by the lightning to have a feel of the power.

He silently laughed to himself. When he heard the growling sound of the tiger, he slowly walked towards it.

In the depths of the cave, a tiger wrapped in violet color lightning sat on top of a large rock. The tiger was looking around as if it knew that someone was there.

Ye Zifeng smiled and then condensed his common tier flame on his finger.

Next, by using his qi, he sent the flame into the end of the cave where the tiger was.

If he can use fire to lure the beast out, then Ye Zifeng won't be in any

danger.

The fire ferociously burned as the dried leaves around it started to catch on fire. As the leaves burned, it slowly spread throughout the cave.

Ye Zifeng had planned this since the beginning. If the tiger was even a single step slower, then the fire will engulf the entire cave.

The Violet Lightning Flying Tiger did live up to it's name as a Flying Tiger. When it saw the fire, it roared loudly and then flew off the rock. He then sent out his violet lightning in order to extinguish the flames.

Ye Zifeng smiled and moved his common tier flame to the other side.

"Let's go!"

A common tier flame isn't only used in alchemy. It can be used for daily life activities or in situations like this. However, only those people who can control it well enough can do so.

When the tiger finally extinguished the fire on one side of the cave, he saw the other side light up in fire again and roared loudly as he flew over.

This time, the tiger noticed Ye Zifeng. As it tried to extinguish the fire, it also sent bolts of lightning towards Ye Zifeng.

A violent energy flew towards Ye Zifeng.

If it was anyone else in the 6th stage of qi refining, they would definitely be severely injured or in the worst case, die.

However, these bolts of lightning was nothing to Ye Zifeng.

When the bolts hit Ye Zifeng's back, it made him groan a bit but didn't really affect him that much.

"Great! This is way better than the 9x gravity room! But, if this is all you got, then you won't be able to beat me!"

The tiger looked as if it understood Ye Zifeng's words and angrily roared. It didn't care about the fire anymore and ran straight at Ye Zifeng.

Chapter 161: Luring the tiger

A 9th stage common rank fierce beast did not possess intelligence. It was easily angered by Ye Zifeng.

It fought with its instincts instead of its brain.

Even though they were inside the cave, the tiger released rings of purple lightning as it pounced over at Ye Zifeng. This caused the entire cave to shake and filled it up with a suppressing energy.

This attack was many times more powerful than the ones from before.

"I told you already. I'm not afraid of your lightning!"

Ye Zifeng had everything planned out already. As the tiger pounced over, he grabbed onto a vine that dangled from the ceiling and flew to the other side of the cave.

However, the lightning still struck him and blood seeped out of his mouth. His entire body felt numb but he was still fine due to his high resistance to lightning.

This kind of injury was nothing to Ye Zifeng.

On the other side, the tiger who missed Ye Zifeng felt very frustrated and roared loudly. In an instant, lightning shot out of the tiger's claws and flew towards Ye Zifeng.

"You don't have any intelligence and yet you know how to conceal your strength huh."

Ye Zifeng smiled and activated his martial spirit's death qi. A black ball of qi appeared in his palm as he struck against the lightning. After a loud explosion, the lightning dissipated.

"Come on. Is that all you got?"

Ye Zifeng stuck his pointer finger out and curled it towards himself.

Under the heavens, there was only one meaning to this action.

A challenge!

During his “talk” with Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing, Ye Zifeng had learned that the fierce beasts could be easily provoked like this.

And as expected, the beast lost itself after seeing Ye Zifeng’s action. He fiercely glared at Ye Zifeng and pounced towards Ye Zifeng again.

Ye Zifeng smiled and grabbed onto the vine again. He swung himself back to the other side, avoiding the tiger again.

Now he was back to where he originally was while the tiger was on the other side again.

“Come on. Are you tired already? Do you not want to catch me?”

Hearing this, the tiger let out a loud roar and charged at Ye Zifeng.

This time, it didn’t pounce at him. The tiger charged at Ye Zifeng instead. He only wanted the result of killing Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “You should’ve done this from the beginning.”

He grabbed onto the vine again and condensed his flames. Before the tiger reached him, he burned the vine. The fire spread throughout the entire cave. Since the cave was not that big, the hot air in the cave created a suffocating effect.

Seeing that this was happening to his home, the tiger angrily roared again. He couldn’t put out the fire before everything burned.... He felt pain. Right now, his hatred for Ye Zifeng could not be any stronger.

Therefore, the tiger charged right at Ye Zifeng again and slashed at his chest.

Ye Zifeng didn’t really try to defend as much. If the tiger was charging at him instead of pouncing at him, then the claw attacks won’t be so devastating.

Ye Zifeng sent his qi into his arms and activated the power of his martial spirit. With his qi, he was only able to create one qi monster. However, this was enough.

After the qi monster formed, it immediately opened it’s mouth. The tiger that was charging ran right into its mouth.

A gloomy and desolate aura was being emitted and it instantly swallowed the tiger. The space in front of Ye Zifeng became empty. It was as if the tiger never existed.

After the body of the tiger was spat out by the qi monster, traces of brown prints appeared on its body. Starting from its abdominals, its skin started to rot.

It was becoming older and older.

However, the tiger used all of his strength to activate his violet lightning. The power of the lightning was actually able to stop the rotting process.

“This.....”

Ye Zifeng stared blankly at the tiger. He was feeling a bit depressed. He wanted to weaken the beast but now it seems like that wasn’t going to happen.

When the tiger recovered, it immediately slashed at Ye Zifeng’s chest.

“Bang.” The tiger’s claws hit Ye Zifeng and they were both sent flying back a few feet. Both of them had a shocked expression in their eyes.

Ye Zifeng was shocked that the tiger actually has so much strength in his slash. The tiger was shocked that Ye Zifeng was still fine after his attack. It felt as if it had hit some sort of metal plate instead of Ye Zifeng.

Actually, the tiger’s feeling wasn’t wrong. Ye Zifeng was wearing his Violet Gravel Armor.

“Phew. My armor almost broke because of you. Who’s gonna pay me back if you break it?!” Ye Zifeng checked the status of his armor and finally calmed down.

Hearing this, the tiger raised its claws again and tried to attack Ye Zifeng again.

“You’ve already lost your best chance to attack. What do you think you can do now?” Ye Zifeng smiled and immediately dodged. He then ran towards the entrance of the cave.

The tiger continuously sent waves of violet lightning towards Ye Zifeng.

He was able to dodge most of the attacks but was occasionally hit. However, with his resistance, all it did was make him stumble for a little bit. It did not hinder his escape at all.

Ye Zifeng didn't need to fight this tiger head on. His goal was to lure it outside.

And he was doing a pretty good job.

.....

Outside the cave, the three groups were waiting cautiously. After hearing a loud roar in the beginning, they didn't hear anything else.

"Brother Zifeng...."

Ye Xueyi was worried for Ye Zifeng.

Shi Chen finally broke the silence after waiting for so long, "Hey guys, it's been so long. There isn't any movement from the cave at all. Do you think that something happened to Ye Zifeng?"

"No way! Brother Zifeng is super lucky. Nothing will happen to him!" Ye Xueyi yelled back at him.

The weak looking girl let out a cold chuckle, "Who cares if something happened. Right brother Kong...."

The person that she called brother Kong nodded and smiled, "Right, sister Di. Who told him to go and try to be the bait while he's only in the 6th stage of qi refining. If anything happened, it's his own problem."

"You!" Ye Xueyi was very angry. If Shi Chen didn't hold her back, she would've made a move on them.

The male is called Kong Zhuo and the girl is called Feng Di. They were both in the 6th stage of qi refining just like Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng clearly had the same cultivation as them and yet he wanted to do something like this. He was basically looking to die.

At this time, Kong Zhuo suddenly remembered something.

"Shit. It's over. I just remembered something. Our life saving medallions

are with Ye Zifeng. It doesn't matter if he dies, what about us?"

"Brother Kong is right. Shit. We were stupid. Why did we give him our life saving medallion. Ye Zifeng is obviously a liar...."

The others saw the flames in Ye Xueyi's eyes and didn't want to add oil to the fire.

Qin Lang who said that he was going to follow Ye Zifeng came over and tried to comfort Ye Xueyi.

"Sister Xueyi, don't worry too much. We'll wait a bit longer. If nothing happens, I'll go in and check with you."

"I...." Ye Xueyi didn't even have the chance to reply before a loud roar sounded from the cave.

Everyone's heart shook as they looked over at the entrance.

Chapter 162: Surround and Kill

“This....This is.....” Ye Xueyi’s eyes shined as stared at the entrance of the cave.

“No way. Did Ye Zifeng actually succeed in baiting the tiger?” After Kong Zhou heard the tiger’s roar, his jaws dropped. He entire body felt numb as if he had been struck by a thousand needles.

Feng Di’s eyes were filled with shock as she covered her mouth with her hands. She was speechless.

As expected, the sound of the tiger got closer and closer to them.

The tiger was not even out yet but they can already feel the imposing aura of the tiger coming out the the cave.

After a loud and angry roar, the flying tiger leapt out of the cave.

It was lured out! Ye Zifeng really did lure the tiger out!

Feng Di’s eyes were filled with disbelief. Just before, she was slandering Ye Zifeng, saying that he won’t be able to do it. But now, the reality was in front of her.

“Quick. What are you staring at? Start moving!”

Ye Zifeng’s slightly anxious voice drilled into everyone’s ears.

They had just noticed that Ye Zifeng was in front of the tiger the whole time. Ye Zifeng was using Wang Lin’s dagger to resist against the tiger’s bite.

Its teeth was only one foot away from Ye Zifeng’s neck!

If Ye Zifeng was careless, his neck would be snapped in half by the Violet Lightning Flying Tiger immediately. Thus, he had to focus on resisting against the tiger and wasn’t able to do anything else.

“Let’s go! Han Xiuming, attack with me. Let’s save brother Zifeng!”

Ye Xueyi commanded loudly. This was nothing like the quiet girl that everyone thought she was at all. People who were still in a daze was

awoken by her command.

Ye Zifeng had set the conditions already. If he lures the tiger out, then they must attack it.

“Okay. Let’s go!” Even though Han Xiuming was a bit of a coward, he would never break a promise.

Streaks of qi appeared in the air. Countless amount of light gather above the tiger’s head.

This was what Ye Zifeng told them to do. This was what Ye Zifeng wanted the two people in the eighth stage of qi refining to do.

It was clear that Ye Xueyi and Han Xiuming was prepared to attack. With this attack, they can heavily injure the tiger.

With their combined powers, the light formed into beams and shot down right at the tiger. With incredible penetration power, the beams of light pierced the tiger’s legs.

Even if the tiger had its violet lightning protecting its legs, it won;t be able to withstand the combine attack of two cultivators in the 8th stage of qi refining. Blood splurted out of it’s legs. It was hard for the tiger to stand.

The tiger started to fret. No matter how stupid and unintelligent it was, he realized that he had been tricked. He finally stopped his attack against Ye Zifeng and started to run back into the cave.

Compared to revenge, his life was much more important.

“You want to run? But can you run away?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and yelled out, “Qin Lang, it’s up to you guys.” After doing all that baiting, Ye Zifeng felt a little tired. He took this chance to rest up a bit.

“Got it!”

Qin Lang smiled and together with his group members, they pushed a giant boulder down, blocking the path into the cave.

The tiger who was charging at the cave, slammed right into the boulder

and fell onto the ground. With this boulder in place, he can't return anymore.

The tiger fiercely charged at the boulder hoping that he would break it. He also tried to use his violet lightning to smash it apart. However, the boulder was way too big. It was difficult to break it down in such a short time.

Of course, Ye Zifeng would not give the tiger enough time to break it down.

First, Xueyi and Xiuming was able to injure the tiger. Now, Qin Lang and the others were able to block its path of retreat. Everything was going according to his plan right now.

However, he didn't think that Ye Xueyi and Han Xiuming would only be able to injury the tiger's legs. He expected more from the attack. However, it was not bad. The tiger must be suffering right now.

Since the tiger suffered an attack from Ye Zifeng's death martial spirit, it had wasted quite a bit of its qi to get rid of the death qi. Also, it had used an ample amount of qi to use his lightning strikes against Ye Zifeng as he ran. As a result, the tiger's tank was low before it even came out of the cave.

And now, after the combined attack from Xueyi and Xiuming, the tiger was definitely on the verge of dying.

"We've done our job. Kong Zhuo, Feng Di, it's your turn...." Ye Xueyi glared at them. She was mad at them because they were talking trash about Ye Zifeng before.

If the first two groups were to surround and injure the tiger, then the ones who will kill it are people of the third group. Kong Zhuo and them.

"Us.....?" Kong Zhuo and the others were clearly all in the 6th stage of qi refining. They didn't have any experts protecting them so they started to hesitate.

Ye Zifeng looked over at the group, "Didn't we agree on this before? As long as I can lure the tiger out, you guys will trust me and do whatever I

ask. Right?"

They said these words themselves. Everyone heard it. They can't back out of it.

"Ye...yes....."

"And now, please attack with all your strength." Ye Zifeng revealed a melodious smile.

"We....."

Kong Zhuo gritted his teeth, "Fine. Whatever. We'll attack! Sister Di, let's show them what we're made of!" While saying that, he gathered his qi into both of his palms.

Feng Qi smiled and nodded, "Okay. Brother Kong, let's attack together. I don't believe that we can't do the things that Ye Zifeng can do!"

"Three, two..... One!"

The three of them attacked the tiger at the same time. Their palms were glowing with qi energy and struck out against the tiger.

"中！"

"Hit!"

However, the tiger was filled with rage after being toyed around. It released the violet lightning on its body and dissipated the palm strikes.

The attacks failed!

"What? No way. How is that possible?" Kong Zhuo's eyes were filled with shock. He didn't believe what he was seeing.

That was not all. The tiger roared angrily and emitted a powerful energy. In an instant, it appeared next to Kong Zhuo and swiped down on him with its claws.

"Ah!" Kong Zhuo was still in a daze and was surprised by the attack. Without any form of preparation, his 6th stage of qi refining strength could not hold out against the tiger's attack.

He wasn't like Ye Zifeng who was wearing a Spirit tier treasure armor.

Thus, when the tiger swiped down, Kong Zhuo felt as if his entire body was being torn apart. He couldn't help but spurt out a mouthful of blood!

"Brother Kong!" When Feng Di saw this, she trembled a bit.

"Sister Di, quick. Save me!"

"I....." Feng Di looked at Kong Zhuo's chest that was torn apart and quickly turned around. She couldn't bear looking at it anymore.

Even though Kong Zhuo was hollering at her, she didn't reply at all. She stood there pretending to have lose her mind out of fear.

She was that kind of woman.....If there were any danger, she would pretend to be shocked.

Ye Zifeng saw the look in her eyes and shook his head. He didn't bother saying anything.

He looked back at the others, "The tiger is like an arrow at the end of its flight right now. It's almost dead. It's only path of escape has been blocked as well. Let's all attack and save brother Kong Zhuo!"

Hearing that Ye Zifeng was going to save Kong Zhuo, not only did Kong Zhuo feel grateful, Feng Di felt grateful as well.

No matter what, the two of them were very intimate. If they can save him, that would be the best.

"Let's go!" Ye Zifeng commanded.

After saying that, streaks of qi flew towards the tiger, attacking it from all directions. It made it retreat back against the boulder, running away from where Kong Zhuo was.

Saving a group member and killing the tiger. It was killing two birds with one stone! Now that the tiger was separate from Kong Zhuo, they can finally finish it.

Thus, Ye Zifeng started to issue a chain of commands.

"Listen to my commands from now on...." Ye Zifeng had a stern expression on his face as he spoke.

“Xueyi, Han Xiuming, utilize a qi screen and surround the area.” Right after Ye Zifeng issued the command, the two of them immediately went to work.

“Feng Di’s group, leave Kong Zhuo be for now. He won’t die yet. Help Xueyi and Han Xiuming out. Make sure they don’t get hit by the lightning.”

“Qin Lang’s group, have one of you guys stay at the boulder. As for the other two, follow me to attack!” Ye Zifeng showed a cold smile.

……

After a bit, Shi Chen finally regained his senses. He looked around and saw that everyone else was moving, “Hold on. Ye Zifeng, i think….you forgot about me…..”

Chapter 163: Nucleus of a team

As a team, if they were not compatible, they were basically like a pan of loose sand and won't be able to cooperate with each other.

But, if someone can lead the team and bring everyone together, then this pan of loose sand will be able to bond together and become stronger.

This is why the team's nucleus is the important role.

The Violet Lightning Flying Tiger let out a loud roar. It was angry because it was surrounded by people who had the intent to ill.

It opened its large blood to show its large teeths. It stared at everyone with a murderous intent emitting from its body. Just by looking at it gave people chills.

"Don't be scared. Xueyi, Han Xiuming, keep using your qi to set up the qi screen to restrict the area of movement....."

"Got it!" Ye Xueyi nodded and concentrated on her job.

If the tiger saw that it was not in a good situation, then it might try to run somewhere else. That's why Ye Zifeng had block off all paths of retreat.

With this, Ye Zifeng can feel much more relieved. They can trap the tiger in a cage and then slowly kill it.

A few moments later, the tiger felt that the qi change in its surroundings. There was a slight pressure coming from all directions.

Even if the tiger lacked intelligence, it can feel the suppressing energy. It was in a life or death situation right now so his senses became sharper, just like a wild animal.

It began to feel fear. It immediately stood up and tried to run out of this invisible cage.

But how can it be so simple?

The screen did not possess any offensive prowess and could not be maintained for a very long time.

However, it won't be easy for the beast to break it in such a short amount of time. Also, its legs were injured so it won't be able to do much anyways.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

As expected, the tiger continuously attacked the screen. However, every one of its attacks smashed into a screen as if there was an invisible wall in front of them. Its head started to bleed from being smashed into the screen. There was no way for it to break free.

Ye Zifeng didn't give it that much time either.

The tiger looked up and looked around. He discovered that the people responsible for the cage was Ye Xueyi and Han Xiuming.

Immediately, the tiger roared and let out its violet lightning. The lightning strikes moved like snakes towards the two of them!

"It's no use...." Ye Zifeng watched as the tiger try to attack and smiled.

"Feng Di, leave Kong Zhuo be and do what I told you to do. Go and protect Xueyi and Xiuming."

"I've been ready!"Feng Di smiled coquettishly and nodded.

Ye Xueyi was a little worried. Just a few moments ago, this woman was bad mouthing Ye Zifeng.... And now, it seemed as if her personality flipped 180 degrees. She didn't feel too good about her.

However, Ye Zifeng didn't care. Even though this Feng Di woman liked to scheme, who said that Ye Zifeng won't be able to use them?

Even Tang Feng, the slyest fox of the Ye clan was used by Ye Zifeng. This Feng Di was nothing compared to her.

In this group, as long as she doesn't offend Ye Zifeng that much, Ye Zifeng will look at what she does with one eye closed.

When Ye Xueyi was still thinking, Feng Di had already made her move.

"Go!"

Feng Di and the other guy was in the 6th stage of qi refining. They

immediately turned the qi that she had been gathering up into a membrane and wrapped it around Ye Xueyi and Han Xiuming.

When the violet lightning hit the membrane, it was absorbed and weakened. It was then easily broken down by Xueyi and Xiuming.

The lightning had become weaker after it passed through the membrane so that's why Feng Di's qi was able to withstand it.

With this, under the protection of these two, Ye Xueyi and Han Xiuming can now concentrate on building the screen without having to worry about attacks.

The tiger was surprised by how prepared this group of people was. It looked back at Ye Zifeng. For the first time in its life, it felt fear towards a human.

If it wanted to live, it had to work harder.

Once, twice, ten times, even a hundred times!

It had been smashing against the screen for a long time right now. Every time, it was pushed back. Blood seeped out of its mouth. It only had the energy equal to someone in the 8th stage of qi refining now. It was getting tired.

However, he knows that the qi screen won't be able to stay up for too long anymore. When the screen breaks, it will be able to escape.

"Brother Zifeng, what should we do. If this continues, I'm afraid that we won't be able to hold it back any longer." Ye Xueyi exerted herself to keep the screen up and started to pant. She had a worried look on the face.

On the other side, Han Xiuming was feeling tired as well.

The qi screen used one's qi extensively. If a 9th stage common rank beast continuously attacked it as if its life was on the line, their qi will be depleted even faster.

Ye Zifeng looked at the qi screen and muttered, "The distance is about right……"

"Okay. Alright listen up. It's our turn to move!" Ye Zifeng commanded.

“Okay, brother Ye, I will follow you whatever you do. I’ll do as you command!” Qin Lang yelled out and nodded.

The other person was also someone from the Qin clan, called Qin Kong. He was also in the 7th stage of qi refining. When he heard Ye Zifeng’s command, he nodded as well.

“Good. Let’s move!” Ye Zifeng smiled and charged towards the tiger. When the other two saw this, the charged forward as well.

When a King personally moves, his men will move with him as well.

“Xueyi, open up a hole for us to enter!”

“Got it!” Ye Xueyi moved her fingers and a hole appeared in front of Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng turned very serious. After they entered, the immediately moved to the opposite side of the tiger.

“Close it immediately!”

Ye Xueyi was shocked. However, she decided to listen to his commands and immediately closed up the hole.

Ye Zifeng had the roles all planned out from the start. He had taken everyone’s ability and personality into consideration.

If Feng Di rushed in Ye Zifeng, she will definitely try to run if something goes wrong. With a hot blooded kid like Qin Lang, it will be easier for Ye Zifeng to work.

A wise leader should understand where to position his men to utilize them to the best of their abilities.

When the tiger saw that there were people in this cage with him, it roared. If it continued to attack the wall, he would be out very soon. But now, there were unwelcomed guests in here.

“Qin Lang, Qin Kong, attack it from the back. I’ll tank its attacks from the front!”

If any other person in the 6th stage of qi refining said that, no one would

believe them. However, Ye Zifeng said it with so much confidence that it was hard not the believe him.

"Got it!"

After saying that, the three of them split up.

Ye Zifeng had baited the tiger out before and now he was facing the tiger in the front again. This was basically slapping the tiger's face.

The tiger was so angry that it wanted to tear Ye Zifeng into a million pieces.

As a result, it gathered all of its lightning on its head and was going to stake it all in these strikes.

However, it realized that something was wrong. He should be able to control his lightning but now, since the cage was getting smaller and smaller, its lightning was trapped.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, "Hehe. That's why I said that the distance is about right....."

The tiger could not use its violet lightning anymore. This was because everything it activated it, it would go through the screen and become stuck outside.

While it was thinking, it looked up and saw Ye Zifeng's fist coming closer and closer.

"Bang!" Ye Zifeng's heavy fist slammed into the tiger's head.

The tiger was seeing stars. However, it came back to its senses pretty quickly. It quickly lifted its tail and swung it at Ye Zifeng. Ye Zifeng raised his arms and blocked the attacks. Not only did Ye Zifeng not fall, he stood perfectly still in his original spot. However, there was a bright red mark on his arms.

The tiger was feeling confused. Even though its strength was exhausted and it only had the strength of someone in the 8th stage of qi refining left, it should have been able to deal with Ye Zifeng easily.

It felt surprised. It thought that it didn't use enough strength so it tried

again.

This time, all Ye Zifeng did was groan a little. The marks on his arms created from this strike was lighter than before.

What the tiger didn't know was that Ye Zifeng had trained in the 9x gravity room before. He is a monster compared to people on the same stage as he was. Also, he was wearing the spirit tier Violet Gravel Armor as well.

The tiger angrily roared at Ye Zifeng. It was getting angrier and angrier as it pounced towards Ye Zifeng.

In this tiny space, Ye Zifeng could not dodge at all!

"Don't focus on me too much. Aren't you forgetting about something?

Ye Zifeng stood there without moving at all. A smile spread across his face.

"Do it!" Ye Zifeng commanded.

All of a suddenly from Qin Lang and Qin Kong appeared next to the tiger. They raised their palms and heavily struck down.

Chapter 164: Together as one.

The tiger screamed miserably.

Its energy was completely depleted. In addition, its legs were already hurt before. Right now, the tiger could barely stand.

Ye Zifeng didn't wait for the tiger to recover and started to attack immediately.

In a blink of an eye, he appeared on the tiger's back.

Ye Zifeng took out his dagger and raised it up high. He aimed his attack towards the tiger's head for a killing blow.

The tiger roared in fear. It was in pain. It exerted all of its remaining strength to try and shake Ye Zifeng off. Ye Zifeng could not stay put and was thrown off. He flew through the air and landed heavily on the floor.

"Brother Zifeng, are you alright?" Ye Xueyi was worried. If Han Xiuming didn't hold her back, she would have gone straight to where Ye Zifeng was to see how he was doing.

"Got him!" Ye Zifeng forced himself up and smiled.

"What?"

Everyone was startled as they looked at each other. They didn't know what was going on at all.

"Look. There's a string attached to the dagger!" As a spectator on the side, Shi Chen was watching Ye Zifeng's movements very carefully.

There was a silver light attached to the dagger. It was a long silver thread attached to it!

The thread was tightly wrapped around the tiger's head.

The tiger looked frozen as he stood there, staring at Ye Zifeng.

At that moment, Ye Zifeng smiled and pulled the dagger.

In an instant, the tiger's head flew into the air. Blood splattered all over the battlefield.

Everyone stared at Ye Zifeng in disbelief. They couldn't believe their eyes.

These strings of events that happened.... It was not simple at all. Ye Zifeng led them throughout the entire ordeal and made it very easy for them to accomplish their tasks.

Without them realizing, Ye Zifeng had become the nucleus of the group. He had taken on the responsibility to lead everyone. In addition to this, he personally killed the fierce beast.

Who else in the qi refining realm can do this?

Ye Xueyi's worried expression quickly turned into a joyous one.

She quickly removed the qi screen and ran towards Ye Zifeng.

"Brother Zifeng, so you're fine. You really scared me when you fell from the tiger!"

"I couldn't have done it without all of you." Ye Zifeng smiled and put the tiger head into his interspatial ring.

Hearing Ye Zifeng praise them made them feel good.

A lot of people with power only believe in themselves and like to fight alone. They would never be able to finish something that takes a team to complete.

"Big brother Ye! You're incredible! To be able to think of using threads to kill the tiger, I would never have thought about something like this!" Qin Lang laughed and praised Ye Zifeng.

"Yeah. The commands that you gave felt very natural as if we had control of the flow of the battle. I didn't believe that I was a part of this!"

Han Xiuming was working on the qi screen and watched everything from a far. He can feel that Ye Zifeng's commands were very on point and precise.

Thus, the first mission, the beast hunting mission, was completed. There were only two left.

No matter who it is, they can't help but be convinced by Ye Zifeng's ability.

Feng Di walked forward as well and looked at Ye Zifeng.

"Big brother Ye, I didn't think that you would be so strong while you're only in the 6th stage of qi refining. I have misjudged you before and I hope you don't mind."

Ye Xueyi stared at her and shook her head.

Ye Xueyi likes to hold a grudge. She will remember anyone who was mean to Ye Zifeng.

Feng Di and Kong Zhuo were the only ones who were badmouthing Ye Zifeng before.

All Ye Zifeng did was smiled at her, "Don't worry. That's nothing. I didn't even care about it at all."

He wasn't lying. He didn't care about anything that a woman like Feng Di said at all.

"Also, instead of talking with me here, shouldn't you be going to your brother Kong?"

Feng Di was startled and a complicated expression appeared in her eyes. She turned around and looked at Kong Zhuo.

"Cough.....Cough....."

The sound of Kong Zhuo coughing up blood was lingering in her ears. Anyone can tell that it was very serious. There will be repercussions after he recovers.

"Sister Di.....Can you give me some of your Qi Nurturing Pills? I want stabilize myself.....I'm afraid that I can't move with you guys anymore."

Feng Di looked at the half dying Kong Zhuo. He was obviously in the same realm as Ye Zifeng, but how can there be such a difference between them?

Thus she started to ignore him for a bit, "Brother Kong, don't you have

Qi Nurturing Pills do? Why would you want to use mine?"

"Your Qi Nurturing Pills are made by Miss Bingqian. It should be better than mine."

This was the first time that Kong Zhuo was rejected by Feng Di. It was unexpected.

"Hehe....." Feng Di coldly laughed and expressionlessly replied, "What kind of relationship do you think we have? Why would you not use your own things and want to use mine instead? Also, this is a team battle right now. If you won't be able to do anything afterwards, why should I give you my Qi Nurturing Pills?"

"You!" Kong Zhuo was filled with shock as he looked at her. He didn't think that she would change so quickly.

Feng Di giggled and retrieved a Qi Nurturing Pill from her robe. She then walked over to Ye Zifeng.

"Here. Big brother Ye, you were fighting the fierce beast for so long so you must be mentally and physically drained. Use this Qi Nurturing Pill and rest up."

While saying that, she had an amorous look in her eyes as she rubbed Ye Zifeng's arms. It was very charming.

Seeing this, Ye Xueyi didn't feel good at all.

"Brother Zifeng. Don't listen to her. This woman is definitely not a good person."

Ye Zifeng smiled and received the Qi Nurturing Pill.

"Brother Zifeng, you....." Ye Xueyi angrily looked at Ye Zifeng. She felt that he should not have taken the pill from her.

"That's the right thing to do. As expected from big brother Ye. Definitely worthy of being named the young genius of Leizhou City!"

When Feng Di starts praising people, her words will definitely make any normal people happy. After all, any guy would feel very content after being praised by super a beautiful woman.

She had always been doing this. She used her sweet words and body to attract many men. She just needs to look at them a few times and then touch them a few times. No matter how incredible the guy is, they would definitely surrender to her.

Even heroes have a weakness for the charms of a beautiful woman. These words were not false.

However, this time, the hero was Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng smiled back at Feng Di and then threw the Qi Nurturing pill to Kong Zhuo.

"You....." Feng Di was shocked. She didn't think that he would do something like this.

Kong Zhuo was shocked as well. He couldn't think of a reason why Ye Zifeng would treat him like this. He was the one who had been trying to suppress Ye Zifeng this entire time.

Kong Zhuo didn't think about it too much. It seems like this Ye Zifeng is a good guy. His face was filled with excitement.

"Thank you brother Ye. I, Kong Zhuo, will remember this favor for the rest of my life!"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's only a mere Qi Nurturing Pill. I won't help you completely recover. But, I, Ye Zifeng, won't abandon anyone. As long as you are a part of my group, I will save you!"

Hearing this, everyone else became excited. How many people were like Ye Zifeng who would sacrifice themselves for others. How many leaders would care for their subordinates these days? It was very fortunate that they met with Ye Zifeng."

"Big brother Ye, when I was assigned into this group, I thought that it was my bad luck. But now, I realized that I was wrong. I really regret not meeting you earlier." Qin Lang shook his head and bitterly laughed.

"Yeah. Big brother Ye really cares for his team members. I admire you! I will definitely listen to you commands from now on and not talk back at

all!

“I’ve decided. I will listen to big brother Ye’s commands as well!”

Ye Xueyi smiled, “Me too!”

Ye Zifeng’s plan was simple. If he can offend a woman who meant nothing to him to win the trust of his teammates, then he will definitely do it!

He smiled and then looked at everyone, “Since everyone is willing to listen to me, then before we start the second mission, I’ve decided to split up for a bit.....”

Chapter 165: Operating separately.

“Move separately? Brother Zifeng, what are you saying?”

Ye Xueyi had a look of doubt on her face.

“Yeah. Shouldn’t we carry our momentum and take down the second fierce beast of the mission?”

The other people were shocked as well.

“Could it be that big brother Ye is taking my injuries into consideration and waiting for me to recover?” Kong Zhuo coughed and looked at Ye Zifeng with bright eyes. He was just thrown away by his woman and was feeling down.

Ye Zifeng was stunned. He didn’t think that Kong Zhuo’s face would be so thick. Ye Zifeng was using him to boost everyone’s morales and Kong Zhuo actually thought he was being real?

Whatever. It’s fine. It can be used as an excuse.

Ye Zifeng looked over at him and nodded, “Right. Brother Kong, you’re injuries are very severe. If you don’t rest up properly, it will have a lingering effect on your future. We shouldn’t start the second mission so hastily. If we don’t take your injuries into consideration, we’ll be seen as cold hearted people!”

Ye Zifeng then looked at everyone else, “Thus, I suggest that we wait for him to recover a bit before we do anything.”

“This.....” Everyone looked at each other.

Kong Zhuo’s eyes lit up. He was very grateful towards Ye Zifeng. He really wanted to dig a hole right now and crawl into it for bad mouthing Ye Zifeng before.

Qin Lang sighed. He looked over at Kong Zhuo and then at Ye Zifeng.

“Big brother Ye, I feel like you’re making a lot of sense. However, we only have five days to finish the three missions. I’m afraid that we might not make it if we waste our time...”

He saw how Ye Zifeng bargained and tricked Elder Lin into giving them 6x the reward. His blood was boiling. He wanted to finish the mission and receive the reward. He didn't want to lose out just because he had to wait for someone else.

"Don't worry. I have my plans. It'll only take one day at most. It should give us enough time to rest up, recover and prepare. We'll go and hunt the second beast tomorrow morning. How about that?" Ye Zifeng replied.

"One day....Hmm. That's fine. If it's only for one day, then I don't see a problem with that." Qin Lang nodded.

Using this one day's time to reorganize themselves. That's not a bad idea.

Everyone looked at each other. It was getting pretty late so it might be a bad idea to go find and hunt the second fierce beast right now. So they accepted Ye Zifeng's proposal and started to rest up.

Amongst all the people here, only Feng Di's face was pale. She was feeling very complicated. It was false to say that she didn't have feelings for Kong Zhuo. However, she didn't know how Ye Zifeng was able to resist her charms. This made her feel a little thwarted.

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Okay. Everyone can do whatever they want and operate separately. But don't go too far. Tomorrow morning, I will be here waiting for everyone."

.....

A few moments later.

"Brother Zifeng, Brother Zifeng, hold on. Don't walk so fast!" Ye Xueyi's called out behind Ye Zifeng while panting.

Ye Zifeng looked back, "Didn't I say that we were operating separately? Why are you following me?"

"What do you mean operating separately? You're obviously hiding something. Even if other people can't see through you, do you think that your sister won't be able to see through you?"

“What do you mean?” Ye Zifeng curiously looked at her.

Ye Xueyi pursed her lips and lightly smiled.

“That Kong Zhuo. If it was the normal you, you would have definitely punished him. Right now, you didn’t care about it at all. Talking like you’re actually waiting for him to feel better. Even if you kill me, I won’t believe that you would be so kind.”

Ye Zifeng shook his head and laughed. He didn’t think that he couldn’t hide his true face from this little girl.

After all, he crossed over into this world and no one should know his habits. It seems like she somewhat guess what’s going on.

“Alright Xueyi. You’re sister. Even if i’m lying to others, I won’t lie to you. Remember the profound tier golden marrow pill from before?”

Ye Xueyi nodded and smiled, “Of course, brother Zifeng gifted it to me!:

She suddenly thought of something and then shockingly looked at him.

“Brother Zifeng..... You’re not thinking about.....”

Ye Zifeng smiled and opened up his right hand. He was grabbing onto a profound tier golden marrow pill.

Ye Zifeng then nodded, “That’s right. I wanted to take the pill and breakthrough!”

If it was anyone else, Ye Zifeng would not have told them about his plan. However, he can’t lie to his family. He’ll say all that he can say.

“God.... Brother Zifeng, are you for real? Do you know where we are? What if a fierce beast attacks you while you’re breaking through?”

Ye Xueyi’s was worried. It is very dangerous for someone to try and breakthrough here!

“Don’t worry about it. I know the topography of this area very well. I know a quiet place without any fierce beasts.”

Ye Zifeng laughed and continued to walk.

“No way. Isn’t this your first time here? How can you be so familiar with

this place?" Ye Xueyi furrowed her brows and followed.

Before the mission started, Ye Zifeng had forced Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin to tell him everything about the missions in the Jufeng Pavilion. However, he didn't want anyone to know that he was there. Two simple words, "Jufeng Pavilion" can cause a big misunderstanding. Even if you die, you won't be able to clear the misunderstandings.

Ye Zifeng smiled mysteriously, "This....I'll tell you some time later on."

"Ai....Okay. But I'm still worried about you. I'll stand guard while you break through." Ye Xueyi turned very serious.

"Alright, you can come with me. But instead of guarding me, you should use the pill too. Don't you want to break through with me?"

Ye Zifeng thought about it and finally smiled.

"Break through together? This....."

Ye Xueyi was startled. She was feeling nervous.

If they both tried to break through to the next stage at the same time, then they can't protect each other. But this breaking through together thing.....it's what dao partners do.....

She didn't think that he brother would be so straightforward and actually want to break through together with his little sister. Is he being stupid or is he trying to hint at something???

Ye Xueyi's cheeks turned red as she looked over at Ye Zifeng. She wanted to see what he was thinking but couldn't see through him at all.

"What? You don't want to? That's fine with me....."

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and looked at Xueyi. Isn't this just breaking through together? What is she thinking so much about? Maybe Ye Xueyi was a scaredy cat and wants someone to guard her.

"I do. I do. Of course I do!" Ye Xueyi quickly nodded.

"Alright. Then follow me. I know a place where nothing will bother us."

Ye Zifeng's expression turned serious as he started to move again. After

walking for awhile, they stopped in front of a cave.

Ye Zifeng's sense of direction was very good. With the Wang brothers' descriptions and the map, he found this place easily.

Ye Zifeng retrieved two candles from his interspatial ring and lit them up. He then gave one to Ye Xueyi and then walked into the cave.

The cave was filled with dried up branches and felt very dusky. Whenever Ye Xueyi thought about breaking through together, she would start to shake.

"Xueyi, why are you so nervous?" Ye Zifeng saw the shaking candle and confusingly asked.

"I've never broken through together with anyone before! For my first time to be with brother Zifeng, how can I not be nervous?" Ye Xueyi's face was completely red by now.

Ye Zifeng scratched his head, "That....."

Why is she nervous over something so trivial? Maybe it's because she had never used a profound tier pill before.

After a while, Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped.

"Alright. Xueyi, you stay here. I'll be going ahead.When you use the profound tier golden marrow pill, remember to lick it and not swallow it whole. Do you understand?" Ye Zifeng gave her a stern look.

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi was shocked and stopped moving as well.

"Brother Zifeng, didn't you say that we were going to breakthrough together?"

Ye Zifeng nodded, "Yeah. We're together in this cave. You can stay here and I'll go choose my spot. Aren't we still breaking through together in this cave?"

"You....."

Ye Xueyi felt as if her heart dropped and shattered all over the floor. An angry expression appeared on her face but she couldn't tell him why she

was angry. All she could do was stand there and be angry.

"If you need anything, just yell out. I'll be close by...."

Chapter 166: Breaking through to the 7th stage of qi refining

“Even if i need anything, I won’t look for you!”

Ye Xueyi crooned with an angry look on her face. She watched with a disappointed look as her brother walked further and further away.

However, her heart that was beating crazy fast started to calm down.

After all, they were siblings. That’s what Ye Xueyi had been telling herself. However, she started thinking about something and her face started to turn red again.

.....

Ye Zifeng held the candle in front of himself as he continued to move forward. After a while, he finally stopped.

In this place, he can finally have some peace and quiet as he trains and breakthrough while also being close to Xueyi.

Thus, he put the candle on the ground and took a good look at the pill in his hands.

In the qi refining stage, one can at most use the same ability increasing pill three times. He had used one already so now he can only use two more.

“Good thing I had one already so I have some resistance against the pill. How about I try something new this time.”

Ye Zifeng sat down and looked at the pill. He prepared himself and then swallowed the pill whole!

Licking the pill is much safer but you will lose out on a lot of the essence from the pill. Swallowing it whole makes sure that you do not lose any affects of the pill.

Since he can only take three pills, he might as well get the most out of it.

“Ah!” Ye Zifeng’s entire body feels like as if there were thousand of ants

invading it. From his bones to his flesh, not a single part was spared from pain.

The Qi from the golden marrow pill surrounded his entire body and slowly entered him. Ye Zifeng felt as if his entire body was exploding.

“Shit. Not good. This is too dangerous!”

Ye Zifeng had used the pill before so the effects won’t be as strong.

However, while only in the 6th stage of qi refining, he actually swallowed a profound tier pill whole. If Elder Shen or Elder Zhao found out about this, they would definitely lose their minds.

Who in the world would do something as stupid as this? No one in the world would do something like this while they were in the qi refining realm!

Ye Zifeng frowned as he watched his veins protruded from his skin as if they were about to pop out. He took a deep breath and sent his qi towards the red veins in his arms.

When he did that, his arm started to glow. He was activating the power of his martial spirit.

No matter how injured he was, he would be healed up the martial spirit.

And as expected, the veins on Ye Zifeng’s arms slowly returned to normal and he felt relaxed. All of a sudden, he felt a thump! in his heart.

As it turns out, the veins in his arms were expanding in his arms. The martial’s spirit’s power could stop it from protruding but not stop it from expanding. If this continues, all of his veins will explode.

Ye Zifeng furrowed his brows and took out the Spirit Amassing Pearl. His then stored a large portion of his qi into the pearl.

Qi flowed into the pearl like blood water and filled it up to the max.

The pearl was able to absorb a large portion of the qi from the profound tier golden marrow pill, which allowed Ye Zifeng to recover a bit.

Also, the qi that was absorbed by the Spirit Amassing Pearl will be

cleansed. When it comes back out, it will be of much higher quality!

After a long time, Ye Zifeng let out a long sigh and smiled.

He can feel it. After all the pain, he felt that his body had changed a lot. He felt very content with the results.

“If one pill can bring me to the peak of the 6th stage of qi refining. Then..... What if I eat one more?”

Ye Zifeng calmed himself down again and wiped his sweat away.

He then took out another profound tier golden marrow pill from his interspatial ring.

If other people want a pill like this, they would have to move their family’s fortunes to obtain it.

Not many clans in Leizhou City can afford something like this. However, since Ye Zifeng can make it himself, he doesn’t really have to bother his family.

“Man. Back in the days, with the ghost flames supplementing my willpower, I can eat seven pills in a day. But right now, I’m in the qi refining realm..... I should be able to eat two pills in a day right.....?”

Ye Zifeng sighed and thought about it. After not much deliberation, he opened up his mouth and swallowed the pill whole.

This time, a dark red light appeared around Ye Zifeng’s body as qi started to enter his body.

Banging sounds can be heard from his body as if the qi was exploding in his body. Every time the qi exploded, Ye Zifeng would feel as if his entire body was being hit.

He didn’t dare to fight against the qi and sent everything towards his arms.

“Ghost Shadow, didn’t you want me to nourish you with some high quality pills? Alright. You can take as much as you want!”

Ye Zifeng’s arms started to glow bright red as it continuously absorbed

the qi from the pill.

"Is that enough? If not, let me give you more!"

Ye Zifeng's skin started to explode and peel as fresh red blood continuously leaked out.

Ye Zifeng screamed. He could not contain the power anymore.

If he can't hold out anymore, then he shouldn't have to.

He gathered all of the qi in his body and then condensed it into the death qi. His arms started to glow again and the qi monster appeared.

"This....."

Ye Zifeng stared at the qi monster with his jaws dropped.

This qi monster.... He had seen it before.... It appeared when he fought against Wang Ruoxing and Jin Peng. It seems like this the the embodiment of the martial spirit.

Right now, the qi monster was on his palm with its back facing Ye Zifeng. This was the first time it had appeared while he was training.

He remembered that the only times that the qi monster would appear was when he was in a bad situation.

Right now, Ye Zifeng couldn't tell what this thing was going to do. However, he didn't have time to worry about it as he had to concentrate to absorb the qi from the golden marrow pill.

He gathered his energy and endured the pain. His entire body was glowing. The qi monster on his palm looked like it was growing bigger and bigger Ye Zifeng looked at the growing qi monster in shock and laughed. The pain on his body was diminishing.

"I don't believe that I can't handle this amount of pain!"

He knew that his martial spirit had absorbed most of the qi from the pill. There was no reason why he can't contain the rest of the qi in his body.

Streams of qi continuously wreck havoc inside of Ye Zifeng's body,

causing him to grit his teeth in pain.

Fifteen minutes passed..... Thirty minutes passed.....

His entire body felt as if it was on fire and continued to glow. From another person's perspective, it looked as if he was actually on fire.

As for the qi monster, it continued to grow. Suddenly, it turned transparent and slowly disappeared.

"Made it!"

After a while, Ye Zifeng's eyes opened up as he leapt up from the floor. The pain on his body had dissipated.

He can feel that his body had gone through an enormous change. As for what the martial spirit went through..... He'll have to ask it the next time he sees it.

Right now, Ye Zifeng felt very happy. He let out a long sigh and smiled.

"Haha. This profound tier golden marrow pill is really something. Eating one makes up for around half a year of training! I've finally reached the 7th stage of qi refining!"

He wanted to breakthrough while he stayed in the Liu clan but he had delayed it until now. Ye Zifeng felt ecstatic.

At the same time, a frightened scream sounded.

"Brother Zifeng! Come save me! Quick!"

Chapter 167: A Fierce Beast with Intelligence!

Ye Zifeng's expression changed immediately. His heart shook. There shouldn't be any fierce beasts in the vicinity of the cave at all.

However, he didn't have time to think about any of this.

He quickly moved his qi towards his legs and ran towards the direction of Ye Xueyi's voice.

"Xueyi, where are you?"

Ye Zifeng ran in a circle and looked all around. He couldn't find where his sister was at all!

"雪仪！"

"Xueyi!"

He had actually placed a marker on where Ye Xueyi was, just in case something like this happens. However, he is already long passed the marker and could not find any traces of his sister!

"Brother Zifeng! Quick. Come save me! I can't hold on any longer!"

Ye Xueyi's voice continuously echoed throughout the cave. However, if one calmed down and listened, one would be able to find the direction of the sound.

Ye Zifeng frowned and stopped moving. He looked up and and looked at the surroundings of the cave. His expression became very stern.

"Xueyi, keep talking!" Ye Zifeng held his breath and concentrated.

"Brother Zifeng! I don't know where I am! It's pitch black here. I feel a lot of snakes. Come save me!"

Ye Zifeng condensed a flame with his finger and looked around the cave.

Suddenly, it seems like he discovered something as his eyes lit up, "Huh..... It's here?"

He took a deep breath and walked towards a rock. He gathered his lightning energy in his fist and fiercely smashed the rock.

“Bang!” The rock instantly turned into dust. Behind the rock, a hidden passage appeared.

Just before, he heard that there was wind coming from behind the rock so he decided to break it down.

After breaking it down, a hidden passage actually appeared!

“Xueyi! Are you here? Xueyi!”

The weak sound became weaker and weaker.

“Brother Zifeng.....”

Ye Zifeng cursed. He didn’t think that this cave would be so weird. If something actually happens to his sister, then when he goes back, he will definitely make Wang Lin and Wang Ruoxing pay the price.

But he knows that the Wang brothers didn’t lie to him. They probably didn’t know what’s in the cave themselves since they’ve never actually been here either.

“Xueyi, hold on. I’m coming right now!”

Fear spread across Ye Zifeng’s face. There was no time to ponder. How could he have anticipated that something like this would happen? If something happens to his sister, then he will blame himself for the rest of his life.

He continuously walked down the passage. He didn’t care where it leads to. Right now, he had to save his sister.

The passage was deathly silent.

When Ye Zifeng condensed his flame again to look around, all he saw were the corpses of many fierce beasts lying on the floor. Every time Ye Zifeng took a step, a crunching sound could be heard.

If it was any other person in the qi refining stage that saw this horrific scene, they would be scared shitless and ran already.

However, Ye Zifeng won't run even if these were human corpses. Right now, his sister was in danger.He won't leave her to die.

This was because Ye Xueyi was the relative that showed him the mosts kindness after he crossed over. He brought her here. It was his fault. He can't leave her and run away right now.

He quickly treaded down the passage and came to a fairly flat area. It was gloomy and damp with rocks lined up everywhere. It was an exceptionally good place for insects and bugs to breed.

He made his flame brighter and looked around. He found Ye Xueyi in the corner being surrounded by snakes.

"Brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi's eyes lit up. She looked as if she was about to cry.

Ever since she was little, she had always been afraid of the dark. Being stranded in this weird dark and gloomy place for a while, she felt as if half her life had passed. Thus when she saw Ye Zifeng, she couldn't help but yell out.

"You were perfectly alright using the pill up there. How did you get down here?" Ye Zifeng let out a sigh of relief. Seeing that she was fine, he felt a bit better.

"I don't know either. After using the profound tier golden marrow pill, my entire body was in pain and I fainted. After I woke up, I was already here."

Ye Zifeng hesitated and then asked, "Then... Are you hurt anywhere?"

"I'm not hurt.... Just scared. These snakes have been surrounding me. However they didn't attack me. I'm also too scared to attack them either. I don't want to offend them."

'This...." Ye Zifeng frowned and started to think.

This was very strange. If there were really fierce beasts in here, then they would've attacked when Ye Xueyi was absorbing the qi from the pill. Why would they wait until Ye Xueyi wakes up?

Also, it didn't attack her either. It had some snakes watch over her instead.

"Could it be……"

Ye Zifeng had a bad feeling about this.

Could this all be a part of the fierce beast's plan? It first captured Ye Xueyi and then lured himself here!

"Not good. We were tricked!"

Ye Zifeng had his mind of saving his sister so he didn't think about much. He didn't think of the possibility that there was a demonic beast with intelligence in the cave. After all, fierce beasts are not this smart!

When he thought about this, cold sweat ran down his back.

He cursed inwards and walked a few steps forward. Suddenly the sound of wind whistled behind him. He was right. The demonic beast was finally making its move.

A giant python around the size of a tree appeared and started to attack Ye Zifeng's back!

"Brother Zifeng, watch out!" Ye Xueyi saw this and started to fret.

Ye Zifeng was prepared for this. His reaction speed was very quick as he tumbled away towards a rock.

The python struck the area where Ye Zifeng was standing and created a mini crater.

If Ye Zifeng was even a step slower, then there would only be one ending.

"Run!" Ye Zifeng yelled out. He knew that this was the snake demon's territory. It won't be good if they fought here. There was no choice. Even if they had to fight, he wouldn't want to fight here.

"Okat!"

Ye Xueyi quickly answered. She wanted to help her brother out, but when the python attacked, the snakes that were standing still attacked Ye

Xueyi as if they received a command.

When it came down to it, Ye Xueyi did away with her fears and gritted her teeth. She worked her qi and created a barrier. With the small snakes' ability, they could not break the barrier at all.

The two of them looked at each other and then immediately ran towards the entrance of the passage.

The python had lured Ye Zifeng here with great difficulty and wanted to have a good meal. It definitely wouldn't want him to run away. The python struck out its tail and struck the entrance to the passage.

Rocks fell onto the ground and dust flew everywhere.

The two of them dodged the attack and quickly jumped up into the entrance of the passage. They immediately ran for it and returned to where they were before. However, they didn't run too far. They found a good area and rested for a bit.

If they were comparing speed, the two of them would definitely not be able to outrun the giant python demon. It's better if they found a place to hide and rest first.

The place they were in now was very narrow. It would be hard for the giant python to enter, thus allowing the two of them to rest up.

Ye Zifeng sensed the qi in the air and felt that something was different. He then shockingly asked, "Xueyi, your qi..... Did you also break through? Did you reach the 9th stage of qi refining?"

Hearing this, Ye Xueyi stared at Ye Zifeng like a wooden doll.

After she used the golden marrow pill, she fainted. And when she woke up, she saw all these snakes around her and didn't have time to check up on herself.

But now, after being reminded by Ye Zifeng, she checked her qi.

"This..... I think so! Wow. This profound tier golden marrow pill is spectacular! It actually helped me break through into the 9th stage of qi refining!"

A happy and joyous expression appeared on her face. She was going to bitterly train for half a year and then try to break into the 9th stage of qi refining. But now, with Ye Zifeng's pill, she had actually broken through!

But then, she thought about something and looked at Ye Zifeng, "Hold on. Brother Zifeng, did you say "also"? It seems like you've increased your cultivation too. I remember that you told me that you were in the middle 6th stage of qi refining. Could you have reached the peak of the 6th stage already?"

Chapter 168: Don't blame me for being ruthless

"No. I've already reached the 7th stage of qi refining."

Ye Zifeng replied in a calm voice while smiling.

"Say what? 7th stage of qi refining?" Ye Xueyi's eyes widened. She was filled with shock.

"That's right." Ye Zifeng replied calmly again.

To explain the situation, he continued, "It's because I used two profound tier golden marrow pills just now. I also swallowed it instead of licking it and did not waste any of the pill's essence. That's why i was able to break through!"

All he wanted was to do was explain what happened. He didn't anticipate for Ye Xueyi to have such an reaction to his words. It looked as if explaining made it worse.

"Two....Two profound tier golden marrow pills? And you swallowed them whole????? Brother Zifeng, how are you even alive right now?"

Ye Xueyi felt dizzy as she looked at him with eyes filled with disbelief.

Just a while ago, she used a golden marrow pill and was captured by the snakes because she fainted due to the immense pain. She felt as if she was dying due to the pain after using the pill.

The memory of the pain lingered in Ye Xueyi's mind, making her tremble as she recalled the event.

From Ye Xueyi's perspective, no one can endure so much pain and yet Ye Zifeng did it. Is Ye Zifeng even human?

Ye Zifeng stood there without saying anything. His expression suddenly became very serious. He can see the giant python coming his way.

"Okay. Let's not talk about anything else right now. We should focus on the enemy. Even though it is not as strong as the violet lightning flying

tiger, we still have to be careful and not underestimate it."

"Okay." Ye Xueyi smiled and looked over at her brother. She felt really happy when Ye Zifeng rushed to save her before.

Therefore, she will do whatever her brother wants and make him happy.

Amongst common tier beasts, there ARE some who have intelligence. However, there aren't many. This demonic beast is one of those rare entities.

However, it doesn't have much intelligence. Otherwise, it would've blocked all paths of escape right after Ye Zifeng entered.

It knows how to lure its prey but it doesn't know the fact that it should trap the prey before slowly killing it. It only shows how basic the python's intelligence is.

"Actually, this is a good chance for us to practice after our breakthrough. It's a pretty good opponent for us."

Ye Zifeng showed a confident smile.

"Brother Zifeng.... You're really planning to fight it head on?"

They can't underestimate the opponent, but they can't underestimate themselves either. Since they were able to escape from the python's grasp before, it shows that the python cannot hold them back. Since it wasn't strong enough to hold them back, it shouldn't be able to beat them either.

"From what I can see, this python was only looking for food in this cave and doesn't actually live here. It doesn't have much of an advantage here either. We can fight it."

Ye Zifeng remembered what Wang Ruoxing and Wang Lin told him. There shouldn't be any strong beasts around here.

However, there are a lot of low level fierce beasts around here.

Thinking about it, it wasn't weird for a demonic beast with intelligence to appear here while looking for food.

When the giant python found the two of them, it immediately rushed

forward with its mouth open, wanting to swallow them both in one go.

It was very fast. However, the giant python suddenly realize that it could not get to the two of them because it was too big. I continuously slammed its body on the wall, slowly breaking it down.

Seeing how the python really wants to eat then, Ye Xueyi felt a bit scared.

Even though she wasn't a pampered little princess who always have someone protecting her, she had never been in a life or death battle. She became a bit nervous after seeing what the python was doing.

"Brother Zifeng, it's easier said than done..... How can we fight against the python? I'm scared....."

Ye Zifeng smiled. He was different from Xueyi. He had experience many life or death experience in his past life and in this life. A mere giant python at the 9th stage of qi refining won't be able to threaten his life.

The python isn't that easy to beat but if they want to run, Ye Zifeng can employ several thousand methods to escape. He didn't do so because he was confident that he can beat it.

"Don't worry. This python can't kill you. It has already lost its one and only chance to."

Ye Zifeng's eyes lit up as he continued to talk, "Xueyi, start to gather your qi. I'll create an opportunity for you to strike. You're already in the 9th stage of qi refining. This won't be that hard."

"Okay!" Ye Xueyi nodded. She immediately closed her eyes and clasped her hands together to gather qi.

Ye Zifeng laughed and looked at the python. He moved forward to meet the python with his fists.

"Brother Zifeng....." Ye Xueyi looked at her brother brother and felt worried. However, she followed his instructions and gathered qi into her palms.

The python's body continuously slammed against the entrance. When it

finally entered the hole, it saw Ye Zifeng rushing towards it. It was stunned at Ye Zifeng's action for a bit.

Ye Zifeng took advantage of this and mounted the giant python. He quickly retrieved his dagger and stabbed downwards.

However, the python regained its senses and reacted very quickly. It escaped the hole very quickly and before Ye Zifeng's dagger could stab downwards, it quickly turned its head around and tried to take a bite at Ye Zifeng.

The python opened its mouth. If it wanted, it could swallow Ye Zifeng whole right now.

"Watch out brother Zifeng!" Ye Xueyi kept an eye on Ye Zifeng as she gathered her qi. Compared with beating the python, her brother's life was more important.

"Don't worry. It can't kill me!"

Ye Zifeng smiled. He threw his dagger towards the wall. With swift movements, he pulled onto the thread that was attached to his dagger and flew off the python's back, dodging its attack.

Seeing that its attack had failed, the python started to fret a little. It saw that Ye Xueyi wasn't moving at all so it ignored her to follow Ye Zifeng.

"Hehe....I've been waiting for you to follow up!"

Ye Zifeng's arms lit up and death qi gathered around him. Along with his lightning qi, the giant qi monster appeared from his palms.

"Brother Zifeng, this is....." Ye Xueyi was shocked. She was different from Liu Bingqian. This was the first time that she had seen the qi monster. It was normal for her to react this way.

This was the first time that Ye Zifeng had consciously summoned the giant qi monster. He was a bit shocked himself.

"It seems that if I get stronger and feed you some more qi then you'll grow bigger too huh."

If someone saw this scary looking monster come out of Ye Zifeng's

palms, they would definitely try to cut Ye Zifeng's arms off immediately.

When the qi monster appeared, its desolate, tyrannical, and murderous aura filled the entire cave. When it saw the python, it looked as if it had found its prey. It immediately jumped out of Ye Zifeng's palms and flew towards the python with its mouth open.

The poor python was charging at Ye Zifeng with great speed and could not stop in time. It was swallowed by the qi monster.

"This....." Ye Xueyi didn't understand what was happening and stared at the scene in front of her.

A chewing sound echoed throughout the cave.

After a while, the qi monster dissipated into the air as if it never existed.

The giant python appeared again with wounds all over its body. It's body looked like it was rotting as well.

The energy that the qi monster sucked out of the python transferred over to Ye Zifeng!

Unlike before, this time Ye Zifeng can feel the energy entering his body. He can feel the qi cycling throughout his body. He felt as if his qi had been replenished as if he had eaten a Qi Nurturing Pill.

"So that's how it is. Whenever the qi monster sucks the energy out of someone, it gives a portion of it to me."

This was great news to him. If he can replenish his qi this way, then he won't need to use qi replenishing pills like the Qi Nurturing Pill anymore.

The python's body became twisted as it started to twitch like a fish out of water. It was in a lot of pain. It looked at Ye Zifeng and started to retreat.

"Old chap, don't blame me for being so ruthless. You started it."

Ye Zifeng ran his thumb across his throat telling the python that he was going to behead it.

Behind the giant python, a brilliant light shined.

Chapter 169: Just as I thought!

Right when Ye Zifeng was doing his beheading motion, Ye Xueyi finished gathering her qi.

The defenseless python was struck by Ye Xueyi and gaping hole appeared. Blood splattered in the air and dyed the walls red.

“No way……I actually beat a 9th stage common rank demonic beast?”

Ye Xueyi looked at her own hands in amazement.

Actually, all she did was land the final blow. Ye Zifeng had done everything else.

However, Ye Zifeng won’t argue with her and smiled.

“Yeah. Xueyi, congratulations! You’re in the 9th stage of qi refining now. It isn’t weird that you can kill this giant python with one strike! This is your true strength!”

“True strength….” Ye Xueyi muttered the two words over and over again while smiling.

She knew that it was all because of Ye Zifeng’s profound tier golden marrow pill that she was able to increase her strength so quickly.

“Brother Zifeng! It’s all thanks to you. I don’t even know how to thank you!” Her eyes lit up and wholeheartedly thanked Ye Zifeng.

“We’re family! It’s normal for me to help you out. You don’t have to be polite!”

“I….Okay! I got it!” Ye Xueyi smiled in joy.

Just a few months ago, when Ye Zifeng was still trash, he had received quite a bit of help from Ye Xueyi. Every time he tried to thank her, she would say the same thing to him.

And now, the roles were reversed. It was his turn to help his little sister!

Ye Zifeng smiled and walked over to the giant python.

“Brother Zifeng. What are you doing. Be careful. That python shouldn’t

be dead yet."

After receiving an attack from both of them, the python was almost dead.

"I know. Go rest over there. I want to try something."

Ye Zifeng smiled and gathered his qi around his arms again.

He wanted to summon the qi monster again. He wanted to see if it could absorb anymore of the python's energy.

However, this time, only half of the qi monster formed before dissipating.

Ye Zifeng raised his brow, "That's strange..... How come it only works sometimes."

When fighting, the most important thing isn't how strong one can be but how consistent one's strength can be.

If Ye Zifeng can't summon the qi monster at a crucial moment, then it will be very bad.

He thought about the times when the qi monster appeared. It came out either when he was severely injured or when he ate some pills and his qi was replenished.

The first method is no good. He can't get himself severely injured every battle in order to summon the qi monster. As for the second method.....

An idea suddenly appeared in Ye Zifeng's mind.

"Hm. How about I replenish my qi with a Qi Nurturing Pill."

He retrieved a qi nurturing pill from his interspatial ring and immediately swallowed it.

An abundant amount of qi entered Ye Zifeng's body from the pill.

He took a deep breath and tried to summon the qi monster again.

"Just as I thought!"

After he absorbed the qi from the Qi Nurturing Pill, he had enough qi to

summon the qi monster again.

After that the qi monster looked at the giant python. It saw that its skin was tearing apart and that it was rotting already so it became uninterested in it. It stood on Ye Zifeng's palms without moving at all.

"Little guy. So you're picky too huh..." Ye Zifeng smiled and shook his head.

After a while, the qi monster dissipated into the air again.

"Whatever. Well now that I know that I can summon the qi monster by using one Qi Nurturing Pill and that it can last around the time it takes half an incense to burn."

The qi monster likes to absorb stuff so Ye Zifeng thought that it would be appropriate to feed it Qi Nurturing Pills and he was right.

However, other than alchemists like Ye Zifeng, who would be so wasteful and let the qi monster eat Qi Nurturing Pills like dog food.

Even though the Qi Nurturing Pill wasn't something of high quality, its cost will add up over time.

Ye Xueyi was sitting there and felt a bit bored so she started asking some questions.

"Brother Zifeng. What is that evil qi monster? I've never seen anyone use a move like that before!"

Ye Zifeng smiled back, "Actually. I don't really know what it is. Maybe I'll find out when I break through into the Martial Disciple realm."

Ye Xueyi nodded, "En. I believe that it won't be long before you do so! I remember that when you fought with Wang Lin, you were still in the 2nd stage of qi refining. I've only raised by one stage since then and you've already raised by five! With your speed, reaching the Martial Disciple realm should be very easy!"

Within a month, her brother had gone through a dramatic change. It left her in awe.

"Okay. let's not talk about this. Let me go get the python's gall and I'll

bring you out."

"Really? Okay!"

When Ye Xueyi heard that they were finally leaving the cave, she became very happy.

However, when she thought about rejoining the others again she sighed. She wanted to be alone with her brother for a little longer.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng quickly finished off the python and cleaned its corpse out. He retrieved the valuable parts and threw it into his interspatial ring.

He then looked at the corpse in surprise, "Wow. This demonic beast actually formed a monster core already!"

A monster core is the power source for any beast with intelligence. It would be used by people to forge weapons and sometimes as ingredients for alchemy.

Ye Zifeng condensed his common tier flame to illuminate the area. He found monster core shining brightly inside the python's corpse and dug it out.

He smiled at the little crystal and put it directly into his robe.

After doing that, he looked towards the direction to the entrance of the cave.

"Xueyi, it's time to leave."

.....

When they entered the cave, one was in the 6th stage of qi refining while the other was in the 8th stage of qi refining.

Now, one was in the 7th stage while the other was in the 9th stage. They were feeling very happy when they left.

"Brother Zifeng, at first I was worried for our group because we only have ten people and lacked someone in the 9th stage of qi refining. But now, I feel like we can make it to the end."

Ye Xueyi walked out with a confident look.

“Then how do you think the other team members would react to this?” Ye Zifeng chuckled and asked.

“They.....hehe.....” Ye Xueyi thought about it and giggled. She wanted to see the expression on their faces after they hear the news.

The two of them walked together and chatted. They were more confident in completing tomorrow’s mission.

Now they also have someone in the 9th stage of qi refining in their group. It made things a lot easier.

Suddenly, Ye Zifeng’s expression turned serious. He took out a spirit paper from his robes and looked down at it.

“Eh. Brother Zifeng. What’s wrong. Why did you suddenly stop talking?”

Ye Xueyi looked back at Ye Zifeng. At that time, Ye Zifeng had put the paper away already.

“I suddenly remembered that I needed to do something. Xueyi, go back first. I’ll be back in a bit.”

“Brother Zifeng, is something wrong? I can come help you too.....” Ye Xueyi didn’t know what was going on but wanted to help out.

“Be good and go back.” Ye Zifeng gave her a stern look and replied as if he was commanding her. His voice turned cold as well.

Ye Xueyi wanted to use this chance to have a good chat with her brother and become closer to him.

However, not only did she not get closer to him, he had to go away and do something without telling her what it is.

“Brother Zifeng.....”

“Go!” Ye Zifeng shouted.

Ye Xueyi turned around and pouted, “Then.... Fine! I’ll go!”

She walked a few steps and then turned around to looked at Ye Zifeng. After seeing that Ye Zifeng didn’t her to stay, she continued to walk

without looking back again.

Chapter 170: Top secret report!

When Ye Xueyi finally left the vicinity, Ye Zifeng took that piece of spirit paper out again and looked at it. Using his blood, he wrote down a few words. He then set the paper on fire.

A few moments later, the shrubs near where Ye Zifeng was standing started to shake. From it, an azure clothed male peaked out and looked around. Only when he made sure that no one was around did he finally appear.

The male was none other than Liu Yige.

Before the missions started, Ye Zifeng had given Liu Yige a stack of spirit papers and had him force himself into another team as a spy. Liu Yige would report back to him if there were any noteworthy news.

This was why Liu Yige came over looking for Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng frowned and then looked at him, “Didn’t I tell you to report back using the spirit papers? It’s better if we don’t meet so we can avoid any unnecessary suspicions.”

Liu Yige laughed, “Don’t worry. It’s late at night already. Everyone in the Xiao clan is already fast asleep. I took this chance to come over. No one will know.”

Liu Yige couldn’t join the Wang clan’s team so he had to join up with the Xiao clan.

“Alright….What’s so urgent that made you come look for me. Did something happen in the Xiao clan’s team?” Ye Zifeng stared at Liu Yige and asked.

Liu Yige nodded and replied, “The Xiao clan was unable to complete the first mission today. They have decided to team up with the Rong clan and do the second mission together.”

“Oh? Is that so? Well that’s not abnormal. It’s a good idea for two weak teams to ally with each other to finish up missions and overtake stronger teams. It’s not a bad idea at all.”

And... Did they decide on what mission they want to do?"

"What do you want to know that for? You're talking like you can do something about it." Liu Yige looked at Ye Zifeng with a look of disdain. It was the look that he usually gave Ye Zifeng before he got beaten up.

But when he looked into Ye Zifeng's eyes, he immediately shrank back and did not dare to question him.

"Just say it. I don't have time to play around with you."

"Okay....." Liu Yige bitterly smiled, "From what I know, they're going to hunt the 1st stage spirit rank Blazing Eagle.

"First stage spirit rank?"

Some ideas ran through Ye Zifeng's mind and a smile appeared on his face.

"And....Where are they supposedly finding it?"

Liu Yige rubbed his chin and then smiled, "That's the reason why I came over. It'll be hard to say things clearly over the spirit papers.

Liu Yige chuckled, "That's precisely the reason why I personally came over. It's better to explain it in person than to explain it over the spirit paper.

"Not necessarily." Ye Zifeng smiled back.

Every team had a map of the entire valley. Liu Yige could've told Ye Zifeng where it was and he would've known immediately.

Ye Zifeng had talked with the Wang brothers about the topography of the Scarlet Blood Valley for two entire days. He can't be more familiar with this place.

"But, since you came over, why don't you draw it out for me."

Ye Zifeng smiled and retrieved a spirit paper from his interspatial ring.

Liu Yige was shocked, "Wow young master Ye is so extravagant! A piece of spirit paper costs a whole gold coin and you're using it like it's worth nothing."

“If you don’t want it, then go grab a stick and draw it on the floor.” Ye Zifeng stared at him and started to put the paper away.

“I want. I want it. Of course I want to use it.” Liu Yige cried and quickly took the paper from his hands. It would be embarrassing if he had to draw on the dirt by using a stick.

While talking, he started to draw on the paper.

“I don’t know about the regions but..... The Xiao clan team’s region is right here, in this area..... and the Rong clan team’s region is over there.....”

“It looks like you guys aren’t that far away from here. It can be considered neighboring regions”

Ye Zifeng had thought about this. If they weren’t so close, then Liu Yige wouldn’t have been able to come over so quickly.

After talking about the big picture, he pointed at the area on the map in between the region of the two teams.

“Tomorrow morning, we’ll be hunting the Blazing Eagle here.”

Ye Zifeng nodded, “The Overhanging Wind Cliff huh. Definitely a place where flying type beasts reside.”

“How did you know this is the Overhanging Wind Cliff when i didn’t say anything yet?” Liu Yige’s jaw dropped in shock.

Ye Zifeng just smiled and didn’t explain anything.

“Okay. I got it. Tomorrow morning, at the Overhanging Wind Valley, the Xiao clan and Rong clan will team up to hunt a Blazing Eagle right?”

Liu Yige nodded quickly to confirm.

“But then again. What’s the point of asking all this? With your group’s strength, you can’t possibly do anything at all.” Liu Yige knew that Ye Zifeng’s group only has ten people. They’re also lacking someone in the 9th stage of qi refining as well.

They can barely keep themselves safe. Why would he care about other

people's business?

"Don't worry about it."

Liu Yige didn't mind and then smiled again, "How about I tell you about the team members of the two teams as well."

After Ye Zifeng nodded, he continued, "In the Xiao clan, only three people are considered strong. One is in the seventh stage of qi refining, the other in the eighth stage while the last one is in the 9th stage. As for the others, they're not much."

"How about the Rong clan....." Ye Zifeng asked.

"The Rong clan is just like you guys. Their strongest member is in the 8th stage of qi refining."

Ye Zifeng raised his brows and thought about something. He took a deep breath afterwards.

"Then....." Liu Yige smiled, "According to our agreement, as long as I act as a spy for you, then the problem from before...."

"Don't worry. I won't say anything about what happened last time. I won't tell the Liu clan's clan master. You can stay in the Liu clan." Ye Zifeng smiled and patted Liu Yige's back.

"Great!" Liu Yige smiled happily. As long as he can stay in the Liu clan, it doesn't matter if he offended the Xiao clan or the Rong clan. This was the reason why he was helping Ye Zifeng.

"Okay. I know what the situation is like now. You should go back first. They might suspect something if you're gone for too long." Ye Zifeng pointed towards the direction where Liu Yige came from, signaling for him to leave.

It's good that he got some information but he doesn't want to be exposed. If Liu Yige gets exposed, then he will have to come up with new plans.

Liu Yige thought the same as well. Even though everyone in the Xiao clan is asleep, they might wake up to go pee or something. If by some

chance someone sees that he was missing, that would be a big problem for him.

"Okay. Then I'm leaving first. Oh yeah. One more thing. Your body reeks of snake blood. Go clean it off or something. The smell is really strong." Liu Yige sniffed around and said.

"Snake blood?" Ye Zifeng was startled and then retrieved the giant python's monster core from his robe.

"You're probably talking about this right?"

"What is that? It's bright and clear. It's looks pretty neat." Liu Yige had never seen a monster core before and was surprised.

"This is a monster core....." Ye Zifeng nonchalantly answered.

"Monster core? Oh. A snake's monster core....." Liu Yige looked at it in awe. Suddenly, he looked up at Ye Zifeng with a shocked expression.

"What did you say?!"

He and the Xiao clan had been looking for the giant python for entire day. It seems like the python ran over to Ye Zifeng's region and was killed by him.

It was a good thing that Liu Yige wasn't someone from the Xiao clan and didn't care much about the results of the missions. If Xiao Mu found out about this, then he would definitely flip.

Liu Yige immediately started talking again, "Did you know that the Xiao clan's first mission was the kill the giant python?!"

Now he understood why he was so sensitive to the smell from the crystal. He had been looking for this thing the entire day.

"Oh? Now that's interesting....." Ye Zifeng laughed. He didn't think that something like this would happen.

From the looks of it, the demonic beast was lured over by the profound tier golden marrow pills. Since Ye Zifeng was carrying five profound tier golden marrow pills, he easily lured the giant python over.

“You call this interesting? If anyone from the Xiao clan finds out, they will definitely fight you for it!” Liu Yige couldn’t help but sympathize with the people from the Xiao clan. They were unlucky that the giant python had been slain by Ye Zifeng.

“But come to think of it, your team only has ten people. It probably took a lot to kill that python....”

Liu Yige gasped and looked at Ye Zifeng with respect in his eyes.

Chapter 171: Battle on two fronts

“To be exact, just two people. Not ten.”

“Two people? Are you kidding.....” When Liu Yige heard this, his face paled and his mouth started to twitch.

Ye Zifeng chuckled, “RIght. Of course I was kidding. Did you actually believe me?”

“Shit. You scared the heck out of me. I knew that it was impossible. But.... You’re always able to do things out of people’s expectations.....If your combat strength is also like that, then what are other qi refining stage disciples compared to you?”

“Alright, let’s not waste time here. You should leave. If the circumstances change, you can contact me through the spirit papers.”

Liu Yige chuckled and then nodded, “I got it.”

Saying that, Liu Yige hesitated and then stuck his hand out, “By the way, I’m kind of running low on spirit papers. Since you’re so rich, how about you give me a few more sheets?”

“I gave you twenty three sheets already and you still have the nerve to say that you’re running low? What did you use them on?”

Liu Yige was startled. Ye Zifeng spent money like dirt and yet he was so calculative.

“Oh... Right. I just remembered. You’re right. I do have quite a bit left. I left the rest of it in my new interspatial ring. How forgetful of me.”

Liu Yige forced a smile.

“Alright. I’m leaving now. I’ll contact you if anything changes.”

He didn’t have any face to stay anymore and left immediately.

Ye Zifeng started to walk back to his team as well. On the way, he thought about the plans for tomorrow.

Under the starry skies, a lone man walked slowly.

When he returned, he found that all his team members had set up tents by the lake and were asleep only.

Only Ye Xueyi sat outside her tent waiting.

When she saw Ye Zifeng return, a joyous expression appeared on her face.

“Brother Zi.....”

She was about to call out to him before she stopped herself. The joyous expression on her face disappeared as she turned around and crawled into her tent.

Ye Zifeng softly laughed and walked towards his sister’s tent. He then opened it up.

“Brother Zifeng! You.... What are you doing? To suddenly walk into a young maiden’s tent!”

Ye Xueyi’s expression changed drastically. Her heartbeat increased as she stared at her brother.

To be under the same tent as a man in the middle of the wilderness.....it made Ye Xueyi feel a special type of way....especially when the man she was with is the brother Zifeng that she has had some feelings for.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “What maiden.... You’re my sister. Aren’t you the one that would always barge into my room whenever I would get injured back in the days?”

Hearing Ye Zifeng call her his sister woke her up from her fantasy. He was right. They were siblings.

“Me barging into your room and you coming in here is a completely different story....”

Ye Xueyi wanted to explain how it was different but her mind was a mess right now. She didn’t know what to do so she became angry.

“Alright. Xueyi. Don’t be angry. I came to talk about some things with you....”

“What do you want to talk about? Why don’t we talk tomorrow. I’m feel kind of sleepy.”

Ye Zifeng’s mouth twitched a bit. What do you mean sleepy? You look as wide awake as one can be! She was basically trying to kick him out!

Ye Zifeng didn’t try to beat around the bush either, “It’s like this. I’m probably not going to participate in the mission tomorrow.”

Ye Xueyi wanted to kick her brother out and calm down a bit but when she heard this, she became shocked!

“What? No way. We both broke through today and was going to show off together tomorrow. Why aren’t you coming?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Since you’re in the 9th stage of qi refining already, as long as you do your best, the mission tomorrow won’t be much of a problem. I have something else that I have to do.”

“But….I don’t have any experience. If I don’t have your instructions, I definitely won’t be able to do it….” Ye Xueyi saw that her brother’s serious expression and started to fret.

“Be more confident. Xueyi, did not forget that you were the one who always protect me? Now, you can be the same as before. Protect everyone else.”

“But, I…..” Ye Xueyi was startled.

“Here. I’ll give you some spirit papers. If you need anything, write it on the paper and burn it. I’ll get the message immediately.”

Ye Zifeng retrieved a small stack of spirit paper from his interspatial ring and gave it to Ye Xueyi.

“This…..”

Ye Xueyi casually grabbed a piece of spirit paper and looked at it. She was shocked. Why did Ye Zifeng have so many of these things?

“Brother Zifeng, what are you going to do? Why can’t we do the mission together tomorrow?”

Ye Zifeng smiled, “I’m going to say hi to some old friends tomorrow.”

Hearing these words, Ye Xueyi couldn’t help but become suspicious.

However, her brother had changed so much in the past month and have done many weird dones. She was already used to it and didn’t ask him about it.

“Well…. Since brother Zifeng says so….then….okay….”

Ye Xueyi mumbled to herself and then looked up at him, “But….Using the spirit paper to communicate is too slow. If I really do start fighting, how would I have time to write things on this spirit paper?”

“Then you can scout the area and check out what the beast is like. Tell me about it and I’ll come up with a plan for you guys….” Ye Zifeng replied.

“This….It’s too complicated. I’ll feel better if you’re there.” Ye Xueyi found that Ye Zifeng made a lot of sense but still tried to convince him to stay.

Ye Zifeng helplessly smiled and shook his head. As the leader and the core of the team, he should be there to bring up the morale of the team.

Right now, Xueyi isn’t mentally prepared for the task.

If he force her to lead the team, then something might really go wrong. Ye Zifeng doesn’t want that to happen.

“Fine….I’ll give you an insurance. I can guarantee that your lives. If there are any problems, it’ll be taken care of immediately. It won’t trouble you at all.”

While saying that, Ye Zifeng revealed a sly smile.

“Oh? What’s this insurance?” Ye Xueyi’s expression was filled with anticipation.

“If you want to know, then close your eye and put your palms out onto my palms.”

Thoughts ran through Ye Xueyi’s head again, “No way. Brother Zifeng. What are you trying to do to me?”

If the person in front of her wasn't Ye ZIfeng, then she would have immediately kicked him out. Putting their palms together..... That's a basic duo cultivation method!

"Don't worry. I can take advantage of anyone but I won't take advantage of my sister."

Ye Zifeng showed a reassuring smile. Ye Xueyi nodded and sat down. She then lifted her hands up and gently moved her palms towards his palms. Her face started to feel hotter and hotter and she wasn't able to think straight. After a while, she still didn't put her palms on his palms.

"What are you doing? Stop dawdling!"

Ye Zifeng was feeling a bit impatient. He forcefully put her hands onto his palm, "Listen to my incantation and follow it. Listen to every word and remember it. Okay?"

Ye Xueyi was startled and then quickly nodded, "Okay. Okay."

It didn't matter if her brother was forcing her to duo cultivate or not. Right now, she didn't have the ability to resist anymore.

.....

"With heaven and earth as core, the world unites as one. Spirits guard the four directions....."

When chanting soul incantations, inattentiveness can cause one to be swallowed by one's own inner demons.

That was why Ye Zifeng was concentrating so hard.

During the heavenly clan gathering, Ye Zifeng had given his sister a Soul Binding Pill and a little strand of Elder Shen's soul spirit was still linger in her body.

Right now, it was the time to make use of this strand of soul spirit.

After a while, a strand of cold energy flowed out of Ye Xueyi and floated around.

Elder Shen was suddenly awoken from his sleep. He was startled. This

was because there was an unfamiliar divine sense inside of his head. It clearly didn't belong to Ye Zifeng.

Chapter 172: Determination to achieve

Ye Zifeng calmed himself down and sent a strand of his soul's divine sense towards Elder Shen as well.

When Elder Shen felt Ye Zifeng's divine sense enter his head, he started to yell immediately.

"Ye Zifeng. What the hell are you doing in the middle of the night?!"

"Ah! Who's voice is this!" Ye Xueyi couldn't help but yell out after hearing this voice.

Anyone who hears a stranger's voice in their own head would definitely react like this.

She was startled for a bit and then looked at Ye Zifeng.

"Brother Zifeng. What is going on?"

"You're asking about who I am? I should be the one asking you who you are!" Elder Shen was feeling a bit pissed off after Ye Zifeng broke him off from a good dream.

But when he became more sober, a thought came into his mind, "You called him brother Zifeng before.... Are you his sister Ye Xueyi?"

Ye Xueyi felt that the voice was very familiar and was shocked.

"That's me. And are you.....from the tone of your voice....could you be the sect's.....the sect's Elder Shen?"

The two of them both gasped. They were both in shock.

Ye Xueyi never would have thought that the usually high and mighty Elder Shen would have this kind of relationship with her brother Ye Zifeng where they can communicate with each other like this.....From the way they talked, it sounded as if they were old friends.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "And now, you two know each other."

"Know your head!"

Elder Shen was very angry as he started to yell at Ye Zifeng.

This sort of exchange was normal between them so Ye Zifeng didn't pay much mind to his yelling.

When Elder Shen finally remembered that Ye Xueyi was there, he stopped yelling and cleared his throat, "Okay Ye Zifeng. Tell me what's going on. What is the point of all this."

He was feeling a little pissed that Ye Zifeng told someone else their secret. But right now, he can't interfere with the missions so he had to wait until later on to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson.

"Actually, Zifeng is trying to remind you about something. I'm not the only one who binded your soul spirit. My sister Xueyi also has a piece of your soul spirit."

"Say what!?" Ye Xueyi and Elder Shen both yelled out at the same time. Elder Shen yelled out in anger while Ye Xueyi yelled out in surprise.

"Sooo.... You don't have to worry about me as I can take care of my own life but my sister's life.... Well at least for the duration of this mission, I'll have to trouble Elder Shen."

When asking for something, Ye Zifeng won't act arrogant and overbearing. That was because if the other person refuses, then he would have wasted his efforts.

"You!" This was the first time that Ye Zifeng had asked him to do something in this degree of seriousness.

If he helped Ye Zifeng, he would lose face in front of the other elders. If he doesn't, then Ye ZIfeng might never talk to him again. If Ye Zifeng accidentally dies without him knowing, he will lose a quite a bit of his own cultivation base.

Listening to Ye Zifeng's tone, it seems like his sister was in the same situation as he was. If something happens to her, then his cultivation base will suffer as well!

It didn't matter if Ye Zifeng was lying. It was better to be safe.

He could only blame himself for trying to mess with Ye Zifeng and Ye

Xueyi during the heavenly clan gathering.

“Fine....I’ll give you face and help your sister out. If there are any problems during battle, I’ll take care of it.”

“Many thanks to Elder Shen.” Ye ZIfeng smiled and cut of his connection with Elder Shen because he knew that there were some things that Elder Shen want to tell Ye Xueyi privately to make her keep this whole thing a secret.

Elder Shen is a very crafty person. He can definitely con the inexperienced Ye Xueyi with his words and make her keep this exchange a secret.

.....

When Ye Xueyi finally reopened her eyes, her face was filled with disbelief.

“Brother Zifeng. What is going on? This is unbelievable! How did you cling onto Elder Shen, someone who is at the peak of the Martial Practitioner realm?!”

“This doesn’t matter right now. You’ll understand later on.”

“Brother Zifeng, you probably won’t tell me later on anyways....” Ye Xueyi pouted.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Alright. Stop acting like that. I’m doing this for your safety. Remember, if anything goes wrong, just chant the incantation that I taught you and have Elder Shen help you. Got it?”

“Alright. Having a Martial Practitioner expert backing me up makes me feel much better” Ye Xueyi giggled.

“Okay. Now go sleep. Tell everyone about the plans tomorrow.”

Ye Zifeng nodded to her and then got up to leave.

“Hold on.” Ye Xueyi hesitated and then called out.

“The tent was given to me by the people from the Qin clan. Now that they’re asleep, they can’t give you one.....How about you sleep...sleep.....”

Ye Xueyi's face was burning hot. She couldn't even finish the last sentence.

"Didn't you say that I shouldn't be barging in here? How come your attitude changed so quickly. You're even letting me sleep here!" Ye Zifeng laughed and teased her.

"I....."

"I don't care. Didn't we sleep together when we were little? There's no problem here....." Ye Xueyi's mind was scrambling as she tried to find a good reason to make Ye Zifeng stay.

"Alright. Don't try to think too much. Get a good night's sleep. I'll go and stay with that brat Shi Chen....."

Even though she tried her hardest, she couldn't keep her brother in here and felt disappointed.

"Alright then." She sighed and watched as Ye Zifeng left her tent.

Actually, she wasn't trying to do anything. She feels a lot safer and better with her brother around her so she wanted him to stay...

.....

Coincidentally, when Ye Zifeng left Ye Xueyi's tent, Shi Chen woke up and came out of his tent.

"Ay. Big brother Zifeng, where did you go today?"

Ye Zifeng didn't expect to see Shi Chen here. He smiled at him and then replied, "I walked around and familiarized myself with the area."

Seeing how Ye Zifeng was not really paying attention to him, Shi Chen changed the topic, "Oh right. It's really late now and you don't have a tent. How about you come sleep in mine?"

"No need. Thank you though. I'll sleep on top of the trees tonight."

"What?"

Shi Chen was stunned. Then he realized what Ye Zifeng meant and started to yell,

“Surnamed Ye! Are you telling me that you’d rather sleep on a tree than with me?”

……

Of course, Ye Zifeng didn’t go sleep on top of a tree. Instead, he left the region that they were in.

Telling Xueyi that he was going to sleep with Shi Chen was just an excuse for him to leave.

Since the Xiao clan and the Rong clan were teaming up to fight against the Blazing Eagle tomorrow, as an old friend, he has to give them a surprise.

Thus, he had to go and make some preparations.

“Hmmmm…. According to Liu Yige, the Liu clan and the Rong clan’s territory should be just ahead….”

Ye Zifeng looked around and confirmed his location

He had long thought up of a plan already. When he arrived, he took out some materials from his interspatial ring and started to prepare.

……

The blazing sun rose up into the clear and boundless sky.

In the morning, the people from the Xiao clan’s team and the people from the Rong clan’s team all met up.

“Young master Xiao, you’re looking better after resting for the day!”

The second young master of the Rong clan was called Rong Fan. Even though his parents gave him such a scholarly name, he was an idiot. During the heavenly clan gathering, he wanted to challenge and provoke Ye Zifeng. But in the end, he was literally used as a stepping stone and became the laughing stock of the entire competition.

And right now, he was speaking words that were not meant to be spoken. This was because his words sounded as if he was poking fun of the Xiao clan for not being able to capture the giant python yesterday. He

clearly doesn't know his way with words.

"You....."

Xiao Mu frowned. He didn't think much of someone as stupid as Rong Fan. He saw Rong Fan as a puppet who can help him reap benefits.

"Young master Rong isn't looking that bad either. Could it be that you have some sort of plan for today's mission?"

"Hahaha....." Rong Fan laughed and rubbed his nose, "Young master Xiao, I sent someone to scout around in the morning and have already found the nest of the Blazing Eagle!"

"What? Are you sure?!" Hearing this, Xiao Mu was shocked and looked at his brother's behind him.

They weren't afraid of the Blazing Eagle. They were afraid of not being able to find the Blazing Eagle. Yesterday, they missed out on the giant python and were feeling angry.

"Yes I'm sure. Young master Xiao. By cooperating, we will definitely succeed this time!"

Chapter 173: The Fox Exploits the Tiger's Might!

The Overhanging Wind Cliff. The Blazing Eagle's dwellings.

The mountain path that the two groups walked on is very steep with many twists and turns. In order to reach the Blazing Eagle's nest, they must go through this path.

One the way, Rong Fan was very happy. For second generation nobles like him, they loved having absolute strength.

Now that his group had teamed up with the Xiao clan team, this made him look forward to the hunt this time. He was feeling confident.

"We're still not there? I can't wait anymore!"

Xiao Mu on the other hand was feeling a little uneasy.

"Little Mu, you haven't said a word since the beginning. Is something bothering you?" Xiao Mu's older brother, Xiao Ying looked worriedly at him. He couldn't help but speak up.

Even though Xiao Ying was in the 9th stage of qi refining, he was all brawn and no brain. When it comes to decision making, he would always ask Xiao Mu for advice.

"Big bro, I feel like something's wrong. That Rong Fan is pretty stupid and his underlings aren't much better either. How can they find the Blazing Eagle's nest so quickly?"

"This...Maybe you're underestimating their abilities." Xiao Ying smiled. He felt that his little brother was being a bit too sensitive.

"I hope that's that case." Xiao Mu sighed, "I really want to finish up this second mission quickly and teach Ye Zifeng a lesson during the third mission!"

In the group of people that tried to bully Ye Zifeng, Xiao Mu is the only one that haven't received Ye Zifeng's divine punishment. He doesn't know how scary Ye Zifeng can be and is still trying to get revenge.

Liu Yige saw the look on Xiao Mu's face and thought about himself. He couldn't help but open his mouth.

"I suggest that you don't do what's unnecessary."

Xiao Mu was startled when he heard this. He turned around and stared at Liu Yige.

"Heh.....I was wondering who that was. So it's someone from the Liu clan huh."

The Xiao clan was on good terms with the Liu clan, but after the Liu clan allied themselves with the Ye clan, they started to become distant from each other. They both chose to stand on different sides.

"Don't put me in the same category as you. I want to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson, what are you going to do about it? Are you going to stop me by yourself?" Xiao Mu coldly snorted.

"Right. Everyone in the team is associated with the Xiao clan. You're the only outsider amongst us. You're lucky that you were able to even join us and yet you're trying to talk back to brother Mu?"

"You!"

Originally, Liu Yige thought that he was the only one that hated Ye Zifeng with all his guys. But right now, he was looking at things in another perspective. He realized that there were quite a few people who have feuds with Ye Zifeng.

How is Ye Zifeng still alive after offending so many people?

"If you don't want to come then that's fine with us too. Your share of the rewards will be split amongst us. That's better for us." Xiao Mu laughed.

"Hmph. You want to use words to incite me? I want to see how arrogant you'll be later. I want to see what kind of strength you have to back up these words."

Liu Yige was pissed. He decided to follow along to watch the show. It didn't matter if Ye Zifeng came or not. He'll write down everything on the spirit paper and send more reports to Ye Zifeng.

While the group was walking, they came across two low level beasts. When the two beasts saw the vicious and fierce look in the eyes of the Xiao clan members, they ran away.

“Why aren’t we there yet? Did we go the wrong way?” Rong Fan muttered and looked around.

“That’s what I should be asking you! Aren’t you the one that told us that someone in your group found the Blazing Eagle’s nest?”

Rong Fan hesitated and didn’t know how to explain himself, “I.....”

“Don’t tell me..... You were playing around with us?” Xiao Mu shot a cold glare at Rong Fan.

He didn’t like Rong Fan in the first place. And now, Rong Fan brought them to this random place without any signs of the Blazing Eagle. He was feeling pissed.

In addition, everyone in the Xiao clan team looked for the giant python yesterday and couldn’t even see its shadow once. Now, they had been following this stupid Rong Fan kid since early morning and could not find anything either. They basically wasted their second day!

Even though Rong Fan was stupid, it didn’t mean that he was someone who backs down easily.

“The person that I sent is my trusted aid. He definitely won’t lie to me. He really did find the Blazing Eagle’s nest. It’s not far from here!”

Xiao Mu spoke with words that were as cold as ice, “If your trusted aid didn’t lie to you, then are you lying to us?”

The two teams didn’t even find the Blazing Eagle yet but they’re already fighting with each other.

While listening to the two fight, Liu Yige felt something in his robes. He stealthily took out a spirit paper and glanced at it. His expression froze as his jaws dropped.

On the spirit paper were the words: “How’s the argument between the Xiao clan and the Rong clan?”

Liu Yige's face twitched as he stared at the paper.

What does he mean? Could it be that the argument between the two clans were instigated by Ye Zifeng?

His heart shuddered. Hold on. That means Ye Zifeng wants to get involved!

"That's not a bad thing. He can help me teach that Xiao Mu a lesson."

Liu Yige thought about the events that transpired before and how Xiao Mu and his lackeys embarrassed him. Right now, he didn't hate Ye Zifeng anymore. If he did, he would be hating Ye Zifeng for not coming earlier.

"But.... How did he know that they're arguing right now? Unless he's already....."

Liu Yige looked around and tried to find Ye Zifeng. He can feel Ye Zifeng's gaze in the shadows, watching everything that was going on.

"Alright. Stop arguing. How can we fight the Blazing Eagle together if we keep this up?"

Xiao Ying was the strongest person in between the two groups. Everyone respected him and listened to his words.

Xiao Ying then paused for a bit before continuing, "If a demonic beast has enough intelligence, they can hide their nest. Maybe this Blazing Eagle know how to hide its nest?"

He had to offer an explanation to calm everyone down.

"Then what can we do..... If this Blazing Eagle really does know how to hide its nest.....which one of us is able to see through it?" Xiao Mu rubbed his chins. He had a complicated expression on his face.

"This....." Everyone else looked at each other.

At this time, Liu Yige looked at the spirit paper again. His eyes widened in shock as he started to memorize the contents.

He put the spirit paper back into his robe and took a deep breath. He cleared his throat and spoke.

“If no one has any ideas. Then why don’t I give it a try?”

“You?”

Xiao Mu let out a cold snort and stared at Liu Yige.

It would be more believable if it was Ye Zifeng saying these words. After all, Ye Zifeng is someone who can accomplish things out of everyone’s expectation. But Liu Yige? Who the hell does he think he is?

Even Xiao Ying who was in the 9th stage of qi refining could not do anything. Yet, this Liu Yige was trying to do something?

“Don’t say that I don’t trust you, but on what basis should we believe you?”

“On the basis that my words are facts!” Liu Yige had Ye Zifeng’s instructions and was very confident. He was like a fox who’s exploiting a tiger’s might.”

(TL: Pretty interesting read lol http://www.theepochtimes.com/n3/365064-chinese-idioms-a-fox-exploits-a-tigers-might-%E7%8B%90%E5%81%87%E8%99%8E%E5%A8%81/)

“Facts? That’s a interesting way to put it. I’d like to see what kind of facts you’re talking about.” Xiao Mu laughed with a look filled with disdain.

“Then listen up. From you position, walk ten step towards west. Then 7 steps towards north.....”

Xiao Mu bursted out in laughter, “Okay. I’ll do as you say. Ten steps towards west and then seven steps towards north. What’s next? Do you still want me to walk?”

“Then four or five more steps towards west.” Liu Yige forgot whether it was four or five steps so he told Xiao Mu to walk four or five.

When he said that, everyone else bursted into laughter.

“Young master Xiao. This guy doesn’t even know what he’s talking about and yet you’re following his instructions!

Xiao Mu laughed harder and harder, “Some people won’t shed a single drop of tear until they see the coffin. I’ll use this chance to teach him a lesson.:

“Then... How about you take a look to the ride. Tell me. What do you see?

Liu Yige was feeling a little down after being laughed at. He didn’t know whether Ye Zifeng’s words were true or not.

Xiao Mu laughed and looked up to the right.

Suddenly, his expression froze. His face paled. He was extremely shocked at what he saw.

Chapter 174: Borrowing power to triumph over others.

“Young master Xiao. What happened? Why aren’t you talking?”

A few Xiao clan members looked at each other in confusion. What was Xiao Mu doing?

“Motherfucker. Am I seeing things? All of you come over here!” Xiao Mu looked over at Liu Yige and then called everyone over.

“Let’s go. Let’s see what’s going on.” Even Rong Fan’s expression changed and ran over to where Xiao Mu was. Everyone looked at where Xiao Mu was pointing.

Clouds made of flame surrounded the area. Mist filled the air. This was the Blazing Eagle’s nest!

How come they couldn’t find it before?

“That’s really strange!”

Everyone was in a daze as they looked back at Liu Yige. After all, the person who guided Xiao Mu was none other than Liu Yige.

When did someone as insignificant as Liu Yige become so capable?

Liu Yige was usually looked down upon by others. He didn’t have a lot of say in the Liu clan either. Thus, when he saw the expression on these people’s faces, he became very happy and proud. Unknowingly, he started to feel grateful towards Ye Zifeng.

This feeling was great!

“You guys don’t know but I’ve learned the Illusion Breaking Technique before. I can easily see through these things that normal people can’t see.” Liu Yige laughed loudly with a proud expression.

Even though it was Ye Zifeng who told him everything, Liu Yige claimed all the credit.

“Illusion Breaking Technique? What the hell is that? You’re making

things up aren't you." Someone sneered at him and wanted to ridicule him.

This illusion breaking technique was something that Liu Yige randomly made up. This wording "Illusion Breaking Technique" was not in any martial arts manual that existed.

However, Xiao Mu looked at them and shook his head, signaling for them to shut up.

"Shut your mouths."

"This....." Xiao Mu looked over at Liu Yige and sighed. He then spoke with a respectful tone, "There are many fantastic oddities in the world. I have seen the power of your Illusion Breaking Technique with my own eyes. I believe you."

He then paused for a bit before continuing, "Since this is the Blazing Eagle's nest, it must be dangerous to charge in head on. I hope that brother Liu can use his Illusion Breaking Technique and help us find a suitable path to traverse."

堂堂的萧家少爷，此刻为了胜利，已经不择手段，就算拉下脸皮去求人，也不是不可以的了。他所想要达成的，就是尽快进入到第三任务的环节中去，这样一来，他就可以好好地虐一回叶子锋。

As a high and mighty young master of the Xiao clan, he was willing to lower himself in order to complete the mission. However, what Xiao Mu really want was to proceed to the third mission as quickly as possible where he can teach Ye Zifeng a good lesson.

On the other side, Liu Yige who had been following Ye Zifeng's instructions the entire time didn't think that Liu Yige would actually lower himself and ask for help.

"This.... How about I look for a suitable path while we walk...That way, I can see things more clearly." Liu Yige squinted his eyes and pretended to think about things.

What the hell does he mean by find a suitable path while we walk?

Everyone stood there and stared at Liu Yige.

Liu Yige didn't have a choice. He's relying on Ye Zifeng to help him out. If he doesn't buy time for Ye Zifeng to write a response then he'll get exposed.

"Alr……Alright. We'll listen to you. Let's start walking." Xiao Mu forced a smile. It sounded unreasonable but he didn't have a choice but to comply.

Thus, the two groups followed their respective leaders and walked towards the nest.

"This place is way too hot. As expected of the Blazing Eagle's nest."

"Damn. What are we going to do later. We haven't even seen the Blazing Eagle and yet it's so hot already. For those who engage in close combat with the Blazing Eagle, won't they be burnt alive?"

"Why are you guys even talking about this. We haven't even seen the Blazing Eagle's shadow yet!"

Rong Fan was in a bad mood because he couldn't find the exact location of the nest so he took it out on his group members.

"Hehe. Everyone follow me. I've already seen through the terrain of this nest!" Liu Yige yelled out loudly.

After reading Ye Zifeng's message, Liu Yige immediately opened his mouth.

When everyone was feeling despair, Liu Yige's words gave them hope. This was because if it wasn't for him, they would not have found the nest at all. They would have wasted their time again.

"The solution lies within the underground water source here. For it to not evaporate under such high temperature shows that there is clearly a spirit vein under the ground. We should follow the water source and move forward!"

"Yige. It seems like I've made an error in judging you before. As expected of someone from the Liu clan! Your knowledge is extraordinary!"

Xiao Mu laughed loudly and was feeling very proud of himself. It was

rare for someone as capable as Ye Zifeng to be helping him. He was feeling very happy.

Everyone else was startled. They didn't know what to do.

"Let's go. Let's follow young master Liu!"

Xiao Mu raised his foot and kicked everyone's butt. It seems like Liu Yige's status had risen in his heart.

Rong Fan's brothers watched the entire scene unfold and then looked at Rong Fan, "Second young master, what should we do?"

"We'll follow them too. We can't be left behind!" Rong Fan was startled and then started to move.

Even though Rong Fan and Xiao Mu disliked each other, it doesn't mean that they can't work together. After all, they both have a single goal that motivates them: Ye Zifeng."

After they walked for awhile, Liu Yige suddenly stopped, "Sorry. I need to take a little break."

Liu Yige told them that he needed to go pee and went into a corner. When he saw that no one was looking, he took out a sheet of spirit paper out.

He loved this feeling of borrowing power and suppressing others. It felt really good.

He looked at the spirit paper and then sighed with regret. If he didn't oppose but rather followed Ye Zifeng, that would have been the most intelligent decision that he would have made.

"Alright. I'm good. Everyone follow me."

A while later, Liu Yige once again suggested to take a break again, using the excuse that he drank too much water the night before.

This cycle kept on repeating itself.

"Are you done yet? How much pee do you have?" Rong Fan was irritated and yelled out.

Everyone else felt the same way but didn't say anything.

Liu Yige basically stole their role in the whole thing. It made it look like Rong Fan was freeloading off everything. Rong Fan felt pissed just thinking about this.

Xiao Mu's expression turned ugly, "No one told you to follow us. You can leave whenever you want. You guys won't be of much use anyways."

"What did you say?!" Rong Fan rolled up his sleeves and shot a cold glare at Xiao Mu.

Looking at Rong Fan's improper behavior, Xiao Mu showed even more disdain towards him, "I said that you won't be that useful anyways. Am I not wrong? Your job was to find the nest, but you guys failed. Twenty of you can't even compare to one brother Liu at all. Don't you feel embarrassed at all?"

"That's for you to say. You didn't find anything either. And what's with that brother Liu bullshit. Weren't you the one that wanted to embarrass him before?"

Xiao Mu was trying to hold back his anger.

"Alright now. Both of you guys give me some face and stop arguing."

Xiao Ying sighed. He was the only one in the 9th stage of qi refining here which meant that his words hard the highest amount of authority.

Seeing that even Xiao Ying became involved, the two of them immediately stopped arguing.

Although the two sides momentarily calmed down, the bond between the two teams have been broken. It'll be hard for them to work together when fighting the Blazing Eagle.

At the same time, Liu Yige finished reading the instructions from Ye Zifeng and smiled.

"Actually. Truth to be told, we're very close to the Blazing Eagle already. However, I can't lead you guys anymore."

"What? How come you can't lead us anymore?" Xiao Mu's eyes were

filled with shock as he stared at Liu Yige.

“No means no. I’m already at my limit. You guys need to find the nest yourselves.....but.....”

“But what?” Xiao Mu’s eyes lit up.

He was feeling very anxious. If they don’t find the Blazing Eagle, then the team’s morale will drop significantly.

Not only will the unity between the two teams break apart for real, but both team’s morale will reach an all time low! Neither team were able to kill a single beast that was required for completing the missions as of yet.

“Spit it out! Stop beating around the bush!”

“.....The Xiao clan team and Rong clan team need to split up for this to work. This is the fastest way.”

Chapter 175: Reading the opponent like a book.

Splitting up was the best decision that they can make.

There was already some tension between the two teams and if things kept going the way it was, their alliance was going to fall apart sooner or later.

“What do you guys think?”

Xiao Ying turned around and asked everyone else.

“It makes sense. Aren’t we just looking for the right path? It’s faster if we split up.”

“Yeah. This place is too damn hot. I don’t want to stay here any longer. Let’s just go with the fastest method.”

“Young master Liu is right. Let’s split up.”

Some people didn’t say anything but they were fanning themselves with their hands. Their face was bright red and beads of sweat rolled down their faces.

It wasn’t surprising that there were tension between the two groups. The heat here made them very uncomfortable and pissed them off.

“Alright then. We’ll follow young master Liu’s suggestion. We’ll split up and look for the path. Young master Rong, how do you feel about it?”

“Hmph. Now you’re asking me? Do you even put us in your eyes? You’re trying to ask for my input after basically finish up your discussions. We don’t need you to tell us anything. We’ll move by ourselves.....” Rong Fan cursed in an unhappy tone.

Xiao Ying coldly snorted. He was in the 9th stage of qi refining. He can be considered one of the most outstanding characters of the younger generation. People like Rong Fan were an eyesore.

He wanted to talk nicely with Rong Fan but Rong Fan actually yelled

back at him. He was feeling pissed.

"Then do as you wish. We'll all split up and find the path. Then we can all leave."

It was way too hot and everyone was covered in sweat.

Thus, when Liu Yige suggested that they all split up, no one disagreed.

A while later, the two groups split up to search for the right path out.

The groups continued to split up. People who were originally fine with each other suddenly disliked the other due to small problems.

And the one who was behind all of this was Ye Zifeng.

.....

Just like that, the two groups split up into smaller groups of two or three people. The strength of each group became weaker and weaker.

Liu Yige watched as everyone dispersed and gasped. When he saw that no one was looking at him, he slipped away and reached into his robe for a spirit paper.

Suddenly.

"I knew it. There was something weird going on!" A familiar voice called out behind Liu Yige.

Liu Yige was shook as he jerked his hand out of his robe and turned around.

It was Xiao Mu!

"Are you surprised?"

Xiao Mu chuckled and then stared at Liu Yige, "Actually, I felt that something was wrong in the beginning. You're a nobody in the Liu clan. How could you have learned some Illusion Breaking Technique? Also, after bringing us here, you want us to split up. You're trying to split us up aren't you. I'm not as stupid as that Rong Fan. If you want to hide things from me, then at least be on that Ye Zifeng's level!"

"I am surprised. I'm surprised that that person guessed your actions

correctly."

Liu Yige bitterly laughed and had a pitying look in his eyes.

"What did you say?" Xiao Mu was confused.

"It seems like he was right. With your personality, you won't expose me in front of everyone. You'll only come find me after everything."

Liu Yige sighed, "I didn't believe him at first. But now that you're here looking for me, I really.....am impressed."

"Him? Who are you talking about? Who's that person?" Xiao Mu's expression changed and didn't understand what was going on.

With Xiao Mu's cultivation level, he was not scared of Liu Yige at all. However, it sounds like there was someone else behind him pulling the strings.

Knowing this, he didn't dare to make a move against Liu Yige. His confidence immediately disappeared. Right now, he even felt as if he had to run away.

"Don't worry. You don't have to be so tense. You aren't his target."

"What do you mean?" Xiao Mu's eyes widened and then turned around. There was nobody behind him..... He was alone with Liu Yige right now.

Xiao Mu immediately turned around and tried to run away. However, an invisible wall blocked his path and he could not move at all. He tried to yell out but there was no response.

Everything happened so suddenly. Xiao Mu was at a loss for words. He stood there like a wooden doll.

"How is this happening? It was all good just a few moments ago." Xiao Mu's heart sank.

"It's no use. You can get out. With you strength, you can't break out of his formation."

Xiao Mu's entire body felt limp, "When did....."

"Since the beginning. You've already entered his formation the moment

you stepped foot in here.....” Liu Yige chuckled.

“What?”

Ye Zifeng went tot the Blazing Eagle’s nest last night and scout around. He found that it was impossible to lay down a formation without the Blazing Eagle noticing so he had to change his plans.

Thus, he casted an illusion and hid the entrance of the nest from others and set up a formation somewhere else. He used Liu Yige to lure everyone here.

They were inside the formation the moment that they stepped in.

They followed Liu Yige around and walked deeper into the formation. Now, they were dancing in the palms of Ye Zifeng’s hands.

When everyone scattered, Ye Zifeng was finally able to utilize the full strength of the formation.

“Well.... Let me tell you everything.”

Liu Yige explained everything to Xiao Mu and caused him to tremble in fear.

“No way. Ye Zifeng knows how to set up formation? He’s only twenty years old!”

\To set up formations, one must understand the aura of the heavens and the earth. Thus, formation masters tend to be very old. It was rare for someone to become on before the age of thirty, let alone at the age of twenty!

“I don’t know about that either. All I know is that if I follow him, I will prosper.”

“Surnamed Liu! Are you not afraid of offending both the Xiao and Rong clan!?” Xiao Mu cursed and wanted to apply some mental pressure.

Liu Yige sighed and threw a piece of spirit paper towards Xiao Mu.

“Look at it for yourself.”

Xiao Mu was startled. When he read the contents of the paper, his

expression changed immediately.

All his thoughts and moves were read by Ye Zifeng. Even his threats were clearly written on the Spirit Paper.

To offend the Xiao clan or offend Ye Zifeng?

The answer to that question was very clear.

“No....Impossible. It’s not possible! I don’t believe it!” Xiao Mu gathered his qi and continuously attacked the invisible wall.

“Stop it. Don’t waste your strength. Even if you get out, you won’t be able to do anything....” Liu Yige sighed.

“What do you mean? Explain it to me!”

At this moment, he understood what was happening. He understood why a nobody like Liu Yige was able to do something like this. It was as if he was a different person. So Ye Zifeng was the mastermind behind everything.

Suddenly, he felt regret.... After splitting up, they had divided their strength which gave Ye Zifeng a chance to attack.....

What he couldn’t hear was the sound of his friends begging for help. It was all blocked off by the invisible wall.

Xiao Mu couldn’t hear it, but he could imagine it.

Suddenly, he seem to remembered something and felt a lot better.

“I do admit that this Ye Zifeng was able to divide our strength. However, he can’t really beat us. He’s too weak to beat us! My big bro is in the 9th stage of qi refining. Ye Zifeng definitely can’t beat him!”

Chapter 176: Thanks for everything

To Xiao Mu, his big brother was his biggest hope right now.

He knew that Ye Zifeng had used a mysterious formation technique to separate all of them so he can attack each of them one by one/

However, his brother will definitely be fine. The Xiao clan will get the last laugh!

.....

In another area, Xiao Ying stared at the person in front of him.

“Ye Zifeng! It’s you!” His expression changed immediately.

Xiao Ying had seen Ye Zifeng before during the heavenly clan gathering. After watching Ye Zifeng take first place, Xiao Ying had wanted to challenge Ye Zifeng to a fight. He didn’t think that this day would come so soon.

No matter how slow or stupid he is, he can tell that Ye Zifeng came without good intentions.

“You know me?” Ye Zifeng smirked.

“Of course! I know all about the grievances between you and Xiao Mu!” Xiao Ying snorted.

If it weren’t for the fact that Xiao Ying didn’t know what was going on, Xiao Ying would have immediately attacked Ye Zifeng and taught him a lesson in stead of his brother.

“Ohh. So that’s how it is.

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Xiao Mu’s older brother huh.....An expert in the qi refining realm. Not bad. You’re in the 9th stage already. What’s your name?”

“What? You don’t know anything and yet you’re trying to take us on?” Xiao Ying’s eyes widened when Ye Zifeng asked for his name.

One should know that Xiao Ying’s name is widespread throughout the

entire Leizhou City as one of the strongest in the younger generation. There aren't many qi refining stage disciples that would dare look down on him.

But now, Ye Zifeng acted as if a 9th stage qi refining realm disciple was nothing to him. The smile on his face..... It was a real smile.....It made Xiao Ying feel a little uneasy.

"Why does that matter? I can do whatever I want. The sect doesn't have any rules regarding this matter either." Ye Zifeng was as calm as water when he replied.

Ye Zifeng was basically challenging Xiao Ying's prestige!

"Good. Good! I want to see where this confidence is coming from!"

He didn't want to waste time talking with Ye Zifeng anymore. He unsheathed his spirit tier sword and charged towards Ye Zifeng with all his strength.

The sword shined brilliantly as it slashed through the air. A sword beam containing a large amount of qi flew towards Ye Zifeng.

"Good move." Ye Zifeng smiled and stood there.

When the sword beam reached Ye Zifeng, it was stopped as if there was an invisible wall in front of it.

"This....."

Xiao Ying expression turned extremely ugly, "How is that possible!"

He quickly charged towards Ye Zifeng and touched the invisible wall. It was only then that he realized how terrifying Ye Zifeng was.

Ye Zifeng laughed, "You're trapped in the formation and actually want to attack someone outside? Don't waste your energy."

Ye Zifeng looked as if he was standing there casually but there was actually a formation between the two of them.

Xiao Ying suddenly calmed down and smiled, "Then what are you trying to do? Yeah sure. You can hide outside. How are you going to beat me like

that?”

Ye Zifeng laughed out loud.

“What are you laughing at?” Xiao Ying felt annoyed. Qi condensed in his hands as he struck against the wall.

“I’m laughing because your little brother Xiao Mu is probably thinking of the same thing. In his eyes, I’m definitely not your opponent. As long as you’re here, the Xiao Clan won’t fall.”

“That’s right! Exactly! I don’t know how you set this formation up but let me tell you this. In front of absolute power, your tricks are futile! You don’t even have the qualifications to fight me!”

“What if I do?”

Ye Zifeng smiled and stared at Xiao Ying.

He then retrieved a crystal like object from his robe and waved it in front of Xiao Ying.

Xiao Ying was startled, “What is that? Ye Zifeng. What are you trying to say?”

Ye Zifeng sighed, “Let me remind you then…. This is a snake’s monster core…..” Xiao Ying really is slow. If it was a normal person, they would have recognized what it was immediately.

“Monster core?” Xiao Ying was confused. After thinking about it, his body shook, “This… Could it be….the monster core from the giant python? Where did you get this?”

“Where did I get it? I ripped it out of the python after killing it. What. Do you think I picked it up on the floor or something?”

“Do you think I have the qualifications now?”

“You…..Good.” Xiao Ying snorted as the qi in his hand dissipated.

After all, with the monster core in Ye Zifeng’s hand, Xiao Ying had to comply with him.

If Ye Zifeng gets pissed, he can take the monster core and run. If that

happens, where will Xiao Ying find another python monster core?

"Just say what you want!" Xiao Ying was slowly being sucked into Ye Zifeng's schemes.

"Not much. All I wanted to do was greet you guys."

Xiao Ying was startled. How can someone's face be so thick? Just here to greet us? Who the hell greets people by trapping them in a formation?

"Let me tell you about the situation outside. Between the Xiao and Rong clan, everyone under the seventh stage of qi refining have been taken care of already. There are less than nine people left between you guys."

"You……Good. Good. GOOD!" Xiao Ying gritted his teeth and forced himself to calm down.

If it wasn't for the fact that the invisible wall was there and that the monster core was in Ye Zifeng's hands, he would have killed Ye Zifeng already. Right now, he really wanted to take his shoes off and throw it at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng sighed again, "The Rong clan's second young master is an idiot and you're not far off. At least Xiao Mu has a little bit of brain."

"What did you say!" Xiao Ying yelled out. Originally, he wanted to ally with Ye Zifeng to fight the Wang clan.

However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would do something like this.

"Ye Zifeng! You're going too far!"

His relaxed fists suddenly clenched up again.

"Did I say anything wrong? You guys are basically like a mob of people. Only weak and stupid people like to stick together and lick each other's wounds. If you have the ability, then why don't you rely on yourself?"

"Preposterous!!" Xiao Ying was so angry that he couldn't hold himself back anymore.

He roared and fiercely punched the wall.

Bang

The wall did not budge but sparks flew all over the place.

Ye Zifeng continued, “I heard that your Xiao clan loves to hug the legs of other big clans and have always lived beneath them as dogs. Looking at what you guys are doing, it seems like these rumors are true.”

Ye Zifeng was trying to rile him up even more. Xiao Ying was already pissed due to the how hot it was and now Ye Zifeng was adding oil to the fire.

“Ye Zifeng! Don’t say that I didn’t give you a chance. You’re looking to die!”

He unleashed more and more sword beams all aimed towards the wall.

From what he can see, this invisible wall is Ye Zifeng’s trump card. As long as he can break it, it’ll be easy for him to teach Ye Zifeng a lesson.

“Not bad. Not bad. Your qi is not bad at all!”

Ye Zifeng watched as Xiao Ying madly attacked the invisible wall and couldn’t help but smile.

If it was any other qi refining stage disciple, they would have turned around and ran in the face of Xiao Ying.

“Well then. This qi absorbing formation is being pretty useful right now.”

Ye Zifeng laughed as the formation continuously absorbed Xiao Ying’s qi. He was feeling ecstatic!

Chapter 177: Retreat

Xiao Ying's eyes turned red. Punch after punch. Strike after strike. He furiously attacked the invisible wall.

It seems likemYe Zifeng didn't plan on fighting Xiao Ying face to face at all.

It's not that Ye Zifeng can't win but there was no need to waste his energy on someone like Xiao Ying.

Fighting against someone in the 9th stage of qi refining will use up a lot of energy and isn't easy at all. It wasn't worth it.

"Great. There's plenty of qi now. I guess that it's finally time."

Ye Zifeng looked up and smiled.

Everything was planned by Ye Zifeng since last night. He had another purpose for absorbing the qi from his opponent.

"It's finally time? What do you mean?" Xiao Ying stared at Ye Zifeng in confusion.

"Well.... Thanks to you guys, the true path to the Blazing Eagle's nest has finally appeared."

"What?! What do you mean?" Xiao Ying felt his entire body go limp.

Ye Zifeng was able to find the entrance to the Blazing Eagle's nest but lacked the strength the open the true path. After borrowing the qi from the Xiao and Rong clan members, he was finally able to open the path.

"The answer lies in the Qi absorbing formation. Every time you used your qi to attack, the formation will absorb a part of it and allow me to use it. So....I should be saying thanks. Without all of you, I would not have been able to open the true path to the Blazing Eagle's nest."

"So you're saying that we've been doing work for you this entire time?" Xiao Ying forced a smile on his face.

"Well... If you want to see it that way.... Yes."

Ye Zifeng cupped his hands and bowed towards Xiao Ying. He respected Xiao Ying for being able to keep his composure after learning about everything.

Xiao Ying sighed. He felt as if the blood in his entire body was flowing backwards. His head felt numb.

When he heard about Ye Zifeng from Xiao Mu, he blamed Xiao Mu for being too weak. But now, he finally understood everything. It wasn't that Xiao Mu was weak but that Ye Zifeng was too strong.

However, no matter how strong the opponent is, he won't hold back his burning desire to fight against them.

"Ye Zifeng, I am going to skin you alive right now!"

"Then break the formation and come over." Ye Zifeng smiled and nonchalantly replied.

"You!" If Xiao Ying continues to attack the formation, then all of his qi will get sucked away.

To Xiao Ying, he'd rather die than help Ye Zifeng. His fist stopped in mid air. He wants to try and break the formation but he doesn't want to get his qi sucked away. All he could do was angrily stare at Ye Zifeng.

"Now now. Calm down. I believe we can come to an agreement." Ye Zifeng spoke out of nowhere.

Xiao Ying thought that Ye Zifeng was trying to piss him off even more and was prepared for it. However, contrary to his expectations, Ye Zifeng wanted to make a deal.

He cleared his throat and looked at Ye Zifeng.

"What do you want? Just say it."

Ye Zifeng revealed a slick smile, "It's simple. I want you to use your identity as the leader to make everyone from the Xiao clan leave by using their life saving medallion."

Xiao Ying gasped. He was startled for a while before returning back to his senses.

“Bullshit! Do you know what you’re saying? Your so call deal is just asking me to get my underlings to leave?”

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “Young master Xiao, don’t be so impatient. I’m not done talking yet. I’ll give you the giant python’s monster core in return. I’ll even personally give it to you.”

“This....”

Hearing that Ye Zifeng was willing to personally give him the monster core, Xiao Ying started to think.

“What? It’s fine if you don’t want it. This thing isn’t that useful to me anyways. It also takes up room in my interspatial ring. I might as well smash it.”

“Don’t Don’t Dont..... Please don’t! About giving me the monster core.... Are you serious? You won’t go back on your word?” Xiao Ying’s eyes were wide open as he looked at Ye Zifeng.

“If you don’t believe me, I can make a blood oath. If you want to more insurance, I can sign a blood contract with you.” Ye Zifeng smiled brightly.

A strange smile then appeared on his face, “Think about it. The more people there are, the less reward you get. If you can kick them all out, you can get 3x the rewards by yourself. Isn’t that much better?”

“Three times the reward.....”

Ye Zifeng wasn’t wrong..... But even if Xiao Ying gets 3x the reward, he can’t compare to the 6x reward the Ye Zifeng’s group gets.

“I.....I.....”

Xiao Ying’s expression sank. He was in a dilemma.

“Okay. I’ll try it. But we’re signing a blood contract as insurance.”

Ye Zifeng laughed, “Deal. I’ll give you the monster core and you get your people to leave.”

.....

After a while, the blood contract was completed.

“I can do what you want me to do, but, I can’t guarantee that they will listen to me.” He looked at Ye Zifeng and forced a smile.

“Don’t underestimate yourself. At least, in the Xiao clan, your voice has some authority to it.” Ye Zifeng nodded at Xiao Ying.

Ye Zifeng wasn’t trying to flattering him. For a low level family like the Xiao clan, to have someone in the younger generation reach the 9th stage of qi refining is considered very good already.

He was the hope of the entire Xiao Clan. He will take over as the head of the clan sooner or later so naturally, the younger generation of the Xiao clan will listen to him.

“Okay. Don’t forget about your part of the deal. You have to give me the monster core.” Xiao Ying stared at Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng nodded.

“Of course.....”

With Ye Zifeng’s help, Xiao Ying’s voice passed through the formation and resounded throughout the entire area.

“Everyone in the Xiao clan. As the young master of the Xiao clan, I command you to use your life saving medallion !”

.....

All of the Xiao clan members felt as if lightning had struck their body.

Their one and only hope.....

“No.....No way.....”

Xiao Mu was standing in front of Liu Yige when the voice entered his ears. He thought that he was hallucinating.

“It seems like your ray of hope can’t do anything either.”

Liu Yige heard this and his admiration for Ye Zifeng grew stronger. He didn’t know how Ye Zifeng did this, but he knew that Ye Zifeng had succeeded.

At the same time, Xiao Ying voice sounded again.

“Anyone who disobeys will be punished by family laws. Do you all understand!”

In this kind of situation, if everyone else was together, they can at least discuss it. But, they were all spread out and trapped in a formation. They don’t know what was happening outside at all.

When they felt that all hope was lost, Xiao Ying’s words were like a light that guided them.

But this light was guiding them down the wrong path. But Xiao Ying said that this was his command.

Compared to the mission, obeying Xiao Ying was much more important.

Everyone in the Xiao clan gritted their teeth as then use their qi to activate the life saving medallion.

Rays of light appeared where the Xiao clan members stood. In the blink of an eye, they disappeared.

.....

At the entrance of the Scarlet Blood Valley.

“Elder Shen, which group do you think used the life saving medallions first?”

The elders were feeling bored as they laughed and asked.

“Stop bothering me. Don’t you see that I’m busy?” Elder Shen frowned.

“Busy? Aren’t you sleeping with your eyes closed?”

The elders looked at each other in confusion.

“Alright. Let’s not bother with him. We can make bets. I bet that it’s the Ye clan’s people!”

One of the elders laughed, “Elder Lin, really? What’s there to bet? The Ye clan only has ten people in total and they don’t have anyone in the 9th stage of qi refining either. Who else can it be?”

“Look, they’re coming out.”

Behind them, rays of white light appeared.

Chapter 178: Skillfully and Easily.

Beams of white light appeared from the sky.

A few elders joked around as they pointed towards the white light.

“One, two, three, so many people actually used their life saving medallion!..... It seems the the people from the Ye clan came across a demonic beast!” One of the white robe elders sighed.

“Right. But it makes sense. They don’t have anyone in the 9th stage of qi refining and their team lack manpower. It’s already not bad that they were able to survive until now.”

However, when the light finally disappeared, the faces of all the elders turned stiff. Elder Lin and the others stared at the people in front of them. They were in shock!

“What? Xiao....Xiao clan.....How come it’s you guys?!”

With two powerhouses in the fray, they might take each other out and a third party might come out on top. Some elders believed that if the Liu clan and Wang clan took each other out, then the Xiao clan would definitely come out on top.

But right now, seventeen members of the Xiao clan all used their life saving medallion at the same time!

“You. What happened? You guys have Xiao Ying. What happened in there?”

“We.....” Most of the Xiao clan members were confused as well. They were told by Xiao Ying to leave so they don’t know what was going on.

“We don’t know what’s going on either. The young master ordered us to use the life saving medallion. We don’t know what’s going on either.

“Useless! How can you guys leave without knowing what’s going on? The Xiao clan have wasted wasted effort in nurturing you bunch!”

The Xiao clan’s clan master cursed loudly. He had placed the utmost importance on this sect mission and personally came to watch.

Thus, when such an embarrassing scene occurred, he became extremely angry.

“Clan master please calm down. Young master Xiao Ying and second young master Xiao Mu are still in there. Our Xiao clan still has hope.” One of the Xiao clan housekeeper consoled the clan master Xiao Mo.

“This.....Right.” Xiao Mo thought about it and calmed down again. Xiao Ying was still in there, they still have hope.

.....

Inside the valley.

“Alright Ye Zifeng. I’ve already done what you asked for and ordered those trash to leave. Now give me the monster core.”

Xiao Ying stared at Ye Zifeng with eyes filled with urgency.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “Don’t worry. I’m not the type to go back on my words. Plus, I’ve already signed a blood contract. I will definitely fulfill my end of the bargain.”

Slowly, Ye Zifeng retrieved the crimson monster core from his robes. He looked at it before slowly extend his hand towards Xiao Ying.

Xiao Ying started to laugh loudly. As long as he has the monster core, then even if he doesn’t complete the other missions, he will still get three times the reward that he would have gotten!

Ye Zifeng suddenly stopped and worrisome expression appeared on his face as if he was afraid of something.

Xiao Ying’s expressions changed immediately, “Ye Zifeng! What kind of tricks are you trying to play? Give me the monster core!”

Ye Zifeng awkwardly laughed, “Wait.... The only reason why I’m not being attacked right now is because of the formation in between us. If I go over, then won’t my life be in danger?”

“Then what do you want to do?” Even though Ye Zifeng’s words made

sense, he had to give the monster core to Xiao Ying. If he doesn't then he will be disobeying the words of the blood contract.

"It's actually not much. I just want you to move back a few steps and use your qi to receive the monster core. How about that?" Ye Zifeng looked as calm as ever as he explained his proposal.

"Use my qi to receive the monster core? Heh..... You really are cautious aren't you. Do you think that I'm the type to sneak attack you?"

Ye Zifeng smiled, "It's better to be safe."

"Whatever. I'm wasting time talking with you. Let's do as you say." Xiao ying nodded and agreed.

Not long after, a tiny portion of Xiao Ying's qi floated out of the formation and stopped in front of Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng tossed the monster core at the qi.

"Great!"

When Xiao Ying received the monster core, his heart jumped in joy. He then carefully moved it back towards himself.

At the same time, Ye Zifeng started to laugh out loud while watching Xiao Ying.

"What are you laughing at?" Xiao Ying frowned.

Seeing that Ye Zifeng didn't intend to respond, Xiao ying continued to bring the monster core to himself.

"Ye Zifeng! You're too naive! Now that I have the monster core, I'm not afraid of you anymore! Just sit and wait for your death! Anyone who tries to mess with the Xiao clan will end up the same way! Dead!"

Right when he was about to make his move.....

A white light appeared on top of his head. A small black hole appeared and started to suck him in.

"What..... What is going on?" He had motionlessly stood there..

Ye Zifeng smiled, "Look under at the monster core. There's something

stuck onto it."

Xiao Ying's heart skipped a beat. He looked down and was shocked at what he saw.

"What?! This..... This is a life saving medallion!"

The lifesaving medallion.... It will activate when one's qi touches it....

This was the reason why Ye Zifeng suggested this way of exchange. He wanted Xiao Ying to use his qi to touch the life saving medallion!

"Ye Zifeng! You scoundrel!" Xiao Ying cursed! He wanted to get the monster core and then continue on with his missions. However, who would've thought that Ye Zifeng would stick the life saving medallion under the monster core!

When he gets back, then how would he explain the reason as to why he used the life saving medallion?

If he tells the truth, then he will become the laughing stock of the entire Leizhou City.

"Checkmate." Ye Zifeng smiled at him.

Xiao Ying knew that it was too late for him to do anything now, "Ye Zifeng. You used your life saving medallion on me.... But what are you going to do when you really run into trouble?!"

Ye Zifeng laughed and took out a few more lifesaving medallions from his interspatial ring.

"This....you don't have to worry about it. I have nine more....."

"You....." Xiao Ying wouldn't have believed Ye Zifeng if he didn't see the nine medallions on the floor. Xiao Ying felt powerless.

Ye Zifeng was able to beat Xiao Ying skillfully and easily while the latter couldn't do anything at all.

"Ye Zifeng, why don't you fight me without using these tricks! I guarantee that I'll knock a few teeths out!" Xiao Ying saw that the light was about to teleport him away so he starting to yell and curse as much as

he can.

“You can’t even get close to me and you’re trying to fight me? Also, I’m trying to to save my energy. I have another battle to fight later on. Even though your cultivation is higher than mine, the difference between us is extremely vast!” Ye Zifeng retorted.

“Preposterous! Prepare to die!” Xiao Ying’s entire body as if it was going out of control as it started to distort.

Filled with rage, Xiao Ying used the last of his strength to try and land an attack on Ye Zifeng. The amount of qi that he exert had gone over his limits and had caused his temples to ache. However, in order to kill Ye Zifeng, he was willing to do anything!

This attack was so powerful that it actually created a hole in the formation. With quick speed, Xiao Ying quickly extended his hand towards Ye Zifeng’s neck. Midway through, his arm stopped in midair.

“Noooooo!’

Starting from his fingers, his arm, his limbs, and then his entire body disappeared into the air.

.....

“Young....Young master Xiao?

“Xiao Ying? No way.”

When Xiao Ying appeared outside at the entrance of the valley, no one could believe their eyes

He was someone in the 9th stage of qi refining! He had the ability to fight a demonic beast by himself and even if he couldn’t, he had the ability to run away. He definitely won’t need to use the life saving medallion!

Xiao Ying was in shock. He couldn’t help but look up at the sky and scream.

“Ye Zifeng! Just you wait!”

Chapter 179: To threaten and bribe

One life saving medallion, one monster core and the materials to set up the formation.

All that to kick everyone in the Xiao clan out.

Now this is a value play.

Instead of having to worry about four teams, he only has to worry about three now.

.....

When Ye Zifeng walked back to where Xiao Mu and Liu Yige was, Xiao Mu stared at him in shock, “Ye Zifeng! What did you do?!”

Liu Yige had an excited expression on his face, “Young master Ye, what’s the situation?” Liu Yige had changed his views on Ye Zifeng. He started to slowly respect him.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “It’s all done.”

Liu Yige laughed loudly, gave Ye Zifeng a thumbs up and started to clap.

“Ye Zifeng, What are you talking about?”

Xiao Mu clenched his fists. He had an expression of disbelief on his face. In his heart, he knew that his big brother would not lose. Ye Zifeng could not have possible beat someone in the 9th stage of qi refining. Impossible!

“You’re actually asking me that? Didn’t you not hear your brother’s command before?” Ye Zifeng replied calmly.

“Well. Let me tell you this then. You’re the only one left that’s from the Xiao clan. Even your big brother Xiao Ying used the life saving medallion to run back to the entrance of the valley.”

“What? How is that possible?”

However, he clearly heard his brother’s voice before.

He didn’t really have any expectations for the others but he brother should have been able to survive.

“If you don’t believe me, then take a look at this. This is the tassel from your brother’s sword. You can take a look and see if it’s real.

Ye Zifeng smiled and tossed the seven colored tassel over to Xiao Mu.

Xiao Mu’s face paled as he looked at the tassel.

“It really is big bro’s..... Could it be?” Xiao Mu didn’t believe his eyes.

“That’s right.” Ye Zifeng nodded.

“Then why are you here chatting with me? Are you trying to get me to do something?”

Xiao Mu isn’t stupid. Ye Zifeng would not waste his time to come and have a nice chat. There must be a reason.

Ye Zifeng shook his head, “Don’t overestimate yourself. When I, Ye Zifeng, want someone to do something for me, that someone has to be worth something. You, Xiao Mu, are worth nothing!”

“You!” Xiao Mu had never been insulted like this before.

Ye Zifeng smiled, “So, if you want to use your life saving medallion right now, I won’t stop you at all. But.....”

“But what?” Xiao Mu was startled. It sounds like Ye Zifeng had a hidden meaning in his words.

If Ye Zifeng was telling the truth, then the Xiao clan must be really embarrassed after seeing so many of it’s clansmen return to the entrance of the valley. If he goes back now, then his father Xiao Mo might beat him up!

“But....If you are willing to be the last surviving member and regain some face for your clan, then I, Ye Zifeng, will give you the opportunity to.”

Ye Zifeng spoke with a calm demeanor.

Xiao Mu thought about it. It seems like a torment to work with Ye Zifeng, but if he doesn’t, then Ye Zifeng might beat him up and send him out.

“If you don’t agree then.... Don’t blame me.....”

“Hold on!” Xiao Mu wiped the sweat from his forehead.

He knew what the obvious choice was.

“Alright. What do you want me to do? As long as it’s not too out of hand, I’ll agree to it.” Xiao Mu couldn’t help it.

Inside, he was clenching his fists. If it wasn’t for the fact that he’s doing this for his clan, he really didn’t want to work with Ye Zifeng.

Ye Zifeng’s eyes lit up, “It’s simple. I want to bring the Rong clan’s people to my side. I need both you and Yige to help me out.”

With one word from Xiao Ying, most of the Xiao clan members retreated. They aren’t a threat anymore. As for the Rong clan, the reason that Ye Zifeng haven’t done anything to them yet is because he wants to make use of them.

As long as he can get the Rong clan on his side, he can deal with the Wang clan. Well, at least he’ll have the numbers advantage.

“Rong clan?” Xiao Mu furiously shook his head, “Nope. No can do. We don’t have a good relationship. It won’t be any good.”

Xiao Mu paused for a bit and then sized Ye Zifeng up, “Come to think of it, how are you going to get people to listen to you with your low cultivation? Even if they don’t have someone in the 9th stage of qi refining, they won’t resign themselves willingly.”

“Well.....I’m not just gonna go over and force them to listen to me. That’s stupid. But what if I asked them as their savior? What do you think?”

Xiao Mu was startled, “Savior? How are you going to become that?”

Ye Zifeng gave a mysterious smile, “It’s simple. You guys will stand right here and act accordingly. I need to hide for a bit....”

“You....” Xiao Mu didn’t even get to finish saying the first word before Ye Zifeng left the formation.

Ye Zifeng slowly left Xiao Mu and Liu Yige’s line of sight.

“No way. He really did leave..... I don’t even know what he’s trying to do.

What does he mean by act accordingly? Is he not afraid of me telling the Rong clan all this?"

Liu Yige patted Xiao Mu's shoulders, "Brother, calm down a bit. The strongest person in the Rong clan is in the 8th stage of qi refining. Ye Zifeng isn't afraid at all. It doesn't matter if you tell the Rong clan. All that means is that he'll have one less helper. But to you, there would be an unavoidable disaster."

When Liu Yige said "Unavoidable disaster" Xiao Mu couldn't help but shiver and gulp.

"Oka.....Okay. I'll just have to listen to him...." Xiao Mu bitterly laughed.

Xiao Mu has heard about how Liu Yige had hated Ye Zifeng before.

But now, it seems like Liu Yige had pledged himself to Ye Zifeng. Just what kind of dreadful method did Ye Zifeng use? Xiao Mu couldn't help but shiver when he thought about it.

.....

Just a while ago, Ye Zifeng got rid of the formation encasing the entrance to the Blazing Eagle's nest. Actually he couldn't maintain it anymore due to a lack of materials.

The timing was just right.

With this, the sealed space slowly opened up as the invisible walls disappeared.

Rong Fan laughed loudly, "Motherfucker. Yes! I'm finally out. What the hell happened?"

One of the Rong clan's housekeepers apologetically smiled, "The young master is bound for good fortune after surviving this great disaster! This time, we will finish these missions and get first place!"

"Old Su, you're right! But... maybe not first place. The Wang clan's Wang Tianzhi is pretty strong.....! Eh, where did everyone from the Xiao clan go? What happened to them?"

Rong Fan finally noticed that something was wrong.

“Well.... The Xiao clan’s second young master and that Liu clan brat is still there.” That housekeeper Su pointed at the two.

Rong Fan looked at them, smiled and then nodded.

Xiao Mu was startled and then turned to Liu Yige, “No way, He didn’t hear anything from before?”

Liu Yige bitterly laughed, “Don’t ask me anything. The formation was set up by Ye Zifeng. Go and ask him.

If Ye Zifeng was here, Xiao Mu would have definitely asked him. But now, he doesn’t even know where he is.

Rong Fan looked at the two of them and then started to look around.

Suddenly, he started to shake as he pointed at something.

“Oh my god. Look! That’s the path to the Blazing Eagle’s nest!”

“This.....” Everyone thought he was kidding but looked up anyways. But contrary to their expectations, the path really did appear!

This was the path that Ye Zifeng forcefully opened up by using the qi from the members of the Xiao clan.

Rong Fan was stoked, “After fruitlessly searching, we actually came across this by sheer luck! Wait. I know. The Xiao clan probably left the two of them here to try and hold us back. The rest of them probably entered already! It’s too bad. I, Rong Fan, won’t be tricked this easily! Quick, let’s go. Don’t let the Xiao clan get the upperhand!”

Chapter 180: They have my protection!

“Go Go Go. Let’s catch up to them!” Rong Fan called out.

Under Rong Fan’s command, everyone on the Rong clan’s team immediately moved towards the entrance.

“Hold on. Don’t act blindly without thinking....” Xiao Mu started to warn them.

Rong Fan looked over at him with disdain in his eyes, “Xiao Mu, don’t think that you can hold me back just because your brother left you here!

Rong Fan waved his hands and yelled out, “Let’s go!”

“Hmph....They’re beyond redemption.....” Xiao Mu angrily snorted.

It’s true that he dislike Ye Zifeng but right now, he’d rather watch this arrogant and despotic bunch of second generations burn and suffer in the hands of Ye Zifeng.

Everything was now set in place. Since Rong Fan was a dumb to begin with, he was easily tricked by Ye Zifeng.

Even if Rong Fan does suspect something, he wouldn’t believe that Ye Zifeng came to fight both the Rong clan team and the Xiao clan team with his one man army. Thus, he put two and two together and thought that it was the Xiao clan who was behind everything.

“Those retards. They’re just looking to die. Who cares about their life anyways.” Xiao Mu watched as Rong Fan and his group charged into the entrance.

Liu Yige smiled, “Aren’t you the same? You don’t have any abilities and yet you’re trying to go against Ye Zifeng. Aren’t you the retard that’s looking to die?”

When he said that, he thought about himself and the mistakes that he made in the past.

Xiao Mu froze and looked at Liu Yige, “I.....”

“Alright. It’s up to you on how you want to live your life. Think about it

carefully. I'm gonna go up and see what the situation's like." Liu Yige turned around and followed the Rong clan in.

Originally, Liu Yige only helped Ye Zifeng because they had an agreement. But now, it seems like his feeling towards Ye Zifeng had changed.

To Liu Yige, following Ye Zifeng around was pretty fun.

.....

In the dwelling of the Blazing Eagle.

Clouds of fire burned as fog covered the entire region.

"Young master, this place is so hot. We're gonna be burnt crisp!"

"Yeah. It's way too hot. I don't want to stay in this dumb place."

They noticed the temperature change the second they entered the nest. In the beginning, it was still bearable. But now, it was getting a little too hot.

Rong Fan was drenched with sweat as well. As a noble young master, his body had never been tempered in any way. There was no way that he can survive something like this. He wanted to pull out as well.

Rong Fan turned around and looked at one of the people following him, "Housekeeper Qin, in the younger generation, you have the highest cultivation at the 8th stage of qi refining. Why don't you decide on what we'll do? Should we continue or should we retreat?"

Housekeeper Qin's full name is Qin Zhen. He became Rong Fan's servant when he was younger. He also entered the sect with Rong Fan. If Rong Fan had any questions, he would go to Qin Zhen first.

"This....." Qin Zhen looked around and frowned, "Young master, we haven't even been in here for a long time. If we leave now, won't you feel a little unsatisfied? Besides, if anything happens, we can always use the lifesaving medallion."

"Life saving medallion?" Rong Fan's eyes lit up. He had become muddlehead.

“That’s right! I completely forgot about that little thing!”

“It might be hot right now but we have to endure it! When we kill that Blazing Eagle, it’ll go back to normal! Let’s get ourselves together. We can’t let the Xiao clan beat us!”’ After being reminded of the medallion, Rong Fan became much more confident. He didn’t have anything to fear anymore. Right now, he wants to act as fast as possible and beat the Xiao clan.

But little does he know, other than Xiao Mu, everyone in the Xiao clan had used their life saving medallion already.

The Rong clan is basically looking to die by charging into the Blazing Eagle’s nest.

When the Rong clan team got closer to the Blazing Eagle, a loud screeching sound resounded throughout the entire nest.

“It’s here!” Rong Fan laughed loudly.

However, in a moment, he would quickly change his mind.

Under the bright moon and starry sky, the Blazing Eagle’s blazing talon descended towards the group with an insurmountable amount of power.

“Holy shit. This Blazing Eagle is too damn strong!” Rong Fan started to fret as his jaws dropped.

Qin Zhen was shocked as well and immediately yelled out, “Everyone be careful. Young master, get away from there!”

“Okay. okay!” Rong Fan gulped and immediately nodded. Feeling the pressure from the power, Rong Fan immediately dropped to the ground. In order to escape he had to tumble his way out.

Fortunately, the talon moved very slowly which gave Rong Fan enough time to escape.

When the talon struck the ground, it caused a loud rumbling sound. A huge crevice appeared on the ground.

The ferocity struck fear into Rong Fan’s heart. If he had been a little slower, he would have turned into meat paste!

“Shit. Where the hell did everyone in the Xiao clan go?” Rong Fan looked around and cursed.

Before getting here, Rong Fan was worried about being able to find and take down the Blazing Eagle before the Xiao clan.

But now, the strength of the beast far surpassed his imaginations and instilled fear into his heart. He needed the Xiao clan’s help1

“What. Oh now you remember about us? You only have yourselves to blame.” Xiao Mu was standing next to Liu Yige in an area far away. He watched and laughed at the shaking Rong Fan.

“Xiao Mu, you!”

However, before Rong Fan could finish talking, the Blazing Eagle raised its talon again.

Rong Fan immediately shut his mouth as he the immense pressure of the Blazing Eagle caused the dirt on the ground to go into his mouth.

Rong Fan clenched his fists and spat out a mouthful of dirt.

“Xiao Mu! If your Xiao clan has any ability, then stop hiding. Come out and help us!”

Xiao Mu’s stared at him coldly without saying anything.

Meanwhile, Rong Fan was being swept around like a dust ball by the Blazing Eagle without being able to gasp for breath.

“Xiao Mu! Quick! Come on! Where is your brother Xiao Ying? If this goes on, we might even die here!” Rong Fan continuously called out.

“Rong clan’s second young master. What did you say about our Xiao clan before? Do you think that I’m deaf?” Xiao Mu snorted. He was a type of person to hold a grudge. Rong Fan had disrespected the Xiao clan before and he held it at heart.

“I……” Rong Fan wanted to curse at him but thought about their situation and stopped himself.

Qin Zhen started to beg as well, “Young master Xiao, we were wrong!

Please give the elders of our clan some face and ask your brother Xiao Ying to come out and help us."

Housekeeper Qin was a little older than Rong Fan and knew how to sweet talk.

If Xiao Ying really was hiding, with his personality, he would have come out to help already.

However, Xiao Mu is the sole survivor the Xiao clan.

It's not like he doesn't want to help. He can't. If it weren't for the fact that no one was able to help them, then why would Ye Zifeng let the Rong clan come in here freely?

"....."

Xiao sighed and didn't say anything.

This was a bad sign for the people in the Rong clan.

The time that it takes a stick of incense to burn passed.

"Young master, I can't hold on any longer!" Qin Zhen bitterly laughed and sighed.

Rong Fan closed his eyes. He was feeling pain all over as well. Countless wounds all over his body.

Rong Fan then turned to look at Liu Yige and Xiao Mu, "You two.... Are you really going to sit there and watch? If we were to use the lifesaving medallion, then what are you two going to do?"

"I'll be protecting them. Don't worry about it." A calm voice called out. Even though it wasn't very loud, everyone heard this voice very clearly.

Credits

Translator: Shiroyukineko Translations

Epub: Estevam / dotNOVEL